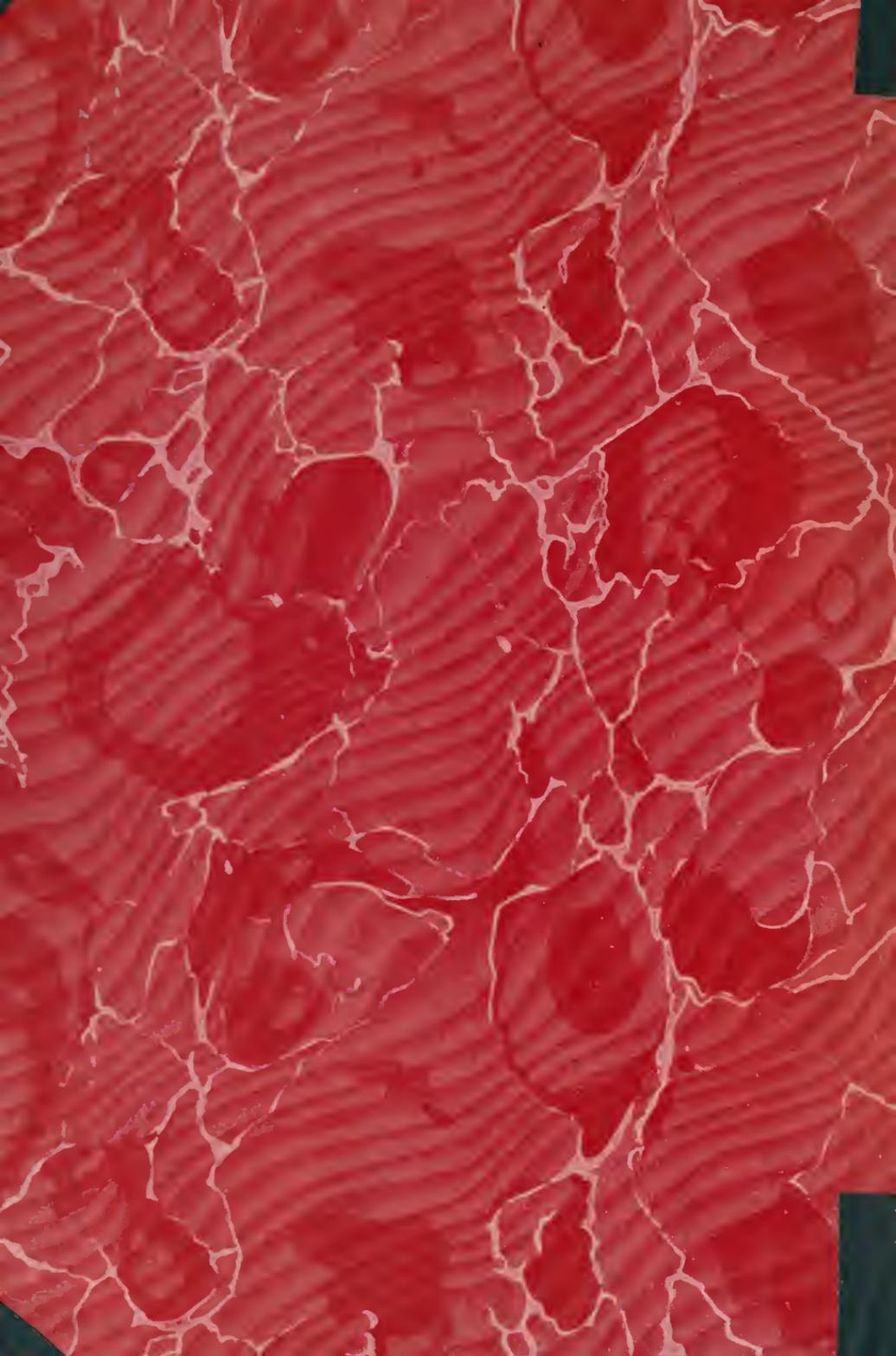
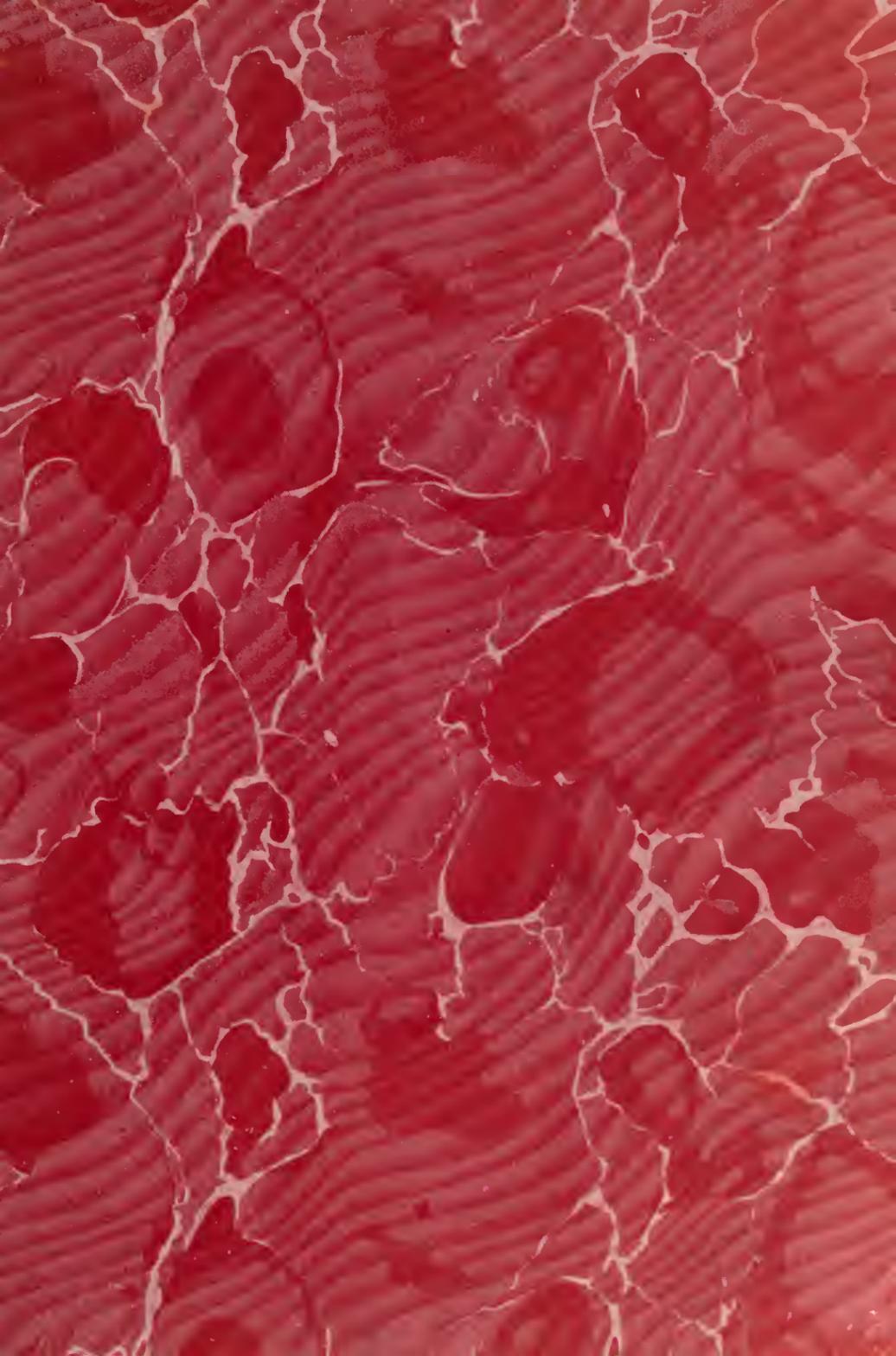


WAR BETWEEN
RUSSIA
AND
JAPAN



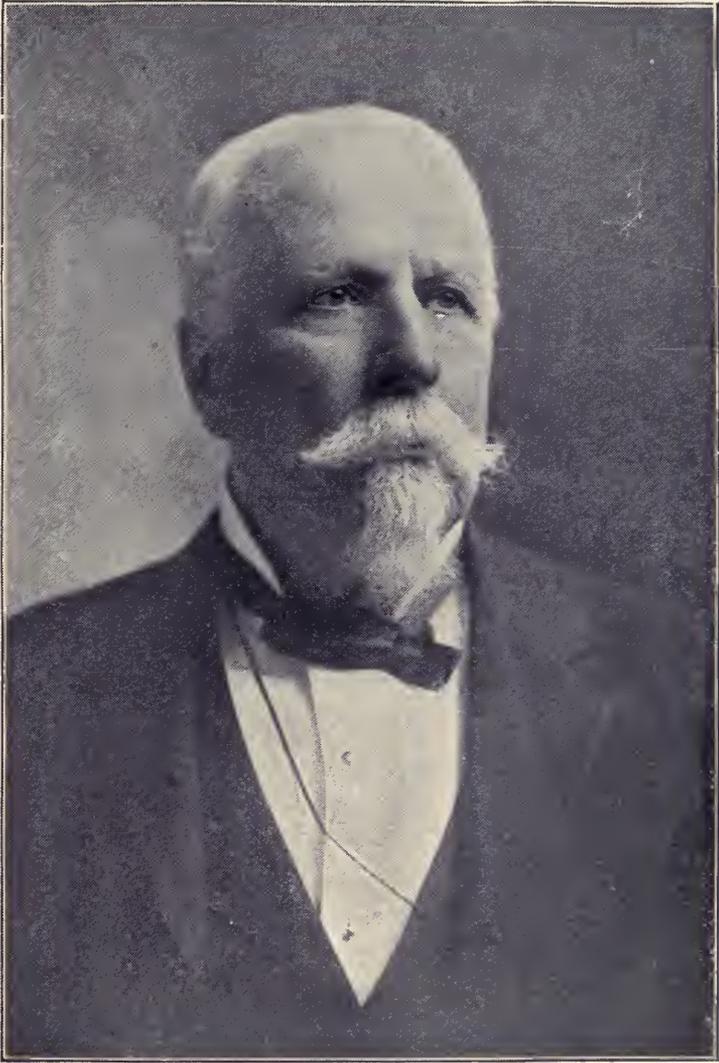
HON. MURAT HALSTEAD



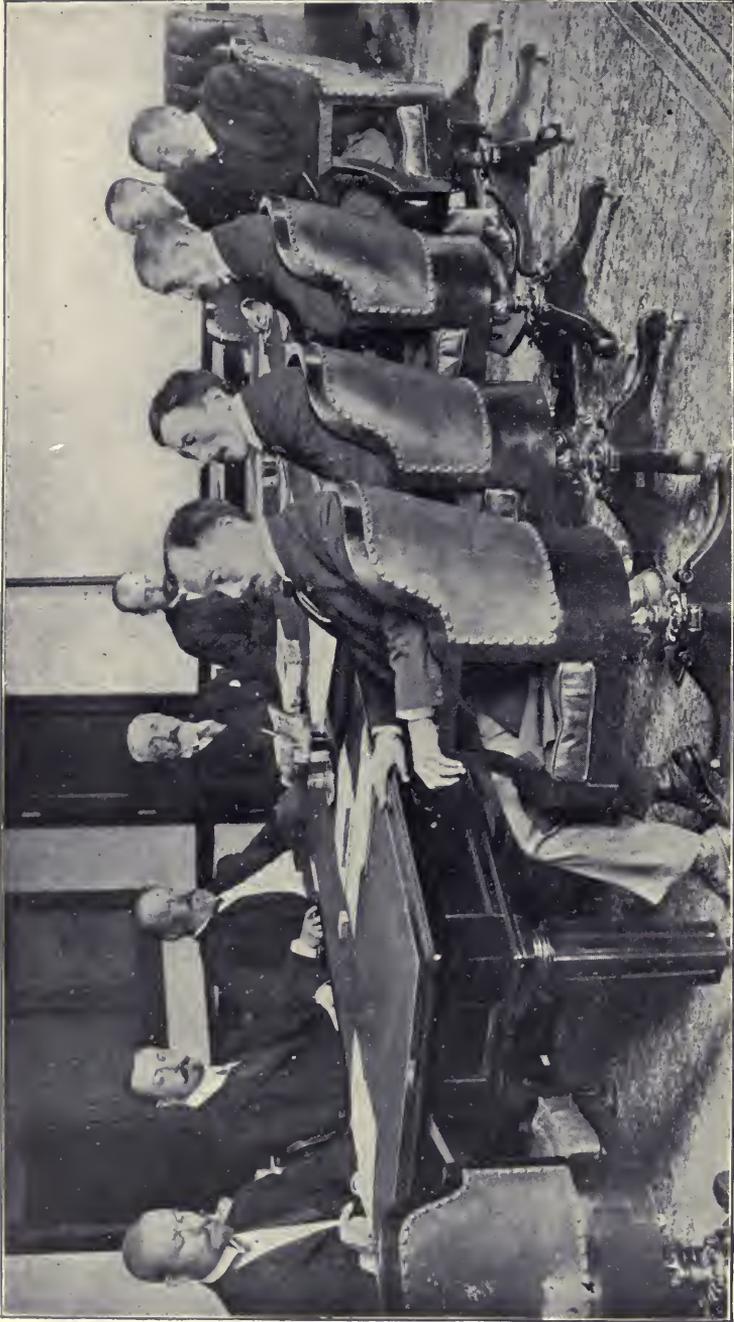




Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2007 with funding from
Microsoft Corporation



Murat Halsted



COPYRIGHT 1905, BY BROWN BROS., NEW YORK.

PEACE ENVOYS AS THEY SAT IN THEIR SESSIONS AT PORTSMOUTH, N. H.
THE RUSSIANS, ON FAR SIDE OF TABLE FROM LEFT TO RIGHT, ARE C. BERG, M. POKOTILOFF, M. WITTE,
BARON ROSEN AND M. NABOHOFF. THE JAPANESE, FROM LEFT TO RIGHT, ARE MR. ADACHI,
MR. OCHAI, BARON KOMURA, MINISTER TAKAHIRA AND A. SATO.

THE WAR
BETWEEN
RUSSIA AND JAPAN

CONTAINING

THRILLING ACCOUNTS OF FIERCE
BATTLES BY SEA AND LAND

INCLUDING

THE CAUSES OF THE GREATEST CONFLICT OF MODERN
TIMES; VIVID DESCRIPTIONS OF SUPERB HEROISM AND
DARING EXPLOITS; NARRATIVES OF PERSONAL
ADVENTURE, ETC., ETC.

BY

HON. MURAT HALSTEAD

The Renowned War Correspondent

Illustrated with Many Fine Phototype Engravings

MA

ENTERED ACCORDING TO ACT OF CONGRESS IN THE YEAR 1904, BY

D. C. A. J.

THE OFFICE OF THE LIBRARIAN OF CONGRESS, AT WASHINGTON, D. C. U. S. A.



NOTHING more interesting and instructive to all people of enlightenment, and all nations of the earth, whether great and armed or small and pacific, with devotion to the accomplishments and the arts, could take place, giving broader lessons and practical touchings of supreme utility, than war between Russia and Japan.

There is something in Russia's magnificent proportions and endowments, tremendous area and energy, and appetite for land, ever more land, and ambition for imperial influence and the constant enlargement of the splendid scope of dominion—there is something in this superb and monstrous aggregation and the insatiable passion for aggrandizement, that recalls the grandeur of Rome, the empire of which the Mediterranean Sea was a lake, herself adorning the Italian peninsula and looking down upon the memorable waters of the classic world.

The far off storm cloud overshadows the northern Pacific and the presence of war seems strangely located between nations so dissimilar and races of much diversity. Here, indeed, is an "irrepressible conflict," not between neighboring and kindred states but a conflict between peoples remote, and every clime is concerned. The armies and navies of two great Governments are entering the "valley of the shadow of death."

This Oriental drama is on a stage far removed from the scenes of the higher civilizations; and the belligerents are the two empires, that in their existing form are the most ancient. No others so absolutely mingle Church and State. The contentious Imperialists identify the Priests with the Rulers, and on both sides will be found the spirit of the Crusaders who were buried in armies, vishing to redeem the Holy Sepulchre from sacrilege.

There are no Republics near the scene of strife—no sign of one except over icy oceans. The homes of the combatants are on the Pacific, and America is to them the Orient and Europe the Occident, measured by the courses of the Sun and the Stars. Those immediately attracted to participate in the pomps of armies and navies leave the Americans out of contemplation.

The war between Russia and Japan is a logical war and it may spread until it sweeps over the Continents of Europe and Asia. It certainly will continue to be of universal and almost unparalleled interest. There are before those speculating as to results an astounding array of possibilities. Perhaps the most startling of the questions that may arise is: shall Europe conquer Asia, or Asia conquer Europe?

The clash of arms that was heard round the world on the ninth of February, 1904, between the armaments of Japan and Russia was not a surprise to any people of intelligence; and the calm and vigilant in gaining intelligence have it, except perhaps the official Russians and the War Maker in Chief who was enlightened by the shocks of the Japanese torpedoes, striking his ships at midnight.

The substantial facts of current history are no longer secrets from the people who avail themselves of facilities for the transmission of the news. The earth is in a web of wires that tell to mankind the stories of the days as they pass, and of the nights, too. It has become difficult to distinguish between night and day, taking the world as a unit, as there are not time belts to count in the circulation of information.

The languages spoken through the channels of communication of all the degrees of latitude and longitude do not afford commensurate fashions of expression of locating the surface of the globe at one moment. However, the earth turns one half in day-light and the other in the shadow we call darkness.

The way we have to fix the date of events is to take the day and hour when and where an event occurred. The first battle of the present war was known to "all the inhabitants thereof" if we may quote the inscription on the Old Independence Liberty Bell.



THE embroilment of the Russians and Japanese was one of the events prophecied in the old style almanacs, "about these times." The loads of despotism that Asia carries with vast military establishments, perpetually threaten war, though it is the philosophy of Europe that armies and navies are preservers of peace.

The Emperor of Russia, with his enormous standing legions always ready, is the most active of the imperial professors of peace. The peaceful Emperor has a good old grandfather in the King of Denmark, and has organized an International Court at the Hague, that is held to be impartial and an eminent engine for the suppression of eruptions of war.

The trouble about international influences on the European plan is that some small monarchs are in the way of becoming arbitrary; and, as to our relationship with the minor royalties, we do not care for opinions handed down from thrones by gentlemen decorated with crowns. We are outside the circle of monarchical magnetism. We have a way of looking upon monarchs as the representatives and makers of mischief, with a tendency to support royal pretensions. There is always a minor one ready to arbitrate, and we do not want to trust them too far.

It seems to be according to the order of nature that there shall be a war in northeastern Asia, and that the Japanese and Russians are first to come to blows. There is something traditional, as well as historical, that Russia has been a friend of ours, and prefers our company to that of European powers. She is herself both European and Asiatic, and has the vast wheat lands of Siberia to be improved. She sold us the immense territory of Alaska, and the fringe of islands from Behring's Strait to the isles of Japan, at a moderate price. The transaction was good for her and for us.

It is a fact that staggers the spectator who travels from Man-

ila, by way of Hong Kong and Nagasaki, to San Francisco, to find the further north the course is laid, the shorter the run. The explanation is that of the old, old scientific story that the world is "flattened toward the poles." The steamers from the English and Irish channels shorten distances in proportion as they draw nigh Cape Race, as the world grows small. The distance from Norway to Greenland is less in a direct line than 1600 miles.

Our intercourse with Japan has been increasing at an uncommon rate since we became a recognized power on the Pacific. The Japanese wanted the Hawaiian Islands, with all the intensity of the race of men who are not large but full of force and vivacious, with ideas of progress and expansion. When our own executive government was opposed to the annexation of the Paradise of the Pacific, the Japanese, who had knowledge of the condition of the interested nations, thought their opportunity to be masters of another archipelago in the great ocean, had arrived, and they were so eager that they were almost anxious to be aggressive and take their chances with us in the conquest of the Hawaiian group.

The Japanese information at this time was correct, that they had a larger fleet on the Pacific than we could place there, and there was a chance for a quarrel on the question whether we did not favor the Portuguese at the expense of the Japanese. It was a close call on our relations with Asiatics, as a racial question. The Portuguese are Europeans, and the Japanese are Asiatics. The general idea of "the Japs" is that they are one of the most favored of nations; and anything else is offensive, and must be subjected to diplomacy and possibly to the trial of arms.

Asia is like Europe from the American standpoint, not as far removed as formerly, measuring the cost and time of transportation. The road to Asia is the broadest in the world. The road is the Pacific ocean. Broad is the road that leads westward to the East Indies, and thousands and tens of thousands flock to and fro. The transfer of our regiments forward and back on troop ships, from the shores of the Sea of China, is something with which we are becoming familiar. It means not only the neighborhood of nations, but the intimacies of remote continents. We are in

touch with the East, that is so far away it confronts us from the West.

We are in the habit of speaking of the centre of the population of our country, and find it has been moving westward continually for more than a hundred years and is in the State of Indiana. The centre of the world's population has been in Asia all the ages of the existence of the human race; and if we had a perfect census of human beings, the centre of population of the world at large could be found in Southern Asia, in the Southwest of China.

In the Chinese waters the fleets of all considerable marine nations hold a Congress of both ships and cruisers, in splendid and costly array. It is a Congress of the nations of the earth, represented by their men-of-war, and they move up and down the rocky coast of the ancient continent, saluting each other with guns that give a deep booming—a reverberation of potentiality—the pomp and resonance that between sea powers is a courtesy—unless in the case of the battles between the Chinese and Japanese, or by the Americans and Spaniards. It is not unusual to see in grim squadrons the British, French, German, Austrian, Russian and American ships that are thunderers, awakening the echoes from the venerable precipices that have histories of thousands of years.

The Japanese and Chinese fleets gave a few years ago to the world an exhibition object lesson of actual war at sea. The Japanese armies invaded China, and captured some of the fat places of the aged Empire that is a feeble monster peculiarly fascinating to the little but lively men of the North, land hungry and ambitious; but Russia interfered and deprived Japan of the full fruits of victory, under the rule of the maxim, "To the victors belong the spoils." No doubt the intrusion of Russia, for the relief of China, was to hold the spoil for herself. Her denials are merely formal.

Here we have in a few lines a fair and clear statement of the cause of the Russian and Japanese hostilities, preparations for which they have prepared through months of menace.

One of the redeeming features of the assurance of the people

of Japan that they are the salt of the earth and have missions to conquest, is their intense and well engineered industry. The Japanese Islands, as seen from the seas within and without the shores of the rocky masses, appear mountainous in a repelling degree. The Japs have Rocky Mountains everywhere, and the stark, lofty, broken, worn and shattered shores are wonderfully terraced.

The splendid Holy Mountain, the altar of the Empire, stands so imposing that the direction to see it is: "Do not look that way to find the sacred peak, but look up into the sky!" And there is the familiar figure, a mighty and mystical elevation, in every outline of which is written history and superstition. Thousands of fishing boats swim on the waters and prodigious quantities of fish are taken. No other enlightened people live so largely on sea food. Few beautiful countries have an appearance so threatening as a country upon which industry must earn subsistence. Only a people intensely industrious and thrifty beyond the economies possible in a race of Europeans, could make a living in such a land, and the Japanese could not do it if great help did not come from the ceaseless bounties of the sea and the delicious fruits that grow in the elevated gardens, and the orchards rich with the gathered soil of countless ages.

It is a mournful thing that such a people have their hard-earned living wasted in the desolation of war, and scatter the produce that labor causes the crevices in the rocks to bloom, and the trees that are so select and faithfully tended, that they feed the people from the boughs that bend with nuts that are nutritious; and it is the land of the persimmon that surpasses the fig in sweetness.

The everlasting disheartening difficulty is that the soil and atmosphere of all Asia are incapable of producing a people that can govern themselves—and the French outcry that "In the war the poor men are always killed, never the kings" applies.

Murat Halsted

CONTENTS.

CHAPTER I.

FAR EAST FIGHTERS.

Resources and Requirements—Wants in the War of the Belligerents—
Their Military and Political Conditions when They Came to Blows—
Japan's Picturesque Beauty—German Views of the Situation of the
Combatants 33

CHAPTER II.

THE PERSONALITY OF THE CZAR.

An Analysis of His Character and Power—His Will is Supreme Law—
Surrounded by Statesmen of Great Eminence 51

CHAPTER III.

OPENING VICTORIES FOR JAPAN.

In the Campaign against the Chinese 1894—Brilliant Plans Carried out
with Genius for Fighting 59

CHAPTER IV.

HERBERT SPENCER AND JAPAN.

A Wonderful Letter from the Philosopher, Spencer, that is of Profound
Concern in the Place Held for and against European Empires . . 67

CHAPTER V.

INNER AND OUTDOOR LIFE IN JAPAN.

Manners and Customs, Graces and Gayeties of the People—Charms of the
Country—Drolleries in Amusements—Freaks of the Fantastic in Cere-
mony—Grandeur and Beauty in Scenery—Giddy Games and Hideous
Sports in Streets and Theatres—The Grotesque in Art—Diversions for
Children—The Orchards and Gardens Beautiful in their Bloom . . 80

CHAPTER VI.

THE FIRST BLOWS.

Opening of the Wars of Empires on the North Asia Peninsulas and
Islands of the Pacific 103

CHAPTER VII.

A BATTLE WITH BAYONETS.

Fighting Hand to Hand—Exploding, Burning and Sinking Ships on both Sides—Order of Events Showing Desperate and Deadly Work . 110

CHAPTER VIII.

RETREAT OF THE RUSSIAN VICEROY.

The Czar and Viceroy Report to the Russians—Admit Misfortune and Call Upon the Masses of the Empire—The Retreat is to Consolidate the Army—Manchuria is the Battlefield, and Asia Profoundly Influenced 124

CHAPTER IX.

BATTLEFIELD OF THE WAR.

The Cities, Roads and Rivers Where the War is Carried on—Conditions and Products of the Country—Character of People and Resources 138

CHAPTER X.

THE NAVIES OF THE NATIONS.

Comparison of the War Ships of the Powers Armed for the Rule of the Oceans—The Cost of Our Floating Citadels of Steel—Neutral Fleets in the North Pacific—Suggested Errors of Construction—Object Lessons of War 150

CHAPTER XI.

THE EMPERORS AT WAR.

Men of Asiatic Mystery—The Titles Czar and Mikado Appeal to the Old Superstition of Imperialism—Characteristics, Functions, Privileges, Liberties of the Press, True Because Incredible, Taken with Them Personally—Yellow Journal Scandal and Romance Mingled with News 161

CHAPTER XII.

GLORY PAINTED RED.

First Red Hot Battle of the Japanese Russian War—Splendid and Thrilling Scenes of Conflict—Russians had no Chance but Showed

How Brave Men Could Die for Country and Glory—Eye-witness Story of Chemulpo Fight—Correspondent Who Saw the Variag and Korietz in Battle Describes the Tragedy 169

CHAPTER XIII.

ASIATIC IMPERIALISTS AT WAR.

The Combat of Two Oriental Empires—The Russians are the Stronger and the Japanese the Smarter of the Combatants—The Characteristics of the Two Races and Powers Contrasted—The Russians and Japanese as Fighting Men—The Poetry, Passion and Picturesque in the Big War 183

CHAPTER XIV.

THE SIEGE OF PORT ARTHUR.

Experts Study Object Lessons in the Arts of War in a Tremendous School—Duels with Twelve-Inch Guns Immensely Interesting—New Views of Shore Defence from Ship's Fire—Elevated Range Bombardment Successful—Terrors of High-Flying Shells—Untimely Press Men Suppressed 196

CHAPTER XV.

MILITARY STUDIES OF LOGIC—STARTLING BATTLE SCENERY AT PORT ARTHUR.

Mathematics of Military Chances—Statistical Calculations of Size of Armies—Analysis of Russian and Japanese Resources and Foreshadowings of Gigantic Combats—The Wonderful Victory of the Japanese Fleet—Eye Witness Description—An American First Amateur Spectator and His Splendid Story of the Fighting 211

CHAPTER XVI.

COMMODORE PERRY'S MISSION.

Detail of His Fleet—His Instructions from the United States Government—Stern Suppression of Correspondence—Prejudices of the Japanese Against the English Fifty Years Ago—Bold Bearing of the Americans and its Influence—Conflicts of Jurisdiction—Our Commodore Now Communicated as a Friend—The Squadron and Commission Given Commodore Perry—His High Courage and Commanding Address Gained for Him Marvelous Concessions—The Master-Stroke of His Policy—Japan Owes Him and His Country a Great Debt 231

CHAPTER XVII.

THE ARMY OF JAPAN.

In the China and Japan War—The Remarkable Rehearsal of the Siege of Port Arthur—In the War of the Japanese and the Chinese—Its Admirable Quality Proved Under Fire at Port Arthur—Out of this Came the Conquest of China and the Quarrel with Russia—Battered and Stormed by the Japanese in the War between Japan and China—The Story of the First Siege is Instructive in Reading the News of the Second 246

CHAPTER XVIII.

RUSSIA'S TRAGIC LOSS.

The Loss at Port Arthur of the Hero Admiral and his Great Battleship—Full Detail of the Incomparable Disaster—The Career of Makaroff—Skirmishing Before the Awful Explosion—The News from Both Sides—Official Stories Clash—The Truth Will Be Disputed as Long as Waterloo 258

CHAPTER XIX.

BRILLIANTLY PEN-PICTURED BATTLE.

The First Army of Japan Passed the Yalu with a Rush—Climbed the Stony Hills—Stormed and Captured the Russian Batteries with Prisoners and Held the Ground—Russians with Inferior Guns Fought Bravely—But the Cause of Censure of a Good Fighter by Kuropatkin not Visible to the Naked Eye 272

CHAPTER XX.

BATTLES ON THE YALU.

Fighting on Land and Sea—The Battles on the Yalu—Studies of the Military Experts—Shifting Scenes, Strife and Phases of Public Opinion as the Combat Deepens and the Interest Incessantly Increases . . . 283

CHAPTER XXI.

THE BATTLE ON NAN SHAN HILL.

Assault on the Outer Lines of Port Arthur—Capture of the Walled Town of Kin Chou—Sixteen Hours' Hand-to-Hand Fighting—Japanese Lines Raked With Artillery and Rifle—Heavy Loss on Both Sides . . . 294

CHAPTER XXII.

SPLENDID SERIES OF BATTLE SCENES.

The First Army of Japan Passing the Yalu—Bravery of Both Belligerents—The Tremendous Play of Artillery—Military Spectacles Magnificent—Grand Charges of the Stormers—How Victory was Won by the Toilsome Patience that Perfects Preparation 309

CHAPTER XXIII.

MILITARY FORESIGHT OF THE JAPANESE.

Marvels of Painstaking Pre-occupation—Leap in the Dark at Port Arthur—Winning Sea Power with a Rush—All Shores of Navigable Waters at once Open to Japan, and Every Battle Field in Manchuria is Surveyed 320

CHAPTER XXIV.

RUSSIAN RAID IN THE SEAS OF JAPAN.

The Vladivostok Cruisers—Surprising Adventures—Great Destruction of Japanese Property Afloat—Immense Disturbance—Admiral Skrydloff's Astounding Achievements—Russians take Comfort in Their Hero, who Seems to have a Magic Wand to Wave and Elude the Fleets of His Enemies—Picturesque Service at Sea 324

CHAPTER XXV.

THE BATTLE OF TELISSU.

Hard Hitting—Japanese Held the Field—Remarks Regarding Kuropatkin "in Person" Commands—The Ducal Party is at the Front and Use Wires—The Fight Highly Picturesque and Characteristic of the War—The Battles Have a Family Likeness 342

CHAPTER XXVI.

NAVAL WARFARE ON THE NORTH PACIFIC.

Stratagems and Tragedies on the Seas of Japan—Adventurous Voyages—The Terrors of Torpedoes and Great Guns—Russian Repairs of Wounded Ships and Restoration of Fleet—Daring Strife and Destructiveness of Discharges—Strange Scenes at Sea 357

CHAPTER XXVII.

SOME STARTLING FEATURES OF THE WAR.

Of Asiatic Empires, Races and Religion—In the Armies that Tread the Wine Press of Blood—There Appears the Brotherhood of Brave Men—Wonderful Story of a Japanese Christian Colonel's Death, Showing How a Hero, a Japanese Hero Gave Testimony—He was a Christian, and Died as a Martyr—Death Took Pity 372

CHAPTER XXVIII.

PORT ARTHUR'S DEFENCES.

A Military Expert Engineer's Sketch of the Fortifications—Their Form and Situations—The Town is an Amphitheatre in a Ring of Hills—The Equipment of Artillery—The Greatest Siege of Modern Times 380

CHAPTER XXIX.

STIRRING SCENES OF WAR.

Sketches Brilliantly Well Drawn—The Remarkable Gifts for High Command of Admiral Togo and General Oku—The Use of Infernal Machines Told with Much Interest—Superb Story of a Forlorn Hope Turned into a Storming Party Victorious 392

CHAPTER XXX.

RUSSIA'S RUINED FLEETS.

The Grand Viceroy Duke at the Bottom of Two Disasters—Admiral Alexeieff, The Duke of Domon—The Splendid Story of the Crippled Ships—The Admiral's Report was Falsification—Still There Were Fighting Men Who in the Slaughter Pen Died Heroes, and Their Fame Will Never Fade 401

CHAPTER XXXI.

SOME OF RUSSIA'S SPECIAL SORROWS.

Why the Greater Empire in the Asiatic War was Sore Stricken—Flash Lights of Information—A Combination of Russian Discouragements 406

CHAPTER XXXII.

CHANGES IN WAR SHIPS.

Bulk Less in Request and Speed More Wanted—Torpedo Boats Multiplying—America is Moving With Others and Leads in Having the Most Powerful Piece of Artillery in the World 415

CHAPTER XXXIII.

NOTABLE SIEGES OF THE PAST.

Evolution of the Art of War Illustrated in Its Various Important Stages 420

CHAPTER XXXIV.

ON THE ROAD TO LIAU-YANG.

Strong Position for Defense—An Excellent Road—Hot Water a Good Beverage—Chinese House—Black Bread—Russian Cavalry—The Cosacks—Flanking Fight 434

CHAPTER XXXV.

SPLENDID BATTLE AT SEA.

Tragedy of a Fleet Destroyed—The Japanese Give the Russians Credit for Heroic Conduct and the Account is One of the Best Modern Pictures of Navies in Combat 448

CHAPTER XXXVI.

GREAT BATTLE OF LIAU-YANG.

A Mountain Battery—Roar of Artillery—Crossing the River—Rain of Shrapnel—Desperate Encounters—Awful Loss of Life—Burning the Dead—Sufferings of the Wounded—Immense Losses on Both Sides 459

CHAPTER XXXVII.

DESPERATE FIGHTING AROUND MUKDEN.

An Open Plain—Villages Around Mukden—Rich in Historic Interest—Armies Getting Ready for a More Bloody Conflict—The Crucial Moment—Report from Kuropatkin—Accounts of Fierce Fighting—More than 400,000 Men Engaged—Death Struggle for Mastery—Varying Fortunes of Battle—Success of the Japanese 480

CHAPTER XXXVIII.

HEAPS OF DEAD ON THE BATTLEFIELD.

Continuation of the Battle of Shakhe River—Japanese Driven Back with Heavy Loss—Lone Tree Hill Recaptured—Russians Withdrew After Four Days' Fight—Bloodiest Battle in History—Great Losses of Men and Materials—Vivid Accounts of the Awful Slaughter 501

CHAPTER XXXIX.

THE CAPTURE OF PORT ARTHUR.

Other Important Sieges—Description of the Fortress—First Shots of the War—Torpedo Boats—Concealed Mines—Escape of the Grand Duke—Attempts to Cork up the Entrance to the Harbor—Port Arthur's Guns—Dire Extremities—The Surrender 511

CHAPTER XL.

THE CAPTURE OF MUKDEN.

Great Losses of Men and Munitions on Both Sides—Comprehensive Survey of the Battle—Oyama's Superior Strategy—Kuropatkin Stunned by a Heavy Blow on his Right—Movements of the Two Armies—Russians Flanked and Their Line Broken—Mukden Hurriedly Evacuated—Retreat Imperilled by Panics—Official Reports of the Two Commanders. 526

CHAPTER XLI.

THE RUSSIAN ARMY IN FULL FLIGHT.

Desperate Attack Against the Japanese Led by Russian Commander—Retreating Russians Bombarded—Retreat a Wonderful Spectacle—Kuropatkin's Crowning Blunder—Russian Lines Penetrated by Enemy—Official Despatches—Desolate Country Around Tie-ling—Japanese Scouts—General Linevitch Appointed New Commander 546

CHAPTER XLII.

OYAMA THE ORIENTAL NAPOLEON.

Hero's Varied Career—Pen Picture of Oyama—Brilliant Campaign—Moves on the Chessboard of War—Battle of Liao-yang—Bloody Conflict Around Mukden—Oyama's Personal Traits—Mikado's Army Laws—Oyama's Wife Educated in America—Her Services in Behalf of the Wounded. 566

CHAPTER XLIII.

GREAT NAVAL VICTORY IN THE SEA OF JAPAN.

Russian Fleet Reaches the Straits of Korea—Admiral Togo in Waiting with Japanese Fleet—Russians Fire First Shots—Torpedo Flotilla Joins the Attack—Fierce Combat Between Big Battleships—Russian Ships go Down—Remnant Tries to Escape—Hot Pursuit by Japanese—Greatest Naval Victory Recorded in History. 580

CHAPTER XLIV.

THE RUSSIAN WAR POWER IN THE EAST
ANNIHILATED.

The Last Great Fleet Defeated—Russia's Military and Naval Power Broken—Russian Admiral Attempts to Reach Vladivostok—Biographical Sketches of the Two Admirals—Congratulations for Togo—Devotion of Japanese to Their Emperor—The Island of Saghalin 600

CHAPTER XLV.

PEACE BETWEEN RUSSIA AND JAPAN.

President Roosevelt's Proposition for Peace Negotiations—New Kind of Diplomacy—The Envoys Chosen to Represent the Belligerents in Conference—Heroic Efforts to Reach an Agreement—Final Terms Approved by Both Nations 619

SUMMARY OF THE MOST IMPORTANT EVENTS OF THE
WAR 651

JAPANESE HEROISM.

LETTER SHOWING WHY THE JAPANESE ARMY AND NAVY ARE INVINCIBLE.

The following extracts from a letter written to his wife by a Japanese soldier will give a good idea of the Spartan sentiments that animate the men. Death on the battlefield and glory is their chief thought, and this thought far outweighs all other considerations. He wrote :

My dearest, I especially ask you strictly to observe the following rules, which I herewith send you :

1. Never accept presents in money or kind from any one ; to do so will be to bring shame on your husband.

2. Think that our parting at Shimbashi was a last farewell, as though you had accompanied my body to the temple ; and that presently you will receive the news of my having traveled over the plains of battle and entered paradise.

3. Do not expect to see me back ; think that I have gone to meet an honorable death.

4. When news comes of my death repress your sorrow.

5. After my death live on the pension you will receive from the government, and carry on the worship of my ancestors.

6. Remember that you are a soldier's wife, and behave accordingly.

7. Do not fail to visit the families of those who die in battle, and to condole with them.

8. Be respectful to your parents and the aged ; treat your inferiors kindly, and keep your own spirit pure and noble.

9. Be careful never to disgrace the honorable name I have given you at the cost of my life.

The writer of this letter, Corporal Yamazaki Unosuke, was formerly a workman at the Shubunsha Lithographic Press in Tokio. He was sent to Korea and served with great credit in many engagements. At the battle of Fen-shuiling he discharged his duties as orderly with astonishing quickness and boldness, and, though wounded himself, saved the life of a comrade, whose wounds he bandaged to the neglect of his own.

In the engagement which terminated in the occupation of Maerh-shan he was severely wounded in the head, and died on the way to the bandaging tent.



A JAPANESE DESPATCH-RIDER

**THESE STRANGE CARVED FIGURES ARE A STRIKING FEATURE
IN THE LANDSCAPE ON THE OUTSKIRTS OF VILLAGES.
THEY ARE SUPPOSED TO FRIGHTEN AWAY EVIL SPIRITS.**



**JAPANESE SOLDIERS SHOOTING A KOREAN SPY WHO
HAD GIVEN INFORMATION TO THE RUSSIANS**



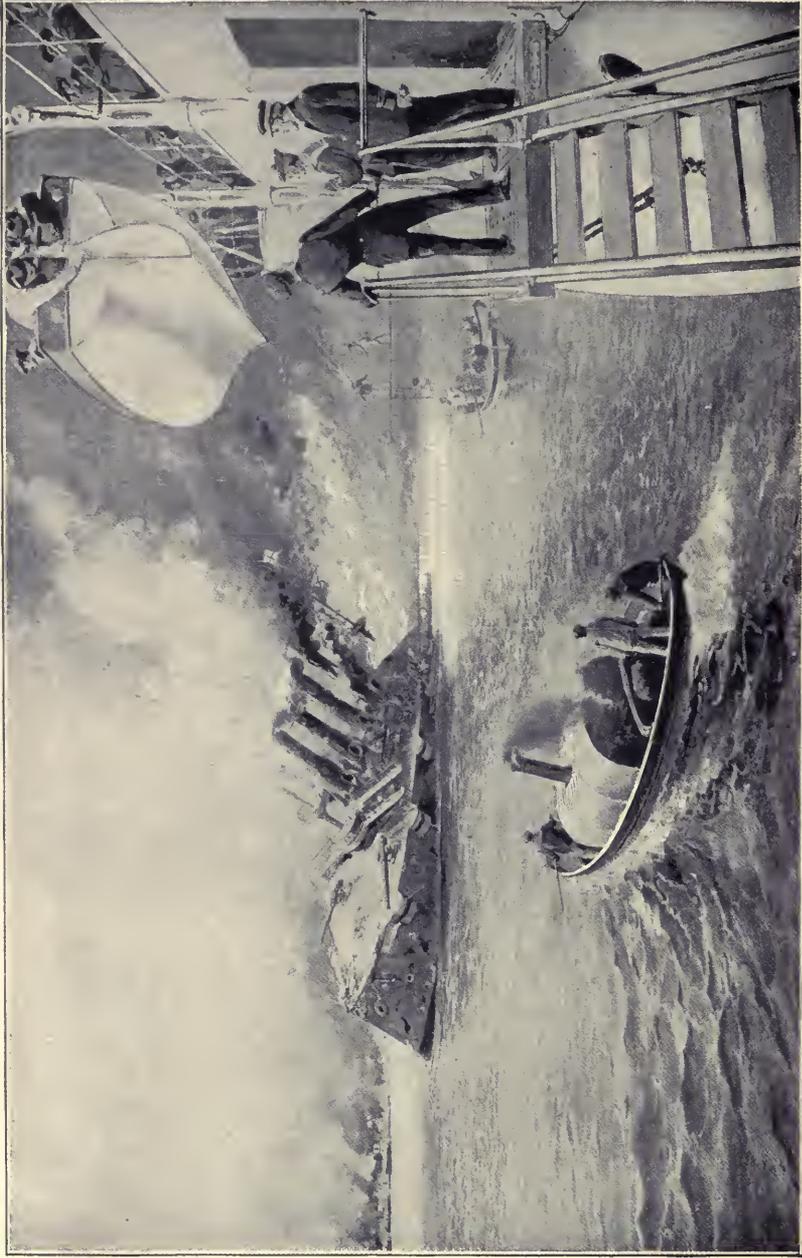
JAPANESE ATTEMPT TO SEAL UP PORT ARTHUR



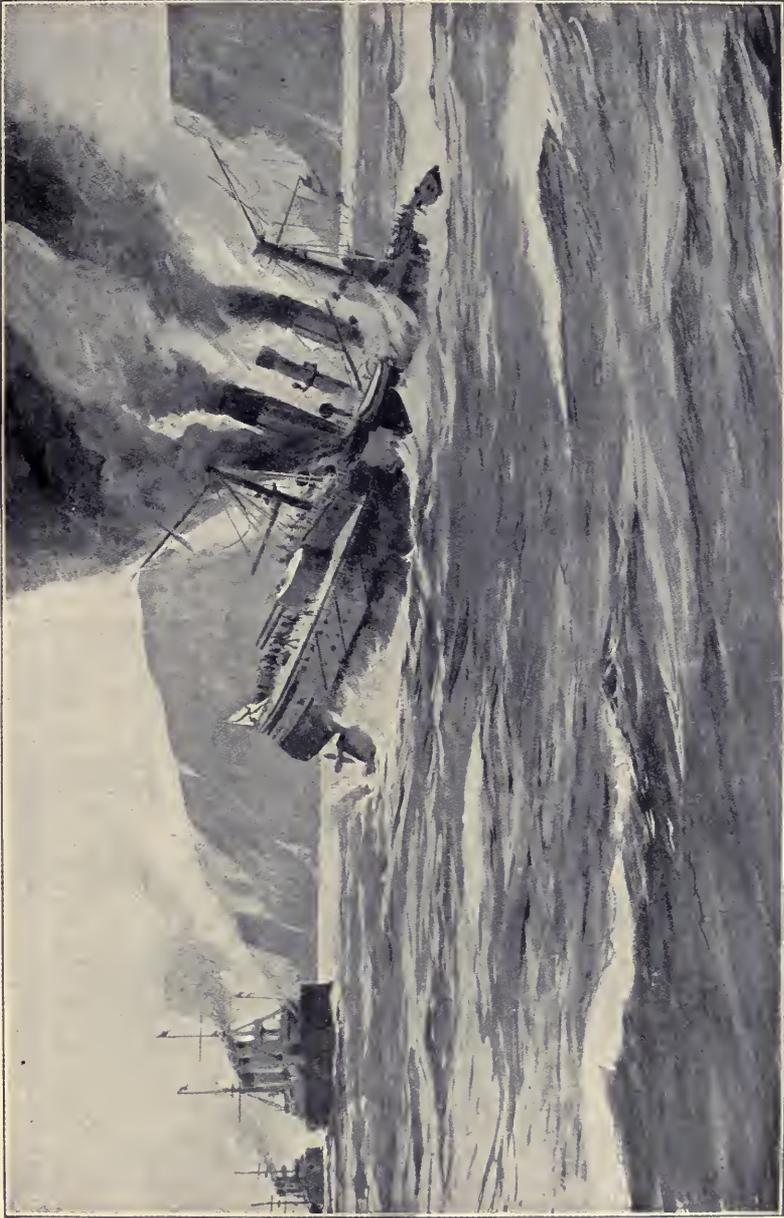
THE JAPANESE JINRICKSHA-MAN AS A TRAINED TRANSPORT-CARRIER.



THE RUSSIAN SOLDIERS' DIFFICULT JOURNEY ACROSS THE ICE ON
LAKE BAIKAL



THE SINKING OF THE RUSSIAN SHIP "VARIAG" AFTER HER HEROIC STRUGGLE
AGAINST A JAPANESE SQUADRON



THE SINKING OF THE RUSSIAN BATTLESHIP "PETROPAVLOVSK" AFTER
HAVING BEEN STRUCK BY A MINE NEAR PORT ARTHUR



RUSSIAN SOLDIERS GUARDING THE TRANS-SIBERIAN RAILWAY



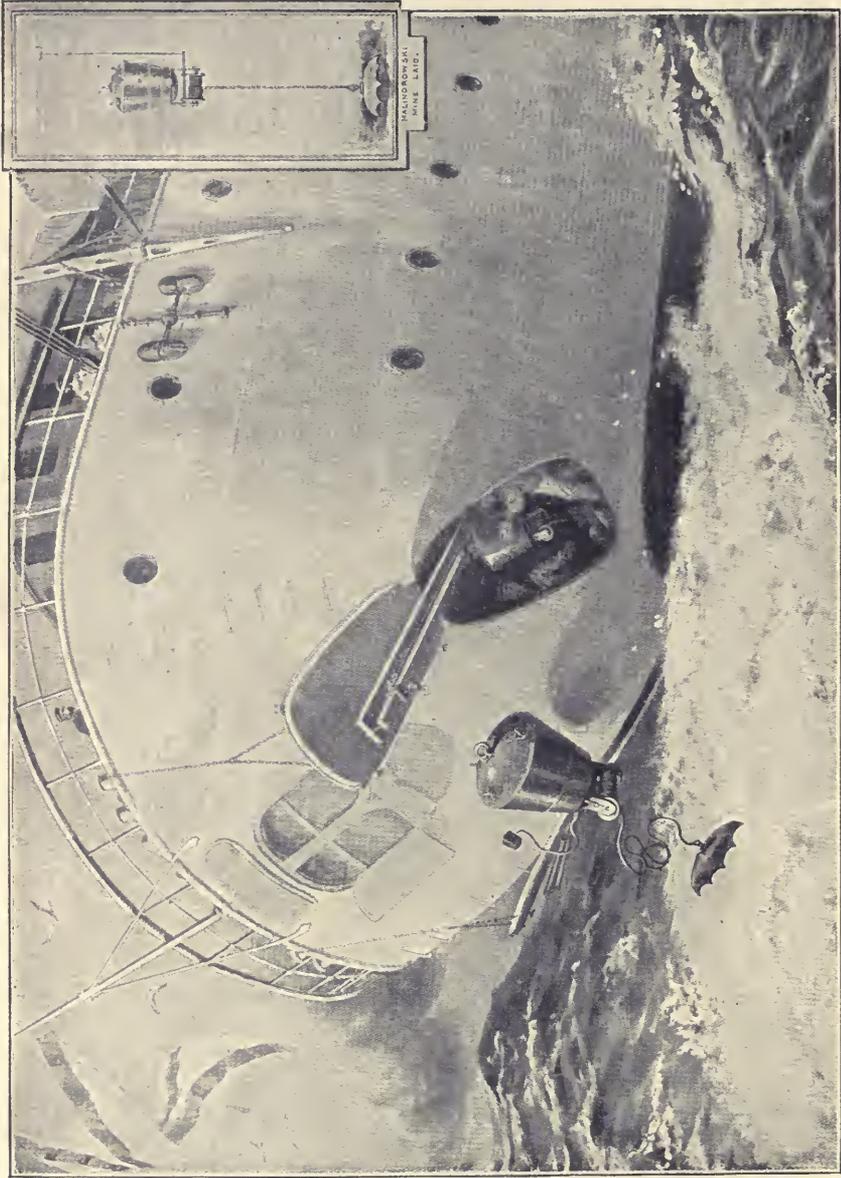
THE INVISIBLE ADVANCE OF THE JAPANESE ARMY TO THE YALU
GEN. KUROKI'S TROOPS MARCHING UNDER COVER OF ARTIFICIAL SCREENS OF BRUSHWOOD



RUSSIANS RETREATING TO FENG-HWANG-CHENG AFTER THE BATTLE
OF KIN-LIEN-CHENG



AN ALARM IN THE JAPANESE ARTILLERY LINES AT FENG-HWANG-CHENG



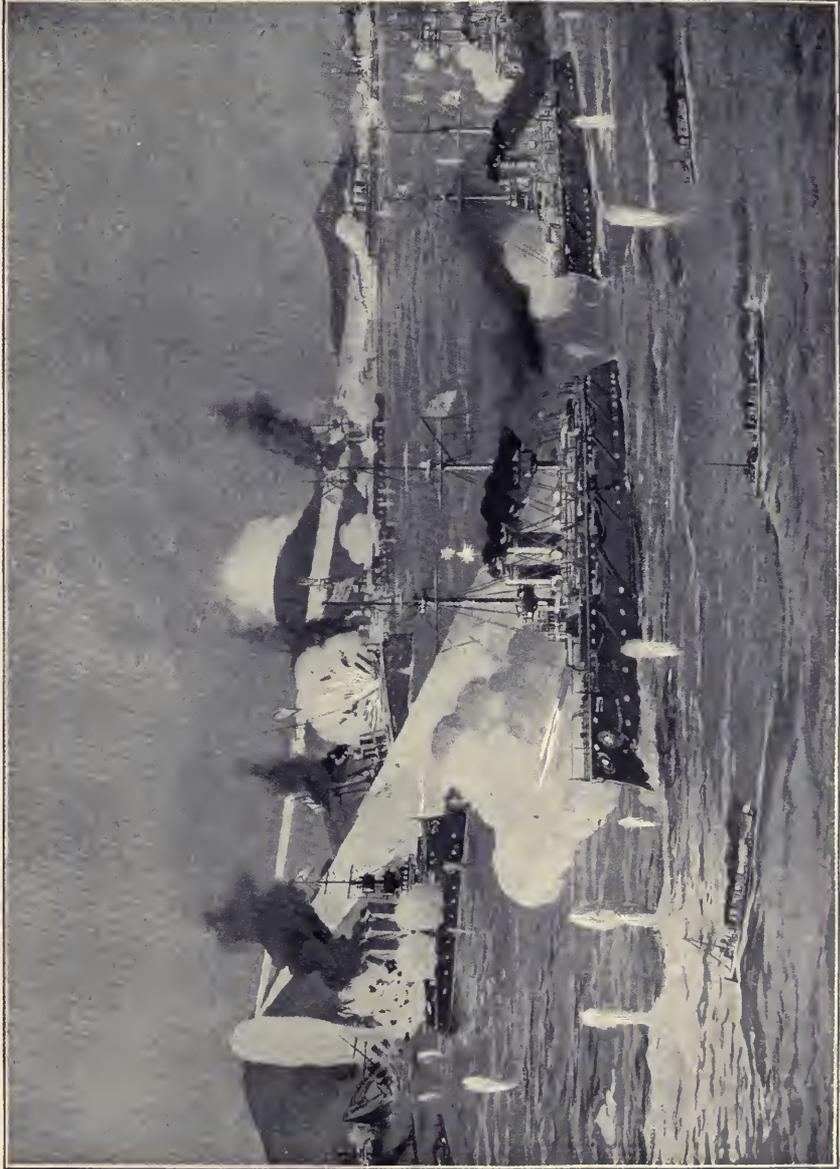
SETTING TRAPS FOR WAR-SHIPS—THE RUSSIAN METHOD OF LAYING
MINES TO DESTROY VESSELS



GENERAL OKU'S TROOPS STORMING THE RUSSIAN ENTRENCHMENTS AT
THE BATTLE OF KIN-CHAU



THE BATTLE ON NAN-SHAN HILL
EVERY MAN WHO TOOK PART IN THE THIRD ATTACK ON NAN-SHAN HILL FELL BEFORE
THE RUSSIAN FIRE.



ADMIRAL TOGO'S SQUADRON ATTACKING THE RUSSIAN FLEET



**BARON KUROKI, COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF OF THE FIRST
JAPANESE ARMY**

CHAPTER I.

FAR EAST FIGHTERS.

Resources and Requirements—Wants in the War of the Belligerents—Their Military and Political Conditions when they came to Blows—Japan's Picturesque Beauty—German Views of the Situation of the Combatants.

A LETTER of German origin, giving a German view of the Far East war crisis, appeared January 17th, in the Berlin correspondence to the *Suddeutsche Reichs-correspondenz*, which says:—

“Japan is doubtless unwilling to have her sphere of action circumscribed in Korea by a formal recognition of the neutrality of a definite district, according to this writer, the expectation of peace was maintained through a season of alarming reports mainly based on the assumption that Russia absolutely needs repose.

“If the European Governments regard the outbreak of war in the near future as improbable, their view is supported by the consideration that Russia will not open hostilities, since, apart from all political reasons, she has no reason to take the offensive.

“Japan, on the other hand, so long as she retains adequate freedom of action in Korea will, doubtless, before entering upon war, reflect seriously with regard to her claims in Manchuria.

“The writer adds predominance in Korea is a matter of life and death to Japan, but the open door in Manchuria is hardly of less moment, and under the favorable auspices it will certainly not be relegated to a second place.

“During the last 15 years Russia's voice in the European concert has often been decisive in consequence of her territorial immunity from attack and the terrible military pressure which she was able to apply to Europe.

“Germany was the only Continental adversary who could meet

her on equal terms, and even Germany was confronted with unusual strategical difficulties without the prospect of tangible advantages in the event of victory.

“On her other frontiers, distant though they were, Russia was protected by the physical features of the Asiatic continent and by the helplessness of her petty tribal opponents.”

This is all changed, the German authority quoted, says :

“Russia has reached seas that are never ice-bound, she is open to attack by European naval Powers and has to defend valuable provinces and public works on which she has expended capital against new enemies like China and Japan.

“Now that Russia’s unassailable position on all her frontiers, with the exception of her European borders, no longer exists, she has also lost for ever that imposing vantage-ground dominating, so to speak, the whole of Europe which she occupied on the flank of the Continent.

ADVANTAGES OF RUSSIA’S POSITION.

“That position was due to the circumstances that Russia could collect on her western frontier those vast masses of troops which her gigantic Empire placed at her disposal, and that, in particular, she could convert the Kingdom of Poland into a permanent military camp. She did not need to consider the protection of other portions of her territory behind these thousands of miles of continental frontier.

“In the military districts of Warsaw, Vilna, Kieff, and Odessa, Russia had massed nearly three-quarters of her troops. Here with terrible menace the might of a gigantic Empire was concentrated; not to speak of fresh troops of the line, and all those reserves which could be brought to the front in the event of war.

“The position of Russia seemed the more imposing because she could direct almost all her forces against Europe; it was only in the Caucasus that other concentrations of troops on any scale were necessary. All the rest of her frontier could be left either entirely unprotected or could be covered by Cossack settlements reinforced by a few guns and riflemen.

“One flank of the Russian Empire rested on the icy regions of the Arctic Ocean, while on the Behring Sea its rear was not open to attack. On that side all that had to be feared was the occasional outbreak of petty controversies about fisheries with the United States, a Power in which Russia now encounters a new and mighty antagonist. . . . In the eastern portion of Russia’s southern frontier there is now a great change; there she has valuable territories, the frontiers of which are exposed to the attacks of very mighty enemies, so that they have become for Russia the heel of Achilles.

“The days are now for ever past when Russia could concentrate her military power unhindered against Europe and be, at the same time, able to reckon upon the unassailable character of her frontiers on both flanks and in the rear.

THE PRAISE OF RUSSIA’S FOREIGN POLICY.

“This was the advantage upon which Russia’s weight in foreign policy was based. Russia is now forced to transfer her military and naval center of gravity in a large measure eastwards, in order to be armed against attacks from two sides. For a long time to come she will be compelled to maintain in the eastern half of her Asiatic possessions a standing army of at least 200,000 men, which in times of disturbance must be largely reinforced.

“In the Pacific Ocean she will have to station a fleet stronger than the whole of her navy as it was in the year 1890.

“The immense extent of the Russian Empire, which was formerly its strength, has thus become its weakness. A distance of many thousands of miles through a desolate country will have to be covered in order to convey troops from one point of danger to another—a gigantic strategical undertaking.

“Russia will henceforth labor under the disadvantage, which has hitherto afflicted Germany, of having to be prepared for a very big war on two fronts.”

This will not be the last time that we shall hear of the weakened position of Russia, and the Russians will be left to draw the inference that they cannot do better than hasten to make

friends with Germany at all costs. It is very doubtful whether this inference will be drawn. So far as Russia's western frontier is concerned, the situation has not materially changed to her disadvantage.

Russia is at present on excellent terms with Austria, and seems minded to treat the Near Eastern question in permanent concert with this powerful neighbor.

No matter how deeply Russia might be engaged in the Far East, it is hardly conceivable that Germany would take advantage of her necessities in order to put military pressure upon her in Europe. There is little or nothing for Germany to gain in European Russia except a few million more Poles, who, as Count von Bulow says, "breed like rabbits, while the Germans breed like hares." This does not take into consideration France, which is still a military nation with a great fleet.

COMPLICATIONS OF BALANCE OF POWER.

It might happen in war between Russia and Japan, that France would hold the balance of power. If Germany pressed upon Russia, Austria and France would be called to unite. Italy is already free from the alliance of Germany, Italy and Austria. France has been free from complication, and she has been carefully cultivating a Russian alliance, which has at least advanced into friendliness.

In the long game of negotiation for peace, according to official assertion, and the earnest preparation for war, the Japanese opened October 30th, Russia met in reply December 11th, and Japan answered December 21st. Japan has been astir and Russia has gained time by the use of carefully considered words and phrases of civility, fending off Japan's impatient temper and anxious inquiry with affected politeness.

Mr. James Gordon Bennett has recently surprised the newsmen of Europe by the use of his advantages in living in Paris and maintaining a newspaper establishment, with a very large constituency. Mr. Bennett is one of the heaviest investors in ocean cables, and has competent newsmen at the ends of the earth; also the spirit of lib-

eral investment in news from far away lands, when they are making news.

“The New York *Herald*, Paris Edition,” is very much quoted by the journals of Europe when anything happens that relates to “the crisis in the Far East.” January 12th, the St. Petersburg correspondent of the “Paris Edition” of the New York *Herald*, wrote as follows :

“Public opinion shows a more marked irritation against Japan than hitherto. Even the Japanese Minister’s peaceful words are being taken and turned into a weapon against his country, which, it is openly stated, makes use of such diplomatic phrases in order to gain time. No hesitation is shown in accusing Japan of having the desire to wait until she can get her new cruisers out to the Far East. The public, however, is sure that the Russian fleet will never lose sight of them.

AMERICAN INSIDE EUROPEAN NEWS.

“Much bitterness is expressed at the fact that the English are manning the two vessels, but more still, that England is permitting the protection of her flag over them. The *Ossliabya* and *Aurora*, with the fleet of torpedo catchers of the *Buistri* and *Bodri* type, going as they do, twenty-six knots, could, it is calculated, make matters very exciting for the two cruisers. Should war break out the Englishmen on board would have no easy time of it if captured by the Russians.”

There could hardly be a situation with more possible embarrassments than that of Japan with English sympathy, and Russia, with her territories spreading around the world, from the Baltic Sea to the North Pacific. The Russian possessions fill the space between England and Japan, and stretch further eastward to Behring Strait.

If Russia had retained Alaska, her northern lands and those of England would have girdled the globe.

Perhaps the Russians, who are not unaware that they and the English have expanded East and West, so that there is no more to gather, had some of the reasons to turn over land to us, that

Napoleon had to sell Louisiana—the difficulty of defence against the predominant Sea Power.

THE VITAL SUPPLY OF COAL.

The coal supply is as important in war as the gunpowder storage. A letter from Moscow, January 8th, contains this information: "The prospect of a naval conflict of some duration in the Far East has latterly invested the coal supply question in that quarter with exceptional importance. Russia is known to have laid in a good stock of coal for her fleet in the Pacific, but the question 'how long will it last' is none the less one which Russian naval men find embarrassing.

"The *Dalny Vostok*, an outpost gazette in the Far East, which devotes considerable attention to Russia's naval position in the Pacific, is seriously alarmed over the coal question. Speaking of the immense increase in naval tonnage recently concentrated in the Pacific, it says that more than one naval power finds the supply of first-class fuel for its vessels lamentably short, and nowhere is the shortage more seriously felt than between the Mediterranean and the Pacific.

"While in time of peace the supply is fully up to the demand, it is otherwise in time of war. Hostilities between two powers and the complete neutrality of others interfere with the normal working of the law of supply and demand and leave the combatants face to face with the task of satisfying their fuel requirements as best they can."

The *Vostok* goes on to say: "In the event of a Russo-Japanese campaign England, in terms of her agreement with Japan, is bound to maintain an attitude of strict neutrality towards both combatants, especially towards Russia. This means that, apart from the possibility of the Suez Canal's being closed, the whole of the ports all the way from Port Said to Hong Kong, will refuse to supply fuel to Russian vessels."

"The *Vostok* proceeds to point out that by international regulations for time of war 'a neutral Power is permitted to supply a fighting unit with such amount of fuel as is held to be necessary to

enable it to reach its nearest national port.' A Russian vessel of war at Singapore bound for the theatre of active hostilities, is it adds, much nearer Vladivostok than to Odessa.

"Nevertheless, in accordance with the rule that a neutral Power shall not assist either combatant Power, the British authorities are free to refuse to supply coal to the Russian vessel, with the result that the vessel would no longer be in a position to continue its journey to the scene of operations and would have to return, fuel being supplied to it to enable it to reach the next nearest British port, where a further 'contribution' of coal would be forthcoming to enable it to accomplish another stage of its voyage homeward to a Russian port."

"The Moscow *Viedomosti* affects to make light of the *Vostok's* fears, arguing that though the predicament in which Russian vessels would in such circumstances find themselves is 'certainly not one to be envied,' it is by no means so "frightful" as the *Vostok* paints it, since in the first place "coaling operations are possible in the open sea, and in the second there are ports between Port Said and Hong-Kong belonging to others besides the English."

THE COAL TROUBLE IN WAR.

"The *Viedomosti* neither mentions these ports by name nor explains how the regulations for neutral nations in time of war would apply to non-British ports supplying fuel to fighting units, but affirms that there are such ports, 'though the pity of it is that they are only too seldom visited by vessels flying the Russian flag.'

"While speaking of the fuel question it may not be out of place to add here that it is reported that large quantities of South Russian 'Dombroffsky' coal have been ordered by the Russian Government. How this coal, if meant for the Far East, is to be transported thither it is impossible at the moment to say.

"It is not considered probable that fuel in any quantity will be shipped to the Far East from Odessa, while the transport by rail to the Far East of heavy freights of fuel would undoubtedly prove a matter of the greatest difficulty."

"It is to be taken into consideration that the Russians, since

Japan became so strenuous in asserting herself, have been gaining time by a conciliatory policy in words, but preparing for war energy. The utmost use has been made with the trans-continental railroad, and at the same time the most severe and strict orders have been issued to restrict reporting the movements of troops and ammunition, and all requisite supplies for the dread consumption of warfare.

“The English authorities disparage the resources of Russia and their readiness, and at the same time construe situations favorably to the Japanese.”

One of the observations of Thomas Jefferson was that if foreign Powers undertook to conquer the Louisiana Purchase, they would find no one of the greater “armed nations” could cope with us on our own soil, and the defeat of the British was an example of the advantage people have who are fighting at home. The German Empire did not relish dependence on England for coal, when Prince Henry made his voyage to China.

We of the United States, in possession of many islands, need more for coal stations, for the coal supply regulations are in time of war liable to be embarrassing. When Theodore Roosevelt, Assistant Secretary of the Navy, cabled Dewey, “Fill up with coal, the best to be had,” he was providing the American squadron in Asiatic waters the best coal as well as the best ammunition, and at the same time burning powder in target practice. War devours.

FUEL HEAPED FOR TWO FIRES.

There are two enormous masses of inflammable material of Oriental races in contact with European peoples and civilization. One is the Turks, who have for centuries been in Europe under the protection of Christian powers, for political reasons, and Russia, though owning the Black Sea almost exclusively, has but limited liberty to pass through the strait that connects the waters of Southern Russia and her accessions in Western Asia, with the old oceans the Russians surrounded.

The chief factor in this obstruction is England, and her motive is to prevent the Russians to flank England's Southern Asia, through

the Persian Gulf. Disraeli was a practical statesman, and managed to get control of Egypt and the Suez Canal, beating both England and France in the game played with nations on the diplomatic chess-board.

The other material for a conflagration is at the other end of Russia, and the struggle is to prevent the northern Empire from putting forth her strength on the Pacific. Russia was hard indeed against Japan, after the war between Japan and China, resulted in the signal defeat of the latter. China has since that event been in a downward condition.

Korea is a country, until recently, little known to the world, but that Japan and Russia should collide with respect to Korean territory has been certain. Russia rushed in and placed her iron and inexorable grasp upon Manchuria, and secured Port Arthur that had been a self-evident want through long sufferings.

LIMITS OF ENGLAND'S JAPAN ALLIANCE.

England is the ally of Japan, to what extent is not known with accuracy, but enough to cause grave complications. Russia's struggle is to chain ocean plants upon the Temperate Zone, of which she has so vast and fertile a possession. England having conquered and held Southern Asia and Southern Africa, is pleased to use her sea power to keep her greater rival away from the oceans that she commands.

There is an unwieldy bulk in Russia, that results in difficulty of concentration and awkwardness of movement. On the ground of the unity in sympathies of English-speaking people, it is expected that the United States will take part, if she manifests an interest that takes form and shows substance, when the clash of arms resounds in a contest that may be world-wide.

It is the command of the Pacific Ocean that both England and Japan desire. Japan is not our friend on the Pacific, save in mutual admiration, a disposition to give friendship the arts of courtesy, and amass the good will that would be null in a case of emergency. We are deeply interested in the Pacific Ocean, and the Russians sold us one extensive territory and three archipelagoes.

We have far the larger and the more eligible in position and products front on the Pacific, than any other nation, with a developed and Christian nation upon earth, including California, Oregon and Washington.

We have an outlook on the Pacific exceeding that of British Columbia, without putting Alaska into account, whatever way the Far East controversy terminates, the United States is the Great Power on the Pacific.

There is much that is of exceedingly great interest in the controversy between Japan and England that is passing before the minds of the people of the United States. Japan, for example, has recently been passing through a political crisis. They have in that advancing country, two principal political parties, but no party has an absolute majority.

MYSTERIES OF JAPANESE POLITICS.

A Tokio letter, dated December 12th, says, no party originates or endorses an impeachment of the Cabinet's foreign policy. That is, neither of the principal parties is an opposition party. All seem to be war parties. The letter mentioned, says :

"The *Seiyu-kai* have 132 votes, the Progressives 85, and the remaining 159 members are divided into coteries of uncertain complexion. No effective motion hostile to the Ministry could be carried without the *Seiyu-kai*'s support, and the *Seiyu-kai*'s ultimate source of inspiration is the Marquis Ito, whose approval of the Cabinet's programme in foreign affairs was an open secret.

"Thus it appeared that the worst the Ministry had to apprehend at the House's hands was an ordeal of questioning, from which, without much difficulty, it might have emerged unscathed. The only strange feature of the situation was an agreement between the *Seiyu-kai* and the Progressives to combine forces in the Diet.

"A similar agreement in the previous session had an intelligible basis, namely, opposition to increased land taxes, but no such basis existed visibly on the present occasion, so that the co-operative arrangement had a certain air of mystery.

“Such was the state of affairs on December 10, when the Emperor opened the Diet. His Majesty’s speech was :

“‘We hereby declare the Imperial Diet opened, and announce to the members of the House of Peers and the House of Representatives—

“‘That, to our sincere satisfaction, the relations between our Empire and Foreign States grow constantly more friendly ;

“‘That, in order to preserve the peace of the Far East and the rights of our Empire, we have instructed our Ministers to proceed circumspectly with important international negotiations ;

“‘That we have ordered our Ministers of State to prepare a programme of finance, and submit to the Diet the Budgets and projects of law for the 37th year of *Meiji*, and that we trust you will harmoniously discharge your legislative duties in connexion herewith.’

PERILS OF AN ERROR IN FORM.

“In the Diet’s early days, before procedure had crystallized, there was uncertainty as to the proper interpretation of the Speech from the Throne. Should it be regarded as an essentially Imperial utterance, or should it be considered merely as a declaration of the Ministry’s policy announced through the Sovereign? For a moment the latter view found favor, and there appeared to be a probability that, in accordance with England’s example, the reply to the speech would become a vehicle for giving or withholding the House’s confidence.

“But such a theory would have conflicted with the spirit of the Japanese polity, which, while recognizing the Sovereign as the source of all administrative power, dissociates him altogether from its responsible exercise.

“Very soon, therefore, the Speech from the throne came to be invested with the sanctity attaching to the throne itself, and the language used by each House in reply assumed a purely conventional character. This formal conception extended from phraseology to procedure.

“The President, assisted by the secretaries, drafted the reply.

and then, instead of circulating it among the members preparatory to seeking their endorsement, as is the method with an ordinary project of law, he read it to the House, the latter expressing approval as a matter of course.

“This has hitherto been done on the day following the delivery of the speech from the Throne. But on December 10, the Representatives were summoned to meet immediately after the Emperor’s departure from the precincts of the Diet.

“They seem to have associated this change of custom with the change of President which had just taken place, and to have entered the Chamber without any suspicion. Mr. Kono, the new President, having invited the House’s attention, rose in his place, and simultaneously the Chief Secretary handed to him a draft of a reply compiled in strict accordance with conventional forms. But the President, putting it aside, drew a document from his own pocket and read as follows :—

AN APPARENTLY ADVENTUROUS EXPRESSION.

“Your Majesty’s servants venture to express their sentiments of profound gratitude in that your Majesty has attended in person to perform the ceremony of opening the Imperial Diet and has addressed to your servants a gracious speech.

“The present is a time when the fortunes of the country have reached a unique and unprecedented stage, yet the measures taken by the Ministers of State are not in keeping with the situation, since at home they pursue a policy of opportunism, and abroad they forfeit opportunities. We, your servants, cannot but regard these things with profound solicitude, and we earnestly pray that your Majesty will bring your Majesty’s enlightened judgment to bear on the situation.

“Your Majesty’s servants, upon whom devolve the duties of deliberation, pledge themselves to exercise the utmost circumspection and sincerity, so as with all respect to observe your Majesty’s injunctions, and to justify the trust reposed in them by the people.

“There is no reason to suppose that the true import of this

reply escaped the intelligence of the members. They recognized it as an unequivocal impeachment of the Ministry.

“Some were astonished, some bewildered, but not one seems to have suspected the truth, not one imagined that the President was utilizing his official position to commit the House to a course which the majority would never have taken in the normal course of procedure.

“Mr. Kono has since explained that he drafted the document without consulting any of his own friends, still less the leaders of the political parties, that he deliberately took the whole responsibility on his own shoulders, and that he never expected to obtain the full endorsement of the House, or to return scathless to his home after the attempt.

“The Diet had to do something to save dignity, but the functions that were informal to a degree almost absurd, were not so formidable as to be a disturbing force. After some trouble to find a fit phrase, it was agreed that an ‘error of form’ had occurred and there was an easy restoration to formality that closed the incident.”

THE BEAUTIES OF JAPAN.

FROM “JAPAN” BY WALTER DICKSON.

“It is almost a matter of wonder that so little was known of Japan until the advent of the Portuguese. Men were in old times adventurous travelers, and yet, except what is contained in the pages of Marco Polo, written in the thirteenth century, nothing more was known of the existence of the country.

“The Buddhism of India had permeated China, Corea and Japan, but it brought nothing back. Mahomedanism, at an early stage, reached China, and gained many converts, and the Arabs carried on an extensive trade with China and the Eastern Isles; but neither by their writings nor by the early native accounts do they seem to have reached the shores of Japan, or, at least, ever to have returned from them.

“This may perhaps be attributed to the wars of the Crusades, which appear to have lighted up such a fierce feeling between the

Christian and the Moslem, as to have proved a barrier to the inquisitiveness of the former in his investigations regarding the East. When the Portuguese, in the beginning of the sixteenth century, had pushed their discoveries and trade as far as Malacca, and thence to China, it was to be expected that such adventurous seamen as they would, before long, solve the question of a people living under the rising sun.

“It is fortunate that, among the lawless buccaneers and pirates, as they evidently were, on those seas during his time, one man, Mendez Pinto, should have been found with the zeal to write some account of the doings on the Sea of China, and to lift the veil, which, until he wrote, hung over the events which he records. That the latter part of his narrative, relating principally to China, should have been called mendacious, is not to be wondered at.

JAPAN'S ANCIENT RELIGIOUS IDEAS.

“But all that he relates with reference to Japan, is not only corroborated by a closer acquaintance with the country and people, but also by the native histories in their accounts of the arrival of foreigners in the country, as well as by the letters of the Jesuits who visited Japan very shortly after it was first discovered by the Portuguese traders.

“Subsequently to the period at which Mendez Pinto wrote, the history of foreign relations with the country is kept up by the letters of priests and Jesuits who occupied Japan as a field for spreading Christianity. In the ‘*Histoire de l’Eglise du Japon*’ there is an excellent summary of the occurrences connected with the Church, its missions, its successes, its difficulties, its martyrs and its enemies, together with a glance at the events in Japan during the most eventful crisis in the history of the country.

“After the expulsion of the Jesuits and the Roman Catholic doctrines from the empire, there are accounts from time to time published by the officers connected with the establishment kept up by Holland at Nagasaki. Caron, Fischer, Meylan—but, above all, Kaempfer and Thunberg, and Titsingh and Klaproth—and, in our

own times, Siebold, have done much to elucidate the manners and customs and natural history of Japan.

“Kaempfer has given a most interesting and instructive account of what he saw in the country during a long residence, and upon more than one progress to the courts at Miako and Yeddo. His delineation of the manners and customs of the people of Japan will remain as a memorial of a state of things seen under circumstances not likely to occur again. But the work was published by another after the death of the author, and, in consequence of this, many of the names of men, places and things are nearly unintelligible. Kaempfer’s work is well known to the Japanese, having been translated or repeatedly copied in manuscript, and is known as ‘Su koki rong.’

JAPANESE LOVE OF COUNTRY.

“It is an interdicted book, and only recently a man was punished upon being detected in the act of copying the translation. The translation by Klaproth of the ‘Annales des Empereurs de Japon’ is a most valuable work, and contains a wonderful amount of information, being, as it were, the complement of Kaempfer’s work, drawn entirely from books and not from personal observation.

“The natives of Japan appear to have an intense love and reverence for their own country, and every individual in the empire seems to have a deep and thorough appreciation of the natural beauties and delights of the country. To this the genial climate, the rich soil and the variety of the surface contributes.

“The islands lie at such a latitude as to make the air in summer warm without being hot, and in winter cold without being raw. The soil, as in all recent lava soils, is of a rich black mould, raising the finest crops of millet, wheat, and sugar-cane, and when supplied in unstinted profusion, rearing splendid timber, or capable, when nearly entirely withdrawn of keeping life and vigour and seeding power in a pine-tree of two inches in height. The trees have a tendency to break out into excrescences from plethora.

“The variety of surface arises from the great height to which

the mountains rise in an island which at no part presents so great a breadth as England, and yet slopes gradually from the mountain tops to the sea. Some of these ridges appear to rise to the height of Mont Blanc, one of them, Fusi-yama, being upwards of thirteen thousand feet in height, and it would appear that other ranges are higher.

“The great beauty of Fusi (*pah rh*, not two) consists in its rising singly out of a low country with a beautifully curved sweep to a conical apex; and the atmospheric effects changing from hour to hour, as it is seen from thirteen provinces, give such a variety to this single object that it is rightly called by a name to express the feeling that there are not two such in the world.

“The variations of atmospheric density make it look at one time much higher than at another. It may be seen with its head clear in the blue sky rising out of a thick base of clouds—or the clouds ride and roll in masses about the middle, leaving the gentle curve to be filled up by the mind’s eye from the base to the apex.

THE SPLENDID HOLY MOUNT OF JAPAN.

Again, the whole contour, in a sort of proud, queenly sweep, stands out against a cloudless ether, or with a little vapour drifting to leeward of the summit, giving the appearance of a crater—or, after a cool night in September, the eye is arrested by the appearance of the bursting downwards of a flattened shell, the pure white snow filling the valleys from the top, the haze of the morning half concealing the hill beneath.

“Every hour brings a change upon a landscape which consists of a single object which the lover of nature can never weary of admiring, in a climate where seventy miles of atmosphere does not obscure the larger features on the face of the mountain even to the naked eye. How often would such an object be visible to the climate of England?

“The first settlement of inhabitants upon an island is always a subject of interesting speculation and inquiry. The insular position gives an idea of a definite time or period at which the peopling of a large island must have taken place. The freedom of posses-

sion of boundless wealth presents every inducement to the immigrant to remain, while distance and difficulties repel the idea of return.

“In Japan this immigration may, in all probability, have commenced by a gradual spreading from the north of inhabitants of Mantchouria through the islands of Saghalien and Jezo to those of the Japanese group.”

FROM “LETTERS FROM JAPAN,” BY MRS. HUGH FRASER.

“The landing at Nagasaki and the sight of the Inland Sea have upset all my wise resolutions about first impressions. The only thing that came to me as I stepped on shore at Nagasaki was a fit of really light-hearted laughter—laughter of the joyous and unreasonable kind, whose tax is mostly paid in tears.

LIFE A THING OF FUN AND JOY.

“Life suddenly presented itself as a thing of fun and joy; the people, the shops, the galloping jinriksha coolies, the toy houses treated as serious dwellings by fathers of families, all combined to give me a day of the purest amusement that has ever been granted to me yet.

“For sixpence I would have changed places with a seller of cakes, whom I met in the road. His clothes were of the impressionist kind, some rather slight good intentions carried out in cool blue cotton, the rest being brown man and straw sandals. He carried a fairy temple built of snowy wood and delicate paper, with a willow branch for a dusting brush, and little drawers, full of sweets, which pulled out in every direction, as white and close-fitting as the petals of a moon-dahlia. All his dainty wares were white or pink, and at a distance one might have mistaken him and his shrine of sweets for a bundle of lotus blooms on two brown stems.

“It seemed unwise to change places with him, and might have caused confusion in the family; but I was very sorry that H—— would not let me buy him, pack and all, and stand him up in the hall of the new home in Tokyo as my first curio.

“And now we are in the Inland Sea; and it seems to me that I have been taken to the heart of the country, have seen the very

essence of its beauty and remoteness, have been set in the presence of that by which it would choose to be judged. Mists rolled back from one dream picture after another, and each was so lovely that one forgot to regret the last.

“Of all the things that I have seen none are so individually and weirdly beautiful as these pine-fringed hills of Japan, with their delicate, daring profiles rising in curves and points that no Western mountain ever knew, crowned with pines following each other in leisurely succession, and holding out dark green branches for the mists to tear on, or coppery golden arms for the sun to strike. The mists are not thick rolling fogs like ours; they wave and hang, part and cling together, curl away from a breeze or sink back on a calm like a thousand veils of fine gauze, each moving with a will of its own.

MIST PICTURES NOT FAIRY DREAMS.

“It was a great deal to learn all that at once, to realize that the mist pictures of the Japanese are not fairy dreams, but faithful presentments of nature. Yet another and still stranger sight was in store for me. A fresh wind came tearing down some water-course in the hills; it swept under the brooding mists, and rolled them up like a scroll; and then—we were on a sparkling sea, flooded with sunshine, enclosed by green mountains, and dotted with innumerable islands. On one, just before us, a lovely temple with a red *torii* (gate) stood right out on the flood, which bathed the feet of its sentinel pines.

“The deep was covered with a flotilla of nautilus shells, closing in round us with a flutter of wings, and the cool music of a hundred prows rushing through the water in the sun.

“The peculiar warm sheen of the junk sails, square above and round below, made in long strips, seamed and held together in a thousand lovely patterns by the interlacing ropes strained against the breeze, gave the impression of a web of silver against the blue; and the calm majesty of the silky rush on the water's surface made me feel that our great coal-fed, screw-driven liner was a blot on the universe.”

CHAPTER II.

THE PERSONALITY OF THE CZAR.

An Analysis of His Character and Power.

LONDON is naturally the headquarters of the news from the Far East, so long filled with portents of war, and the most minute hits from the diplomatic papers and the management made to make beliefs in peace, are welcomed and the manufacture of the small things into greatness and the great into the small, goes on with increasing industry.

Russia has pursued her policy of crushing inertia, that she has employed so long with efficacy, to shove forward her frontiers and make fast her chain to give permanency and establishment by the habit of ponderously sitting immovable.

One of the serious and urgent wants of Russia is a port on the North Pacific, that is not in winter blocked with ice; and when Japan defeated China, the chance to obtain the needed naval station occurred and advantage was taken.

Russia has a greater interest in Northern Asia than any other power, and her expansion depends upon the improvement of Siberia, developing her resources. The building of a railroad connecting St. Petersburg by rail with an open Pacific port, gives to Russia an appearance of gravity in the increase of her establishment in the further East.

Japan has estimated herself very ostentatiously since her victory, and if she is ever to fix a wall more impregnable than that of China, now is the time when England is the friend of the lately victorious power in Northern Asia, and Germany and France are distinctly not aiding either of the parties to the stir of warring conditions. France has all the Russian securities she wants, and Germany is not seeking Asiatic colonies just now. The game that Russia plays is to impose her bulk and go slowly in positive assertion, fixing a habit of staying, and the Japanese are agitators rather than defenders.—The keen ardor of the "Japs" arises from

the sense entertained that they have not been rewarded in substantial for their valor and feats of arms, and they are resolute to the point that Russia shall not gain what Japan won.

There is a curious discussion of the extent of several personal influences, upon which it is the habit of the European and Asiatic circles to place with much elaborated opinions reduced to writing to fix upon individuals the critical and determining responsibilities of the impending conflict.

THE POTENTIALITY OF PERSONAGES.

In the discussion of the topics that have a tendency to augment the potency of persons, the leading journals of England have taken a part showing the eagerness of dramatists in getting up a taking drama. The first person placed in the center of the stage is the Czar, a gentleman distinguished rather for his good manners and amiability than the coarse exercise of his almost unlimited powers. There is a prevalent belief that his will is weak, and that the Japanese have overestimated his peace proclivities, or undervalued the mechanism of the monarchy, which carries the personal ruler with it, by a force irresistible as gravitation. It is hard to know how far to trust the reports of the views said to be held by the "dominating spirits" in the *entourage* of the Tsar.

American journals receive the praise of those of England, and a correspondent friendly to Russia is believed to represent the opinions of influential circles in St. Petersburg; and this is the core of it:

"Russia needs and demands Manchuria as her own," and that she "cannot admit Japanese domination and supremacy in her sphere of interests, or whatever you like to call it, in Korea," there is not much ground left for discussion. If, further, they suggest that Russia has not said her last word on the "open door" in Manchuria, even after the ratification of the Japanese and American treaties.

We quote a most timely and interesting essay on the "Autocracy of the Tsar:"



FESTIVAL IN A RUSSIAN VILLAGE.

“One often hears questions asked as to how far the Tsar is master in his own house, and many people seem to think that his autocratic power exists merely in theory, being always controlled and thwarted by the officials. Otherwise, how is it possible to explain that a Sovereign who is notoriously so pacific allows his country to advance to the very brink of war?”

“Evidently his hand is being forced in some mysterious way. Either he is systematically deceived as to what is taking place, or his orders are not carried out by his Ministers and their subordinates.

“In accordance with this view a story was lately circulated in which his Majesty was represented as struggling not very successfully in the cause of peace, and finally exclaiming to those who resisted his will:—‘Am I Tsar, or am I not?’

THE POWER OF THE EMPEROR'S WILL.

“This makes a very effective paragraph in a Special Correspondent's despatch, but such picturesque anecdotes will be received with extreme scepticism by those acquainted with the internal mechanism of the Russian Government. It is difficult to imagine a Russian official openly opposing the will of his August Master in such a way as to call forth a remark of the kind.

“The Tsar uses his autocratic power, theoretically and practically, in two ways—as a legislator and as the supreme head of the Executive.

“No legislative measure can be initiated without his approval, and when a Bill has been prepared in the departments concerned and discussed in the Council of the Empire it is submitted to him for his assent.

“If he gives his assent the Bill becomes law, though the majority in the Council of the Empire may have voted against it, and from that moment he has to respect the law until it is annulled by legislative procedure. If the Bill is not fortunate enough to obtain the Imperial assent, it goes back to the departments and the Council, to be modified in accordance with the Imperial wishes, or it is quietly put away in the archives and is no more heard of.

“As supreme head of the Executive his Majesty has to use his autocratic power much more frequently, because in the ordinary course of administration, whenever it is considered desirable to make an exception to the existing laws and regulations, the matter has to be submitted for supreme permission by the Minister concerned.

“As there is nothing which corresponds to a Cabinet, the Ministers have no joint responsibility, and the only center in which the activity of all the different departments converge is the Emperor himself. He may, of course, order that a matter is to be submitted to the Committee of Ministers, or he may summon a number of personages in whom he has confidence to discuss a question in his presence; but this forms no part of the ordinary method of conducting business.

LABORS IN HIGH DUTIES.

“Thus a Tsar who attends to his duties and has a great capacity for work can control thoroughly the great legislative and executive machine by which he governs his Empire; and, as he possesses many unofficial means of obtaining information, any Minister who should systematically attempt to deceive him would very soon be found out.

“With regard to foreign affairs he is sure to be exceptionally well informed, because all crowned heads consider that the relations of their country with foreign Powers require their personal supervision, and to this rule the Russian autocrats form no exception.

“As soon as a political incident happens in which Russia is interested, a memorandum is carefully prepared in the Foreign Department, describing what has occurred, explaining in what way Russian interests are affected, and suggesting the line of action to be adopted, and this document is submitted to the Emperor.

“His Majesty may discuss the question with the Minister if he thinks fit, or he may read the paper alone and send it back with his remarks and orders written on the margin. In either case the Minister gets his instructions and acts accordingly.

“Of late an unusual departure has been made from this pro-

cedure. Finding it necessary to concentrate locally the direction of affairs in the far East, the Emperor created a Viceroyalty with special powers, and placed under the orders of the Viceroy, not only the civil, military, and naval authorities, but also the Russian diplomatic representatives in China, Korea and Japan.

“Admiral Alexeieff, on whom this important post was conferred, corresponds directly with the Emperor outside of the Foreign Department, so that if the Russian Ambassador in London, Paris, or Berlin declares that he does not know what is going on in the Far East, it must not be hastily assumed that he is using merely diplomatic language.

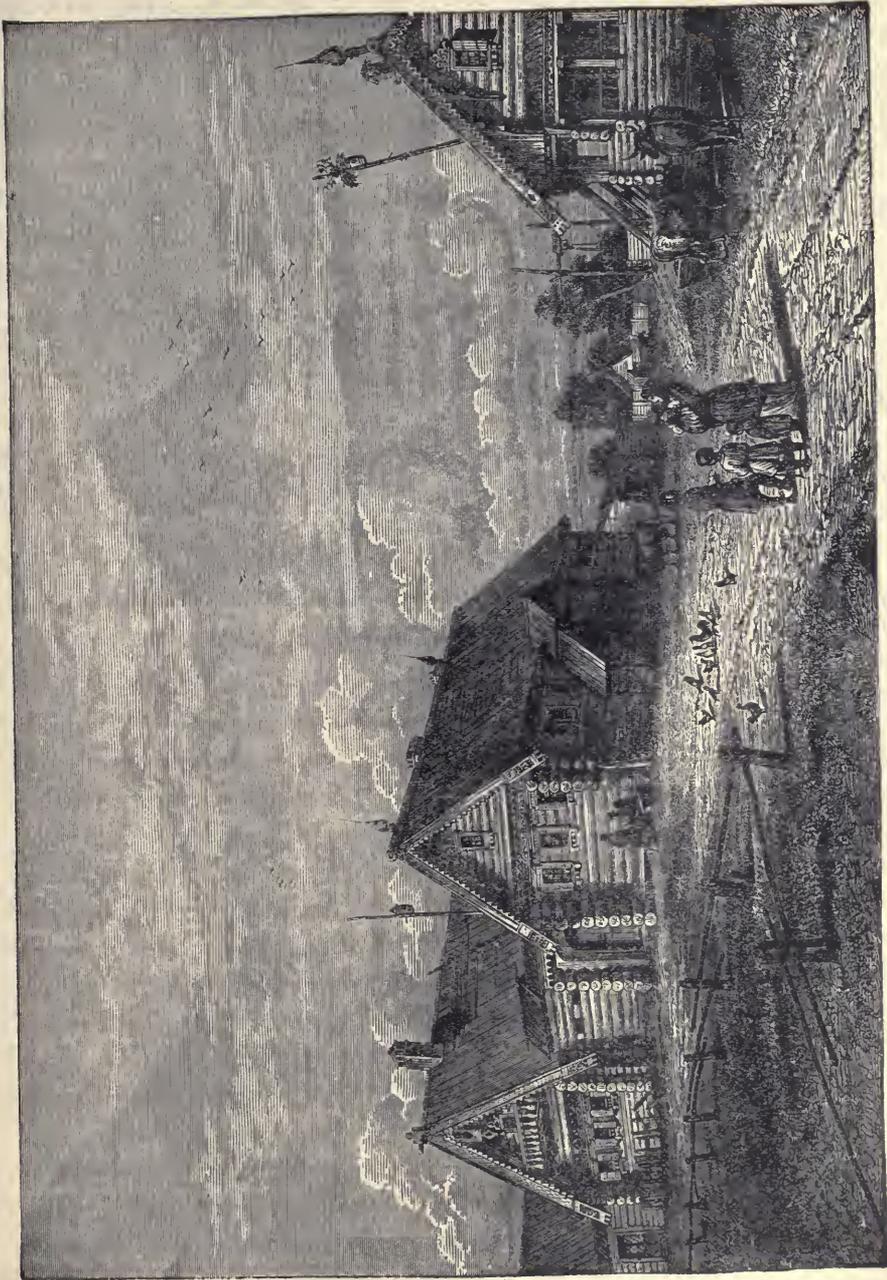
“How, then, has it come about that an autocrat, who is a sincere lover of peace and who has control of affairs in his own hands, has brought his country to the verge of war?

AUTOCRATS AND OTHER STATESMEN.

“In the first place it must be remembered that autocrats, like ordinary statesmen in other forms of government, do not always foresee the ultimate consequences of their decisions, and are liable to find themselves unexpectedly in a situation from which war is the only means of exit consistent with the national interests and the national honour. Even the pacific Mr. Gladstone let himself be drawn into the Egyptian campaign, and afterwards drifted dangerously near to a great war with Russia.

“It must be remembered, further, that the autocratic form of government has its drawbacks as well as its advantages in matters of foreign policy. It does not require to watch and be guided by the ever-changing currents of public opinion, and it can therefore adopt a *politique de longue haleine*; but it is not nearly so independent of popular sentiment as is commonly supposed, for its strength lies in its being the representative of national conceptions and national aspirations, and if it fails to be true to these it weakens itself. He would be a very bold Tsar who would sacrifice a great national interest to love of peace or any other personal feeling.

“If ever a Tsar was justified in disregarding the views of the ultra-patriotic section of his subjects it was Alexander II. when he



A RUSSIAN VILLAGE

accepted the decisions of the Congress of Berlin in order to avoid a great European struggle, but there is no doubt that that wise, courageous act diminished his popularity and prestige. Whether Nicholas II. has inherited all the civic courage of his grandfather remains to be seen.

“If he desires peace in the sense of being ready to sacrifice to it certain material and political interests, he should lose no time in transferring the conduct of the diplomatic negotiations from his Viceroy to his Foreign Office.

“The gallant admiral may be as wise, prudent, and conciliatory as his friends represent him to be; but he has not the experience and traditional dexterity of the Foreign Office officials, and he seems to have conducted the negotiations hitherto in such a way that a diplomatic retreat can now hardly be effected without some loss of prestige.

“Under the direction of the Foreign Office officials the strategic operation could be carefully veiled, and the loss of prestige, if unavoidable, would be reduced to a minimum.”

CHAPTER III.

OPENING VICTORIES FOR JAPAN.

In the Campaign Against the Chinese 1894—Brilliant Plans Carried Out with Genius for Fighting.

THREE centuries ago the Japanese invaded Korea, an ancient province of China, and swept it clear of all that was venerable or otherwise beautiful, and it has never recovered its favorable characteristics. The geographical situation was unfortunate between China and Japan, and the people were wasted by disorder and strife. The people are of Mongolian stock, occupying a sort of intermediate stage between the Mongolian Tartar and the Japanese. It is impossible to confound them either with the latter or with the Chinese; and a Korean would, to any one who has traveled in the country, be a known man in any city in the world. It has been supposed by some writers, who have observed a different variety with blue eyes and fair hair in Korea itself, that there is also a Caucasian element in the stock; but this hypothesis has not found scientific confirmation.

A rumor that Russia was about to establish a protectorate over Korea in 1888 was officially denied, although it is known she has long had her eye on that peninsula.

The country is about as large, and in some respects resembles Great Britain. The war between Japan and China, made famous by the valor and victories on land and sea of the Japanese, was about Korea, and broke out July 22d, 1894. The feud between the two countries was long standing, and the contention was concerning Korea. The news of the war came from Shanghai.

Korea is a peninsula extending down from the mainland and is in close proximity to Japan. In area it is nearly twice as large as the State of Pennsylvania. The average width of Korea is 135 miles, and the whole length is about 600 miles. There are eight provinces, each with a Governor. The King's revenues, which are

considerable, are obtained chiefly by the letting of lands and from a tithe of all the produce. The King owns nearly all the land property.

The people are great sufferers through this system of land grabbing and tax farming. Grinding poverty holds them in a relentless grasp.

The capital proper is Seoul, a walled town of about 250,000 inhabitants, twenty-five miles inland.

It takes 3000 "cash" to equal 75 cents of our money. It is all a Korean pony can do to carry \$15 in "cash." In the country districts coins of a greater value than "cash" are of no use; one cannot get change for them.

The Koreans are tall, well-formed men, very like the Chinese of the better class. Indeed, Korea in many ways is a small duplicate of China. A Korean's great weakness is hats. His imagination runs wild on hats, and he wears a vast variety of them.

NEVER NAMED A KING UNTIL HE DIED.

It was the old style, the king must not be named on account of his holy character. When he died his nameless successor put the distinction of a name upon the corpse.

The Russians long wanted an open Asiatic port to replace Vladivostock, which is icebound in winter time. Port Lazareff, or Gen-San, as the natives call it, about the middle of the east coast of Korea, would suit them, but a Russian harbor there could hardly be accepted by Great Britain, considering that she gave up Port Hamilton on the condition of no Russian port being established in the Japanese Sea.

At Yokohama, July 22, 1894, it was reported that the war feeling was running high and the whole nation was much impressed with the refusal of the Government to keep out of the Korean treaty ports at the request of China. In the direct negotiations between Tokio and Peking, China ignored the Japanese and there was trouble about the prevailing influence. Japan was exasperated about the assassination of a Korean rebel, and the welcome the murderer received in China. A very important

reason for the war was Japan feared, with justice, that China was about to settle her difficulties with Russia by allowing the latter to occupy a port on the east coast of Korea. Finally, both countries believed themselves to possess powerful forces of the European kind, and there was confidence on both sides.

Since 1874 conscription is law in Japan, and every male inhabitant in the country is subject to military service from seventeen to forty years of age.

The Japanese in the war with China were well armed and their artillery admirable. They were, however, inferior in cavalry, and in that alone they are not likely to prove themselves equal to the Cossacks. The deficiency is, Japan has to depend upon an inferior breed of horses. The copy of the navy of Japan was especially English.

JAPANESE ARMIES ALWAYS GOOD.

A well informed correspondent wrote to the *London Times* in the highest terms of the equipment and admirable military temper of the Japanese army. "The Chinese," he said, have sent an army to Korea. But it would be as reasonable to match brave men armed with pitchforks against brave men armed with rifles as to pit man for man, the Chinese in their present condition against the Japanese.

"The Japanese are armed with the Murat magazine rifle, and there is no better rifle in Europe."

Troops that were in the Chinese war are thus described:—"they remind me most of Indian Goorkhas, and of all native and colonial troops that I have seen—and I have seen most of them—I would, next to Goorkhas, prefer a regiment of Japanese. They are brave, temperate, patient and energetic, and though the Chinese might be made, under European officers, as fine soldiers as they are, at this moment they are about two hundred years behind them.

"The first battle of the Japanese and Chinese war was obstinate. The Chinese flag ship after fighting stubbornly for over an hour, displayed flags of surrender, and the Japanese men-of-war were

approaching her, when she suddenly discharged torpedoes, which, however, the Japanese were able to dispose of.

“The Japanese were as expert with torpedoes ten years ago as now. One of the Japanese war ships got within a short distance of the transport Kow Shing and discharged a torpedo at her. The missile was well directed and struck the transport fairly. A terrific explosion followed and the Kow Shing began at once to fill.

“Prior to the discharge of the torpedo the crew of the transport, which was armed, and the military force on board of her, made a hard fight against the attacking force. Many of those on board of her were shot dead on her deck. Of two thousand Chinese troops only forty were saved.

JAPANESE AND CHINESE SEA FIGHTS.

“Another spirited battle between the Chinese and Japanese fleets was fought July 30th. After a fierce fight the Chinese ironclad man-of-war Chen Yuen, the largest and most recently built ship in the Chinese navy, was sunk, and two Chinese cruisers were captured by the Japanese.

“The two Chinese cruisers were the Chih Yuen and Ching Yuen. It was reported that another cruiser, the Foo Tshing, was also destroyed. The Chinese fleet carried about one thousand men, most of whom were drowned. Among the killed were two German officers attached to the Chen Yuen,

“The Chen Yuen was a battle ship of 7400 tons displacement, carrying 14½ inches compound armor at the water line. Her battery included four 12-inch guns protected by an armored breastwork, and two smaller Krupps, eleven Hotchkiss cannon, two 8¼-inch and 6-inch Krupps in her main battery and a secondary battery of Hotchkiss revolving cannon. She also had tubes for Whitehead torpedoes.

“The Chen Yuen was a sister ship of the Ting Yuen and was the most powerful warship in the Chinese navy with the exception of the Ting Yuen.”

In August, 1894, the Japanese crowded troops into Korea. The Chinese were slow in making ready for heavy fighting ashore.

The Chinese were early in September massed at Ping Pong, which was a royal seat. The battles that gave the Japanese the lead were fought at this place on the 13th and 16th of September.

The first dispatch announcing the battle of Ping-Yang was dated at Shanghai, September 17th, and was as follows:

“The Japanese attacked and carried Ping-Yang (Ping-An) on Saturday and Sunday after a stubborn resistance. The Japanese lost eight hundred killed and wounded. Twenty thousand Chinese surrendered.

A BIG BATTLE WITH CHINESE.

“On Thursday, September 15th, a Japanese column from Pong-San made a reconnoissance in force, drawing the fire of the Chinese forts and thus ascertained their position. The column then fell back in good order with little loss. By Friday night all the Japanese were in position for a combined attack upon the enemy. The Gensan column threatened the left flank of the Chinese, the Pong-San column menaced the Chinese centre, while the Hwang Hai column operated against the right, which had been reinforced the day before by a detachment of marines from the fleet at the mouth of the Ta-tong River. The Chinese had utilized the old defences at Ping-Yang and thrown up new works, making the position an exceptionally strong one.

“The battle was opened on Saturday at daybreak by a Japanese cannonade of the Chinese works, which was continued without cessation until afternoon, the Chinese responding. The work with the heavy guns showed good practice.

“At about two o'clock a body of infantry was thrown forward by the Japanese, and maintained a rifle fire upon the enemy until dusk. Throughout the day only the Pong-San column was engaged. The Chinese defense had suffered greatly, but the losses were small, the Japanese gaining positions that flanked the Chinese. The second attack by the Japanese was made at three o'clock, Sunday morning, September 16th, with admirable precision. The Chinese lines, which were so strong in front, were found to be weak in the rear, and here the attack was a perfect success. The Chinese were completely

taken by surprise and in a panic. Hundreds were cut down, and those who escaped death, finding themselves surrounded at every point, broke and fled. Some of Viceroy Li Hung Chang's European drilled troops stood their ground and were cut down to a man. Half an hour after the attack was opened the positions at Ping-Yang (Ping-An) were in possession of the Japanese.

"It was estimated that 20,000 Chinese soldiers were engaged in the battle. The Japanese captured immense stores of provisions and munitions of war and hundreds of colors. The Chinese loss was estimated at 16,000 killed, wounded and taken prisoners.

"The number of the Chinese who were killed was estimated at 2,300.

"The Japanese loss was only 30 killed and 270 wounded, including 11 officers. They landed their best troops at Gensan, on the east coast, at Chemulpo, and at the mouth of the Ta-tong.

FINE JAPANESE STRATEGY.

"The main body of the army went from Chemulpo to the Korean capital, Seoul, and then advanced northward to meet the Chinese forces, which crossed the northeastern boundary of Korea in the latter part of July. Japan prevented the Chinese from sending reinforcements by sea direct to Korea by the use she made of her fleet, one portion of which kept the Chinese warships occupied in the Gulf of Pechili, while another protected the transports carrying troops to Chemulpo, the Yalu River and other points.

"The Northern and Eastern Japanese armies found themselves confronted by seven forts and earthworks, all well armed and manned, while behind each fort large numbers of Chinese troops could be seen to be encamped.

"There were two earthworks on the banks of the Tai Dong, opposite to the city, and two forts on the hillside among the pine trees. It was at these points that the Chinese forces, confidently expecting an attack from the east, had gathered in greatest strength, and it was Major-General Oshima who had been detailed to attack the enemy here.

“The Chinese evidently had every confidence in the security of their position, and huge flags, upon which were inscribed the names of the various commanding generals, were flaunted proudly in every direction.

“The ‘mixed’ or Eastern army, under command of Major-General Oshima, had been re-enforced by another detachment from the south, and was the first to begin the battle. All attention was at once centred upon this point, as had been expected, and the northern, western and central forces at once advanced on the Chinese forts from the rear.

A JAPANESE VICTORIOUS CHARGE.

“Now the Japanese charged upon the hillside forts, but the Chinese used their Krupps and Gatling guns with great effectiveness, and Major Tatemi quickly divided his detachment which had undertaken the charges into two wings. As they neared the fort, the Chinese fire ceased, but when the Japanese troops had reached the walls the Chinese stormed out upon them with a desperation born of despair, and a terrible hand-to-hand encounter ensued, the Japanese killing over fifty Chinese with their bayonets at one spot alone, while the rest of the garrison fled. The Japanese then took possession of the fort.

“This was their first step toward victory, and occurred at seven o’clock in the morning. ‘From the outset it was recognized that the scene of the principal conflict would be the Valley of the Taitong (or Daido) River, in which many good defensive positions could be chosen by our foe and from which, in case of a success to their arms, they could descend by more than one avenue and menace our ports around Seoul from several points.

“The Japanese design was to seize the large towns along the Taitong and make the northern part of the peninsula untenable, while preparing for more extensive feats still to be essayed.

“When the soldiers had satisfied themselves as to the precise object of attack, the feeling of exhaustion and weariness which few have been able to resist vanished.

“The machinery set at work to crush the Chinese in their

chosen stronghold was not confined to the force commanded by General Nodsu. Experience had shown at Asan and elsewhere that the faculty of flight is one in which our enemies exhibit greater capacity than in any other, and it was assumed that if threatened by a determined onset in their front, they would sooner or later seek to escape."

Perfect discipline is the controlling rule in the Japanese service, but it was evident to every beholder that from the moment the Taitong came in view of the foremost skirmishers each hour of restraint was a vexation and a grief to the whole mass of troops.

"The whole region was full of brave associations, dear to the heart of every Japanese who cherished the memory of his country's glories in the past. It was in the valley of the Taitong that the warriors of Hidrioshi, the great Taiko, performed their most daring exploits during the invasion of the sixteenth century.

"Within the walls of Ping-Yang they made their heroic stand against the Tartar hordes."

This campaign was elaborated in its strategy, and a great blow was struck. The Chinese were defeated and captured. A Chinese army of 20,000 disappeared in their graves, or in prison camps, and "a quantity of treasure, roughly calculated to be worth from \$70,000 to \$100,000, was seized in the houses occupied by the commanding generals, together with dozens of bags filled with copper and iron 'cash' of the country."

CHAPTER IV.

HERBERT SPENCER AND JAPAN.

A Wonderful Letter from the Philosopher Spencer, that is of Profound Concern in the Place Held for and Against European Empires.

THE recent death and cremation of Herbert Spencer was noticed by all the people of civilized countries. He left one of the most minute and elaborated wills ever written, all duly attested, giving directions for all contingencies. One of the first provisions of the philosopher's care-taking of himself after death was that he should be cremated in a coffin with a loose bottom, to give the fire a chance to consume, and he was particular about the furnace. His papers were in wonderful order and the disposition of them directed with painstaking.

The most remarkable of the letters meant for publication after his death was one going into the public policy of Japan, and offering advice regarding the treatment of foreigners, in the best interests of mankind.

The first publication of the letter in which Mr. Spencer gave Japan a farewell token of respect, and lesson in statesmanship, was from the pen of a Tokio correspondent for English journals. The date of the letter was December 20th, 1903, opening with this sentence :

"It is not from Japan, perhaps, that Herbert Spencer's admirers would expect an interesting contribution to the world's knowledge of his views. Yet upon no nation, probably, did the great philosopher's teachings produce a deeper impression than upon the Japanese. They could not, when they reopened their gates to foreign intercourse, accept the externals alone of an alien civilization.

"They had to consider its moral side also. But in what did that morality consist? In Christianity, the missionaries said.

Christianity, however, the Japanese had been taught by tradition to hold directly responsible for building barriers of isolation around the Far East in the 16th and 17th centuries, and Christianity they regarded as an agent of western political aggression.

"Then, too, the modern struggle between science and Christianity had entered an acute phase just at that time, and to this nation of eager students, who saw in science the basis of all progress, the theory of evolution expounded by men like Darwin and Spencer appealed as a creed much more satisfying than the supernatural tenets of what appeared to them to be a partially discredited faith."

Mr. Spencer's letter has become an indispensable part of the historical records of Japan, and at this juncture the bearing of it is of importance. There are a few italics that were by Mr. Spencer in his letter, that prove the extent and exactness he wished to give his expressions, and that he authorized the publication of the letter, after his death, and left no room for discretion by his appointed friends in dealing with the document, that if issued in his declining years and last days would arouse antagonism.

MOST REMARKABLE LETTER OF HERBERT SPENCER.

The Japan letter is the most remarkable of his productions. He meant it simply as good advice. The weird peculiarity of the letter, which has a flavor truly Oriental, will be better understood after the Tokio correspondent's account of its origin is given:

"From the middle of the 19th century until its final 15 years, John Stuart Mill, Charles Darwin, and Herbert Spencer held captive the intelligence of new Japan.

"The works of Darwin and Mill were soon rendered into Japanese equivalents for the many novel terms they contained being readily manufactured from the ideographic vocabulary, far the most elastic and capable instrument of speech that exists. Spencer's volumes were translated more tardily.

"Of his 'Synthetic Philosophy' two volumes only have as yet been put into Japanese dress. But to thousands of students the originals are familiar, and, though the Spencerian idol lost

many worshippers from the time when, Japanese jurists and statesmen having begun to import German material for drafting codes and compiling Constitutions, Japanese studentship also turned to the same source for philosophic inspiration, Spencer, Darwin, and Mill continue to be the ethical guides of many of Japan's leading men.

"Among the sincerest disciples of the English philosopher may be reckoned Baron Kentaro Kaneko. His name is not unfamiliar in Europe and America. Educated in the United States, he graduated at Harvard, and subsequently held several important Oriental positions in Japan, where he has always been regarded as Marquis Ito's principal lieutenant.

A DISCIPLE OF HERBERT SPENCER IN JAPAN.

— "It was largely by Baron Kaneko—his title of nobility is a reward of merit—that the machinery of the two Houses of the Diet was organized, and the opening of the National Assembly found him in the position of Chief Secretary of the Upper Chamber. That was in 1891. A year previously he had been elected a member of the Association of International Law, an institution whose proceedings were anxiously watched by the Japanese nation, then struggling with desperate energy to emerge from the ostracism of extra-territoriality.

"One of the early essays read before the association was by Sir Travers Twiss. He strongly advocated the maintenance of the extra-territorial system in all Oriental countries, and the thesis of a jurist so eminent naturally produced much effect. Baron Kaneko determined that his admission to the association's ranks should be utilized at once for the purpose of combating this conservative view and conveying to the jurists of the nations a juster knowledge of Japan's claims to special consideration.

"He sought and obtained permission from his Government to visit Geneva, where the association was to hold its session in 1892, and, though undertaking the enterprise in a private capacity, he carried with him statistical material such as, of course, had not been accessible to Sir Travers Twiss and his fellow-thinkers. One

of his earnest hopes in connection with this journey was that he might find an opportunity to meet Herbert Spencer, at the spring of whose philosophy he had drunk such deep draughts.

“Passing through America, he asked his friend, Mr. John Fisk, to give him a letter of introduction. Mr. Fisk demurred. He spoke of the philosopher’s retiring habits, and of the strong probability that such a letter would merely expose its bearer to rebuff, as had been the case in several previous instances.

THE JAPAN BARON AND ENGLISH PHILOSOPHER.

“But Baron Kaneko, willing to take the risk, urged the writing of the letter. This, however, he did not, on reaching England, carry direct to Spencer’s residence. He enclosed it in a covering epistle, which set forth the writer’s hopes and his reasons for entertaining them. The reply was immediate. Spencer invited Baron Kaneko to visit him at his house, and the first interview lasted two hours.

“The visitor found that his host had collected a quantity of matter relating to Japanese history, politics, manners, customs, and religious beliefs, and very soon Baron Kaneko was undergoing an exhaustive cross-examination about the meaning of this, the relations of that, or the significance of the other. Herbert Spencer expressed the keenest satisfaction.

“It transpired that he had been vainly seeking intelligible solutions of many Japanese problems, to which Baron Kaneko now furnished the key. To prolong the conversation, he drove Baron Kaneko to the latter’s hotel *en route* for an appointment of his own elsewhere, and at parting he announced his intention of proposing his Japanese acquaintance for honorary membership of the Athenæum Club, ‘where,’ said Spencer, ‘I generally lunch every day, and we can have many opportunities of meeting and talking.’

“The programme was carried out. Very soon Baron Kaneko received a notice of membership, accompanied with an invitation to lunch with the philosopher next day. That was the beginning of very intimate relations, maintained subsequently by correspondence. Baron Kaneko, by his essay read before the Association of

International Law in Geneva, and by converse with the members, had succeeded in correcting many false impressions and removing many prejudices. He had also been able to obtain most satisfactory information in London.

“From prominent officials of the Conservative Government, which had just gone out, and of the Liberal Government, which had just come in, he had learned that, had the former remained in power a few months longer, Japan’s aspirations would have been gratified, and that the latter sympathized equally with her cause.

“He broached this subject to Herbert Spencer, confidently looking to find encouragement, approval, and assistance. Instead, he found dissent and dissuasion.

RECEIPT FOR ORIENTALS TO BE INDEPENDENT.

“For any Oriental nation desiring to preserve its independence and its integrity, the philosopher recommended the largest possible measure of isolation from the Occident, and, where isolation was not completely attainable, then the preservation of any system, such as extra-territoriality, which might contribute to restrict intercourse.

“In vain Baron Kaneko expounded the spirit of the policy adopted by Japan at the time of the Restoration (1867); explained the consistency and perseverance of her efforts to qualify for admission to the rank and file of the Occidental comity; dwelt upon the earnestness of her aspirations, and insisted that the road to safety lay really in the direction of liberal progress, free intercourse, and protection by imitation. Herbert Spencer’s views remained unshaken. He had formed them, he said, after long study of ethical and historical problems, and he could not divest himself of his convictions.

“Finally, in deference to Baron Kaneko’s request, he reduced his opinions to writing in the following form, the italics being Spencer’s own:—

“Fairfield, Pewsey, Wilts, Aug. 26, 1892.

“My Dear Sir,—Your proposal to send translations of my two letters to Count Ito, the newly-appointed Prime Minister, is quite satisfactory. I very willingly give my assent.

“Respecting the further questions you ask, let me, in the first place, answer generally that the Japanese policy should, I think, be that of *keeping Americans and Europeans as much as possible at arm's length*. In the presence of the more powerful races your position is one of chronic danger, and you should take every precaution to give as little foothold as possible to foreigners.

“It seems to me that the only forms of intercourse which you may with advantage permit are those which are indispensable for the exchange of commodities—importation and exportation of physical and mental products.

“No further privileges should be allowed to people of other races, and especially to people of the more powerful races, than is absolutely needful for the achievement of these ends. Apparently you are proposing by revision of the treaty with the Powers of Europe and America to open the whole Empire to foreigners and foreign capital. I regret this as a fatal policy.

RECOMMENDS JAPAN TO STUDY INDIA.

“If you wish to see what is likely to happen, study the history of India. Once let one of the more powerful races gain a *point d'appui* and there will inevitably in course of time grow up an aggressive policy which will lead to collisions with the Japanese; these collisions will be represented as attacks by the Japanese which must be avenged, as the case may be; a portion of territory will be seized and required to be made over as a foreign settlement; and from this there will grow eventually subjugation of the entire Japanese Empire.

“I believe that you will have great difficulty in avoiding this fate in any case, but you will make the process easy if you allow of any privileges to foreigners beyond those which I have indicated.

“In pursuance of the advice thus generally indicated, I should say, in answer to your first question, that there should be, not only a prohibition of foreign persons to hold property in land, but also a refusal to give them leases, and a permission only to reside as annual tenants.

“To the second question I should say decidedly prohibit to

foreigners the working of the mines owned or worked by government. Here there would be obviously liable to arise grounds of difference between the Europeans or Americans who worked them and the government, and these grounds of quarrel would be followed by invocations to the English or American governments or other Powers to send forces to insist on whatever the European workers claimed, *for always the habit here and elsewhere among the civilized peoples is to believe what their agents or sellers abroad represent to them.*

“In the third place, in pursuance of the policy I have indicated, you ought also to keep the coasting trade in your own hands and forbid foreigners to engage in it. This coasting trade is clearly not included in the requirement I have indicated as the sole one to be recognized—a requirement to facilitate exportation and importation of commodities. The distribution of commodities brought to Japan from other places may be properly left to the Japanese themselves, and should be denied to foreigners, for the reason that again the various transactions involved would become so many doors open to quarrels and resulting aggressions.

MARRIAGE OF ASIATICS AND EUROPEANS.

“To your remaining question respecting the intermarriage of foreigners and Japanese, which you say is ‘now very much agitated among our scholars and politicians’ which you say is one of the most difficult problems,’ my reply is that, as rationally answered, there is no difficulty at all. It should be positively forbidden. It is not at root a question of social philosophy. It is at root a question of biology.

“There is abundant proof, alike furnished by the intermarriages of human races and by the interbreeding of animals, that when the varieties mingled diverge beyond a certain slight degree *the result is inevitably a bad one* in the long run.

“I have myself been in the habit of looking at the evidence bearing on this matter for many years past, and my conviction is based on numerous facts derived from numerous sources.

“This conviction I have within the last half-hour verified,

for I happen to be staying in the country with a gentleman who is well known and has had much experience respecting the interbreeding of cattle; and he has just, on inquiry, fully confirmed my belief that when, say of the different varieties of sheep, there is an interbreeding of those which are widely unlike, the result, especially in the second generation, is a bad one—there arise an incalculable mixture of traits, and what may be called a chaotic constitution. And the same thing happens among human beings—the Eurasians in India, the half-breeds in America, show this.

“The physiological basis of this experience appears to be that any one variety of creature in course of many generations acquires a certain constitutional adaptation to its particular form of life, and every other variety similarly acquires its own special adaptation.

DO NOT MIX DIVERGENT VARIETIES.

“The consequence is that, if you mix the constitution of two widely divergent varieties which have severally become adapted to widely divergent modes of life, you get a constitution which is adapted to the mode of life of neither—a constitution which will not work properly, because it is not fitted for any set of conditions whatever. By all means, therefore, peremptorily interdict marriages of Japanese with foreigners.

“I have for the reasons indicated entirely approved of the regulations which have been established in America for restraining the Chinese immigration, and had I the power I would restrict them to the smallest possible amount, my reasons for this decision being that one of two things must happen.

“If the Chinese are allowed to settle extensively in America, they must either, if they remain unmixed, form a subject race standing in the position, if not of slaves, yet of a class approaching to slaves; or, if they mix, they must form a bad hybrid. In either case, supposing the immigration to be large, immense social mischief must arise, and eventually social disorganization.

“The same thing will happen if there should be any considerable mixture of European or American races with the Japanese.

“You see, therefore, that my advice is strongly conservative

in all directions, and I end by saying, as I began—*keep other races at arm's length as much as possible.*

“I give this advice in confidence. I wish that it should not transpire publicly, at any rate during my life, for I do not desire to rouse the animosity of my fellow-countrymen.

“I am sincerely yours,

“HERBERT SPENCER.

“P. S.—Of course, when I say I wish this advice to be in confidence, I do not interdict the communication of it to Count Ito, but rather wish that he should have the opportunity of taking it into consideration.’

“With regard to this remarkable letter, the writer stipulated only that it should not be published during his life-time. There is no evidence that to the day of his death he altered or modified the views the document embodies. In conversation he maintained his thesis stubbornly, agreeing, at last, with a certain display of amused assurance, to await the verdict of time and experience.

THE SHADOW OF RUSSIA ON ASIA.

“What he would say now, as the shadow of Russia creeps steadily and ominously over the East Asian continent, it is not very hard to guess. He would point to the phenomenon as proof of the justice of his theory.

“But to men like Baron Kaneko, the events of the immediate past present themselves in a different light. They say that Herbert Spencer’s route would never have led Japan to an alliance with England, would never have placed her independence and integrity upon the secure basis they now occupy, and that, were China now walking in the same path, there had been no Far Eastern Question.”

The part the Spencer letter will play in the future of Japan, could not, in a time of profound peace, have been easily or precisely ascertained; and in these troublous times, imagination must supplement information. The London *Times* leader on the letter, its evolution and possibilities, gives the latest touch of the history and representative relation between the Empires of Britain and Japan. We quote the “leader.”

From the *Times* of December 18th, 1904: "All know, the transformation of Japan from a State of an Eastern type, with much of the prejudice, antipathy, and ignorant hatred of the outer world implied therein, into a modern and progressive State, has been rapid beyond all example.

"Stages which Western countries took centuries to traverse Japan has passed through in two or three decades. With singular aptitude, and, on the whole, with discrimination, she has seized upon and assimilated many of the best elements in Western civilization; and to-day we see her using them with energy and skill, and as much initiative as if they had been of indigenous growth.

"One of the turning points in this process was the abolition of the extra-territorial privileges of foreign residents and of the Consular jurisdiction of foreign Powers, the symbol of the condition of tutelage in which she was assumed to stand towards them.

LABORS OF A JAPANESE BARON.

"One of those who labored earnestly and with the most effect to remove this badge of inferiority was Baron Kaneko. Educated at Harvard, and author of a well-known work on the Japanese Constitution, which he had helped to construct, he was peculiarly qualified to press persuasively upon the statesmen and jurists of Europe the duty of recognizing Japan as one of the civilized Powers of the world, with a right to all that pertains thereto; and before the *Institute de Droit International* at Geneva he put his case with skill.

"For several reasons he was desirous of obtaining the approval and assistance of Mr. Herbert Spencer, whose philosophy he, in common with many progressive Japanese, had studied with ardor. He naturally expected that the philosopher would sympathize with his desire to break down walls of separation between Japan and the Western world, and would welcome every attempt to impart to the former the knowledge, the arts, and the industries of the latter.

"No one was more severe than the late philosopher in his strictures on the obscurantism of the ruling classes of this and other countries or on the vices which he detected lurking under patriotism. No one sat more lonely to all that is implied in nationality.

“ And yet in the curious letter which we print is given advice as narrow, as much imbued with antipathy to real progress, as ever came from a self-sufficient, short-sighted Mandarin, bred in the contempt and hatred of ‘barbarians.’

“ Keep out the foreigner ; have as little communication with him as possible ; do not let him get a footing in your land ; act on the principles which Chinese statesmen attempted to pursue—such was substantially the philosopher’s advice to reformers who took counsel with him.

“ ‘The Japanese policy should be that of keeping Americans and Europeans as much as possible at arm’s length.’ ‘You should take every precaution to give as little foothold as possible to foreigners.’ ‘There should be not only a prohibition of foreign persons to hold property in land, but also a refusal to give them leases, and a permission only to reside as annual tenants.’ Decidedly prohibit to foreigners the working of the mines owned or worked by Government.’ ‘Keep the coasting trade in your own hands, and forbid foreigners to engage in it.’

THE POLICY OF NON-INTERCOURSE.

“ Except so far as is indispensable for the exchange of commodities, the importation and exportation of physical and mental products, there should be no intercourse. Less enlightened minds might desire the breaking down of the barriers between nations and races, the removal of the fruitful sources of quarrels and strife and bloodshed. Mr. Spencer would have them retained.

“ And so to the question what he thought of the marriage of foreigners and Japanese his categorical answer was, ‘It should be positively forbidden. . . . The result is inevitably a bad one in the long run. . . . By all means, therefore, peremptorily interdict marriages of Japanese with foreigners.’

“ The sum and substance of the advice is not to cultivate close peaceful relations, not to efface or mitigate racial and national prejudices, not to know and understand and to feel charitably towards others, but to ‘keep other races at arm’s length as much as possible.’ Such was Mr. Herbert Spencer’s idea of ‘altruism’ in this matter.

“It is scarcely worth noticing the cautious postscript expressing his desire that the communication should not be published in his lifetime; ‘I do not desire to rouse the animosity of my countrymen.’ After all, it is not every one’s business to be heroic. A philosopher may plead that he is doing something better than coming out into the open to be fired at.

“It has often been noticed that in Japan as in Russia, and in fact wherever intelligent youth is suddenly brought face to face with western civilization, the teaching of COMTE, MILL, DARWIN, and SPENCER is seized with avidity, and for obvious reasons.

ENGLISH PHILOSOPHERS AND YOUNG JAPAN.

“Much of it is so palpable and portable, so easily grasped, and on first view so satisfying to the practical and material needs of the hour, so free apparently from the elements of superstition and prejudice which young Japan would cast out from its own borders, that it eagerly lays hold of the doctrines of those teachers, reproducing them often with exaggeration, and applying them crudely.

“This letter will be a shock to some of SPENCER’S disciples. They will feel much as they would if they discovered that their master, the incarnation of pure reason, wore an amulet, or trusted to some magical charm to ward off evil, or had a weakness for incantations. The letter would carry the intelligent back to the circle of ideas from which they have emerged.

“Here, expressed in language which the most bigoted Mandarin might borrow from the philosopher and adopt as his own, is the policy which for centuries China pursued, which checked her development, and which places her to-day in a position of helplessness beside her vigorous, receptive, teachable neighbour.

“The mature outcome of years of reflection was to recommend a policy of isolation which if practised by humanity must lead to enduring barbarism.

“Happily Japan has acted in a very different spirit, and perhaps the publication of this singular plea for arresting development and for Chauvinism on a large scale may inspire in some of

the open-minded Japanese who have sought in SPENCER counsel for the deepest needs of their country, doubts whether they must not also look elsewhere for some complement.

“Forces which the colossal egotism of the solitary thinker concealed from him count, it may be, for much in the development of a nation, even more, some of them, in the long run, than the rapid accumulation or assimilation of knowledge.

“A great experiment is being carried out in Japan by a singularly gifted people. Success seems assured.

“If the measure of it be large, and its continuance be unbroken, it will be because the best minds have recognized that something more is needed than the free ‘exchange of commodities.’

“After all, the strongest and most lasting States have rested on principles which Spencer’s epistle to young Japan ignores or contradicts. They have been courageous and expansive, and so have escaped the dry rot which sets in wherever the trust is in restrictions such as Mr. Spencer recommended.”

Certainly the English philosopher progressed according to this letter beyond the philosophy of Japan, and wandered backward some thousands of years, to celebrate, adore and apply the exclusive public policy of the Chinese. There would be no war certainly between the Japan and Russia Empires, if the former had accepted Spencer as the law-giver, and no occasion for England to appear as an ally of Japan against Russia.

Japan as another China could not have interested the world. Perhaps, after a war or two for progress, Japan may be as colossal in egotism and more patient in the histories and philosophies that lead to meditation, and the studies of the stories that light the lamps of experience.

CHAPTER V.

INNER AND OUTDOOR LIFE IN JAPAN.

Manners and Customs, Graces and Gayeties of the People—
Charms of the Country—Drolleries in Amusements—
Freaks of the Fantastic in Ceremony—Grandeur and
Beauty in Scenery—Giddy Games and Hideous Sports
in Streets and Theatres—The Grotesque in Art—Diver-
sions for Children—The Orchards and Gardens Beautiful
in their Bloom—The Old and New Times.

SEVERAL generations of Japanese have had a passion for the possession of Korea, and there have been burning enmities between Japan and China. The territory called Korea, has been disputed and it is in area nearly as large as Pennsylvania and New York. In order that Japan may become a power of the first class, she must have a hold on the Continent for her foundation. Further southward are the Philippines, that are under our protection, and spread between the sea of China and the great Pacific, far down into the tropical Pacific.

It is a Japanese tradition that the ancestors of the rulers of Japan are descended from an island chain that links Formosa with the greater island north.

The imagination of the Asiatics have had freedom in the stories, of that which happened before and about 660 B. C., when the first historical and exalted persons appeared on the islands that are Japan's Empire. One Zen-Mou the youngest of four sons was selected by his father who was on the throne, to succeed him when the boy was fifteen years old, and he had seven years to wait, and established himself as his father's successor. It was said that behind the islands over which the sun came up, their shores were so beautiful the gods formerly sought them, but they were held by barbarians, and the young king concluded to regain the lands of beauty, and did so, founding the Empire of the islands that had been beloved by the gods.

This chapter is not to discuss the Japan mythology, nor to celebrate the heroism of the descendants of the gods, who became Japanese for the love of the beauty of the country. The theme is the charms of the beauties of the scenery—the mountains, the



INTERIOR OF A JAPANESE THEATRE.

lakes and rivers, the forests and flowers, the arts, the gardens and the orchards, and that which is quaint and pleasing, in the destiny and manners and customs of the people, and the phenomenal attraction of the picturesque in the climate and the style of the homes of the most elevated and lowly of the people, it is possible that the lives of the monarchs has been written too long. There

was, it is said, a perpetual carnival in the sacred city of Kioto. The palaces are enclosed within a circuit of walls occupying the northeastern portion of the city. Long lines of trees, of great heights, which show above the distant roofs, gives a vague idea of the extent and tranquillity of the parks, in whose recesses the Imperial dwellings hide themselves from the profane eyes and noise of the city.

As it frequently happens that the Mikado abdicates in favor of the hereditary prince, in order to end his days in absolute seclusion, a special palace is reserved for him.

THE ISLAND THE GODS LOVE.

The beautiful island of Awatsi, which was the dwelling place of the gods, and the cradle of the national mythology of the Japanese. The low lands at its southern extremity are covered with a luxuriant vegetation, and the soil rises gently into cultivated or wooded hills until they touch the boundaries of a chain of mountains.

Europeans weary of the tropical climate or the burthen of business in China, might seek pure and strengthening air, and pass some weeks of repose on the shores of the Japanese Mediterranean. Travelers make out on what they call the Bay of the Mississippi, the summit of Fousi-yama, the "Matchless Mountain," an extinct volcano 12,450 feet above the level of the sea. It is fifty nautical miles from the coast, on the west of the bay.

The effect of this immense solitary pyramid, covered with snow, surpasses description. It lends inexpressible solemnity to the scenery of the Bay of Yeddo. The coasts of the Bay of Yeddo are tempting in the spring. From the heights on its borders the inland scene, stretching away to the foot of Fousi-yama, presents an uninterrupted succession of wooded hills and cultivated valleys.

Along the hedges in the orchards, and about the villages, tufts of flowers and foliage of dazzling hue stand out against the dark tints of a background of pines, firs, cedars, cypress, laurels, green oak, and bamboos.

Here we find the great white flowers of the wild mulberry;

there, camelias growing in the open country, as tall as our apple trees; everywhere, cherry trees, plum trees, peach trees, generally laden with double flowers, some quite white, others bright red, and sometimes white and red on the same branches; for many of the Japanese do not care at all for the fruit of these trees, but cultivate



FISHERS OF FUSAN, KOREA.

and graft them merely for the sake of the double flowers, and to vary or combine the species.

The bamboo, much employed in the capacity of a support to these trees, frequently lends his elegant foliage to the branches of young fruit trees which have no other adornment than their bunches of flowers. One loves the bamboo most when it grows in solitary groups, like a tuft of gigantic reeds. There is nothing more

picturesque in the whole landscape than these tall green polished stems, with their golden streaks and their tufted tops, and all around the chiefs the young slender offshoots with their feathered heads, and a multitude of long leaves streaming in the wind like thousands of fluttering pennons.

The bamboo groves are favorite subjects of study with the Japanese painters, whether they limit themselves to reproduce the graceful lines and harmonious effects, or enliven the picture by adding some of the live creatures which seek their verdant shelter—the little birds, the butterflies, and in lonely places, the weasel, the ferret, the black squirrel, and the red-faced brown monkey.

MARGINS OF FLOWERS ON THE ROADS.

All the waysides are bordered with violets, but they are scentless. The country produces a very small number of odiferous plants, and it is remarkable that the lark, the nightingale, and other singing birds are very rare. Perhaps the lack of perfume and of song, in the midst of all the wealth of luxuriant vegetation, helps to diminish the effect upon the imagination which it seems Japanese scenery ought to produce. It is certain that in contemplating it one does not experience that sense of dreamy exaltation and tenderness which is produced by the sight of a European landscape in the spring. Early in April the fields outside the woods are covered with buckwheat in full flower. In four or five weeks' time, on the lower ground, they will be reaping the barley and wheat sown in November. In Japan they sow corn as we plant potatoes, that is in regular, perfectly straight rows, and between each of these there is an interval of free space in which is already sprouting a peculiar species of beans, which will spring up when the field shall have been reaped.

An American lady tells of the Japan ladies dresses as follows :

“ A Japanese lady's dress will often represent a value of \$200, without counting the ornaments for her hair. A woman of the smaller shop-keeping class may have on her, when she goes out holiday-making, some \$40 or \$50 worth. A gentleman will rarely spend on his clothes as much as he lets his wife spend on hers.

Perhaps he may not have on more than \$60 worth. Thence, through a gradual decline in price, we come to the coolie's poor trapping's, which may represent as little as \$5, or even \$2, as he stands."

The lady we quote above, says :

"The women have fairer complexions than the men ; we saw several persons of rank, and even in the middle classes, who were perfectly white ; the ladies of the aristocracy regard excessive paleness as a mark of distinction.

"The mobility of expression and the great variety of physiognomy, which we remark amongst the Japanese, seem to be the result of an intellectual development more spontaneous, more original, and in short more free, than is to be met with amongst any other people in Asia.

EVERYBODY HAS AN AQUARIUM.

"Every family in easy circumstances possesses an aquarium, containing fish—red, silver, gold, transparent—some round as a ball, others ornamented with a long wide tail or fin, which performs the office of a rudder.

"The working population of the ancient Imperial cities has not changed for centuries. Amid institutions which have fallen into decrepitude it does not exhibit the slightest trace of the decadence and debility which are common to every class of Chinese society. China awakes in the mind at every moment the image of a worm-eaten, dusty edifice, inhabited by aged invalids. But in Japan there are really neither ruins nor dust, the fresh vegetation of its always green islands is matched by that appearance of unalterable youth which transmits itself generation after generation among the inhabitants of this happy country, who ornament even their last dwellings with the emblems of eternal spring.

"The tortoise and the heron, which figure frequently in the composition of perfume-vases and sacred candelabra, are emblems of immortality, or at least of longevity. The Foo, a mythological bird common to both China and Japan, is found upon the lintels of

the door of the Dairi, as an emblem of eternal happiness. These same mythological images, and others which it would take too long to enumerate, are reproduced in the designs of the rich stuffs worked in silk, gold and silver, which form the glory and the pride of the weavers of Kioto; and also in the carvings and engravings on plates of gold, silver, red copper, and steel, with



JAPANESE BUDDHIST PRIESTS.

which the native jewelers decorate the handles and the scabbards of swords, portable inkstands, pipes, tobacco-boxes, and other ornaments; in short, in all the innumerable utensils, pieces of plate, and lacquer and porcelain furniture, which constitute the wealth of Japanese households.

“The Court ladies pull out their eyebrows and replace them by two thick black patches painted half way up the forehead. Is

this done because these beauties with prominent cheek-bones are aware that the oval of their faces is not quite so perfect as it might be, or do they endeavor to lengthen it by this little feminine trick, which tends to place the eyelids, which Nature has put too low, in a more suitable position?

“The amplitude of their rich brocade garments leads us to think that at Kioto feminine luxury is measured by the quantity of silk that a Court lady can trail after her. But what can be the meaning of those two long tails which are seen on the right and left below the undulating drapery of the mantel? When the lady is walking, they obey each cadenced movement of her two little invisible feet; and, looked at from a distance, she seems to be wearing, not a robe, but a pair of long trailing trousers, which oblige her to advance on her knees. Such in fact is the effect which this custom is intended to produce. The ladies of the Court who are admitted to the presence of the Mikado are bound to appear as if they were approaching his Sacred Majesty on their knees.

THE PALACES ARE NOISELESS.

“No noise is ever heard in the interior of the palace except the rustling of silk on the rich carpets with which the mats are covered. Bamboo blinds intercept the light of day. Screens covered with marvellous paintings, damask draperies, velvet hangings, ornamented with knots of plaited silk in which artificial birds are framed, form the panels of the reception rooms. No article of furniture of any kind interferes with the elegant simplicity; in the corners there is, here, an aquarium of porcelain, with shrubs and natural flowers; there, a cabinet encrusted with mother-of-pearl, or an elegant table laden with numerous poetical anthologies of the old Empire, printed upon leaves of gold.

“The scent of the precious wood, the fine mats, and rich stuffs, mixes with the pure air which comes in on all sides from the open partitions. The young girls on duty in the palace bring tea from Oudsji and sweatmeats from the refectory of the Empress. This personage, called the Kisasi, who proudly rules over twelve other legitimate wives of the Mikado and a crowd of his con-

cubines, squats in proud isolation on the top step of the vast dais which rises above the whole. The ladies of honor and the women in waiting squat or kneel behind her at a respectful distance, composing groups which have the effect of beds of flowers, because each group, according to its hierarchical position, has its especial costume and its color.

“The folds of the garments of the Empress are arranged with such art that they surround her like a dazzling cloud of gauzy crape and brocade; and three vertical rays of gold surmount her diadem like the insignia of queen of flowers.”

THE LONGEVITY OF THE KINGS.

Zinmou was the first of the line of the Mikados, and the wonder of it was in its longevity, and the loyalty of the nation to the illustrious, and one can nearly assert, the immortal line. The descendants of the founders have been worshipped as the inheritors of gods and rulers for 2500 years, and the inheritors of the throne were a long-lived people. Zinmou lived one hundred and twenty years; the fifth Mikado lived one hundred and fourteen years; the sixth, one hundred and thirty-seven years; the seventh one hundred and twenty-eight years; the eighth, one hundred and six years; ninth, one hundred and eleven years; the eleventh and twelfth, each one hundred and forty years; the sixteenth, one hundred and eleven years; and seventeenth, who died in the 388th year of our era, attained the age of three hundred and eight years, or three hundred thirty years according to the version of some historians.

Seïmou, thirteenth Mikado, was ten feet high. The wives of the Mikados, who govern the Empire in the capacity of Regent, were equal in point of character to their venerable husbands. One of them, Zingou, A. D. 201, equipped a fleet, and, embarking at the head of a select army, crossed the Sea of Japan and conquered the Korea, from whence she returned just in time to give birth to a future Mikado.

One of the dramatic mysteries of the religion is seen in the Temple of Buddha, and, going to gaze upon it, in a transcendent home there is an incredible surprise, and to the visitor the illimit-

able space seemed to stretch from portal to portal down to the sea, a solitary and mysterious retreat prepares the mind for some supernatural revelation. The road leads far away from every habitation; in the direction of the mountain it winds about between hedges of tall shrubs. Finally we see nothing before us but the high road, going up and up in the midst of foliage and flowers; then it turns in a totally different direction, and, all of a sudden, at the end of the alley, we perceived that we were standing in front of an enormous idol of gilt wood, about twelve yards high, holding in its right hand a sceptre, in its left a lotus, and wearing a tiara composed of three rows of heads, representing the inferior divinities.

AN AWFUL IDOL OF BRASS.

This gigantic idol belongs to the religion of the auxiliary gods of the Buddhist mythology: the Amidas and the Quannons, intercessors who collect the prayers of men and transmit them to heaven. There is a great brazen divinity, squatting with joined hands, and the head slightly bent forward, in an attitude of contemplative ecstasy.

The involuntary amazement produced by the aspect of this great image soon gives place to admiration. There is an irresistible charm in the attitude of the Daïboudhs, as well as in the harmony of its proportions. The noble simplicity of its garments and the calm purity of its features are in perfect accord with the sentiment of serenity inspired by its presence. A grove, consisting of some beautiful groups of trees, forms the enclosure of the sacred place, whose silence and solitude are never disturbed. The small cell of the attendant priest can hardly be discerned among the foliage.

The altar, on which a little incense is burning at the feet of the Divinity, is composed of a small brass table ornamented by two lotus vases of the same metal and beautifully wrought. The steps of the altar are composed of large slabs forming regular lines. The blue of the sky, the deep shadow of the statue, the sombre color of the brass, the brilliancy of the flowers, the varied verdure of the hedges and the groves, fill this solemn retreat with the richest effect of light and color. The idol of the Daïboudhs, with the

platform which supports it, is twenty yards high; it is far from equal in elevation to the statue of St. Charles Borromeo, which may be seen from Arona on the borders of Lake Maggiore, but which affects the spectator no more than a trigonometrical signal post.

Kioto was formerly the literary centre of Japan. At present the ancient pontifical city possesses a specialty in albums containing miniatures; almanacs of the *Dairi*; religious books; romances and poems inscribed upon vellum paper spangled with gold stars. But the presses of Tokio are far more important in the number, variety, popularity and immense sale of their publications. The greater part of the literary novelties of the capital are produced by the Professors of the University or the principal pupils of the Interpreter's College.

THE FASHIONABLE STORIES ARE DIDACTIC.

They are almost all didactic, of a practical tendency, with an utilitarian aim. There are among them certain works which we may entitle the *Scientific Year*, the *Review of Inventions and Discoveries*, *Statistics of Europe and of North America*, the *Manual of Modern History*, the *Précis of Contemporary Geography*, the *Annals of Physical and Natural Sciences*, of *Medicine*, of *Navigation*, of *Mechanics* and of *Military and Naval Engineering*.

Though the sovereign holds his power from Heaven, the sole guarantee whereby he preserves that power resides in the support which he derives from the affection of his people. Finally, men who are supremely perfect have the faculty, not only of governing peoples, but of contributing to the development of beings, and of identifying themselves by their works with heaven and earth.

The alleged lower classes are passionately fond of listening to story-tellers and singers. Every day, at the cessation of labor and of traffic, groups of persons of both sexes may be seen about the workshops, or, at an angle of the cross roads, ranged in a semi-circle around the professional reciter.

National romances and legends are abandoned to the women who live by the trade of singers and musicians. They form a

very numerous class, but some of them are much less nomadic than the others, and of an evidently superior class. The most distinguished among the public singers go about accompanied by three or four musicians, and do not themselves play on any instrument.

The artistic productions of these feminine associations are at once dramatic and musical, and the effect is very charming when they play in the open air, on a fine summer evening, within a frame-work lightly constructed of bamboo, ornamented with climbing plants and garlands of colored-paper lanterns. •

ANNUAL DICTIONARIES OF CONVERSATION.

The ancient Encyclopædias, which consist of more than two hundred volumes, are replaced by a sort of Dictionary of Conversation published annually in a single volume adorned with a quantity of wood engravings. The ethnographical portion of this work is the most interesting. All that which relates to the clerical and political institutions of the Empire reduces itself to a dry nomenclature. The chapters devoted to the description of foreign nations are extremely tame and uncritical. One of the most categorical deals with the Spaniards and Portuguese, of whom it says, in so many words, that they have an extremely bad religion.

The old heroes of Japan, according to the dramatic open-air performers, are very fanciful monsters, for example :

“Nitan-Nosiro, the dauntless hunter, astride on the back of a gigantic wild boar—which has flung down and trodden under its hoofs all the companions of the hero—holds the furious monster between his knees and plunges his cutlass into its shoulder.

“Sousigé, one of the horsemen of the Mikado, finds his comrades squatting round a draught-board; he spurs his horse, and with one bound it stands in the center of the board motionless. on its hind feet, while its master, who has not lost his stirrups for a moment, sits as firmly in this difficult position as the equestrian statue of Peter the Great on its granite pedestal on the banks of the Neva.

“There is a wonderful archer, Tamétomo, who, to save bloodshed, called his two enemies of greatest strength, and, seated on a

rock, presented his bow "to them, holding it by the wood, and ordered them to try and bend it.

"Each seized it by both hands, and, setting their heels against the wood of the bow, they leaned back with all their weight and pulled the string with all their strength. Every effort was in vain; the bow yielded only when Tamétomo took it delicately between the finger and thumb of his right hand and shot an arrow, which was lost in the clouds."

This is, comparatively, a moderate story. The legends of Japan are marvellously fantastic.

THE WILD ANIMALS OF THE ISLANDS.

The forests, and pine and bamboo groves shelter great numbers of wild beasts, among which the monkey, the polecat, the badger, and especially the fox, furnish inexhaustible subjects for fantastic stories and drawings. Animals who attain to a great age end, like trees, in becoming endowed with a human soul and supernatural virtues. The polecat, when it is old, calls the wind and the clouds from the mountain-tops. The hail and rain obey him. He allows himself to be carried away upon the wings of the hurricane.

The traveler caught in the open country may courageously brave the tempest, but he cannot protect his face from being cut as if by a knife. This is the effect of the claws of the polecat, who passes him in the storm.

The Yama-tori, or silver pheasant, makes a mirror of his plumage. He is an invulnerable being. He does not fly from the sight of the sportsman; but woe to the latter if he attempt to harm him, or to pursue him into the defiles of the mountains, for he will never return.

Old wolves have the gift of metamorphosis. One especially large wolf suddenly disappeared from the country, in which he had long been the terror of travelers, but when they thought they might henceforth go their ways in safety they met, at nightfall, just at the corner of the wood, a beautiful girl, who carried a lantern, painted like a bouquet of roses, in her hand.

She is well known through all the country-side under the name of "the Beauty with the Rose-lantern." Alas! every traveler who has followed her has fallen into the jaws of the wolf. There was another girl, who, as seen from afar, had all the graces of her sex, but a man who saw her face to face beheld a demon.

There is a reversed picture, which represents an old man armed with a bamboo rake, of the sort which is used for raking the ears of rice or small shell-fish; an old woman holding a broom, with which she seems to be about to sweep up dead leaves. They stand together side by side, or they sit at the foot of an ancient cedar, whose cavernous trunk seems to be their abode.

TWO OLD FOLKS PLAY ADAM AND EVE.

The interpreters say the two personages are Adam and Eve, and the tortoise and the crane, two animals endowed with eternal peace and a very long life, frequently associated with them, and the good old man and old woman are exhibited at all wedding feasts, either in the form of a picture or as a table ornament. No doubt they symbolize to the young married couple domestic happiness, lasting to the extreme limit of old age, as the reward of a simple life and a faithful affection.

On the other hand there is a tree called Enoki, dedicated to unhappy households. It is said to have sprung up on the tomb of the first Japanese woman who was divorced.

Inaka, in a word, seen from a birds-eye view, looks like a park, or a continuous garden dotted with rural habitations; or it resembles a garland of verdure and flowers, cast round the faubourgs of the south and the districts of the west, and uniting them to the artisan's quarters, in the heart of the city and to the villages which extend to the rice fields.

When the orchards are in flower, the citizen, the painter, and the student, are seized with rural fancies; they fly from the labors and the pleasures of the capital, and hide themselves for a day, or for many days, if it be possible, among the rustic roofs of the tea houses. These charming retreats, rich with the beauties of nature, are innumerable. Most of them can hardly be distinguished from

the country houses in their neighborhood. Their vast roofs come down to the ground floor.

Domestic birds flutter or plume themselves in the sun, on the moss with which the roof is covered, and which rises to the summit, where we see long lines of iris in full flower. When there is no gallery, arbors of vines, or other climbing plants, shelter the grouped negligently upon the threshold. A limpid spring murmurs and flows along the path, which descends towards the plain across the gardens and vineyards, the poppy and bean fields.

SEEKING THE INSPIRATION OF BEAUTY.

Poets of the spring, choristers of the summer, painters and artists who seek for new inspirations, delight to abandon themselves from morning to evening to charming study and reverie among the orchards of cherry, plum, pear and peach trees, among the groves of bamboo, citrons, oranges, pines and cypress, which surround the temples, the gardens of the tea-houses, and a multitude of classic retreats of the Muses of Japan. When night has come they meet in excellent inns, and combine with the pleasures of the table the enjoyments of society, where conversation alternates with songs and music.

A banqueting hall in the Gankiro is very curiously decorated; the walls are hung with beautiful sketches, either in "genre" or in landscape, some in Chinese ink, others colors, but all painted on pieces of cardboard cut after the pattern of the different sorts of fans used in the far East. But the greatest curiosity of the Gankiro is its children's theatre. All the actors are young girls from seven to thirteen years of age, whose education consists of reading, writing, arithmetic, singing, music, dancing, acting and declamation. Operettas, little fairy pieces and costume ballets are executed by these children with infinite grace and dexterity.

The Procession of the White Elephant is at Tokio, and here comes the patron of the sacred dance of the Daïri. The image, dressed in the old theatrical garments of Kioto, is raised upon a huge drum, supported by figurantes in costumes of festive form and crowns of flowers. This is followed by the procession of the

white elephant. The animal is made of cardboard, and its bearers are skilfully hidden in its capacious body; their feet are hardly seen moving under the legs of the colossus, which is preceded by a band of music, composed of flutes, trumpets, big drums, cymbals, gongs and tambourines.

The men of this group wear beards, a painted hat with an aigrette, boots, a long robe with a wide girdle, and some of them carry Chinese banners covered with images of dragons. A little further on a gigantic lobster is carried by a priest of the Kami worship, and surrounded by a troop of negroes. Then come a hundred cultivators who are harnessed to the chariot of the buffalo; this king of domestic animals is placed upon the vehicle under the shade of a flowering peach tree, and is accompanied by the demigod who introduced him into Japan. Six other chariots are laden with picturesque trophies formed of the implements and products of rice culture.

PRIESTS WHO RIDE IN SPLENDOR.

A cortége of the priests of the Kami religion generally forms a guard of honor to a carriage made in the likeness of that of the Mikado, a splendid chariot, surmounted by the sacred gong and the cock of the Dairi. Antique banners, some ornamented by sketches of horses, precede a calvacade of superior officers costumed according to the Court fashions of Kioto. Suddenly two terrible monsters appear; they have the face of the tiger with the horns of a bull. Their great tails are elevated high above the helmets of the men-at-arms who surround them. Perhaps they recall under a fantastic form the memory of those tigers who gave so much trouble to the soldiers of the heroic mother of Hatchman in the Korean fields.

To this group belongs the exhibition of the antique arms of the arsenal of the Sannoo; lances and halberds, two-handed swords, bows, arrows, war-fans and insignia of command. By degrees the exhibition loses its warlike character; in their turn appear priests and attendants carrying the vases of the sanctuary, and all the furniture of the temple and its dependencies under

banners covered with hieroglyphic signs. Another troop of attendants carry paper lanterns at the end of long poles. This terminates the procession.

There are seven figurantes are well known to all the people. As they pass, their names are mentioned on all sides, and, indeed, these names are embroidered on their rich costume. The first is



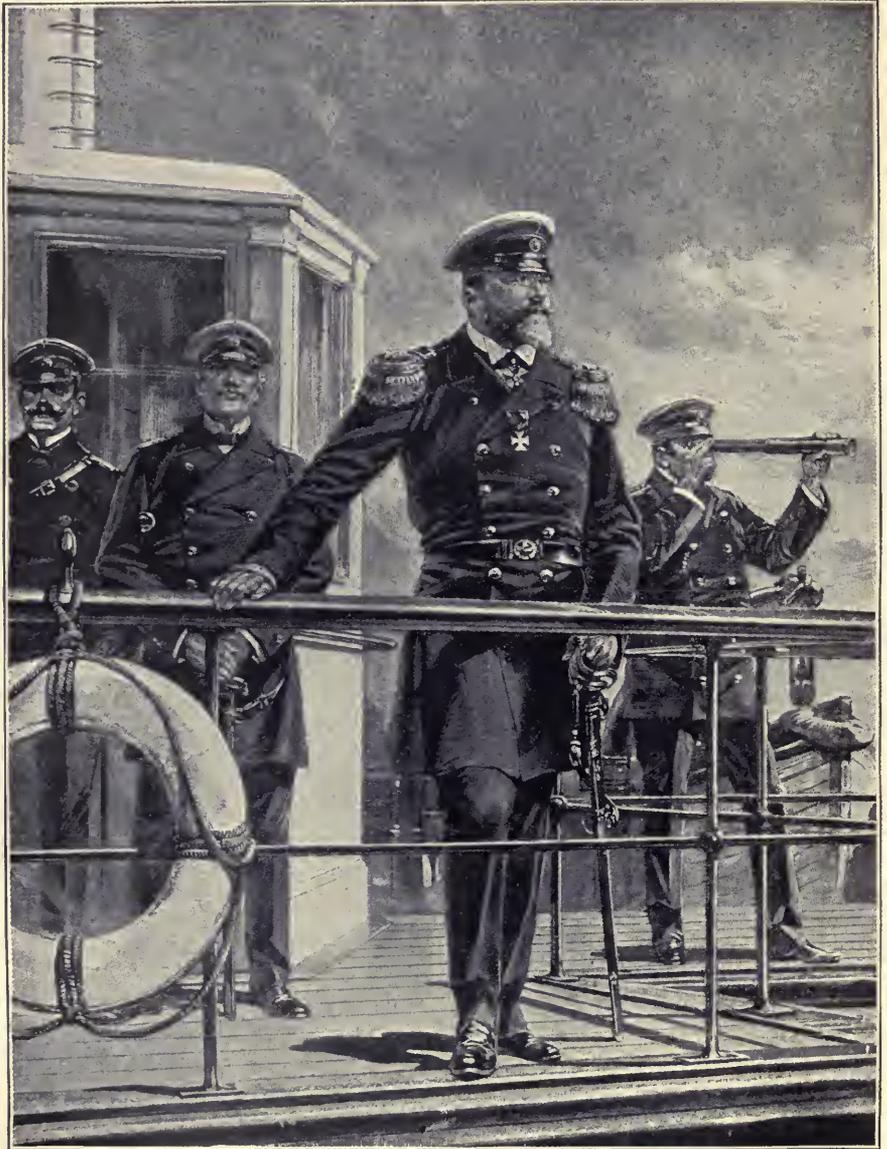
JAPANESE MUSICIANS.

the lady of the War-fan, which she displays upon her wide velvet sash; her robe is embroidered with four cocks of various plumage, two of which are white, worked upon the ample sleeves of her kirimon: the silken feathers of their tails wave gracefully in the air with each of her movements.

The second is the lady of the Golden Fish. She wears one on each side of her robe on a background of waves and foam in silver thread. The accessory embroideries represent little children



ADMIRAL KAMIMURA, A JAPANESE NAVAL COMMANDER WATCHING THE RUSSIAN SHIPS



ADMIRAL SKRYDLOFF, COMMANDER OF THE RUSSIAN
VLADIVOSTOK SQUADRON



THE "BAYAN" TO THE RESCUE
THE "BAYAN" COVERING THE RETREAT OF A FLOTILLA OF RUSSIAN DESTROYERS BY ENGAGING
SINGLE HANDED THE JAPANESE CRUISER SQUADRON.



MARSHAL OYAMA
COMMANDER OF THE JAPANESE ARMIES IN MANCHURIA



GENERAL KUROPATKIN, COMMANDER OF THE
RUSSIAN ARMY



ARRIVAL OF HOSPITAL TRAINS LADEN WITH WOUNDED FROM PORT ARTHUR
AT MUKDEN STATION, MANCHURIA



BESIEGED PORT ARTHUR---A THRILLING SCENE IN A RUSSIAN FORT



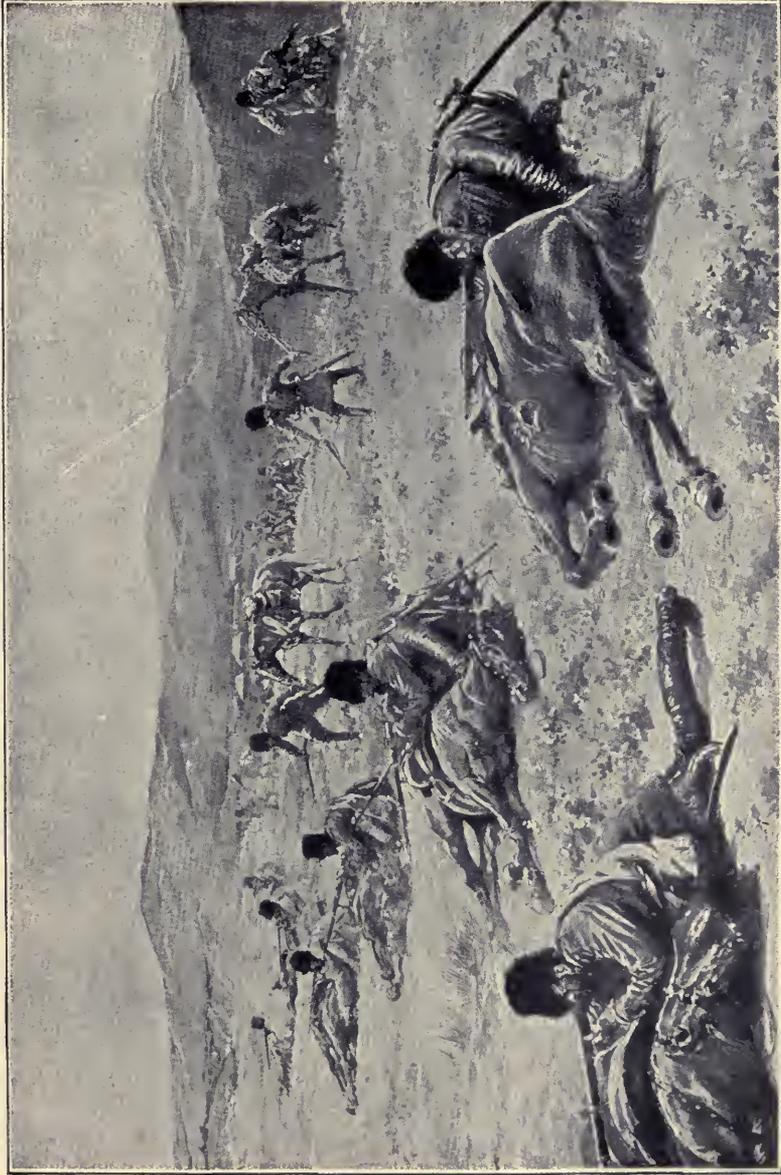
JAPANESE ARTILLERY IN ACTION



A RAILWAY PATROL OF COSSACKS ARRESTING JAPANESE SUSPECTS DISGUISED AS COOLIES



JAPANESE MILITARY ENGINEERS CONSTRUCTING A ROUGH-TIMBER
ROAD FOR TROOPS



COSSACKS AS SHARPSHOOTERS---THEIR HORSES LIE DOWN AND ARE
USED AS BREASTWORKS DURING A SKIRMISH



A CURIOUS RUSSIAN METHOD OF CONVEYING THE WOUNDED ON
SLEDGES MADE OF SNOW-SHOES



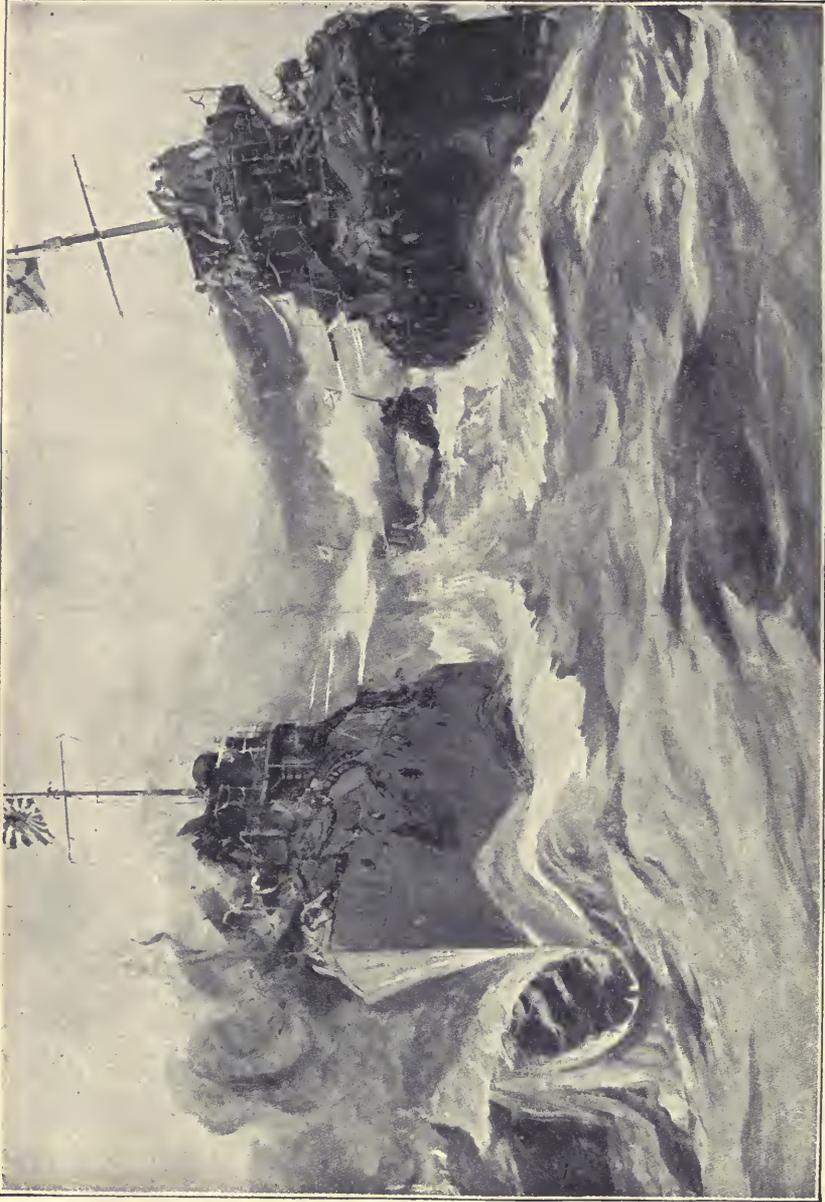
COSSACKS REPULSED DURING A RECONNAISSANCE IN FORCE. RETIRING
UNDER COVER OF THEIR OWN GUNS



**THE IRRESISTIBLE CHARGE OF THE JAPANESE
DELIVERING A BAYONET ATTACK OF WONDERFUL SWIFTNES**



ADMIRAL TOGO DIRECTING NAVAL ENGAGEMENT IN THE CONNING-TOWER OF HIS FLAGSHIP, IN THE BATTLE OF THE SEA OF JAPAN.



THE DESTRUCTION OF THE RUSSIAN FLEET IN THE GREAT NAVAL BATTLE OF THE SEA OF JAPAN.

playing with ribbons of all sorts of colors, who sport on her kirimon. Need I speak of the lady of the Death's head ; the lady of the Candelabra, the lady of the Slaves, the lady of the Chrysanthemums? No! For where should I stop if I were to describe in all its details the public homage paid to the courtesans by the priests and by the people of Tokio? In the presence of such customs we can only admire the appropriateness with which the great Sannoo admits to the ranks of its idols and solemnly exhibits in the streets of the city, a monkey, with a red face, wearing a sacerdotal mitre, and carrying a holy-water brush.

The mocking image mounted on a drum, with the rich drapery, is lifted high above the crowd, an ironical caricature of the religious exhibition which the crowd just witnessed.

THE AMUSING FESTIVALS.

The matsouris or kermesses of the temples of Japan do the government of that country a service which will be strongly appreciated in Europe, by absolving it from the charge of amusing its subjects, who supply all funds needful for the purpose out of their own pockets. There are Japanese festivals which do not consist of representations and amusements given by the bonzes to the people, but of real public rejoicings, in which the people themselves are the only actors and the real heroes of the day.

These are the Go-Sekis, or five great annual Festivals. They had originally a religious stamp, which did not actually militate against the gaiety of their exterior manifestations, because the moral of the Kami worship is, that a joyous heart is integrally in a state of purity.

The Seki of the first day of the first month is naturally the chief festival of the new year. It is that of visits, of congratulations and presents, the latter consisting of at least two or three fans, which the visitor brings, according to custom, in a box of lacquer tied with silken cords ; but, no matter what the nature or the value of the principal gift, it is always accompanied by a screw of paper containing a dried morsel of the flesh of the shell-fish named awabi, or of the siebi, an exceedingly common fish ; and this

manifestation is a piece of homage paid to the frugality of the antique national customs.

The fourth great annual feast, that of the seventh day of the seventh month, is known under the name of the Feast of Lamps or Lanterns. Little girls parade the illuminated streets of the city of Tokio in great numbers, singing with all their heart, and swinging paper lanterns. In certain cities of the south the population visit the hill cemeteries and pass the night amid the tombs.

The thirteenth, fourteenth, and fifteenth are the days on which every one goes to the temples to pray for the dead and to burn candles for them; the fifteenth being the day fixed for the regulation of accounts for the first half of the year. The public rejoicings which succeed the fulfillment of this troublesome duty are particularly varied and brilliant. Masquerades, accompanied by national dances, take a high place among the popular pleasures. All the masks have their signification and traditional character.

THE NOBLE PLACID AND FIERCE.

There are the noble types; first the placid faces of the gentlemen and ladies of the Dairi; then the fierce physiognomies of the heroes of the civil wars. There are also masks with moveable jaws, in imitation of those worn by the Mikado's actors. Others represent the grotesque and divine Tengou, the good Okame, the jolliest of the Japanese women mentioned in history, or the unhappy Hiyotoko, the ideal of ugliness. These masks reproduce all the varieties of the race of demons—those with one eye, with two eyes, with three and four eyes, with horns and without horns, with two or even three horns, from the sprites to the giants, and even to the odious Hanggia, the feminine devil.

The tenth month is placed under the invocation of Yebis, who is at once the god of fishing and one of the favorite patrons of the shopkeepers, who make each other presents on this occasion, among which are millet-cakes and a large red fish named Tai, much admired for its beauty and the delicacy of its flavor.

The ladies of Tokio are not less diligent in the performance of the duties imposed upon them by their social position. They

pay each other neighborly visits, and do not neglect to burn candles before the image of Yabis for the prosperity of their husbands' commercial enterprises. Early in the morning they may be seen going in groups to certain bonze houses, in whose sanctuaries there are altars privileged to receive the homage of the citizenesses. To perform this ceremony the pilgrim is attired in a headdress, consisting of a cotton handkerchief of dazzling whiteness, artistically wound through the thick hair.

Towards the middle of the month everyone is bound to notice and to communicate to his friends the fact that the leaves of the maple-palm are beginning to change color. At the commencement of the eleventh month the maple is in all the magnificence of its autumn dress. Crowds assemble in the gardens of the bonze-houses and the tea-houses. With the winter solstice come general congratulations.

THE BEAUTIFUL FESTIVITY OF MATRONS.

This is the Festival of Matrons. No pressure of business, no journey to the city, no cause or pretext whatever, can on this occasion excuse the absence of the husbands from their homes. They come from all parts of the country, and in the evening the city is illuminated on all sides. The sounds of guitars and joyous voices fill the air on this universal festival.

The fifteenth day is called the passing of the river, by reason of a religious domestic solemnity; it symbolizes the flight of time, and the transition to the new year.

The twelfth month is devoted to the settlement of affairs, the renewal of furniture, and the re-arrangement of the household; operations which involve such a succession of ceremonies, formalities, festivals and rejoicings, that a whole volume might be written upon the four or five weeks at the end of January and the commencement of February in the cities and villages.

Although the great dramatic system of modern Japan, the Sibaïa, is far from being an aristocratic institution, it is one of the most curious in the world. If it does not attain to the distinguished literary merit of the Chinese drama, or to the perfection

of acting, it far exceeds both in poetic value, because it has more simplicity, more passion, more individuality and more purely human character. In China, the public look on at the piece and criticise the actors; in Japan, the public take part in the piece in concert with the actors, exchange sentiments with them, and, in fact, are part of the spectacle.

In this respect, the Sibaia reminds us of the little day-theatres of Italy, but with all the difference which exists between an amusing and easy recreation and a great popular subject, confused, often unintelligible, and whose gaiety is strange and fantastic. Although the Sibaia is implanted in all the cities of Japan, it is at Tokio, and especially in the city and the northern departments, that it is most active and important. The theatres are exceedingly numerous, one group occupying three longitudinal and four cross-streets.

ONLY SERVANTS STAND AND WAIT.

In the restaurant there is apparent and inextricable confusion. Everyone crouches on his mat, except the servants. All sorts of games are in progress, and saki is circulating freely. Sometimes a group of dancers install themselves round the domestic altar under the image of the god of contentment, and seldom fail by their guitars and their voices to arouse the enthusiasm of some young dandy, who will forsake his party, advance towards the performers, and execute under their fair eyes a very elegant dance to the accompaniment of the solemn motion of his fan.

The restaurant supplies all the deficiencies of the theatre in point of refreshment, and is frequently crowded during the greater part of the piece. Everybody knows all about it, and does not mind sacrificing a few scenes to the pleasures of the table. The so-called spectators will eat and drink at the restaurant until the gong gives signal for the great interlude of the jugglers. Then the restaurant changes its aspect completely; everyone hastens to his place in the theatre.

The Japanese are fond of physical contests, such as wrestling. The wrestling takes place in a sort of huge circus constructed of bamboo framework, covered with matting, to keep out the gaze of

the people who will not pay to go in. There is no roof, but the whole amphitheatre is covered with a kind of network of rice straw matting. Many Japanese entertainments, whether theatrical or otherwise, begin in the early morning and go on till eight or nine o'clock in the evening.

Within the enclosure stood a huge wrestler, probably one of the defeated competitors in the earlier rounds. He was a good-humored-looking sort of a giant, and melted beneath the smile of woman. English grace in very smart European garments smiled upon him, and the giant cleared a space and snubbed the door-keeper. We entered, and craned our necks. Presently an attendant brought a bench, and invited us to stand on it; but as soon as we were comfortably settled, and seeing things nicely, and therefore presumably loath to leave, he demanded an extra fee for the use of the bench.

THE ATHLETES OF JAPAN.

Japanese wrestling is conducted in a 12-foot ring, sanded, and on an elevated stage under a canopy, reminding one strikingly of the fountain canopies in the courts of temples, supported by four plain posts, and with an overhanging roof, but no walls. The posts are decked with parti-colored cloths, and immediately below the roof hang blue tabs and a white silk festoon, ornamented with a gold sun and stars, all decidedly Japanese in appearance.

The umpire on this occasion wore a handsome gray silk costume, with the great shoulder flaps, which represented full dress in feudal time, projecting about a foot over each shoulder, and ornamented on collar, breast, and cuffs with his crest. He carried a peculiar lacquered fan, shaped like a blunt-edged double hatchet, and ornamented with a scarlet silk tassel suspended by a cord a yard long.

Holding this horizontally he gave out something in a loud voice, and two wrestlers ascended the platform—stark naked, except for the double silk cross straps round their waist and between their legs, and with their hair combed in a peculiar fashion, very like the snood once worn by little girls in England,

on the top of their heads. The ring had just been swept, and its heroes figured about in the sand with their bare feet, after slapping their thighs and cocking up first one and then the other of their mighty legs—this being, perhaps, a recognized form of salutation to the audience, perhaps a muscle stretcher. Then they commenced the crouching down like cats, watching each other for the spring.

Let us pause to look at them. These wrestlers are gigantic, tall fellows, some of them six feet high and more; vast of shoulder and arm and thigh and calf; and mountains of muscle, and some of them also mountains of fat. Whether shaved or natural, they have no hair on their bodies except under the armpits; and far from having faces of the brutal type usual among prize fighters, they have most of them good humored, and some of them quite dignified faces. They are not very like the ordinary Japs, but I could not discover that they came from any particular locality.

The *modus operandi* is this: the opponents crouch down like wild beasts till they see an opportunity to spring, and both of course spring at the same time, one to attack and the other to meet the attack. It is a case of feint and parry. If the attack is parried they go to the side of the stage, take a sip of water to wash out their mouths and keep them fresh for a prolonged struggle when the grip is actually made.

CHAPTER VI. THE FIRST BLOWS.

Opening of the Wars of Empires on the North Asia Peninsulas and Islands of the Pacific.

AFTER some days of a manifestly dangerous crisis, a despatch from St. Petersburg, February 9th, stated the Russian Admiralty had been informed, at 2.30 P. M., that "eleven Japanese and one Russian warship have been sunk in attacks upon Port Arthur. Seven Russians were killed and many were wounded. The town is in flames."

This seemed to contain specifications, but there was in it a suggestion of exaggeration and even incoherency. The second despatch stated that "Japanese torpedo boats have attacked the Russian squadron in the outer roads of Port Arthur and three Russian ships were destroyed."

This seemed to mean business, and speedily the official report of the Russian Admiral Alexieffs to the Emperor was given in these memorable terms: "About midnight of February 8-9, Japanese torpedo boats made a sudden attack by means of mines upon the Russian squadron in the outer roads of the Fortress of Port Arthur, in which the battleships Retvizan and Tsarevitch and the cruiser Pallada were damaged.

"An inspection is being made to ascertain the character of damage. Details are following for your Majesty."

This was the message that put an end to the festivity in the Winter Palace at St. Petersburg, and caused a religious ceremony, according to the solemnity and splendor of the Greek Church. The examination of the ships of the Russian fleet proved that three of them had been disabled.

We have referred to the service of the Paris edition of the New York *Herald*, that has been admired and applauded in Europe, and from that quarter came a report from a war correspondent who

knew how to see an exciting event, and tell the story with its true coloring and self-evident truth in details, making an intelligible whole.

"CHEFOO, Tuesday, 7.30 P. M., Eastern Time.—I was lying on Monday night quarantined in the Indo-China steamer Columbia, between the entrance to Port Arthur and the Russian fleet and very close to the latter.

"Only one of the Russian warships was using searchlights. In a leisurely fashion only three torpedo boats were patrolling the outskirts of the fleet. All the other torpedo boats were inside the basin.

"Everything was tranquil, and a Russian official told us he expected the Japanese fleet in three or four days. The lighthouse was already lighted and guiding lights were also burning. About eight o'clock the Russian sailors chanted their evening prayers. The hymn rolled out impressively along the water.

"The weather was perfect. It was not cold, and the sky was clear. There was a light southerly breeze and a hazy horizon. Then deep silence settled down. I was going to bed about half-past eleven, when I heard three distinct but muffled explosions, one after another. Apparently they came from under the water, for the Columbia vibrated violently.

"Instantly firing with twelve-pounders and three-pounders began. Searchlights were placed, but without much method. I watched the operations, thinking they were only manoeuvres, till midnight, when the firing had almost ceased, entirely ceasing at three in the morning.

SHIPS AGROUND AND HELPLESS.

"About one o'clock two battle ships, probably the Retvizan and the Tsarevitch, and one large cruiser passed us, coming toward the harbor entrance. The battle ships then lay across the narrows at the entrance, where both are now aground and helpless. They are very close together and are not blocking the entrance except for ships of heavy draught. The Retvizan has been torpedoed forward.

“A cruiser, listed to port, is aground outside the entrance of the harbor. She was also torpedoed.

“At twenty minutes to three some Russian naval officers came to the Columbia in a state of great excitement, saying the Viceroy had ordered us not to attempt to leave, their object apparently being to prevent us from giving information to the Japanese concerning the extent of the damage.

“Up to this time we thought the operations were only manœuvres or a scare, but now we began to suspect something serious, especially when at daybreak we saw the strange, pathetic appearance of the two torpedoed battle ships. We suspected a collision, but soon learned that these battle ships and the cruiser were certainly torpedoed.

THE FLASH LIGHTS AND THE MOON.

“It seems strange, for though the flashlights were whirling wildly and the lighthouse light was now extinct, no firing took place after three. The moon was shining, but no enemy was visible.

“The sun rose very red, disclosing the presence on the horizon of three two-funnel cruisers, on whose masts we afterward distinguished the flag of the Rising Sun of Japan. They came boldly within long-distance range and remained calmly watching for two hours after daybreak.

“A strange apathy seemed to possess the Russians. The crew of white-faced, gaping men crowded the forward decks of the damaged vessels.

“I saw through a glass the cook of the Retzivan calmly throwing out slops, and men in the other vessels carefully washing the anchor chain while weighing the anchor. For a long time after the anchor was weighed no vessel showed a disposition to chase the Japanese or to fire a single shot. Finally the Japanese left. This was at twenty minutes after eight. They were pursued by the Russian fleet, which proceeded toward Dalmy, in-shore of the Japanese.

“At a quarter after nine the Russians returned to their anchor-

age, no firing having apparently occurred. Then again came silence, everything having passed off with less noise than the ordinary naval review.

“The Japanese effected a complete surprise, owing to the bad outlook.

“The Russians have now outside the harbor five effective battle ships, five effective cruisers, one volunteer cruiser, one gun vessel, one training ship.

“The rate of fire on both sides was slow, and many Russian shells fell short. The Sebastopol was hit by a heavy shell near the base of her forward funnel. Another three funnelled battle ship, was struck amidship on her armor plating, a third, also a battleship, was struck abaft her armored section, near the stern.

A STRANGE STORY OF RUSSIAN BLUNDERING.

“We could not ascertain the exact damage done. The fleets were about three miles apart. Apparently no ship on either side was disabled.

“The Russian cruiser Novik fought pluckily, keeping by far the closest to the Japanese. All the heavy fire was concentrated on her and compelled her to retire on the battle ships. The other Russian cruisers fought as fast, outside the line of battle ships.

“The Russians seemed to fight with little formation, probably owing to the cramped space, being never more than a mile and a half from shore. They remained all the time under the guns of the forts, which fired over them, but not very frequently.

“Whenever the heaviest shore batteries fired over our heads the air vibrated strongly and there was a great cracking around us.

“Before the action we saw the Russian battle ships throwing beds and other lumber through the gun ports, and Chinese sampans were busily engaged in picking up these articles, including ping-pong tables, until the shells began to fall.

“The Russian battle ships constantly wheeled round in the same position, while the Japanese kept a splendid formation, retiring slowly in line to the southward at a quarter to twelve, after a half hour's action.

“The Columbia escaped with a small hole in her deck, caused by a splinter from a shell, and some marks on her after deckhouse. The Columbia’s captain is English, the mate Irish and the engineer Scotch.

“Two large and two small British steamers, engaged in the coasting trade, also an American flour ship, the Pleides, are blocked inside Port Arthur Harbor by the position of the disabled battle ships.

“The Russians are endeavoring by pumps and collision mats to stop the holes of the battle ships in order to be able to take them inside the harbor at high water.

“When fifteen miles south of Port Arthur I heard heavy firing toward the north. This was at half-past one P. M. It did not continue long. I saw no signs of the Japanese fleet on my way to Chefoo.

SOME INACCURACIES AS TO THE FIGHT.

“This is from the same source as the above, and much better than official:

“Chefoo, Thursday.—Out of the four Japanese torpedo boats which made the first attack on Monday night at Port Arthur three were sunk with great loss of life.

“The fourth was a twenty-eight knot boat and escaped.

“The Japanese torpedo boats effected an entrance into the outer harbor by using the Russian signal flashlights. Consequently the Russians did not fire on them.

“I have heard the following account of the first surprise from a Russian naval officer:—

“The cruiser Pallada was on the outside edge of the Russian fleet, and on duty that night the chief artillery officer noticed four torpedo boats approach, with full lights and in all respects like Russian torpedo boats.

“The officer informed his captain that the approaching boats were Japanese. The captain denied this and said they were built in Port Arthur.

“The artillery officer insisted that they were Japanese, and the captain became angry, saying:—

“ I am in command of the ship, sir.”

“ Despite this the artillery officer gave orders to prepare for action.

“ Immediately after the Japanese launched a torpedo, but the Pallada was able to retaliate instantly and the other Russian ships cleared for action.

LANDING PARTIES REPULSED.

“ It is reported now the Japanese attempted a landing near Bedzero (Poi-tse-wo?), eight miles north of Port Arthur, but were repulsed, with heavy loss.

“ They again tried to effect a landing at Talien-Wan, under the shelter of the fleet, but owing to the strong fort fire they were unable to succeed.

“ It is said that one Japanese ship has been torpedoed.

“ The British merchant ships in Port Arthur have repeatedly applied for permission to leave port, but this has been refused.

“ The Tsarevitch was towed into the harbor at Port Arthur at three o'clock on Tuesday afternoon. It is said only her outer bottom was penetrated by the Japanese torpedo, and Russians are now busy repairing her. She can be repaired in two or three days.

“ The Pallada is still outside and beached. She must be seriously injured, but she is now also being repaired. She is the only one of the torpedoed vessels now outside.

“ A shell struck a hospital ship outside the basin during the bombardment. The captain's cabin and the chart room were blown off, but there was no loss of life, as the ship was only recently purchased and was unmanned.

“ The foreigners in Port Arthur were notified at seven o'clock on Monday night that they had twenty-four hours in which to clear out, but the British steamers there have been forbidden to leave. One German steamer arrived at Chefoo to-day, the first to get here from Port Arthur since the Columbia.

“ It was reported here after the battle that the reserves had been called out.

"On Wednesday the Japanese tried to land at Pigeon's Bay, near Port Arthur.

"Thirty-six Japanese vessels were then there. It is not known if the attempt succeeded.

"Thousands of persons are leaving Port Arthur daily by train. There is not even standing room in the cars.

"At four o'clock this afternoon the Russian transport Smolensk entered the canal, and torpedo boat No. 211 entered last night. Torpedo boat No. 222 has broken down and is repairing to Port Arthur.

"The Russian rouble has gone down 24 per cent. at Cheefoo among the Chinese merchants."

CHAPTER VII.

A BATTLE WITH BAYONETS.

Fighting Hand to Hand—Exploding, Burning and Sinking Ships on Both Sides—Order of Events Showing Desperate and Deadly Work.

THE first phase of the activities of the war of the far eastern Empires, was of a novelty so startling that the whole world was taken by surprise, with perhaps the exception of the army and navy, the Emperor and aristocracy of Russia. Certainly the Russian Empire was astonished in all its parts, imperial, military, marine, diplomatic and the whole population.

Here and there have been incidents showing the presence of enemies of the Government, of the Czar, but there is no considerable organization to resist the Empire in arms by force of arms. It has not been determined whether the dissatisfaction of the people takes form as discouragement or exasperation.

The Japanese were quite ready and the Russians unready to an extent absurd as disastrous. There was no "by chance" work in the appearance of the Japanese fleet off Port Arthur. That was indeed the main point in dispute. The battleships of Japan were put forward to give a bombardment to the Russians in the harbor, and there was heavy cannonading all around. The torpedo boats were held back, and received no attention. When the noise ceased and the smoke was dispersing, the Russians naturally thought the combat was over.

In truth that was the appointed time to strike with the torpedoes, and the order was obeyed with admirable valor and enterprise. Great damage was done to the Russians; and that the blow struck the Russian position of forts and fleet on the "solar plexus" of the giant, there is no doubt. Not only was great destruction wrought, great demoralization was inflicted.

The Russians prove on themselves a condition of panic, or

they would not have sunk their own torpedo boats and bumped against mines laid for the enemy, with a horrible loss of life self inflicted. Each day has for the Russians had sore experiences.

Many Americans have met Admiral Alexieff, the Viceroy of the far east, who in August last had greater powers than ever were held by a Russian outside the Czar himself. Besides being supreme in the military and civil administration in the east, he has the power to carry on diplomatic negotiations with neighboring governments on matters affecting the territory included in the viceroyalty, his decisions being subject only to the approval of a council at St. Petersburg presided over by the Czar.

HE WAS AN OLD FRIEND OF THE CZAR.

The Viceroy, besides being an Admiral in the Russian navy, is a General in the army and aide de camp on the staff of the Czar. He commanded the warship on which the present Czar, while still Czarowitz, made his trip to India, China, and Japan, where an attempt was made by a fanatic native to assassinate Nicholas. The latter is therefore thoroughly acquainted with the Admiral, whom he has long regarded as a trusted personal friend.

Admiral Alexieff was in command of the Russian force in the march of the allies to relieve the Peking legations in 1900, and by his admirers is regarded as having secured for the allies all the honors they gained in the campaign. For his services in the Boxer campaign he received from the Czar a gold and diamond studded sword, inscribed. "For victories at the seat of war in Pechili, 1900." He has in his visits to this country made acquaintances, especially in Philadelphia, and was well known by the builders of the battleship constructed by the Cramps, and torpedoed at Port Arthur.

He was not in personal command of the unfortunate Russian fleet, so badly disabled, but his precautions were inadequate at least, and he was a war man with imperial powers. It seemed to afford his enemies comfort to charge that he is the evil one who caused the war, and he is heralded as the man who is to be in full command as the war goes on. Circumstantial evidences show him at

a disadvantage compared with the leader of leaders of the Japan force, and imply his fault in failure to safeguard his fleet in a harbor formidably fortified.

Japan has had a war transport expert in Philadelphia, who has just been recalled, and he has given a glimpse of a system of utility to his country, and of general interest. Among those summoned is R. Kanecko, expert of war transportation of the Government of Japan. One of the ways of Japan to employ talent has been to select the most promising young men to be instructed abroad, and America is the favorite country for instruction, but England and Germany are also complimented by receiving representatives of the flower of the youth of Japan. She is calling her sons home. Some are practical mechanics, others professional, still others scientists. One of this class about to go home is Mr. Kanecko, who has spent eighteen months in the study of our methods of administration, and says he intended to remain a year longer, and he remarked, as seated on his trunks and about to start on his long journey home:

JAPAN TERRIBLY IN EARNEST.

"You Americans ought to know that Japan is terribly in earnest. She is determined that Russia shall recognize the sovereignty of China in Manchuria and fulfill her promise to evacuate that province. In Manchuria she is a constant and growing menace.

"Korea and Japan must, as an act of self-preservation, fight to keep Russia out of Korea.

"England and Japan have interests in the Far East in a large measure identical. The English correspondents, in the main, want facts, and the London newspapers do not distort these facts.

"Japan does not fear Russia. We have been wonderfully patient since the 8th day of August last, the date on which it was promised that the Czar's soldiers would march out of Manchuria, but Japan's patience has not been due to fear.

"Perhaps I misrepresent somewhat, I ought rather to say that the Emperor and his Cabinet have been patient, for the national spirit has been for war."

Mr. Kanecko said, before the first blow was struck :

“ A big sea fight will come first of all, I suppose. And we are supremely confident of winning. Our assurance is based on the belief that we have a fleet equal in tonnage to any Russia will be able to bring against us. In point of power our fleet, we are confident, is decidedly superior.

“ The Japanese ships are newer, speedier, and are armed with guns of a longer range. Then our crews are more capable. Russia must whip us on the sea, or we will pour our troops into Northern Korea and Manchuria, on transports. Port Arthur is but four days' distant by water from our base of supplies. It takes the fast mail train two weeks to run to Port Arthur from Moscow.

“ American railways are built with a view to business uses. Such is not the case with Japanese railroads.

RAILROADS ALL FOR MILITARY USE.

“ Each mile of track in Japan was built with an eye to military use.

“ No line can be built unless first approved by our National Railway Committee, composed of representatives from each department of the government.

“ Twice every year the ability and readiness of the several railroads to transport soldiers and war supplies are practically tested. One year ago, for example, my company transported 20,000 troops from Northwestern Japan to Tokio, our western terminus, in three days.

“ We have made a study of transportation, and I am certain Japan will surprise the world. I may claim familiarity with the possibilities of the trans-Siberian Railroad. If Russia is depending on it to defeat Japan, she is leaning on a reed.

“ That single line of track cannot possibly suffice in time of war. Japan believes itself capable of sending 200,000 soldiers to Korea and Manchuria in less than a month should the occasion arise.

“ When we strike, we propose to strike with a rapidity that will amaze the Czar and his advisers. Russia can only disarrange

or frustrate our mobilization plan by defeating us on the water, and Japan will welcome a sea battle.

"I can only say that we have a brave, hardy soldiery ready to die for country and Emperor. The Japanese have not yet reached that stage where they put personal good and ease above the national welfare.

"Japan's troops have submitted to a discipline that would be regarded as terrible by Americans. If we have any superiority on land it lies mostly in our greater activity. The Russian is brave; I know of none braver, but he is sluggish, mentally and physically.

"However, in the matter of cavalry Japan is weak. Russia has an unquestionable advantage in that arm of the service. Our horses are small, mere ponies, and the Russian cavalry is world famous.

"There is one great advantage in our favor your newspapers have not dwelt upon. It is the ability of the Japanese soldiery to live and thrive upon a diet of rice and fish. Whether in Japan, Korea or Manchuria Japan's armies will always have a sufficient food supply at hand.

RUSSIAN'S HANDLE FOOD FOR ARMY.

"The Czar's battalions must be fed very largely with provisions imported in ships or brought overland on a single track railroad, poorly constructed, for a distance of 3,000 miles. We can, we are confident, easily cut off the source of supply by water."

This is real information, given without reserve, so great is the Japanese confidence. The weak point of the Japanese is the cavalry, and that offers many advantages to the Russians.

A Tokio Herald letter dated Jan. 30th says, moreover: "All the Japan ships of war are in fighting condition. On paper Russia is nearly, if not quite, as strong as Japan. In battleships she is one, if not two, units stronger. In armored cruisers she does not compare. In cruisers she is approximately as strong, but in torpedo vessels the Japanese excel. The question is, Will the Russian vessels prove themselves, as the Japanese are almost certain to do?

"What part of the mobilization of the army is not completed

when war begins will take a very short time. The organization follows the German plan. From the headquarters of each division the sub-depots of supplies radiate in every direction. It is the old plan of tens and captains of tens. The man whose duty it is to bring in his tens reports to him whose duty it is to look out for a hundred. Each man knows where his outfit is, and at the call he gets it himself and reports prepared for duty. In twenty-four hours after the call the mobilization will have reached the transportation stage.

ORGANIZED ON THE SKELETON PLAN.

“The army is organized on the skeleton plan, each company in peace times numbering about half what its full war quota is. There are twelve regular divisions and the Imperial Guard, which constitutes a division by itself. Each division consists of two brigades of infantry, each brigade being composed of two regiments. The regiment is organized like our own, of three battalions of four companies. But the companies are nearly twice the size of ours, when in active service numbering on the war footing 240 men, so that a battalion is about 1,000 strong. Besides the infantry, each division has a regiment of field or mountain artillery, two battalions of three batteries, six guns to a battery, 120 men to a battery. The guns are of Japanese invention and make and are capable of doing fine work.

“Each division has also a regiment of cavalry, such as it is. The horses of the Japanese are very poor, and the men are not specially skilful as riders. Military observers rate the cavalry as very poor. Certainly it is not nearly the equal of the Russian Cossack force. Each regiment consists of three squadrons—troops we should call them—of one hundred and fifty men each.

“There is also in each division a battalion of engineers, who are among the best soldiers of Japan, very highly trained. Besides these there are regular commissariat and supply trains and the sanitary or medical corps. All told on the war footing each division consists of about fifteen thousand men. This makes the fighting line number about 200,000.

“But as long ago as 1882, the watchful Japanese saw Russia

beginning to move toward Korea. Even then she realized what that might mean, and she warned Russia that there must be no encroachment by her upon the Korean peninsula. Russia smiled and persisted in the usual way.

“Even then Japan was beginning to feel the press of increasing population. Now her yearly increase is in the neighborhood of 600,000. Her territory is occupied almost to the limit. Only one island, Hokkaido, in the north, yet affords an outlet to her thronging people, and every year 60,000 to 80,000 of them find new homes there. Already the limit is in sight. There must be another outlet.

“When the war with China offered the chance of obtaining a foothold on the continent of Asia that might have opened a way to relief, it was eagerly grasped. Then, through the vigorous action of Russia and the incredible stupidity of Great Britain, that chance was lost.

THE WAR WAS THE LOGIC OF JAPAN.

“War is not made because of failure of negotiations; it is a conflict of peoples, a world movement which mere human agencies cannot control. The old Russian, with his insatiable earth-hunger, finds himself at the close of his long journey to the open sea at the East face to face with the new-born Japanese, feeling at last the irresistible urge of the press of population. The conflict is inevitable. It is no irruption of wild barbarians, choking down an old civilization to obtain new homes for themselves. It is a new civilization working out its destiny in the path of world developments. The Western Oriental and the Eastern Occidental are at grips.

“The Japanese reformation from centuries of exclusion and inactivity is yet in its infancy, but it has accomplished wonders. Now Japan feels that if this civilization, with all it means to the world, is to be engrafted, even though it be but faintly, upon the effete Hermit Kingdom, it must be through the agency of her people, who know and understand the Koreans and Chinese as no other people of the world do.

"It is a conflict of civilization. Korea will either fall under the slow moving but steadily advancing Russian, or come under the influence of the active Japanese. For Japan it means much more than for Russia, but the Japanese statesmen realize that even if they win the war their relief is but temporary. Korea, with its eight or ten millions of people, is only half as large again as Nebraska. Yet they call it thinly settled.

"Open to unrestricted Japanese immigration, it will afford relief for but a few years at the most. In climate and soil it is suitable for the Japanese. When it is occupied there is nothing in sight beyond.

"There is a curious difference between the Japanese public and private declarations concerning Korea. Publicly they profess to desire the preservation of the integrity and independence of the peninsula. Privately they admit that the destiny of Korea is absorption by Japan."

FIGHTING WITH BAYONETS.

Reports of a terrific battle with bayonets in which 12,000 Japanese troops were driven back by the Russian soldiers comes from Chefoo. Attempting to land at Dove or Pigeon Bay, near Port Arthur, the Japanese invading force was met by the Russians before a foothold had really been gained. The clash was desperate and the bayonet was the arm used by both armies.

A correspondent from Chefoo, February 12, says:

"It is reported that 12,000 Japanese troops were landed at Dove (Pigeon?) Bay last Wednesday morning and that they were met by the Russians, who engaged them in a hand to hand fight. The report says that the Japanese were driven back.

"It is reported also that Japanese troops have been landed forty miles further west. Siberian trains are bringing full consignments of reinforcements. The arrivals at Irkutsk are estimated at 6,000, one-half of which are for Kwan-Tung and the other one-half for Yalu."

The *Herald's* European edition publishes the following from its correspondent at Chefoo:

“The day on which the Japanese made the torpedo attack at Port Arthur was Admiral Stark’s birthday. The occasion was being celebrated by a banquet at which were present many naval officers. The stampede at Port Arthur on that day gave rise to dreadful scenes. Hundreds of people rushed to the streets from shops and houses, leaving everything, even bank books, behind. They boarded trains where they were packed like herrings.

“Among them, cowering in a fourth-class carriage, was the Baron Ginsberg, whose timber concession on the Yalu practically caused the war. A shell burst in front of his office. The railway officials wanted the men to leave the train entirely to women and children, but they refused.”

SUMMARY ORDER OF EVENTS.

The presentation of the order of events in the study of the prospect of war is important, and the better form of book-keeping is to state time, place, and result of the items of the war in chronological order.

1904, January 13.—Japan sent note to Russia, demanding her recognition of China’s Sovereignty over Korea, and was refused.

February 4.—Final refusal of Russia.

February 6.—Diplomatic relations broken off.

February 7.—Japan seizes Masampo and prepared to land 50,000 men at various Korean ports. To protect the transportation of troops she starts immediately an aggressive campaign against the Russian fleets at Port Arthur and elsewhere.

February 8.—Japanese cut the Japan—Korea cables.

February 8, 9.—Battle of Port Arthur; including a night torpedo dash into the harbor by the Japanese and a general engagement on the morning of the 9th, in the roadstead outside. Eight Russian vessels disabled; the battleships Retzivan, Czarevitch and Poltava, and the cruisers Boyaran, Pallada, Diana, Askold and Novik.

February 9.—Russian gunboat Koriets and cruiser Variag destroyed in the Prince Imperial Island, off Chemulpo. Variag blown up by her captain (Behr) and 200 of her crew killed.

February 10.—Japanese capture three transports near Fusan with 2000 troops. Port Arthur engagement renewed, the land batteries engaged and the bank building destroyed. Reports affirm that the Russian vessels uninjured after the first two engagements were put out of action, one despatch stating that three cruisers were sunk and another that seven were captured and the rest driven off. Admiral Togo reported Japanese loss at 4 killed and 54 wounded. A bridge on the Manchurian road was blown up and 30 Russians killed.

February 11.—The Russian Baltic squadron, consisting of fifteen vessels, including four battleships, starts for the Far East.

February 12.—Russian transport Yenisei blown up by accidentally striking a mine. Four officers and 91 men lost. Four Russian cruisers sink the Japanese merchantman Nakanaura Maru.

AMERICAN TRADE TREATIES.

St. Petersburg, February 13.—News that America and Japan had concluded treaties with China for opening Mukden, Antung, and Tatungkow to the commerce of the world came as a shock to the foreign office here, bringing as it does the United States directly into the far eastern question. The matter is now absorbing the attention of the foreign office.

London, January 14.—All the morning papers have editorials which attach great importance to the ratification of the commercial treaties between the United States and China and between Japan and China.

Washington, D. C., January 13.—Secretary Hay and the Chinese minister to-day exchanged ratifications of the American-Chinese commercial treaty, which provides for opening the ports of Mukden and Antung in Manchuria.

Seoul, February 15.—The Russian minister and all the resident Russians left this city last Friday, the 12th instant, on a special Japanese train. Upon its arrival at Chemulpo it immediately went to the jetty between lines of Japanese soldiers. The Russian minister bowed to the Westerners present, but not to the Japanese, boarding a launch in attendance with 100 Russian

soldiers on board. The minister appeared very much depressed, and his wife wept.

London, February 15.—The Express correspondent at Tien-Tsin cables, under date of to-day, that Chinese Secret Service agents in Manchuria report the condition along the Siberian Railway as deplorable. Chaos and confusion reign everywhere. The railway is obstructed at so many points that munitions, war stores and provisions are being piled in huge stocks at Irkutsk, Omsk and other stations.

Yingkow, February 15.—Threatening demonstrations have been made against the British gunboat *Espiegle*.

St. Petersburg, February 15.—A despatch has been received here from Viceroy Alexieff, dated February 15, saying:

Captain Reitzenstein, commander of the Russian cruiser division, telegraphs that his division destroyed a steamer in Tangero Straits."

ANOTHER HUNDRED THOUSAND SAIL.

Shanghai, February 15.—Advices received from Nagasaki state that more than 100,000 Japanese soldiers will be embarked upon transports and sail within the next week.

St. Petersburg, February 15.—During the patriotic demonstrations at Warsaw on Sunday a certain Count Dembsky became demented and fired into a crowd from the balcony of his residence. He killed three persons and wounded twenty.

Chifu, February 16.—Three of the seven Russian torpedo boats patrolling the harbor of Port Arthur have been sunk by guns from the Russian forts of Weiyuen. The gunners mistook them for Japanese vessels from Vice Admiral Togo's war fleet.

Yokohama, February 16.—The cruiser *Nisshin* arrived safely at Yokoska at nine o'clock this morning and the cruiser *Kasuga* at eleven o'clock.

These two vessels, recently purchased from the Argentine Republic, will increase materially the preponderance of the Japanese naval strength.

Rome, February 16.—The Japanese minister here, M. Ohyama,

received a cable dispatch to-day, informing him that the Japanese cruisers, Nisshin and Kasuga, built at Genoa for the Argentine Republic, left here to-day.

Paris, February 15.—M. Jaures, leader of the Socialist party, which holds the balance of power in Parliament, and until recently vice-president of the Chamber, has made a declaration contemplating the immediate denunciation of the Franco-Russian alliance, which has attracted much attention in diplomatic circles. The declaration was made at St. Etienne, where the Socialist Congress is sitting.

DEMONSTRATION OF RUSSIAN PATRIOTISM.

Borissof, Russia, February 16.—The departure of General Rennenkampff for the front to-day was the occasion of a great demonstration of patriotism. He was carried to the railroad station on the shoulders of his fellow members of the Officers' Club.

St. Petersburg, February 16.—The Russian second-class cruiser Boyarin was blown up by a mine on February 13 in the same manner as the Russian torpedo transport Yenisei was. She had on board 197 officers and men, all of whom, it is understood, were lost.

Paris, January 16.—Prince Louis Napoleon, a major-general in the Russian army, has been accorded a leave of absence by the Czar sufficiently long to enable him to regulate the affairs of the late Princess Mathilde. He was greeted on his arrival in Paris by cheers and cries of "vive le Gen. Bonaparte." He was welcomed by leading members of the Bonapartist party, and drove at once to rejoin his mother, the Princess Clotilde, who lives habitually in Paris, Louis Napoleon is the residuary legatee of Princess Mathilde.

Berlin, February 16.—The St. Petersburg correspondent of the *Tagliche Rundschau* says that 600 Russian soldiers have been frozen to death while marching across Lake Baikal, Eastern Siberia. The correspondent adds that the temporary railroad across the lake is not yet completed; that a large detachment of troops was sent on a twenty-two-mile march over the ice-covered lake; that part of these troops lost their way in a snow-storm and perished.

Chefoo, February 16.—Following the reported Japanese success in the first attack on the 12th instant, 180 Chinese mounted bandits ransacked the Russian station near Mukden. A Chinese servant informed his employers in time.

They fled precipitately. The bandits, seeing success, approached the next station, but here they were met by eighty Cossacks, who entirely defeated them, and they in turn fled, leaving fifty-eight dead.

Rome, February 16.—It was officially admitted at the Japanese Legation here this evening that Japan had lost four warships and two merchant steamers thus far.

On the other hand, it was claimed by the Japanese officials that Russia's losses to date are sixteen warships and twenty merchantmen.

This is the first admission from any Japanese official source that the Mikado's fleet had suffered loss. The names of the vessels lost have not been revealed.

RUSSIANS HAVE RUMORS.

At the Russian Embassy here it was claimed that the four swift Russian cruisers which had been seen in the vicinity of Hakodate, Japan, three of which were reported sunk by torpedo boats in the Tsugaru Straits, had returned to Vladivostok.

London, February 17.—The correspondent at Chemulpo of the *Daily Express* reports that Japan has already landed 120,000 troops in Korea, 80,000 of whom are extended along the fighting front, south of Yalu River.

He reports further that 400 torpedoes, being two-thirds of Russia's entire available supply of these articles, were destroyed on board the Russian cruiser Variag at Chemulpo.

Chefoo, February 15.—The steamer Wenchow, arriving from Port Arthur, reports that eleven Russian ships were struck during the engagements last Monday and Tuesday.

It is stated that the cruiser Askold, with a big hole at the water line, has been towed into the inner basin and beached.

The battleship Sevastopol has a shell hole just above the water line, and is useless in rough weather.

The cruiser Novik has a hole in her after port side.

The battleship Retzivan is on the beach and her bottom has fallen out.

The cruiser Pallada was torpedoed abaft the engine room.

The battleship Tsarevitch, which also was torpedoed, has been docked.

“The whole fleet has been taken into the inner harbor and Port Arthur is depending for protection on her forts, which have been reinforced. There is frequent firing, which is presumably drawn by Japanese torpedo boats. Firing was heard at midnight on February 11, at intervals, also on the night of the 12th and 13th. On February 14 the firing continued until five o'clock in the afternoon.”

It is understood that Admiral Stark has been reduced for his failure to repulse the Japanese attack.

CHAPTER VIII.

RETREAT OF THE RUSSIAN VICEROY.

The Czar and Viceroy Report to the Russians—Admit Misfortune and Call Upon the Masses of the Empire—The Retreat is to Consolidate the Army—Manchuria is the Battlefield, and Asia Profoundly Influenced.

VERY rarely indeed has a war of the "armed nations," disturbed the world in a way that involved the interests, and increased the anxiety of the people, to an extent as great as the conflict between Russia and Japan, both examples of imperialism in armor. Each has a standing army, ready to be lawfully raised to command the services of all the able bodied young men in the field and to be reinforced by drilled men in vigorous life, but further along in years to include all.

In this case both parties possessed formidable fleets. The famous navy yards of Europe and America have contributed to the battleships, cruisers and lighter vessels designed for the deadlier work on the other side of the earth.

There is much that attracts the attention to the belligerents of all the favored and enlightened nations. They are of well-trying metal. The territories of the two empires only lack the land Russia sold to us a few years ago to surround the globe far to the north.

Such are the facilities for the transmission of news, from the scenes of the war, that all the civilized inhabitants of the earth can hear of the leading events every day, and often half a dozen times in a day. The issue between the fighting Empires is not obscure. It is as to whom should the provinces of Manchuria and Korea belong. Japan conquered the country in dispute in 1895, and substantially made a conquest of the provinces by defeating the army and navy of China, but was not permitted by the Russians to have the usufruct of victory, and Japan seems to have

been preparing herself ever since, to make the most of the impending crisis.

We have been at pains in preceding chapters of this volume to lay before the readers the situation, and have given the best attention to the highest historical authorities. The defeat of China, and the mastery of Japan, over Korean lands and waters, when the war of Japan and China was over, was followed by Russian intervention and the occupation of important places and territory, and constructions of the treaty closing the war of China and Japan quite impracticable. After negotiations long drawn out, diplomatic relations were broken off and Japan was hasty to strike first.

The state of war in the Far East has aroused many questions of moment. There have been novelties in the war methods and sharp surprises on both sides, those of the Russians being hard lessons.

JAPAN IS A SUPERB MACHINE.

In the beginning of the development of conditions of the war, the Japanese had two advantages that they fully employed. First the islanders believed war was not far off, and there was no time lost in making preparations.

The Japanese Empire is a superb machine, that moves without noise and with energy. The military men study their business, and are masters of the details of their service, and they are eagerly industrious having a certain rapid touch in executive labor, and great sagacity and skill in constructive mechanism. The Russians wanted the provinces of Korea and Manchuria altogether, but were content to demand certain points, purposing to possess them by gradations, and desiring to do so without forcing war.

They had no doubt of their ability to crush the smaller empire, did not want war, did not believe it was coming, and presumed with entire confidence that it would be within their power at any stage of diplomacy, to prevent being carried over the precipice in the drift. They thought the war that was near in appearance was not possible without their own intention. They undervalued the daring and enterprise of Japan.

It was not mainly good fortune merely that caused the Japanese fleet to be ready for action when the diplomats retired from toil, just when needed, so that there should not be the waste of haste. The government of Japan has bureaus of information, and as agents educated observers with a deal of technical knowledge most useful as a basis for the accumulation of information, without disturbing the air or advertising their private affairs. The Japanese have had a very "smart set" of young men educated abroad for special home service, and they have hidden mysteries in workshops that do not sound alarms with their hammers, but are capable of fine works.

It has been suggested, and it is not an irrational suggestion, that the Japanese have torpedo boats very much improved, and that it has been known to themselves only. Perhaps submarine boats have been achieved capable of guidance under water and accuracy of aim according to observations and surveys, and capable of gliding about unseen and striking the steel walls of battleships with mighty bolts charged with the terrors of modern chemistries, rending walls of iron.

THE EXPERT TORPEDO PLUNGERS.

How does it happen that the handling of torpedoes in the hands of the Japanese was to a nicety expert? There was marksmanship with torpedoes for the first time, and they were not known to be in action until the "shocks" "damaged" floating fortresses that until yesterday were, in computing chances in sea fights, pronounced invulnerable. How shall we explain the astounding series of startling catastrophes that have shattered the Russian men-of-war, and in a fortnight put Russia on the defensive? How do the Russian ships find Russian mines to run over, ships loaded with torpedoes, so that when "torpedoed" or "shocked," the vessels, cargoes and all are annihilated—so thoroughly destructive that no man lives to tell the tale? It is not likely the Russians hit their own mines repeatedly and rent themselves to atoms with their own ammunition. Who is to account for a series of appalling instances, as frightful as the massacre of the crew of the *Maine* in Havana, six years to a day, before warships were smitten in the same awful

way. Is this a phenomenal application of the science of annihilation? Are there instrumentalities that creep about the bottoms of harbors and burst there, as happened at Port Arthur to the splendid ship built at the Cramp yards in Philadelphia?

We have heard much of torpedo destroyers. The Port Arthur skirmishers appear to be loaded with volcanoes, and to send messengers of death to touch off earthquakes. The torpedo boats of the Japanese have done wonderful things, and it seems the half has not been told of the means and methods by which the wonder was worked. The torpedo boats are said to have made feints. One was reported playing around the heavy vessels of Japan, first in the front and then in the rear, and they were invisible until they touched and fired; and the strange story is they were not discovered until their tremendous bolts made shipwreck of battleships.

UNCANNY SPOOKS IN JAPANESE MAGAZINES.

Of course, this is not done by the stroke of a magician's hand, it is probably a scientific apparatus, and the problem is how the men are trained, who are the navigators and the invisible, irresistible thunderers. The Viceroy of the Russian Emperor has moved his headquarters, and if Port Arthur is hoo-dooed for the torpedo, is too powerful in its efficacy for a charm. The Japanese must have hidden away in their magazines the uncanny spooks of superior talent. Is Port Arthur a "Haunted House?" There is something queer about the situation. No Russians have retired from the torpedoed harbor, and it is nothing uncommon in brave men who fear nothing tangible, to be demoralized when under fire from the invisible. The smokeless powder gave a sense of a fire line of phantoms, and it is said to have been very disagreeable.

The retreat of the Russian army headquarters from Port Arthur, means no less than that the great empire is on the defensive against the smaller one.

The Russian fleet was placed at such disadvantage that the balance of sea power was with the Japanese. The Viceroy, by his movement, signalled the command of the sea to Japan, and that the Russians fell back on their army at last as to the decision of

the mastery of Korea, by the armies of the Empires in the territory contested. The Russians depend upon their great military power, their decisive superiority in cavalry, and their railroad, five thousand miles long and rather shaky.

The retreat of the Viceroy of Russia in the Far East, after the superiority of Japan at sea was demonstrated, while yielding land and water, to make sure of a strange line to gain time on, does not mean that there is relaxation on the side of the Russians, but the contrary. The Russian movement was fairly styled the defensive offensive, and perhaps the best thing to do.

A glance at the map shows the Russians have a strong line between Harbin—the base chosen in the midst of Russian misfortunes, was an act of concentration. The act of retiring from Port Arthur was simply the acceptance of fate, according to fortunes of war. The Russian report cotemporaneous with the evacuation of the coveted harbor Port Arthur, promised the armies of the Russians in Manchuria should be raised to 400,000 men, of whom 120,000 should be at Harbin, but all the figures were at that time exaggerated.

ADVANCE OF JAPANESE ARMY UPON HARBIN.

Lines drawn from Vladivostok and Port Arthur to Harbin describe an obtuse angle of Russian railroads.

Beyond the Yalu river, where the Japanese made history by defeating the Chinese fleet in the war of Japan and China in the autumn of 1895, there is ample space within the angle for the masses of Cossack cavalry. The advance of the Japanese announced is upon Harbin, after the impediments overcome by clearing away the earlier obstacles, demanded to be by the muster of the grand army of Japan, and the indications pointed first to the decision in the great crisis of the war, within that territory.

Dispatches of February 18th, declared on Japan's authority, that Port Arthur was already invested, and at the same time the Port was closed in a repulse of the Japanese fleet under Admiral Yago. However, the news was by way of St. Peterburg. The Russian account was :

“An attack made on Port Arthur on Tuesday, February 16,

was repulsed after heavy firing on both sides. According to the story, this attack was intended as a feint to cover a landing in Talienwan bay at Dalny, but it failed because the Russian guns were placed with great foresight to command that shore.

“A Russian expert says the Japanese evidently hoped the adjacent group of Eliot Isles would cover this movement, as they did the same thing during the Chino-Japanese War, landing simultaneously at Dalny and Kinchu, thus cutting off Port Arthur from each side of the Liaotung peninsula.

“‘It surprises me,’ this expert continues, ‘that the Japanese should have made such a foolhardy attempt to face the Russians, as they must know from their spies how strongly the peninsula is mined and defended.’

COMPARISON WITH WAR OF CHINA AND JAPAN.

“Talienwan Bay is a considerable body of water westward from Port Arthur. On its shores is Dalny, originally chosen by Russia for the strong naval and military base now at Port Arthur. In the Chinese-Japanese War the taking of this place, then known as Talienwan, was the prelude to the fierce battle which resulted in the capture of Port Arthur. Russian fortifications have replaced the mud forts which defended Talienwan, and the Japanese apparently underestimated the change.

“In the Chinese-Japanese War, however, the Japanese did not risk a landing near the town. The army landed at Honenku, eighty-five miles northeast of Port Arthur, and the first attack was made on Kingchu. This placed Japan in position to attack the six ports of Talienwan, now Dalny, from the rear. These tactics would now prove more effective than an attempted landing under modern guns skillfully placed to command the bay approaches. The Japanese plan would seem to have been eminently daring, even to a degree of foolhardiness. From the strategic standpoint the capture of Dalny would establish a base for military investiture of Port Arthur, which will be necessary for its capture despite the weakened condition of the fleet guarding the stronghold on the sea side.”

On the same date the Czar himself confirmed the ill fortune of his country, explaining the unpreparedness of Russia for war and the necessity for the exercise of patience by her people has been issued here. It is a remarkable document.

“The government makes a frank admission of Russia’s unpreparedness owing to Japan’s sudden precipitation of hostilities, and warns the Russian public not to expect immediate victories. The proclamation confirms the opinion which has existed here that Russia will act upon the defensive until her army is fully mobilized and the equipment of the commissariat is in perfect working order. There are already over 300,000 men in the field, but this number will be largely augmented. About 50,000 men are required to guard the railroad.” The proclamation says :

A SOLEMN PROCLAMATION OF SORROW.

“Eight days have now elapsed since all Russia was shaken with profound indignation against an enemy who suddenly broke off negotiations, and by a treacherous attack endeavored to obtain an easy success in a war long desired. The Russian nation with natural impatience, desires prompt vengeance, and awaits feverishly news from the Far East.

“The unity and strength of the Russian people leave no room for doubt that Japan will receive the chastisement she deserves for her treachery and provocation to war at a time when our beloved sovereign desired to maintain peace among the nations. The conditions under which hostilities are being carried on compel us to wait with patience news of the success of our troops, which cannot occur before decisive actions are fought by the Russian army.

“The distance of the territory and the desire of the Emperor to maintain peace were the causes of the impossibility of more complete and earlier preparations for war. Much time is now necessary in order to strike at Japan blows worthy of the dignity and might of Russia, and, while sparing as much as possible the shedding of blood of her children, to inflict just chastisement upon the nation which has provoked the struggle. Russia must await

the event in patience, being sure that our army will avenge an hundredfold that provocation.

“Operations on land must not be expected for some time yet, and we cannot obtain early news from the theatre of war. The useless shedding of blood is unworthy the greatness and power of Russia.

“Our country displays such unity and desire for self-sacrifice on behalf of the national cause that all true news from the scene of hostilities will be immediately due to the entire nation.”

Viceroy Alexieff, on February 18th, in a long official dispatch, recounting the details of the fight of February 9 at Port Arthur, has been received, says :

RUSSIAN VIEW OF TORPEDO ATTACK BY JAPANESE.

“After the night torpedo attack the Japanese fleet, consisting of sixteen warships, appeared at 10 o'clock in the morning off Port Arthur. Its appearance was noted by the coast signal stations as well as by the ships of our squadron, which lay in the outer roadstead fully prepared for battle. Our squadron consisted of five battleships, five first and second class cruisers and fifteen torpedo boats, under the command of Vice Admiral Stark and Rear Admiral Ukhtonski. The coast batteries immediately prepared to receive the enemy. Our squadron weighed anchor in order of battle, and, upon the first shot being fired by the enemy, the fleet and batteries replied simultaneously with a lively cannonade. The most exposed to the enemy's fire were the ships of the squadron, battery No. 15, on Electric Cliff, and battery No. 13 on Golden Hill. Other coast batteries, principally Nos. 17 and 18, were also under fire.

“The following vessels took part in the battle: In the front line were the battleship Petropaulovsk, flying the flag of Vice Admiral Stark and commanded by Captain Jakovloff; the battleship Sevastopol, Captain Chernychoff; the battleship Poltava, Captain Uspensk; the battleship Peresviet, flying the flag of Rear Admiral Ukhtonski, commanded by Captain Boissmann, and the battleship Pobieda, Captain Sazarenny.

“There were also the first-class cruisers Bayan, Captain

Viron ; Diana, Captain Satouski, and Askold, Captain Gramchikoff ; the second-class cruisers Boyarin, Captain Sarpcheff, and Novik, Captain Jassen..

“ The battleships Czarevitch, Captain Gregorovitch, and Retvizan, Captain Sensnovitch, and the cruiser Pallada, Captain Kossovitch, which lay at anchor, having been damaged in the torpedo attack of the night before, likewise participated in the fight, as did the transport Angara, Captain Suchonlin. There were also engaged the torpedo boats of the first and second divisions, under the Divisional Commander.”

THE DEFEATED VICEROY'S REMARKS.

The official report by the Viceroy of the serious reverse for the Russians, is a careful account to soothe the wounded pride of the country, and impart to the Russian forces the stimulating idea that though the battle was a losing one, the honor of the navy was vindicated by personal courage and devotion. The Czar's proclamation of reasons for the series of disasters is meant to touch the hearts of the people by giving them an example of candor, and confidence, and also indignation, that the Japanese attack was an act of treachery.

February 17th the Czar appeared in the court-yard of the Winter Palace and received the Third Battalion of the First Siberian Rifles, which is proceeding to the Far East. The review took place in the presence of the Tsaritsa, the Dowager Empress, the Grand Duke Michael, the War Minister, M. Kuropatkin ; General Sakharoff, Chief of Staff, and court officials. After the inspection, the rendering of the national anthem by the band and cheers from the spectators, His Majesty made a speech to the departing soldiers, in which he said :

“ My brothers, I am happy to be able to see you all before you leave, and I wish you a good journey. I am firmly convinced that you will all uphold the honor of your ancient regiment and readily risk your lives for your dear fatherland.

“ Remember your foe is brave, confident and crafty. From my heart I wish you success over your opponents. I bless you,

my brothers, and with you the famous First Siberian Regiment; may St. Seraphim pray for you and accompany you in all your ways.

“I thank the officers for volunteering.”

The New York *Tribune*, in a carefully considered article on February 17th, said:

“The retreat of the Russian Viceroy, if the news of it be authentic, is a striking incident of the war, and may well be highly significant. We might, perhaps, be pardoned for calling it a flight, since it does not seem easy to explain his departure from Port Arthur for Harbin on any other ground than that of fear of capture by the enemy. Port Arthur has been the vice-regal capital, the military and naval stronghold, the point from which all operations in Manchuria and Korea were directed, the great fortress which was to defend the Russian Empire in the East from attack. It is the place where the Russian Commander-in-Chief should be. For him thus to abandon it can apparently mean nothing less than that its capture, or at least its isolation, is imminent, and the Viceroy means not personally to share in its fate.

“HE HAS GONE TO HARBIN.”

“Nor is that the sole significance. Observe that he has gone to Harbin. Had he simply retired to a more advantageous point from which to direct the campaign in Shing-King, he would have gone to New-Chwang, or at most to Mukden. But there are reports of Japanese landings near New-Chwang and of Japanese patrols northwest of Mukden; so he goes further. He leaves Shing-King altogether. He does not stop even at Kirin, the capital of the next province to the north, but keeps on all the way to Harbin, on the Sungari River, more than two-thirds of the way to the Siberian frontier. Thus not only Port Arthur and the Regent's Sword, but all of Southern Manchuria and the whole Korean frontier, are abandoned; or are to be held, if at all, by Russian forces whose commander is several hundred miles away at the rear.

“Harbin is the important railroad function where the Man-

churian Railroad branches from the main Siberian line to Vladivostok."

The acknowledgment of the full measure of the Russian defeats is made in the change of base of the Russian army. The obvious meaning, as soon as the facts appeared, was that the Russians made up their minds to abandon the coasts that are dominated by the fleets of Japan except in fortified places. The Russian navy is practically out of the combat directly. The Japanese, in the movement of their armies, were given so much ground to move over and get ready as invaders of Russian territory, in order to place the grand army of Russia securely on their transcontinental railroad; and the army of Japan advancing to the decisive battle field will be confronted by a greater army than that which fought Napoleon at Borodino, and made his final success so costly that his strength was spent, and later came the retreat from Moscow. The advance from Borodino to Moscow has only a spectacular place in history.

A FEVERISH SPELL IN LONDON.

London was reported February 18, to be in a condition of feverish impatience, awaiting news which shall definitely indicate where the 100,000 men, who have doubtless already sailed from Japanese ports, are to be landed. British military critics have been coming round to the view, cabled a few days ago, that the hinterland of Port Arthur would be the selected locality, and Mr. Bennet Burleigh, in his despatch from Nagasaki, saying that Japan's main objective will be found to be within a hundred miles of the Liao-tung Peninsula, probably makes use of that colloquial phrase to suggest a very hot scent indeed.

Various despatches to the London papers from Japan speak of the embarkation of troops at various ports as having commenced or as going on, but these were all more or less belated.

The Japanese landed an army, which subsequently reduced Port Arthur, at Ta-lien-Wan Bay in the war of 1894, but it was under far different circumstances from those which exist now. The Chinese army was a mere mob of Chinese people who had been

crippled and driven from the sea to the shelter of the harbors of Wei-Hai-Wei and Port Arthur. To land any large body of troops on these shores now would be a far different undertaking.

All estimates agree that Russia has more than 100,000 men between the square formed roughly by Mukden, the Yalu, Port Arthur and Niu-Chwang. There are fairly good roads through the peninsula, and the railroad is still working. Russia certainly should be able to concentrate an army of 75,000 to 100,000 men at any given point on the peninsula within a week.

THE RUMORS THAT GO WITH WARS.

A London despatch of February 18th, says: "Nothing is accurately known of the movements of the Japanese army, but the indications contained in earlier reports that the main body is already in Korea are untrue."

The Nagasaki correspondent of the Telegraph, under date of February 15th, says: "Last night Japanese soldiers on the point of embarkation were singing in the streets. At many points beside Moji, Nagasaki and Kobe transports have embarked troops, horses and guns, and more are going. The cavalry horses seen are hardly worth transporting except to the knacker's yard. I never saw such sorry scrub ponies.

"Last night martial law was proclaimed in the districts of Sa-sebo, Hakodate, Nagasaki and Tsushima Island. There are over a score of steam transports at Moji among other places. Numbers have cleared nightly for ports towards Korea. There are ten large steamers to-day at Nagasaki flying the army transport flag. Each is of 6,000 tons.

"The steamers, besides carrying a full complement of boats, have each eight or ten large sampans upon their davits. The sampan means a boat of three planks, but the description is not accurate. The boat is especially for harbor service, carries a large sail, a long oar, that serves as a holder, and a rudder. Twenty men can be carried on the sampan, and equipments for as many soldiers. These sampans are admirably adapted to being rowed or towed in shallow waters or through heavy surf. The embarkations are re-

markably well managed. Horse boxes are fitted up on several of the vessels.

"The men's quarters are most commodious. The railway facilities are ample for bringing the troops to the ports. When they arrive they are fed and marched to their billets. Subsequently they are embarked on lighters and steam launches and taken quietly to the ships."

This correspondent did not believe that the troops were going



COSSACKS AT RIFLE PRACTICE.

to land in Korea. He intimates with considerable assurance that their destination is near the mouth of the Yalu River or the Peninsula.

A despatch from Paris said it was reported there that a Japanese force, consisting of upwards of 40,000 men, is embarking on transports. It is said that this force will be landed on the Liaotung Peninsula for the purpose of attacking Port Arthur in the rear.

From other sources come circumstantial reports that the Liaotung Peninsula is the landing place.

The Japanese had two very hard propositions before them

when the Viceroy retreated—that of landing an army on a rocky peninsula, and to disperse a cloud of 30,000 Cossacks.

German opinion is that the war will be prolonged—Berlin opinion is that of the German staff, and it was thus reported in the midst of the transition phase from the sea to the land :

“The first stadium of the war has reached a rapid and conclusive end. All interest is now concentrated on the operations of the opposing armies.

“Here, however, it is thought there is but little prospect that the Japanese will bring off any such sensational coup as they did with their fleet. A question which is being generally discussed in Berlin is that of Russia’s preparedness on land. Is she any better organized from a military point of view than she was from a naval one? The answer to this question, in the opinion of competent military authorities in German, is in the negative.

“The declaration of M. Kurind, former Japanese Minister at St. Petersburg, that he is convinced the Russian Government was sincerely desirous of maintaining peace, is here regarded as correct. Russia did not desire war and did not, in consequence, make thorough preparations for it. The Viceroy and the war party forced the hand of the Czar and his advisers, with the result that they have had to embark on a conflict in which Russia’s military prestige and her position as a great Power are at stake.

“Now, however, that war has begun, the whole of Russia’s military organization is being taxed to the utmost to make up for existing shortcomings.”

A great mass of Russian troops move of course from the frontier of Germany and Austria. The three nations that divided Poland, will not disagree to the advantage of Japan.

CHAPTER IX.

BATTLEFIELD OF THE WAR.

The Cities, Roads and Rivers Where the War Is Carried on
—Conditions and Products of the Country—Character of
People and Resources.

DURING the weary months of the tedious negotiations of the Japanese and Russian diplomats, over the disputed questions that at last suddenly exploded in war, the Japanese were aggressive because Russia clearly was acting upon difficult, if not untenable interpretations of the treaties, with the ratification of which the Chinese war, that had threatened the peace of many nations, came to an end.

The Russians were disposed to be liberal in promises, seeming to propose to themselves that they would find advantages they could improve in the course of the administration of that which was written in the contracts, in certain passages not quite definite.

Japan was not allowed with the myriads of China in antagonism—and Russia standing in a menacing and apparently overwhelming attitude—to accomplish the ambition her victories might have given her, in annexing the provinces she had overrun; and the Mikado Empire was oppressed into the acceptance of the acquisition of the fine island of Formosa. More than that, the Chinese war was to the Japanese an incomparable school of war, and the Imperialists of the Northern Pacific islands were wise to wait, to perfect their naval and military fleets and armies in organization, and equipments in railroads and artillery—also to remedy the deficiencies of the cavalry army of their service, and perfect the terrible torpedoes.

It was also a part of the Japanese policy to establish the gold standard of value and apply all the modern improvements for the foreshadowed war on the waters of Asia. There was, before this was a question approaching predominance, for a while—and several

chapters of it—whether Japan should reach South and East for the islands of the Pacific, the addition of which, to their empire, would give them a commanding position in the greater ocean of the globe.

The Japanese took a deep, and it seemed very serious interest in the policy of the United States, in regard to the Hawaiian and Philippine groups; and there were suspicions that the falling into the hands of the United States of the Alutian archipelago, was not witnessed with enthusiasm by the warriors and statesmen of Japan, for it would have suited them precisely to possess the fringe of islands south of Siberia, that brought the great Republic of North America close enough to the Eastern islands of Japan, to shake hands with us at sunrise, day by day, or if the barometer was low, shake fists. However, if ever a controversy was contemplated, over the archipelagoes of the Pacific that were swept as by a vast and irresistible current into the possession of the United States, it was not formulated.

JAPAN'S CHINESE VICTORY TROUBLESOME.

Japan did not feel that her position was so far consolidated by the defeat of China at her hands, as to make it prudent to call Russia to account. The idea was, the Bear was too big and greedy. The result was, the Japanese accepted the assurances of Russia, and the Russians had a call to gather the points of possession. That is, Russia got the superficial, and, indeed, so far as the land question went, the solid rewards, for the Japanese-Chinese war. Japan had to show far famous warriors, and Russia gained Port Arthur. The plain story was that Japan would have, some time soon, to fight Russia for Korea and Manchuria or give them up.

Neither Russia nor Japan could be satisfied formally and forever, to accept either Korea or Manchuria, leaving the other to the most interested Empire. Here was a complication of three empires—Japan and China, both Asiatic, and Russia with immense Siberia on the north to improve, and enormous helpless China on the south, the natural prey of the highly armed, drilled and disciplined nations. There was no chance of an alliance between

Japan and China; and that Japan and Russia would come to blows on the great material and moral questions between them, soon occurred to the world as a probability, and this grew gradually into a certainty.

The exchange of "notes" between Tokio and St. Petersburg was carried on as a monotonous matter with increasing irritation that indicated a stormy season. Peoples cried peace, but there was no peace. Russia, before taking all she could get from China and holding Japan at arms-length, wanted a railroad from St. Petersburg to Port Arthur. The two hostile empires devoted themselves, according to their capacities and fashions, to prepare for war, while cultivating peace, in able letters, with exceptional ostentation.

JAPANESE WAR PREPARATION.

Japan gathered intensity of purpose, and did not for a time dispute offensively the sincerity of the Russian's evasions that meant delay. Russia made the mistake of presuming that she would have to force Japan into war, and meantime give herself, in a ponderous, leisurely way, the time she wanted to exercise her power of magnitude and energy of stolid inertia.

Japan sharpened her weapons, enlarged her navy, studied the battleship and torpedo question, and built a few military railroads of her own that her armies might be rapidly mustered as one. Above all the physical detail and mechanical designs, that expended the immediate forces of the Japanese, their military and naval heroes of the war with China studied minutely and incessantly plans of campaign, and gathered exact information, such as would be useful for war purposes. An active corps of experts were intensely industrious, and as persevering and constant as if the war to break out was an affair of their own.

There was nothing festive about the Japanese. They were resolved to lose no chances and act upon exhaustive investigation in deadly earnestness. Russia was not wrought up to this fighting pitch. She allowed herself time and considered in a way that does not mean the urging of bloody business, what she might, could, should, perhaps would, prepare for a fight, and call a council

of war on the various ways of taking the offensive, and give the Emperor the glory of the peacemakers.

All at once Japan wanted to know when she could have the pleasure of knowing what Russia would do for the sake of avoiding a clash of arms. This does not closely resemble the language of the notes, for there were many furtive phrases; and then in such an hour as Russia thought not, Japan declared war by making it. She was the little fellow, but ready for a fight, perfectly trained for it, having passed words, the smart little one slapped the sluggish giant's face, struck him on both cheeks, sent her torpedoes to disable the steel-clad battleships, and "did them up," as the boys put it, "at the hour of midnight."

THE WAY TO FIGHT IS TO FIGHT.

That is the way to fight. If one is sure it is to be, strike first, strike fast and hard, and aim the blows at the under places. The Czar's complaint had a note of sorrow, but not the sound of the war trumpet.

As the Japanese campaign of naval aggression was continued, there was evidence that in all the thunderous confusion a system of operations studied out, was discernable and the big guns ended the competition in phraseology that was growing tedious.

The Japanese were soon in possession of the wide waters of the North Asiatic seas, and the "Sea Power" was hers. Evidently Russia was surprised, embarrassed and without fixed plans and forceful purposes studied down to a wire edge and carried on with urgency, hardihood and enlightenment. All the biting strokes were aimed.

The first phase of the war was over when Port Arthur and Vladivostok were bombarded and pounded; and the naval experiences of the Russians, instructed presently that the fight was on, moved steadily at last to concentrate a great army, or armies, instead of distributing the essential masses in garrisons, a stolid defensive method that multiplies the opportunities of an enemy and bewilders friends.

The splendid province of Manchuria and the kingdom of

Korea, are the battle fields upon which must appear whether the race is to the swift, and the battle to the people that have the bigger guns.

The United States' recent consul reports give the latest, best chosen and most clearly presented accounts of the seat of war—the railroads and rivers, and cities and industries, the crops and the commerce of the disputed country, Manchuria and Korea, and the depending inhabitants are in person and property profoundly involved.

ASIATIC CONSUL'S CORRESPONDENCE.

The question is one of imperial expansion, and not of liberties of the people or their prosperities. The seat of war is the stage of the drama. Manchuria and Korea are for Asia, as was said of the Netherlands of Europe, the cockpit of the continent.

Henry B. Miller, Consul of the United States, at Niuchwang, China, November 12, 1903, wrote that the war was smoking, not burning, at the time.

The Chinese Eastern Railway, the southwestern terminus of the great Siberian Railway, in its course through Manchuria to its end at Port Arthur passes through 1,000 miles of as continuously rich agricultural country as can be found anywhere in the world.

Our Consul, as will be observed, is well informed and strikingly frank in expression of studied opinions. He says of the building of Harbin, the city to which the Viceroy of Russia removed his headquarters after it became evident the Japanese would be able to overcome the scattered Russian fleet; a part of the ships having been damaged by torpedoes. The first proposition of the Consul is to state the building of that city. He said officially:

“One of the greatest achievements in city construction that the world has ever witnessed is now going on in the heart of Manchuria.

“In the building of such cities as Vladivostok, Dalny and Port Arthur, Russia has demonstrated her power and purpose on the Pacific in line with the world's conception of her character; but in the construction of this wonderful city of Harbin she is displaying

an altogether different type of activity from what we are prone to attribute to her.

“It is in this city, Harbin, more than in all the others that Russia is asserting her intentions of becoming an active industrial force in the affairs of the Orient, and her people are already giving the place the title of the Moscow of Asia.

“The city is located on the Sungari River, at the point where the Manchurian branch of the Siberian Railway crosses the stream and where the Chinese Eastern branch starts south to Dalny and Port Arthur. It is about 350 miles west of Vladivostok and 600 miles north of Port Arthur. Its location is the geographical center of Manchuria, and from present prospects it is to become the commercial center as well.

DISTINCTLY RUSSIAN CITIES IN MANCHURIA.

“The city is surrounded on all sides for hundreds of miles with a rich and productive agricultural country, producing corn, wheat, oats, barley, beans, millet, hemp, tobacco, vegetables and some fruits. Minerals and timber and great areas of grazing lands also surround it.

“At present the place consists of the old town, 3 miles from the central depot; Prestin, or the river town, the present commercial center; and the administration town, in close proximity to the railway station. Before the railway engineers established this as their headquarters, there was no native town in this vicinity, and the entire place is therefore a Russian product.

“It is as distinctly a Russian city as though it were located in the heart of Russia, and none but Russians and Chinese are permitted to own land, construct buildings or engage in any permanent enterprise. The city has been created by the Russian Government, under the management of the Manchurian Railway Company. The land for many miles in each direction has been secured, so as to make it impossible for any foreign influence to secure a profit or foothold.

“The valley of the Liao River produces and exports \$10,000,000 worth of food products each year.

“The country drained by this river and its tributaries is approximately 62,500 square miles. Some of it is mountainous, but the largest part of it is level land and rich rolling hills susceptible of cultivation. Almost every acre through which the railway passes is under cultivation.

“The land is mostly a sandy loam with little gravel or rock and it is a serious problem with the railway to find enough along the line to provide ballast for the road.

THE SOIL IS FERTILE AND PRODUCTIVE.

“The soil is as easily worked as an ash heap and produces enormous crops of beans and millet without apparently diminishing its fertility. Considerable of the land in this valley in Mongolia is in its native state, producing only native grasses as food for ponies, cattle, sheep and goats. It is owned in large tracts and controlled by Mongol princes. As soon as the more available land is utilized in wheat production there is no doubt but branch lines of the Chinese Eastern Railway will be extended into this country and this land will be utilized in growing wheat. It is too near the great and growing flour market in China to remain idle long.

“The sandy loam deposit, the level land, and the abundance of water a few feet from the surface, together with the general climatic conditions, make a large part of this valley ideal in all of its characteristics for the production of alfalfa. After it has passed the intense period of wheat production which is now just beginning it will become especially noted for its production of alfalfa, milk, hogs and beef. The advent of Russia into the valley, with the nature and character of her people, is sure to bring this about.

“Liao Valley is the greatest in the world in the production of beans and millet, but in a very short time it will be great in the production of wheat as well. The very extensive production of beans, used for food, for oil, and for bean-cake fertilizer, throughout this section, makes the port of Niuchwang, at the mouth of the Liao River, the greatest bean market of the world. The latitude is the same as the Dakotas and the climate is very much the same.

“Freezing weather begins about the 1st of November and thaw-

ing the last of March. The most disagreeable feature of the climate is the strong, severe winds that prevail in winter and spring. The thermometer falls to 45° below zero at times for a very short period.

“The natives do not seem to be distressed at this low temperature, but will be found on the roads with their teams at four o'clock in the morning hauling the product of their farms sometimes hundreds of miles to market.

“The spring and summer are occupied in planting and cultivating the crops, the fall in harvesting, and the winter in hauling to market. Thus the animal and human forces are utilized with the utmost economy. The roads in winter are very good and I am inclined to the opinion that the cheapest cart haul in the world is carried on during the winter in Manchuria.

HARBIN'S FLOUR MILL INDUSTRY.

“The Russian system of railways is being closely followed by a complete banking system, the management of which is carefully studying all the economic conditions of the country and providing the necessary capital for developing such business as its agents approve. The wheat and flour trade is one of the leading features in their scheme. Russians are coming into Manchuria in large numbers.

“Harbin is the present center of the flouring-mill industry of Manchuria and is destined to become one of the great flour-producing centers of the world. It is situated in the heart of the valley of the Sungari, on the banks of that stream, where it has the advantage of water transportation from the wheat fields, as well as transportation by rail from three different directions. It has, in addition to this, cheap water transportation to the sea, two lines of railway reaching the ocean—one at Vladivostok and the other line touching it at Niuchwang, Dalny, and Port Arthur.

“In 1900 the place did not contain a single flour mill or produce a pound of flour. In 1901, at the time of my first visit to the place, there was one mill producing 150 barrels a day. In 1902 there were two mills, producing 750 barrels a day. In the

early part of 1903 there were six mills, with a daily production of 1,440 barrels. In October, 1903, during my last visit, I found eight mills, with a total daily capacity of 3,800 barrels, erected at a cost of \$618,000.

"The wheat is sown in April and harvested in September and October. It is bound in bundles, hauled to the village and stacked, and threshed at leisure by the men, women, and children. The grain is laid upon the ground in a circle and stone rollers are pulled over it by donkeys led by children. The straw is raked off and carried away for winter fuel, while the grain is swept into a pile with the chaff and then tossed in the air until the wind separates the grain. The dry, cold winter serves to make this an outdoor occupation for the family, in which men, women, and children take part.

MILLS OF BRICK AND STONE.

"Most of the mills in Manchuria are fine structures of brick and stone, provided with excellent modern machinery from Germany and Austria. Why these mills have not been provided with American machinery I am not advised.

"The price of wheat at the Harbin mills was in 1901, fifty cents a bushel in gold. The price has fallen to thirty-seven cents.

"On the Chinese Eastern Railway, 150 miles south of Harbin, there is a new modern flour mill (the Quan Cheng Tsu mill), producing 150 barrels of flour per day; at Kirin there is another new mill of the same capacity; at Mukden there is a new mill, just started, with a capacity of 100 barrels per day; Port Arthur has a flour mill of recent construction producing 150 barrels per day.

"In Manchuria, by the early part of 1904, and within three years, flour mills producing 5,000 barrels of flour a day will have been built.

"Harbin is a city of 60,000 Russians and 40,000 Chinese. It is the center of Manchurian trade. There are many opportunities to sell American goods, but we have no American citizens there working for trade.

"At present Americans are not allowed to own land or build

houses, and to do business permission of the local Russian authorities must be secured."

The price of flour per 100 pounds was :

	1902.	1903.
No. 4.	\$1.00	\$1.32
No 3.	1.08	1.40
No. 2.	1.32	1.55
No. 1.	2.23	2.46

In South Ussuri district, near the Pacific coast, there are twelve steam flour mills and a number of others operated by water power. The production of these twelve steam mills was 433,344 barrels a year.

RUSSIAN RAILROAD RATES.

The railroad rate from Harbin and Quan Ching Tzu to Port Arthur is now 57 cents per 100 pounds, or a fraction over half a cent gold per pound or \$10 gold per ton for a haul between 450 and 600 miles. The labor cost of operating and maintaining is as cheap as anywhere in the world, and the grades are few and light, the heaviest being only 9 feet to 1,000, and this only for a very few short distances. Common labor costs only 18 cents per day and skilled labor is about one-fourth the cost of the same labor in the United States.

The Quan Ching Tzu mill is shipping flour now to Port Arthur, but the Harbin mills are shipping mostly to Vladivostok, although they are contemplating the shipment of much of their 1904 output to Port Arthur.

At Vladivostok they have the benefit of a protective tariff against American flour and they are demanding the same at Port Arthur.

The lives of these people are very primitive. The men women and children labor in the fields and maintain a cheap, lowly life, living in mud houses and sleeping on mud beds. The entire household furniture and outfit is no greater than could be carried on a single wheelbarrow.

These people are well satisfied to earn from 20 to 30 Mexican cents a day per man.

It is interesting that the Russians have been doing so much business and doing it so well in Manchuria. The American Consul says:

“The city of Harbin is of the greatest interest, for it will be the center of the seat of war. The place began to assume importance as a center of railway management, and in 1901 the population had grown to 12,000 souls; in 1902, to 20,000; by May, 1903, to 44,000; and in October, the census showed a population of 60,000, exclusive of soldiers. The ratio of women is as follows: Japanese, 120 per cent.; Russians, 44 per cent.; 1.8 per cent.; average of women, 14.3 per cent.

HEADQUARTERS AND RAILROAD CENTER.

“Harbin is the center of the entire railway administration of Manchuria, and as the Russian commercial enterprises of the Far East are under the direction of the railway company, it will also be the center of Russian industrial and commercial development. It is the headquarters of the civil courts and the chief military post, and the main center of control of all the vast army of railway guards.

“The system of advancing credit to Chinese merchants for the purchase of Russian goods prevails now generally throughout Manchuria, and it is by this method and by imports free of duty and favored rates over the railway that Russian cotton goods are likely to capture the great trade of Manchuria that is now largely in the hands of American manufacturers.

“Harbin was started primarily as a military center and an administration town for the government and direction of railway affairs. Its growth into a splendid commercial and manufacturing city was not originally provided for by the promoters and it has been somewhat of a surprise to them, but the fever of making it a great Russian commercial and manufacturing city has taken possession of the railway management.

“The capital for most of the private enterprises is furnished by Siberian Jews. Chinese are furnishing money for the construction of some of the finest private buildings, such as hotels, store rooms,

etc. In the administration part of the city no private buildings of any kind are permitted.

"The administration has already received over 2,000,000 rubles (\$1,030,000) for land sold to private parties. Many elegant residences and substantial structures are in course of construction in the additions adjacent to the administration towns.

"The steamers are mostly of the stern-wheel type, burning wood, such as are in operation on the western rivers in the United States.

"*Railroads.*—Going west from Harbin the train takes you by branch line from the crossing of the headwaters of the Amur to Stretensk, the head of navigation of this great river, while the main line goes to Lake Baikal (Siberia) and Russia. Going east, the railway reaches the sea at Vladivostok over a grade that does not exceed in any place 13 feet to 1000. Going south, the Chinese Eastern Railway meets seagoing ships at Niuchwang, Dalny and Port Arthur. The heaviest grade on this line is 9 feet to 1000, and that for only a short distance and at rare intervals.

"In October, 1903, the regular number of trains dispatched for through traffic was thirty per day. Eighteen local trains were dispatched in addition. These local trains connected the two extremes of the town, viz., the old town and Prestin with the administration part of the city."

CHAPTER X.

THE NAVIES OF THE NATIONS.

Comparison of the War Ships of the Powers Armed for the Rule of the Oceans—The Cost of Our Floating Citadels of Steel—Neutral Fleets in the North Pacific—Suggested Errors of Construction—Object Lessons of War.

THE interest in the navies of the nations has immeasurably increased by the remarkable illustrations of the importance of sea power in the use of modern battleships and torpedoes. We give the exact capacity in tonnage of the vessels, built and building, of 1000 or more tons displacement :

RELATIVE ORDER OF BATTLESHIP STRENGTH.

At present.		As would be the case were vessels building now completed.	
Nation.	Tonnage.	Nation.	Tonnage.
Great Britain	1,516,040	Great Britain	1,867,260
France	576,000	France	755,757
Russia	416,158	United States	616,275
Germany	387,874	Russia	558,432
United States	294,405	Germany	505,619
Ialy	258,838	Italy	329,257
Japan	243,586	Japan	253,681
Austria	93,919	Austria	149,833

The Japanese navy, built and building, is only 47 war vessels, in all 253,681 tons. As this was received in the Senate with an expression of surprise, Senator Hale said: "Japan is at home. In any possible controversy that may arise her base is only a few hundred miles away from any naval or military operations. The largest figures that Japan can show are small compared with those of every other country that I have cited, except Austria; but she has this immense advantage of being near her home in her fighting."

Mr. Overman. "What position relatively shall we obtain when the present bill is passed?"

Mr. Hale. "That will not change it very greatly, except that I will say this: Germany is not keeping up a large new programme. Her programme is not nearly as large as ours. France's programme is not as large as ours, excepting in some smaller vessels. The only power that is keeping up an increase as large as we are in these large ships is Great Britain."

JAPAN FIGHTS AT HOME.

The Russian war party did not seem to take into account the fact that Japan was at home, and the bulk of Russia on the other side of the world; and that the home seas of the unwieldy empire—the Baltic and the Black—were blockaded by a coalition, the leader of which is England. Our navy is, however, larger in proportion to others than seems to be the case as seen in the compilation from the Navy Department that we have given. Our advantage is in having a larger proportion than others of new ships. Senator Hale said on this point: "I find that to make up this great tonnage of large vessels of other countries there is included a great many vessels that were built before we began to build our new Navy. Many of these large vessels are old; they are set aside."

The old ships "set aside" are, however, show ships, but on the muster roll and the pay roll. "We have under construction:

First-class battleships	13
Armored cruisers	8
Protected cruisers	8
Gunboat for Great Lakes (not begun)	1
Composite gunboats	2
Steel torpedo boats	6
Training ships	2
Training brig	1
Tugs	2
<hr/>	
Total	43

The following table shows the tonnage and final cost of all the ships provided for in last year's bill and this year's bill:

Our vessels provided for in the act of March 3, 1903.

	Trial displacement.	Cost of hull and machinery.	Cost of armor.	Cost of armament.	Total cost.
<i>Battleships.</i>	<i>Tons.</i>				
Minnesota	16,000	\$4,110,000	\$1,800,000	\$1,520,857	\$7,430,857
Kansas	16,000	4,165,000	1,800,000	1,520,857	7,485,857
Vermont	16,000	4,179,000	1,800,000	1,510,857	7,499,857
Idaho	13,000	2,999,500	1,689,500	1,050,000	5,739,000
Mississippi	13,000	2,999,500	1,689,500	1,050,000	5,739,000
	74,000	\$33,894,571

It was stated in the Senate that each of the largest of our new ships cost \$7,500,000. We have appropriated for the navy since 1882, \$700,896,567.75. The total estimated cost of completing vessels, exclusive of armor and armament, is \$76,438,055. This does not include the Idaho and Mississippi, the 13,000-ton ships, which will add \$11,478,000. To this must be added the future appropriations for armor and armament for these ships. The total must be not far from \$130,000,000.

Some years ago, when there were drifting the most valuable islands in the Pacific, and a doubt about accepting our annexation of Hawaii, it was closely observed that the strength, available, of the Japanese navy in the Pacific exceeded ours. What could be done with a great battle ship passing from the Pacific to the Atlantic, was seen in the run of the Oregon, whose arrival was just in time and place to run down and knock out the last of the Spanish war ships.

The Panama canal will some day enable us to unite our Atlantic and Pacific fronts.

It is according to observation and reflection that the war between Japan and Russia can not end without a very considerable augmentation of the naval forces of all nations, that will be maintained in the North Pacific. There has been for many years a display of war ships of all countries, that afford those expensive

armaments in the Asiatic waters of the Pacific. The English, Austrian, Italian, Russian, German, French and Japanese are conspicuous in the harbors, and there have been maneuvers and target practice; and the harmless thunder of salutes is familiar.

The representation of the nations with navies has been a congress of warships, of imposing presence and interest, now to be greater splendor and resonance. There will also be a large recruiting service for the travelers who will care to visit the scenes of exciting modern history, framed in the picturesque Oriental antiquities.

In view of the opportune issue by the Admiralty of a list of the British warships on the three stations directly connected with the Far East, it should be interesting to study the naval strength of other powers in the same waters. The Admiralty communicated the disposition of the British ships which had been obtained by telegraph from the respective admirals in command of the squadrons, and from this it appears that the bulk of the British force in the Chinese Seas has been assembled at Mirs Bay, in the vicinity of Hong-kong, the point of departure of Admiral Dewey's fleet on his memorable expedition to Manila.

DISTRIBUTION OF BRITISH FLEETS.

The principal ships on the Australia Station were similarly assembled at Hobart, Tasmania; while in the East Indies the ships were almost all of them in the neighborhood of Aden, at the southern end of the Red Sea. It will be remembered that not long since the three admirals commanding on these stations met at Singapore, and it may be presumed that they then made preparation for concerted action, in view of such circumstances as have now arisen.

After the British fleet that of the United States is the most powerful. Numerically Great Britain has in the China Seas five battleships, three armored cruisers, two first-class protected cruisers, five smaller cruisers, and a proportion of sloops, gunboats, and destroyers. The United States fleet consists of three battleships, one coast defence ship, five cruisers, and several gunboats,

while in addition a flotilla of destroyers, accompanied by a cruiser, is on its way out to join the flag of the rear-admiral.

The select of the American ships were recently at Subig Bay, in the Philippines, but the Vicksburg, gunboat, was at Chemulpo. A despatch from Washington states that the cruiser New Orleans has left for Chifu and the cruiser Raleigh, with a smaller vessel, for Shanghai. The San Francisco is still on passage to the station.

The French squadron is under Vice-Admiral Bayle, with his flag in the Montcalm. He has under his command two armored cruisers, one first-class cruiser, and three smaller cruisers, besides gunboats and torpedo craft. As guardships, in reserve at Saigon, there are also the old armored ships Redoubtable and Vauban, but they are of no value for seagoing purposes. As a reinforcement to the squadron the armored cruiser Sully has recently left France, and her sister ship the Marseillaise is also under orders to proceed to the station, convoying two destroyers, the Javelin and Pistolet.

FRENCH, GERMAN AND ITALIAN SHIPS.

A smaller cruiser, the Descartes, is also proceeding to the Far East; but this vessel, it has been officially announced, is merely intended as a relief for the Bugeaud, which is to return home. Two more destroyers, the Mosquet and Froude, have been mentioned as likely to go out under the escort of the Descartes.

Germany's naval power is represented in the Far East by eight cruisers, one of which is of the armored class.

Three Italian cruisers, one a fine armored vessel, are on the station, and four more, one of which, the Marco Polo, will fly the flag of Admiral Grenet, are also under orders to proceed there. The Dogali and Marco Polo left Naples on March 1, and the Umbria is to follow. The Puglia is on her way to Yokohama from the Pacific Slope. According to the latest information the Vettor Pisani was at Nagasaki, the Piemonte at Shanghai, the Puglia at San Francisco, and the Elba at Chemulpo.

A hearty, wholesome discussion of the state of our navy occurred in the Senate, March 7, 1904, apropos of the actual

extent, cost, fighting capacity, at home and abroad, comparative value in action of our new ships and old ones; and all the precise information of the state of the navy, having been obtained, there were inquiries and answers as to the form and expert theories of ships we have finished and those under contract, the result being of the highest importance and the most practical interest to the whole country.

The people demand a navy, as they demand an interocean canal, and would have the best that is to be had. We have the men and money and guns, and the question was whether the models of the ships that cost seven million dollars each, are superior to all the world has seen, as they are in some way a class of themselves.

WE ALONE ARE BUILDING TURRETS.

In the discussion of the rapid advance of the United States navy, Senator Perkins wanted to know whether we had in course of our progress profited by the mistakes Europeans made before and after we entered into competition with the nations armed to assert our sea power. Senator Hale said:

“We stood by and saw other nations making experiments in different kinds of new ships. They spent hundreds of millions of dollars upon ships that have since been abandoned as obsolete, and other kinds of ships are being constructed to make their present navies; but in reckoning the entire tonnage of the foreign navies they have reckoned what both the Senator from California and the Senator from New Hampshire suggest, and all of these old and practically obsolete ships that are still existing are counted in their tonnage, while our tonnage is of the new ships that have been built and are fit for some service.”

Mr. ALGER. During the Spanish-American war a large number of yachts—inferior boats, you might call them—were purchased, but they would be of no use in time of war.

Mr. HALE. Twenty-three of them.

Mr. ALGER. I want to know whether they are included in this number.

Mr. HALE. They are not included in the list of ships of sea strength and fit for war service, to which I am coming. They do not amount to much either in tonnage or armament or anything else; but they balance against just the same kind of ships that are found in foreign navies, and that adds to their total. They are of the same kind.

Mr. HALE continued:

“Treating of what we may call the sea strength of the larger ships, that is here given for Great Britain, for France, for Russia, for Germany, for the United States, for Italy, for Japan. The table gives the number of battleships, coast-defense, ironclads, armored cruisers, protected cruisers of the first and second class, and cruisers and scouts over 1,000 tons. That, of course, includes all armored ships and all battleships whenever built. It gives for Great Britain a tonnage of 1,516,040; France, 576,108; Russia, 416,158; Germany, 387,874; the United States, 294,405; Italy, 258,838; Japan, 243,586; Austria, 93,913. That is the tonnage of ships that are now commissioned.

TONNAGE OF THE NAVIES OF VARIOUS NATIONS.

“I have another table which shows that when the building going on is completed of these larger ships, the tonnage of Great Britain will be 1,867,250; of France, 755,757; of the United States, 616,275; Russia, 558,492; Germany, 505,619, or more than 100,000 tons less than we have; Italy, 329,000; Japan, 253,000; Austria, 149,000—all including the present building programme when it is carried out.

“Great Britain evidently does not know just how she will want to build ships for the next year.”

Mr. LODGE. May I asked the Senator in regard to those vessels he was speaking of as built before 1884? Is it not true about every armored ship built and ordered at that time that the armor was iron plate? I do not remember the technical name, but they were plates that were superseded by steel plates.

Mr. HALE. Entirely.

Mr. LODGE. It is armor no country would think of.

Mr. President, I put in here a memorandum from the Bureau of Naval Intelligence :

“Memorandum.

“ February 18, 1904.

“ By 1908 the following ships should not be counted in the main line of defense, but should be disposed as indicated below :

“ Battleships : Indiana, Massachusetts, Oregon, Texas—coast-defense squadron.

“ Monitors : Miantonomah, Amphitrite, Terror, Puritan—harbor defense only.”

So it seems they are already talking in the Navy Department of putting the Oregon, the Massachusetts and the Indiana on to the retired class for coast defense.

Mr. STEWART. I hope they will keep the Oregon off of it.

Mr. HALE. They ought to. I think the Oregon is one of the best ships that ever was built.

PRAISE OF THE NOBLE OREGON.

Mr. LODGE. It is a good ship to-day.

Mr. HALE. It is a good ship to-day.

Mr. STEWART. I should like to see another like it built.

Mr. HALE. But it does not fill the fancy of a naval officer. She has not the room on her for staterooms and for comforts and for conveniences and for all the intricate machinery that a 16,000-ton ship has. But she has the same number of 12-inch guns and the same number of turrets and the same efficient force, so far as the great guns go. She is smaller, more easily handled, and when she goes to the bottom, as any battleship will from the impact of a torpedo, like the jab of a prize fighter's fist, instead of seven or eight million dollars going to the bottom, it is only five millions, for which sum a ship of that kind can be built to-day.

Mr. FORAKER. I should like to inquire if there has been any trouble with the turret of any battleship? I ask only for information.

Mr. HALE. The fortunate fact is that we have not gotten into war yet. They have not been tried yet. Nobody knows. The

British officers and authorities go on the assumption that when you get into conflict the unforeseen things will happen, the turreted ship is subject to a much larger percentage of accidents. We, fortunately, never have tried it in battle. I do not know, and I do not claim——

Mr. FORAKER. The theory is that the turrets are more liable to accident?

Mr. HALE. Then I followed this thing up to see why it was that while we are going on, asking no questions, and building nothing but revolving turrets for these guns, England is not building one of them. The reason is that they are afraid of them. They say they are subject to an ordinary accident; that if a revolving turret jams from any cause—the listing of the ship or a single shell hits it—the ship is good for nothing; the big guns cannot be used.

SUGGESTED DISADVANTAGES OF TURRETS.

“They say that if an explosion were to take place in a turret—and anybody who has ever been in them can understand that—the results would be horrible. So it is the fact that the great power of Great Britain, which is the great accredited authority on naval structures, is not building a single revolving turret for large guns. We are building all.

“I think the fair way to look at it is that the present war in the East may develop a condition which will show that so large a proportion of the expenditures for naval ships should not be concentrated upon battle ships. But nobody will know what to do—Great Britain, which is watching with eagle eye everything that is taking place there, because her great possessions are there, does not know what to do—until the smoke clears up. Nobody knows now whether a battle ship that costs between seven and eight million dollars, or a torpedo boat that costs \$300,000, will be the more effective battle engine in the years to come.

“Therefore, as the House bill has put on only one battle ship, where last year we put on five, and has two armored cruisers, which to my mind will be found more valuable than the big battle ships,

and then certain small cruisers for speed to accompany the fleet, we did not think it desirable to still more change our programme until—I use my same metaphor—the smoke lifts from the war which is going on in the East, and we see whether such a revolution in naval architecture and naval ships has been wrought in one season as was caused by the advent of the little *Monitor*, when she steamed into the bay below the mouth of the Potomac and saved Washington and subverted every idea that anybody ever had had of the efficiency of ships.

“We are proceeding at an immense expense on some things that may be proved to be valueless in one season. I found in my investigation one thing which I had not known before. It was a startling thing. We are building all our battle ships with revolving turrets. We put in them the big guns, the 12 and 13-inch guns. You have got down to 12-inch guns, and I wish we were down to the 10. We put them all in revolving turrets.

TURRETS FOR COMFORT OF OFFICERS.

“A few years ago the naval board, thinking it was a picturesque innovation, provided for a second story—a second turret—to be put on top of the main turret, and they built two ships, the *Kearsage* and *Kentucky*, with those turrets. I have a copy of their report.

“The naval board reported that those were to be the ships of the future. They argued it all out. We built them. We gave them the money to provide for them. One of them went to Germany and received a great ovation, and our officers and men had a very gratifying time. But the German naval officers remarked, “If the United States is going to build that kind of a ship in the future, and put its money into those ships, we will not trouble ourselves much about them, because they are not practicable.

“The next year the Board turned around and said they did not want any more of those ships, and we took their word; and we provided these immense ships with one story revolving turrets for the big guns. My study has been interesting. Looking over this book of the modern battle ships, which is accepted by the different naval establishments of the world as to a degree official, although

not gotten up by any department, I did not discover, to my surprise any British turreted battle ships. I could not find any such turrets for large guns. I said, "It cannot be we are going on building revolving-turreted battle ships, and England, which is the great naval power in the world and the authority, is not building them;" and I sent to the Department and asked if that were true, and I got this :

"All British first-class battle ships less than 10 years old have their 12-inch guns en barbette.

"The Russian Admiral Makaroff had a hearty ovation, as he left his home at Cronstadt to command the Russian fleet that has been so damaged by torpedoes. An account, not unfriendly, says :

"The admiral went to the Church of St. Andrew, and there took the sacrament at the hands of Father John. An hour later a great crowd of naval officers, literary men, ordinary citizens, school children and two choirs assembled before Admiral Makaroff's house. There was a scene of great enthusiasm, the crowd cheering and singing, after which the leading officers and citizens entered, and a religious service was held. The admiral, in a speech, thanked the naval officers for their good wishes. He said :

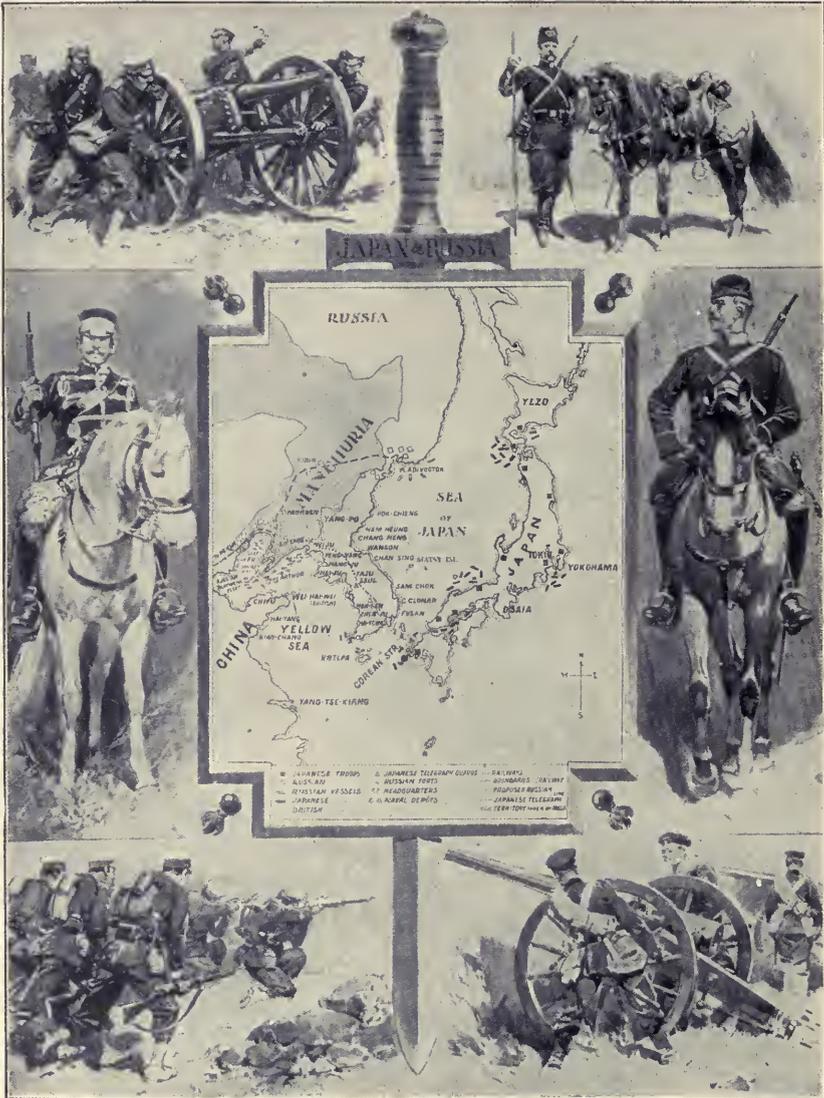
"There is warm work out there. They want men, so I am going. We have got to stand by each other now."

This is the man who took the honor and glory waiting for some one, fighting in the mouth of the Port Arthur harbor and going out to find and fight the Japanese. He seems to have been the first Russian sailor who has gone out to find an enemy, and went for him, but he did not raise the damaged ship, or save the harbor and city from severe bombardment by the alert, bold and enterprising Japanese.



CORONATION OF NICHOLAS II AS CZAR OF RUSSIA

THE CEREMONY, WHICH WAS MOST IMPOSING, TOOK PLACE AT MOSCOW, MAY 26TH, 1896, IN THE PRESENCE OF THE ROYAL FAMILY OF RUSSIA, AND THE REPRESENTATIVES AND DIGNITARIES OF OTHER NATIONS.



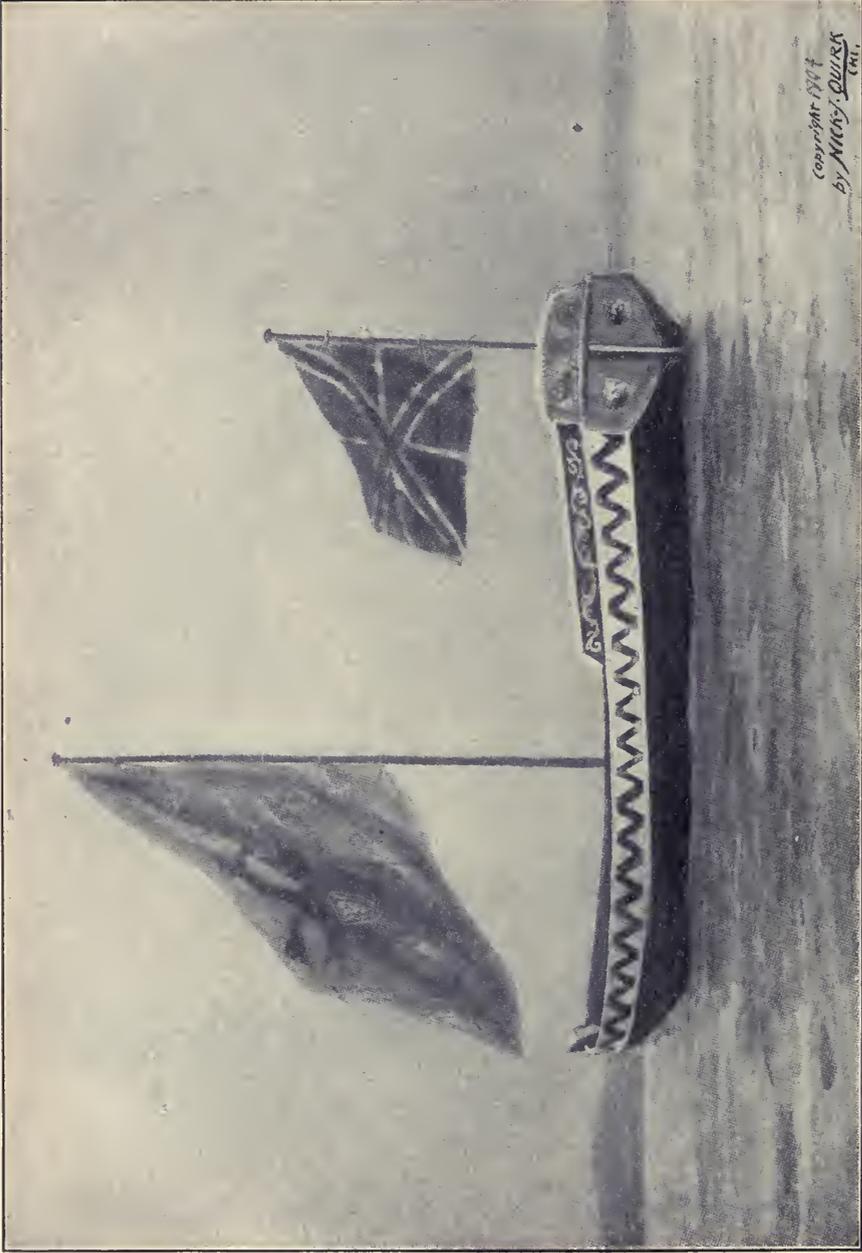
MAP OF THE SCENE OF WAR AND TYPES OF THE SOLDIERS OF THE RIVAL NATIONS.

JAPAN.
 FIELD ARTILLERY
 CAVALRYMEN
 INFANTRY

RUSSIA.
 COSSACK
 DRAGOON
 FIELD ARTILLERY



HIS IMPERIAL MAJESTY—MUTSUHITO, EMPEROR OF JAPAN.



THE "LITTLE FATHER" OF THE RUSSIAN NAVY. THIS UNIQUE CRAFT WAS A GIFT FROM QUEEN ELIZABETH TO IVAN THE TERRIBLE, AND WAS SAILED BY PETER THE GREAT WHEN A BOY. HE GAVE HER THE ABOVE TITLE, NOW DEAR TO THE RUSSIAN PEOPLE, WHO REVERE THIS RELIC AS THE ENGLISH LOVE THE "VICTORY," ADMIRAL NELSON'S FLAGSHIP.



JAPANESE TROOPS MARCHING THROUGH THE STREETS OF TOKIO.



SUBMARINE TORPEDO BOAT EMERGING FROM A RUN UNDER THE WATER. THE "HOLLAND" TYPE OF "SUBMARINE TERROR" CAN CRUISE UNDER WATER FOR SEVERAL HOURS AND IS CAPABLE OF APPROACHING UNSEEN CLOSE ENOUGH TO DISCHARGE A TORPEDO WITH THE CERTAINTY OF DESTROYING A SHIP.



HIS IMPERIAL MAJESTY NICHOLAS II. REVIEWING HIS TROOPS.



THE ARRIVAL OF A WAR CORRESPONDENT AT SEOUL, THE CAPITAL OF KOREA.

THE TWO MEN ON THE EXTREME RIGHT ARE KOREAN GUARDS.



THE BAND OF A COSSACK REGIMENT ON THE MARCH IN MANCHURIA.



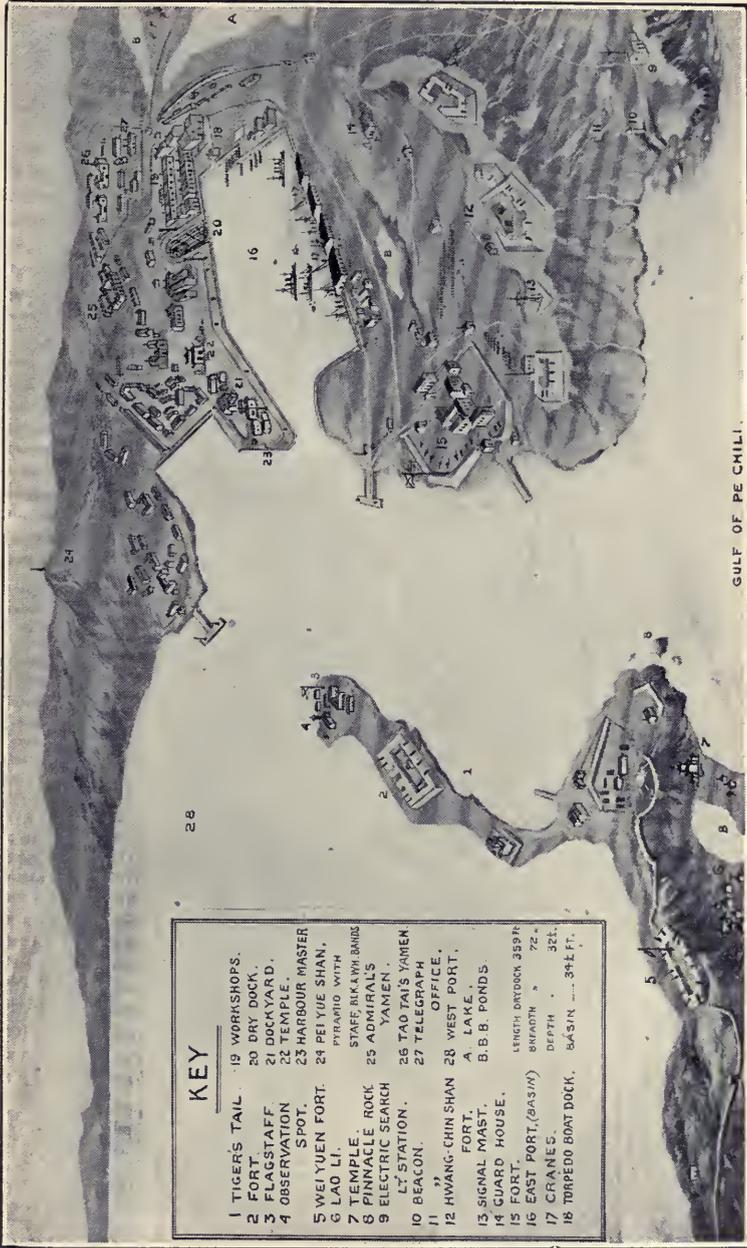
KOREAN MINISTERS ON THEIR WAY TO THE IMPERIAL PALACE.



JAPANESE INFANTRY SCOUTING.



DRAWING LOTS FOR MILITARY SERVICE IN RUSSIA.



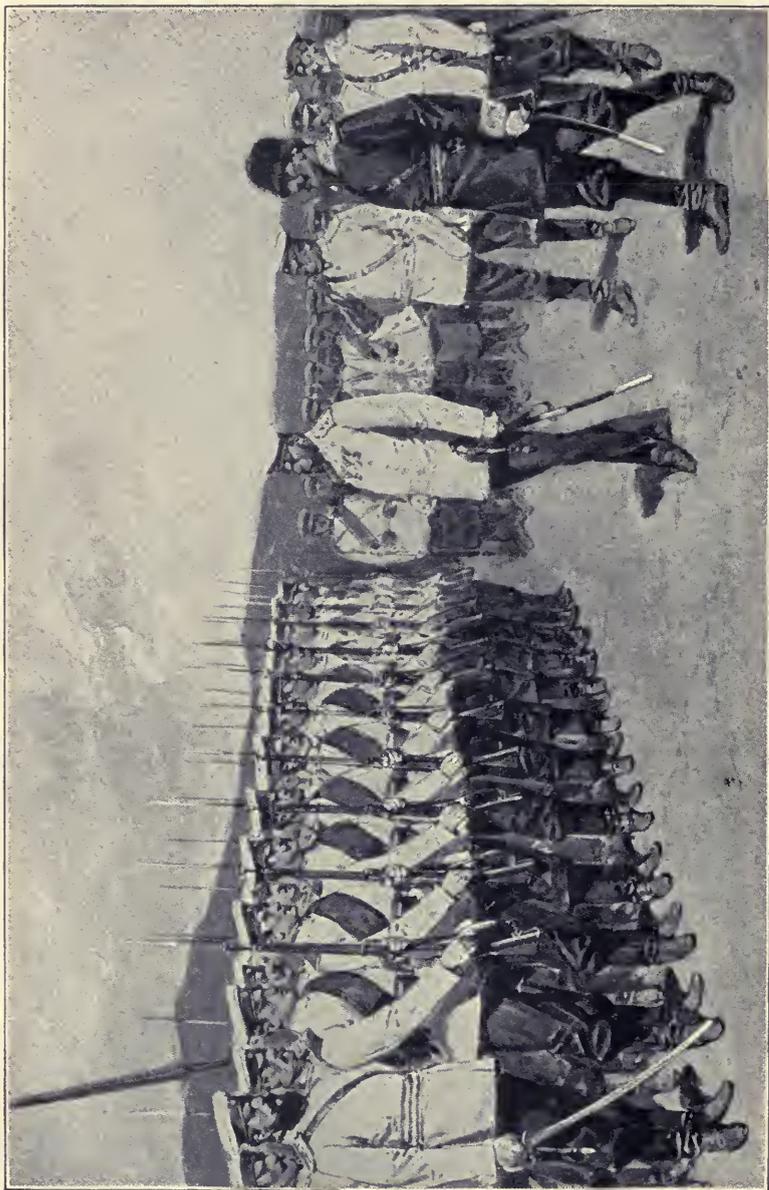
28

KEY

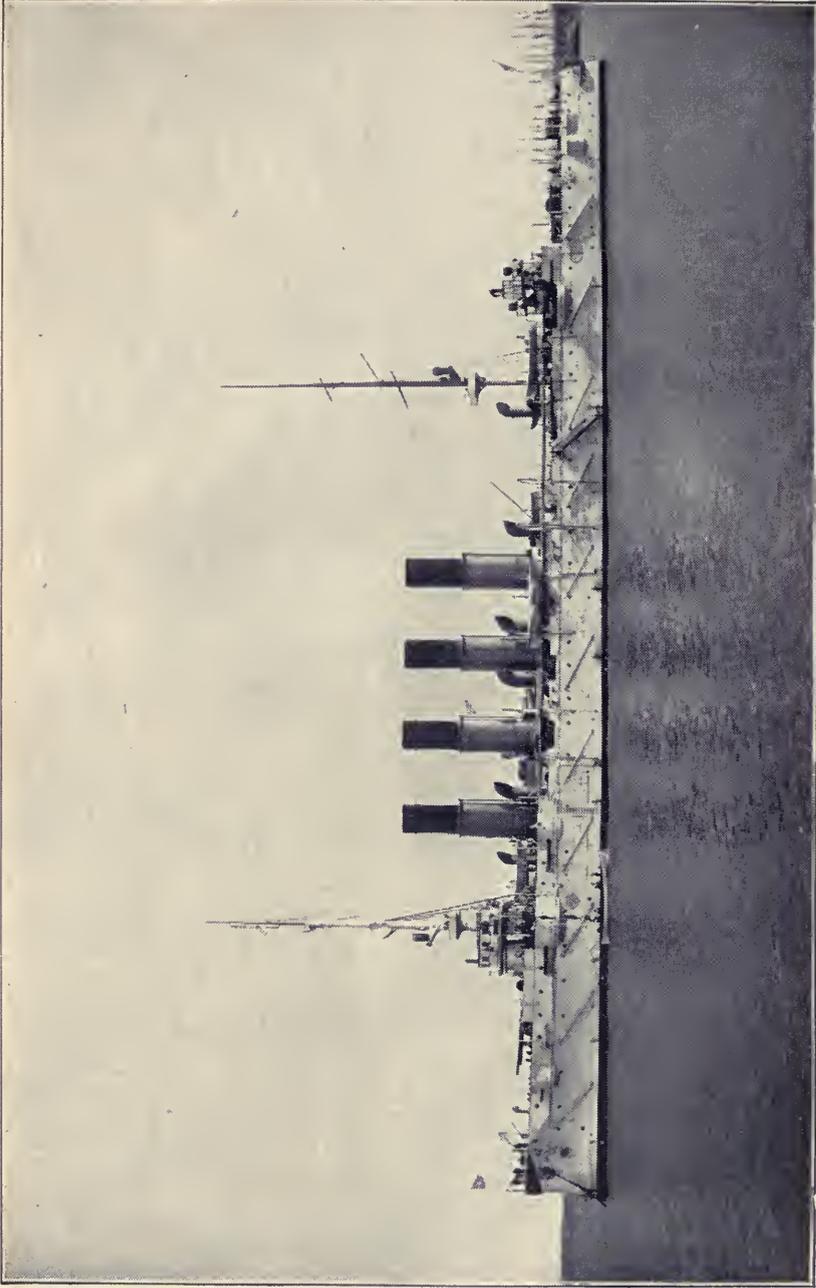
- 1 TIGER'S TAIL
- 2 FORT
- 3 FLAGSTAFF
- 4 OBSERVATION SPOT
- 5 WEI YUEN FORT
- 6 LAO LI
- 7 TEMPLE
- 8 PINNACLE ROCK
- 9 ELECTRIC SEARCH LIGHT STATION
- 10 BEACON
- 11 STAFF BIKAWR BANDS
- 12 HWANG-CHIN SHAN
- 13 SIGNAL MAST
- 14 GUARD HOUSE
- 15 FORT
- 16 EAST PORT (943 M)
- 17 CRANES
- 18 TORPEDO BOAT DOCK
- 19 WORKSHOPS
- 20 DRY DOCK
- 21 DOCKYARD
- 22 TEMPLE
- 23 HARBOUR MASTER SPOT
- 24 PEI YUE SHAN
- 25 ADMIRAL'S YAMEN
- 26 TAO TAI'S YAMEN
- 27 TELEGRAPH OFFICE
- 28 WEST PORT

GULF OF PE CHILLI

PORT ARTHUR SHOWING FORTS AND RUSSIAN BATTLESHIPS IN HARBOR.

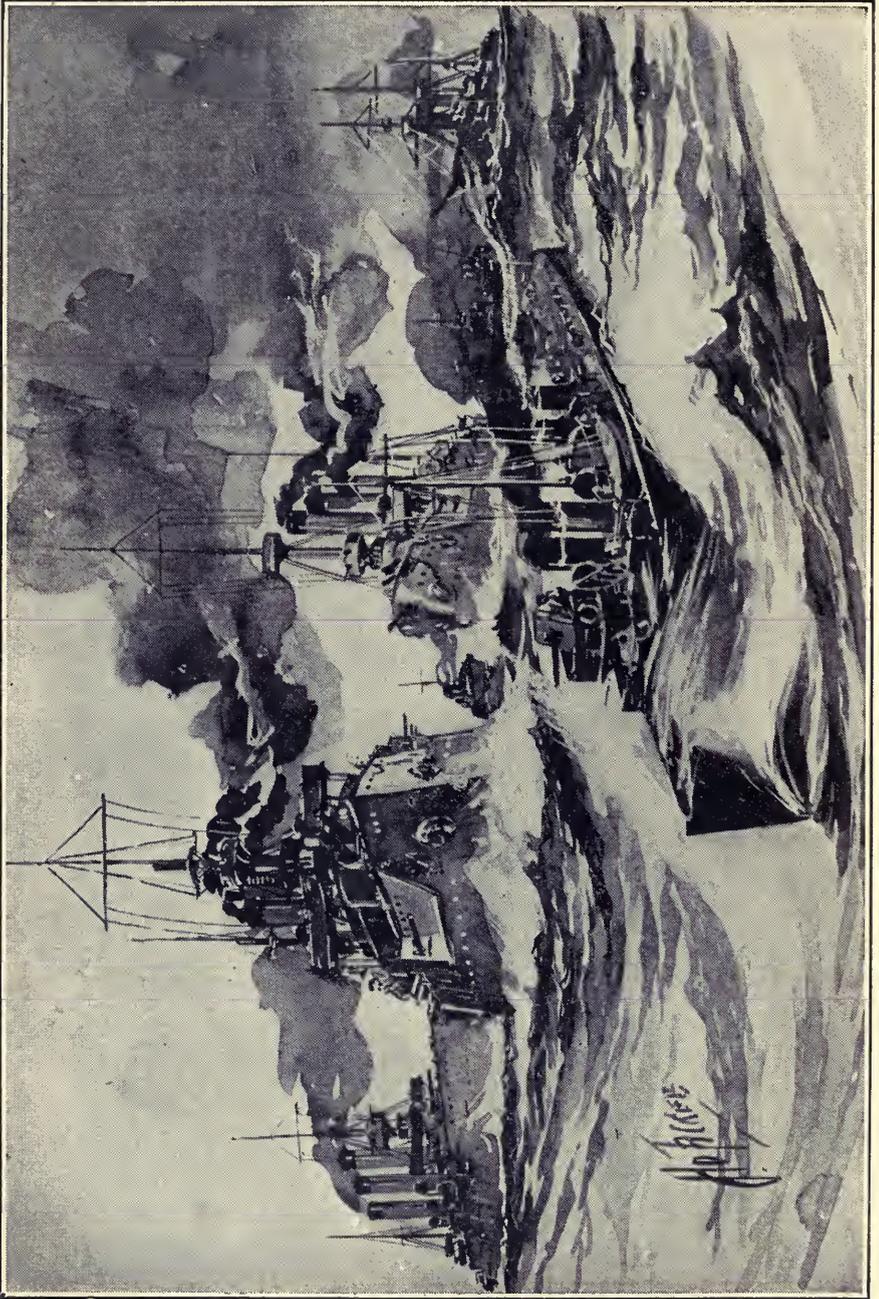


ADMIRAL ALEXEIEFF REVIEWING TROOPS AT PORT ARTHUR.



THE RUSSIAN CRUISER VARIAG.

THIS MAGNIFICENT ARMORED CRUISER WAS DESTROYED BY JAPANESE WARSHIPS OUTSIDE THE HARBOR OF CHEMULPO, KOREA.



JAPANESE FLEET ATTACKING RUSSIAN BATTLESHIPS NEAR PORT ARTHUR.

CHAPTER XI.

THE EMPERORS AT WAR.

Men of Asiatic Mystery—The Titles Czar and Mikado Appeal to the Old Superstitions of Imperialism—Characteristics, Functions, Privileges, Liberties of the Press, True Because Incredible, Taken with Them Personally—Yellow Journal Scandal and Romance Mingled with News.

THE countries at war in the Far East have located the seat of war as near as they could get to our front door, the Pacific Ocean. Since "we, the people of the United States," have become a World Power, we should accustom ourselves to the understanding that we are interested in the sunset lands as well as on the morning side of our continental domain, and we need to comprehend that the Asiatic, as well as the European races, are neighbors, and are to be friends or foes, and co-operate or compete with ourselves and children.

Russia is the most cosmopolitan and expanded of races, peoples and landed estate, under one imperial system.

We have in one matter of the highest moment changed our policy with regard to immigration. We did not induce the people of Africa to come to our shores. They were forced to come on the theory that the new continent demanded a supply of rude labor. Hence the slave trade wars and slave ships, with human cargoes of merchandise in fetters. The Africans were not welcomed across the Atlantic—they were coerced—and such was the loss of life between their native coast and the West Indies, of the masses of slaves, that the ferocious African sharks followed the line of the slave transportation, and picked their food from the multitude of black captives who died in the voyage and were thrown into the sea, advertising the business transacted.

One consequence that declares others is that the sharks have

their favorite home in the caves under the rocks on which Moro Castle stands at the mouth of the harbor that located the city of Havana, where the bathing beaches have to be guarded with iron bars.

Asia, in this age, has more labor inclined to come to America than the people of the Atlantic side of the older world in the development of humanity desired, and paid for in transportation. Instead of forcing Asiatic labor to come to us, we prevented its incursion by force. We forced the blacks to come and we forbade the yellow people, who wanted to work and thrive too much. No other nation has in hand that problem to the extent that we have. There are too many people in Asia for this world. We exclude the Chinese, and we have no policy against the Japanese, except to admire their intelligence and energy, and quote the Czar's tribute to enemies, addressing his troops, saying the foe are "brave, confident and crafty."

YELLOW LABOR IN BLACK AFRICA.

England has just writhed in the grasp of the Chinese labor question, and has a policy of using Chinese in the African mines, which are rather the most important of the British possessions. It will be remembered that it was especially to work the American mines that the wild Africans were seized, shipped and enslaved, to toil and perish largely in the gold and silver mines, supplying the metallic standards. The Spaniards furnished America with black slaves, and the English have the credit of abolishing the slave trade. Now labor is wanted in the midst of Africa, in unearthing gold and diamonds, found at a profound depth, and it is yellow labor that is in request in the original home of the black people. The tribes of Africa had no representative diplomats. The victors in the tribal wars sold their prisoners of war to mingle in the other racial questions in America and endow us with tremendous themes for meditation and manipulation.

We had with Japan, before she tackled Russia, a very serious correspondence because we discriminated against the yellow people—Japanese among them—in respect to their treatment in Cali-

fornia in cases where we had to regulate the bubonic plague, and demanded certain certificates of a special sort. At one period in the correspondence, it took a turn almost threatening, that is the Japanese were, they thought insulted, and angry; and the gravity of the matter discussed was increasing when the plague became less malignant, and the edge was taken from the controversy, as remote from patriotism as near philosophy.

The Asiatic race question reaches us in a new form, but it will, as often as it occurs, display growth in importance, and it is rather a malignant than benign growth. The standing of yellow people, involving yellow labor, will rise when they are winners in a great war, and with a great power in the Pacific ocean, we will need a new name for the largest body of water on earth.

There is a curious and instructive combat between the Mikado and the Czar, as they come before us as Emperors at war, though they prefer peace.

THE MASTERS OF MANY MILLIONS NEAR US.

The personalities of these masters of many millions with whom we must accept more intimate associations, become to us of very high interest. The Czar, on the 17th of February, received in the court yard of the Winter Palace the Third Battalion of the First Siberian Regiment of Rifles, which is proceeding to the Far East. Among those present were the Czarina, the Dowager Empress, the Hereditary Grand Duke Michael and the Grand Duchesses, General Kuropatkin, Russian Minister of War, Lieutenant-General Sakharoff, Chief of the General Staff, and the officials of the Court.

In their presence the Czar made a speech. He opened with the usual flatteries, after the strains of the national anthem, saying:

“Brothers—I am happy to be able to see you all before your departure, and to wish you a good journey. I am firmly convinced that you will all uphold the honor of your ancient regiments, and that you will readily risk your lives for your dear Fatherland. Remembering that the foe is brave, confident and crafty.”

The words of respect for enemies are unquestionably his own words, and they are taken to mean by the European press that he is discouraged, and that there is found a strain in him of despondency and pessimism. That impression will not be universally entertained. Perhaps it may be seen presently to be manly, gentlemanly, and even his own strictly chosen words given back to him for himself.

There is something of the pathetic, and it is not unbecoming, in the last words of the Czar, in the closing scene of this stately spectacle and solemn utterance, he said :

“ I bless you, my brothers, and with you the famous First East Siberian Regiment of Rifles with the image of St. Seraphim. May he pray for you and accompany you in all your ways. I thank the officers for volunteering for service, and once more I thank you all, my brothers, with all my heart. God bless you ? ”

THE CZAR'S GOOD-BYE, BROTHERS.

The battalion with its baggage wagons and stores then marched past, the Czar, calling to the men, as they passed, “ Good-bye, my brothers.”

There is not a sneer, or anything commonplace, nothing light-hearted in the speech. It is not from a shallow and colorless, pompous personage, and it has the stamp of individuality. The press of Europe has perhaps mistaken his measurements. The most deplorable representations have been made of the Russian Emperor's condition of mind and morals. He is held up as a timid boy, as an imperial imbecile, whose trait of conscientious timidity accounts for his peace proclivities, and has spoiled his country's side in the war. One widespread story is that he is seriously ill, and settling down into a dull, dark gulf of despair. These tales are not corroborated by his speech at the Winter Palace, but there is a string of stories in yellow-covered detail.

The English press especially is partial to all that insinuates that the young Emperor is so melancholy, it is not probable he has any will or way of his own, but, as they have not much knowledge, they do not mind guessing. One thing is persistently presented,

that there is a Grand Ducal party ready to take the last vestiges of power from the Czar, and to help themselves to the government, but they would be as repugnant to Tolstoi as the Czar himself.

In part, it is stated, the absence of an heir in sight to the Russian throne is a fatal weakness, and encourages the Ducal party, provoking a propoganda in that behalf. There is a shadow of truth in this. The Grand Dukes are of greater weight in affairs, because the irreparable (without revolution) dynastic law, firmly fixed in sacred tradition, as well as in public opinion, unalterable as the imperialism of the government, the Czar has not among his children an heir. Those close and friendly to the throne and the wearer of the crown, have exhausted the prayers and pious supplication and savage incantation, that her Majesty, the Empress, may give birth to a son.

THE MIKADO ALWAYS SURE OF AN HEIR.

There have been appeals also to the science and the superstition of the medical profession, of all persuasions and theories, to promote the production of an imperial boy. All in vain. Unquestionably there is, in the flaw in the direct succession, an element of instability; and, curiously enough, the Mikado has a special power that has been handed down from some centuries, more than two thousand years, and which is the basis as plain as in the days of David, of the moral props of the fabric of the State.

The Japanese call their Emperor "the wonderful," and he is head of the oldest family in the world.

"He represents in his person the dynasty that held rule over Japan so long ago as the palmy days of Tyre and Carthage, before Daniel prophesied the downfall of Nebuchadnezzar.

"He has raised the women of his country to something approaching the dignity of the sex in the Western world. This, moreover, although the Emperor is still exempt from the laws of marriage which have been imposed upon his subjects. His consort, who is eighteen months his senior, is the first Empress of Japan who has been admitted to her husband's table, and being as responsive to the ideals of progress as the Emperor himself, she has proved

a worthy helpmeet in promoting those social reforms which entitle modern Japan to rank with any of the most civilized nations of the world.

“There is, however, much confusion among English readers as to the Japanese Royal Family, and this is not surprising, in view of the contradictory statements that have been made from time to time. The Empress is mother to none of the children of her husband, and the significance of the rejoicings when nearly three years ago, a son was born to the Prince Imperial, were hardly appreciated in England.

“The Emperor may, if he choose, elevate any woman who bears him a child to be a consort; but Prince Yoshihito, the Heir-Apparent, who is now in his twenty-fifth year, was formally married to Princess Sadako in May of 1900, and the little Prince Hirohito, born in April of 1901, is thus in the direct succession according to even European ideas.”

RESTRICTIONS ON THE ROMANTIC SIDE.

It may be permitted for a moment to mention that if the Czar had the privilege of naming any natural son his successor, as the Mikado has, the yellow journals have for some time declared that a dramatic young woman bestows upon the Czar's affectionate nature a son, every time the Czarina bears him a daughter. As it is in the air that Japan has a higher degree of civilization than is found on or about European thrones this state of affairs might, in an emergency, be investigated, by a competent committee of churchmen, such as reveal the true inwardness of the Mormons. Such a proceeding would, at least, put an end to the Grand Duke party in Russia. This would seem to be too much, but some one must suggest something.

One of our most prominent journals, with a secret service of its own maintained in the various capitals of Europe, and an enthusiastic medium of the good news the Japanese have presented, since the war was well on, a startling sensational story touching the Czar himself and his possibilities in heredity; and turning from him, the story is told the world that a group of Japanese women of

rare comeliness and surpassing accomplishment, have made their way to the deepest hearts and heart to heart secrets of peace and war, of the foremost Russian Admirals and Generals, the female conquerors, in the real characters as charming spies of the Mikado, to serve the Holy Empire of two millions and a half. This form of messmerism, hypnotism, necromancy and telepathy, it is told, helped the heroes of Japan to a considerable share of their hard-earned glory, gained by getting the girls to tell all they found out.

The pages of the enterprising and eminent journal, whose yellow complexion may be a part of the reason of being partial to the Mongolian imperialism, not only giving the names of the Japanese advanced guard of the Oriental fashionable female aristocracy of Cipango, but publishing their half toned photos. Altogether, the publication is picturesque, and said to be one of the flying splinters of the news of the day, borne like arrows, no doubt guided by the feathers of fancy.

AN UNCROWNED QUEEN A RULER.

First in order we have, Mlle. Mathilde "Tichinska, the Polish dancer and well-known favorite of the Czar, who is suspected of being a Japanese spy." Mlle. Renee de Montfort, of Paris, with whom Admiral Alexeieff spends most of his evenings, and who is believed to be in the pay of the Japanese secret service.

The headline of the partially (no doubt) true tale is—and it shines between the portraits of the lady spies—in these terms :

"Wonderful secret service work of clever women who charmed themselves into the confidence of Admiral Alexeieff, and even the Czar himself."

The special correspondence is dated before the war broke out ; and in the first place the Czar is caluminated as having half a dozen irregular sons, all imperial, but ineligible however, dark eyed and languishing in loveliness. The correspondent remarks :

"Mathilde Tichinska, the Imperial favorite and mother of sons who may not wear the Romanoff crown, is the highest tribute to their persistence and sagacity.

"It has been said that Tichinska, the beautiful premier of

the St. Petersburg imperial ballet, voluntarily broke off all relations with Nicholas when he succeeded to the throne and wedded Princess Alix of Hesse. But all Russian officialdom knows that this is not true. For a time the palace he gave her knew him no more, but after the birth of his second daughter, when the Procurator of the Holy Synod began to worry him with suggestions to divorce Alix and put in her place an Empress who would give him an heir to the throne, he grew discontented and returned to the woman he loved."

There are still other triumphs of journalistic art in illustrations showing officers and their butterfly friends in various stages of champagne. The works of art include: "Japanese secret service spy disguised as a Buddhist priest in Port Arthur's 'Chinatown.' Japanese naval officers disguised as Coolies unloading Russian ammunition at Port Arthur. Japanese army officer disguised as a Chinese laborer studying the Port Arthur forts. Petroskovich devoted himself to earnestly drinking the health of Mlle. Violette."

The wonderful story is that the Japanese were furnished with maps of the mines to blow them up, and the official surveys. A great deal of this style of matter appears to be fiction in high colors and impossible details; but there is no doubt the Japanese had an extraordinary alert and searching secret service; and the Russians, with a great reputation for Sherlock Holmes finesse and subterranean art, were intolerably arrogant in their ignorance, believed rank follies and rejected saving intelligence; and the statement that many of the Russian officers were drunk when the first Japanese attack disabled a splendid squadron with a torpedo raid does not vanish unto the passage of time, but accumulates and hardens into the truth that are as the rocks that resist the billows and the sky.

CHAPTER XII.

GLORY PAINTED RED.

First Red Hot Battle of the Japanese Russian War—
Splendid and Thrilling Scenes of Conflict—Russians had
no Chance but Showed how Brave Men could Die for
Country and Glory—Eye-witness Story of Chemulpo
Fight—Correspondent Who Saw the Variag and
Korietz in Battle Describes the Tragedy.

THE Paris edition of the N. Y. Herald gives from a correspon-
dent on the spot a brilliant and touching story of one of
the grandest combats in any war.

In Chemulpo Harbor has been fought what must be
recorded as one of the most gallant battles against odds in the
history of naval warfare. At noon on Monday, February 8, there
lay in the peaceful roadstead the United States gunboat Vicksburg,
the United States collier Pompey, the United States transport
Zafiro, the British cruiser Talbot, the Italian gunboat Elba and the
French cruiser Pascal.

Near these ships were those destined to take a part in the
tragedy so soon to open. They were the Russian protected cruiser
Variag, American built; the Russian gunboat Korietz, and the
Russian merchant steamer Sungari.

About half-past two o'clock the Korietz weighed anchor and
started for Port Arthur, carrying despatches from the Russian
Minister, M. Pavloff, to Viceroy Alexeieff.

“When about fifteen miles from Chemulpo anchorage, just at
the entrance to the outer harbor, the Korietz met a fleet of
Japanese war vessels under command of Rear Admiral S. Uriu,
who was aboard his flagship, the Mikasa. This fleet consisted of
two battle ships, six cruisers, seven torpedo boats and five torpedo
destroyers, which were conveying the transports Tairen and Haijo
and carrying twenty-five hundred troops under General Kigashi.

“It is learned from Russian sources that as the Korietz proceeded a Japanese torpedo boat crossed her bows, whereupon the Russian commander cleared his ship for action and a gun was accidentally discharged. Immediately five of the torpedo boats left the main fleet and circled about the Korietz and discharged four torpedoes at her, all of which, it is asserted by the Russians, missed their mark.

“The Korietz stopped, turned about and returned at full speed to the anchorage inside the harbor, close alongside the Variag, and in the midst of the neutral war vessels lying there. The Japanese fleet followed without haste and came to anchor near by at half past six o'clock that evening.

“This Russian story is of importance, as it admits the firing of a shot by a Russian gunboat during the afternoon of February 8, and which may possibly prove to be the first shot of the war. The torpedo discharges are not admitted by the Japanese, who during the night landed their troops and accoutrements from the three transports and by daylight the entire fleet had disappeared outside the harbor.

ORDER TO SURRENDER.

“At seven o'clock on the morning of the 9th, Captain Roudnoff, commanding the Variag, received official notification from Rear Admiral Uriu, through the Japanese Consul at Chemulpo, that the Variag and Korietz must surrender or leave the harbor by noon. If this demand were not complied with Rear Admiral Uriu would begin the attack where they lay, at the anchorage, at four in the afternoon.

“At the same time similar notifications were sent to the foreign Consulate body at Chemulpo, and the commanders of all other war vessels lying in the harbor were also fully notified about nine o'clock in the forenoon, and were requested to leave the harbor or move out of range.

“The commanders of the neutral war vessels, excepting the United States ship Vicksburg, promptly protested to Rear Admiral Uriu against this action, but the protest was of no avail.

“The situation of the two Russian vessels could scarcely be worse. The Variag was a protected cruiser of 6,500 tons, mounting twelve 6-inch guns, and the Korietz a gunboat of 1,213 tons displacement, mounting two 8-inch and one 6-inch gun. They were lying in a harbor with a rise and fall of tide averaging twenty-seven to thirty feet, and surrounded by mud flats with only a narrow and tortuous channel to the entrance.

“The distance from shore to the anchorage was about a mile and a half and to the outer harbor entrance some fifteen miles. Opposite them was a fleet of twenty vessels, among them battle ships and cruisers of the latest and heaviest type.

“Escape was impossible. The crews could only hope to die bravely. So, at half-past eleven, both vessels weighed anchor and made for the harbor entrance, selecting the channel passing to the eastward by Round Island.

BRAVERY AND SACRIFICE OF RUSSIANS.

“The bravery of the Russian officers and crews cannot be overestimated. Cut off from every hope of escape, and with a larger and more powerful Japanese fleet lying at sea off the harbor to prevent succor reaching them from Port Arthur, they steamed out to do their best in the face of the heaviest odds that history records.

“The Variag led the way with her band playing the Russian national anthem and receiving vociferous cheers from all the neutral ships in port.

“At Round Island, some eight miles from the anchorage, they met the Japanese fleet, which immediately opened fire, and the Russians promptly replied. The Japanese lay under a projecting headland, which, in a way, was a protection. The Variag steamed back and forth in front of the island, being held back by the slower speed of the Korietz, although her superior speed might possibly have given her a chance to make a run for it.

“The Korietz kept well under the lee of the island, and thus escaped the raking fire that quickly put every gun aboard the Variag out of action and caused such a terrible loss among her crew.

“The first shot in the action, fired from one of the large guns

aboard the Japanese flagship Mikasa, struck the Variag amidships on the port side at the water line and disabled two of her boilers.

“The second big shot struck her just forward of the first, also at the water line, knocking port and starboard coal bunkers into one and listing the ship heavily to port, which depressed the port battery so much that it was rendered useless. The forward bridge was struck and twisted out of all recognition, killing or disabling several officers. Midshipman Count Nieto, who was standing on the bridge, was instantly killed.

“Another large projectile struck close to the after magazine, setting the ship afire. Altogether ten large projectiles hit the Variag and at fully a dozen places on the ship's sides were spots ten or a dozen feet in diameter that were riddled with fragments of the shells and shrapnel till the steel plates presented the appearance of a sieve.

THE JAPANESE ADMIRAL'S SKILL.

“The Korietz was untouched. The Japanese Admiral evidently directed his attention to the faster Variag, using his long-range great guns to disable her, keeping well away from the Korietz's eight-inch guns and depending on his ability to sink or capture her after disposing of the Variag.

“The Variag, after less than an hour's fighting, in the midst of the rain of shot and shell poured into her from the Japanese ships, had not a gun left which could be worked, two of her boilers were useless and her engines could be worked only with difficulty. She was ablaze aft near the magazine, and on her decks lay one hundred and nine officers and men, dead and dying, out of her total complement of five hundred and forty men. She listed heavily to port as she turned back into the harbor, moving to the anchorage at about eight knots speed. She was followed by the Korietz, and they both anchored under the protection of the neutral war ships, a mile and a half from the shore.

“The Japanese fleet did not pursue, but remained outside Round Island at the inner harbor entrance. It is said that not one of the Japanese ships had been hit, though the distance at which they

fought was only 3,000 yards. If this be true, it must be attributable to the condition of the Variag's battery or the port guns being put out of action in the first five minutes by the heavy list due to the inrush of water on that side, and to the deranged plane of fire of the starboard battery. Firing began at two minutes past noon, and lasted exactly fifty minutes.

DECIDES TO DESTROY.

"After anchoring the fire aboard the Variag was extinguished, and the commanders of the two ships held a consultation, resulting in the sending of a note from the senior officer aboard the Variag to Consul Polianowsky at Chemulpo, stating that the condition of the Variag, together with the slow speed of the Korietz, made it useless to go out to meet the Japanese fleet at their promised hour of attack at four that afternoon.

"Under the circumstances it would result only in the ships falling into the hands of the enemy. He therefore had decided to destroy all documents, remove his men, and sink the ships where they lay at anchor.

"At half-past three o'clock the Variag was set afire astern on her upper decks, the sea cocks were opened below and the men removed from her and the Korietz to the neutral war ships.

"At precisely four o'clock, the hour set by the Japanese Admiral in his notification of the morning for attacking the Russian ships if not surrendered and still in the harbor, two deafening explosions came from the Korietz, a cloud of thick, blackish-white smoke soared upward, the anchored war ships rocked and the Korietz no longer existed except in name.

"As the smoke cleared the water could be seen boiling and hissing where the Korietz had been lying, bits of wreckage floated near and about four feet of her after funnel and the tops of two boat davits were all that remained to mark her grave.

"Bits of wreckage, scraps of half-burned paper, a page of a log book, an officer's visiting card and a typewritten report came floating down on us from the cloud of smoke that shut off the rays of the sun. A cheer went up from the Japanese along the shore and

on the hills back of Chemulpo as the Russian fleet numbered one less.

“The list of the Variag was becoming more and more pronounced, and it could be seen that she was gradually sinking at the bow. At half-past five o'clock a fierce fire broke through the deck, well aft, over the magazine, and an explosion seemed imminent. Fifteen minutes later she went down at the bow, and her funnels and masts drooped to an angle of forty-five degrees.

“At six o'clock the flames in the after part of the ship became duller, with only an occasional flash, although the plates on both sides for a hundred feet from the extreme stern were aglow and exploding ammunition split the air every few seconds.

“The whole after deck was a seething furnace, and the spectators waited for the explosion, which was likely to rock the houses of Chemulpo, a mile and a half distant, to their very foundations.

BRITISH CRUISER TOO CLOSE FOR SAFETY.

“The British cruiser Talbot, which lay a few hundred cable lengths from the Variag, moved away to a safer distance. The flames on the Variag burned lower and lower, she careened more and more to port, her bow was at the water's edge, and at a quarter past six o'clock she sank with her port side down and her starboard batteries intact in their mounts, pointing to the sky.

“As the waves closed over her, the contact of the water with the boiler plates sent up a dismal wailing and groaning, as if in protest of the fate that had overtaken this pride of Cramps' shipyard after only eighteen months' service.

“As the Variag rode at anchor that morning she represented a value of nearly £2,000,000 (\$10,000,000) and the best that modern naval science and skill could produce. At evening she was a shattered and blasted mass of steel and iron, at the bottom of Chemulpo Harbor, the last resting place of more than forty men who had sailed in her that morning against such heavy odds, with no hope but that they might be remembered as men who had fought a good fight and died doing their duty.

“After the commander of the Variag with his men were safely

aboard the French cruiser Pascal, he despatched a boat load of Russian sailors to the Russian merchant steamer Sungari, lying close by, in order to fire and scuttle her.

“The crew and officers, comprising forty men of the Sungari, with clearance papers on board, were ready to leave on the regular scheduled trip to Port Arthur. She had arrived on the morning of the 8th from Shanghai, discharged her mails and cargo and only waited word from the Variag’s commander to leave the harbor. Crew and officers were taken aboard the Pascal, and she was set afire at the main hatch about six o’clock as she lay at anchor.

“The flames quickly enveloped her upper works and lighted up the water, peacefully covering the shattered hulls of her protectors—the Variag and the Korietz.

“The Sungari burned until two o’clock the next morning and then sank. All that can now be seen of her is the top of the funnel and topmasts. The Variag is completely submerged, and the funnel of the Korietz can be seen only at low tide.

ATTEMPTS TO PREVENT ESCAPE OF VARIAG’S CREW.

“When the Variag sunk some of the Japanese population of Chemulpo, supposing some of her crew were escaping, started out in sampans to capture them, but the action was very quickly suppressed by the Japanese authorities.

“The Japanese authorities have two complete diving outfits ready for instant use at the head of the jetty at Chemulpo, and it seems probable that at the earliest favorable opportunity they will attempt to remove the starboard battery from the Variag, a task that presents no very great obstacles.

“The capture of these Russian ships at Chemulpo reflects great discredit upon those in charge of the Russian operations. It is probable that no greater illustration of the folly of underestimating the strength and ability of an opponent was ever afforded in modern warfare. Fully informed by the Japanese Government that if a satisfactory reply was not forthcoming by a given date Japan would adopt her own course.

“Russia permitted two of her ships to lie unprotected for several

days in Chemulpo harbor, evidently not counting upon the quickness with which her enemy would strike or upon her boldness in landing troops on the west coast of Korea as far north as Chemulpo.

“For months, or perhaps it is not an exaggeration to say for years, Russia has been preparing for this conflict, and when the hour arrives she has been caught off guard, and within a period of four days has suffered serious losses.

“In the town military law prevails, Japanese sentries are posted on the corners, and squads of soldiers patrol the streets. The landing and occupation of Chemulpo were accomplished without the slightest disorder or confusion. Twenty-five hundred Japanese in complete field outfits—haversacks, canteens, water cups, blankets and fully armed—marched up to the jetty during the night of the 8th and were quartered in the houses of Japanese citizens in the Japanese settlement in a manner to excite the admiration of the foreign military officers who witnessed it.

SKILL AND SPEED OF JAPS LANDING.

“From the transports to the jetty was fully a mile to a mile and a half, which had to be covered in small boats, and yet, from the time the transports anchored till the troops were swallowed up in the houses to which they were assigned, was less than eight hours. As the first boat load reached the jetty the waiting Japanese townspeople set up a cheer, which was promptly suppressed by the local authorities. The Koreans made no demonstration whatever, and life and property in Chemulpo is as safe to-day as it was a year ago.

“Chemulpo, which yesterday was scarcely more known to most of us than as a name on the map of the west coast of Korea, has, in forty-eight hours, seen the landing of a foreign army, a naval battle within sight of the town, the blowing up of a war ship and the burning and sinking of another and of a merchant vessel. Results are more than fifty dead, sixty odd dying, a hundred more suffering from slight injuries, and the captains of a British, an Italian, and a French war ship lying at anchor in the harbor hold the power of giving freedom or capture to seven hundred Russian

refugee sailors and officers who but a few hours ago went out to meet death or capture at the hands of an overwhelming enemy.

“What is to become of these seven hundred refugees? is the question that all are asking, and which none can answer. The captains of the neutral gunboats under whose protection these men are can answer the question no better than the rest of us. They have twice refused the Japanese demand to give them up as prisoners of war and are temporizing while waiting for instructions from their respective governments.

“It is difficult to imagine a more complex situation. Two countries at war with each other have fought a battle in a neutral harbor; one has landed troops in a country that has gone to great pains to notify the Powers of her strict neutrality, far in advance of any declaration of war. The survivors of the naval battles are aboard the warships of neutral nations, lying at anchor in a neutral harbor. Experts on international law have certainly a tangle to straighten out.

RUSSIAN CONSUL'S PLIGHT.

“The Russian Consul, V. Polianowsky, at Chemulpo, has not flown his flag since the morning of the 9th, when the notification of Admiral Uriu was sent to the Russian commander. His official residence is surrounded by Japanese soldiers, and he is allowed to communicate with no one.

“The Russian Minister, M. Pavloff, at Seoul, has been notified through the French Minister, Count de Fonteney, to leave Seoul at once. Here again is a nice point of international procedure to be decided upon. M. Pavloff has agreed to withdraw under protest, and is to leave Seoul with his entire legation staff, legation guard and all Russian residents, by special train on the morning of the 12th for Chemulpo, where he will board the French cruiser *Piscal* for Port Arthur. The Japanese authorities have offered a guard for the protection of the Russians till they are safely out of Korean territory.

“At Chemulpo the native and Japanese residents have been busy for two days in gathering the teakwood ladders, doors, win-

dows, the furniture, the furnishings and other inflammable articles thrown overboard from the Russian ships when they cleared for action before going out to meet the Japanese fleet.

“Of the survivors of the Round Island engagement the British cruiser Talbot has on board 240 men, the Italian cruiser 108 and the remainder are on board the French cruiser Pascal. Commanders of all three ships are on the Pascal.

NOTICE GIVEN BY JAPANESE CONSUL.

“The Japanese Consul at Chemulpo in notifying the foreign authorities of the contemplated attack upon the Russian ships issued the following notice to the Consulate body and Commissioner of Korean Customs:

‘Chemulpo, Korea, Feb. 9, 1904.

“‘Sir—I have the honor to notify you that Rear Admiral S. Uriu, commanding a squadron of the imperial Japanese navy, who is at present in Chemulpo roadstead with the force under his command, requests me to notify you that as hostilities exist between the government of Japan and the government of Russia he shall be obliged to attack the men-of-war of Russia stationed at present in the port of Chemulpo with the force under his command in case of the refusal of the Russian senior naval officer present at Chemulpo to his demand to leave the port of Chemulpo before the noon of the 9th of February, 1904.

“‘The above mentioned attack will not take place before four o’clock P. M. of the 9th of February, 1904. M. KATO.

“‘To A. H. Lay, Esq.’”

“The Commissioner of Customs made an official protest on behalf of the Korean government, but, as already shown, no notice was taken of it.

“Rock Islet, off which the action of Chemulpo was fought, is one of the numerous Korean islands that are grouped under the name of the Marie Fortunee Archipelago. It is 213 feet high, is distant about eight miles from the man-of-war anchorage at Chemulpo and furnishes one of the landmarks for entering that harbor. Its native name is Yo doe Mi. It is foul and ragged on

the west and north sides and the available channel lies on the eastern side, between it and the extensive mud banks that almost close the Imperatriel Gulf.

“The outer anchorage of Chemulpo varies in depth from five to nine fathoms. Below the Island of Kheum Wolmi there is a secure anchorage, with excellent holding ground for a large number of vessels. Heavy draught ships usually anchor off the mouth of Ankol Creek. Vessels drawing not more than twelve feet may at high tide enter this creek, which leads to Chemulpo, but the channel is narrow and continually altering.

THE HIGH TIDES OF THE YELLOW SEA.

“The spring tides rise about 30 feet at Kheum Wolmi; the neap tides about 25 feet, and the range of the latter is $17\frac{1}{2}$ feet, being greater in summer and autumn. From June to September a rise of 37 feet is sometimes observed. The tidal waves run about three knots an hour in mid-channel. Fogs are frequent from March to July, and the finest weather is found in September and October.”

This glorious history of a battle fought for honor, has not been approached in any fighting story thus far in the great war, that commands the attention of the whole world. The tragedy of Chemulpo was almost unknown until this paper war picture was painted by an artist's hand with ink that the master made great with color. It takes place and ranks as one of those stories of truth that glorifies the sea, and that answer Tennyson's line: “When shall their glory fade?” with the word never sounded around the world by the trumpet that tells the fame of the immortals.

Concerning the battle of Chemulpo and the charge that the Japanese violated at the beginning of the war, the Government of Japan sent to our State Department, a memorandum relating the facts according to Japan. It is official Japanese:

1. It is charged, that “Before the opening of hostilities against Russia, Japan landed troops in the independent empire of Korea which had declared its neutrality.”

The Imperial Government admit that Japanese troops landed in Korea before declaration of war was issued, but not before a state of war actually existed between Japan and Russia. The maintenance of the independence and territorial integrity of Korea is one of the objects of the war, and the dispatch of troops to the menaced territory was a matter of right and necessity which had the distinct consent of the Korean Government. The Imperial Government draw a sharp distinction between the landing of Japanese troops in Korea under the actual circumstances of the case and the sending of a large body of Russian troops to Manchuria without the consent of China, as was done by Russia, while peaceful negotiations were still in progress.

ADMIRAL TOGO HAD ORDERS BEFORE FIGHTING.

2. Under this heading it is alleged that Japan "With a division of the Japanese fleet made a sudden attack on the 8th instant, that is, three days before the declaration of war, on two Russian warships which were in the neutral port of Chemulpo and whose commanders had not been notified of the rupture of relations, as the Japanese maliciously stopped the delivery of Russian telegrams by the Danish cable and destroyed the Korean Government's telegraphic communication."

The Imperial Government declared that the allegations under this heading are untrue. The Imperial Government did not stop the delivery of Russian telegrams by the Danish cable, neither did they destroy the Korean Government's telegraphic communication. Regarding the alleged sudden attack on the 8th of February on two Russian men-of-war in the port of Chemulpo, it is only necessary to say that a state of war existed and that Korea having given her consent to the landing of Japanese troops at Chemulpo, the harbor of Chemulpo thereby ceased to be neutral, at least as between the belligerents.

3. It is charged under this heading that "In spite of existing international laws, shortly before the opening of hostilities, Japan captured as prizes of war the Russian merchantmen which were in the neutral ports of Korea."

The Imperial Government have established a prize court with full authority to pronounce finally on the question of the legality of the seizures of merchant vessels. Accordingly, it would be manifestly out of place for the Imperial Government to make any

statement regarding the assertion under this heading.

4. It is asserted under this number that Japan "declared to the Emperor of Korea through the Japanese Minister at Seoul, that Korea would be henceforth under Japanese administration, and warned his Majesty that, in the case of non-compliance, Japanese troops would occupy the palace."

The Imperial Government declare the charge under this number to be absolutely and wholly without foundation in fact.

5. Under this heading it is charged that the Japanese Govern-

ment "forwarded a summons, through the French minister, to the Russian representative at the court of the Emperor of Korea to leave the country with the staff of the Russian legation and consulate."

The Imperial Government deny the accuracy of this statement. No demand, either direct or indirect, was addressed by the



THE EMPEROR OF KOREA AND HIS SON.

Japanese Government, asking the Russian minister to retire from Korea. The French Charge d'Affaires called on the Japanese minister at Seoul and informed him verbally, as he did afterwards in writing, that it was the desire of the Russian minister to leave Korea, and asked the opinion of the Japanese minister with reference to the matter. The Japanese minister replied that if the Russian minister would withdraw in a peaceful manner, taking with him his staff and legation guard, he would be fully protected by Japanese troops. He did so withdraw of his own free will on the 12th of February, and an escort of Japanese soldiers were furnished him as far as Chemulpo. In this connection it may be remarked that the Russian consul at Fusan remained at his post as late as February 28th. It is reported that he was compelled to stay that long in the absence of instructions which the Russian minister apparently did not care to give to him before his own departure. When it was made known that necessary instructions had at last reached the Russian consul and that he desired to leave Fusan as soon as possible, the Japanese consul at the same port offered him every facility for his departure, and his passage to Shanghai through Japan was arranged by the latter.

CHAPTER XIII.

ASIATIC IMPERIALISTS AT WAR.

The Combat of Two Oriental Empires—The Russians are the Stronger and the Japanese the Smarter of the Combatants—The Characteristics of the Two Races and Powers Contrasted—The Russians and Japanese as Fighting Men—The Poetry, Passion and Picturesque in the Big War.

RUSSIA is held by the Press of Europe, and generally of the world, to have been the aggressor in the Warfare that appropriately began in the night with the dull deep shock of torpedoes, and it resembled the opening of the battle of Waterloo, as Byron wrote, "There was a sound of revelry at night," and beauty and chivalry were gathered there, when there was an interruption that was a startling sound, that prevented the continuance of the exchange of glances when love looked into eyes that spoke again, when there was something that seemed like a car that "rattled on the stony street;" and there were questions, "did you not hear it?" The cry was, "on with the dance," but the deep sound was heard again, "as if the cloud's echo did repeat;" and then—"nearer, clearer, deadlier than before." Aha! it was "the cannon's opening roar;" and the "ball" in Belgium's capital was suddenly at an end, the military gentlemen hasten to ride off to their respective duties.

This night of the opening of the cannon's mouth was June 17th, 1815, in a softer season and clime than that at Port Arthur, in Manchuria, February 8th, 1904, when there was a "high festival" given by the wife of a noble Russian high Admiral, who, with the officers of the fleet and batteries, were celebrating the coming of war, and the flutter of plumes and glitter of buttons and epaulets, and glow of glory, that a deadly sound broke in the torpedoes' sudden heavy boom; and the hasty departure of horses

with riders ten miles away from Brusselles, nearly a hundred years ago, was an orderly good-by compared with the happenings at Port Arthur, in the far East and North, when the magnificence of war was celebrated with monstrous guns, and mysteries of the deep gave out their bellowing, in the winds of Siberia, telling that the shock of the battling engines of the Mikado and the Czar, was on, and the cyclones of the tropics surpassed by a tempest in a frozen zone.

One of the signs of the times that the storm of war could not be stayed, was the stronger, because the fervor on both sides in favor of peace had the passion of violence in it. Intense animosities had been engendered and cultivated, until there were millions of mad men, rushing to apply the resources of civilization to the destruction of the industries that are creative.

THE POOR MEN HAVE THE HARD TIMES IN WAR.

The vast majority of the nations going headlong into war are poor men, and all the energy that should be applied to the fields and in the work shops, must go to laying waste the world and impoverishing mankind.

The war spirit was superheated in Japan, but Russia seemed for awhile to be a sluggard, whose gigantic proportions made her languid inattention the more conspicuous.

The war correspondents were in advance of the armies for a time, giving their occupation the honorable office of historians. An intelligent correspondent, representing the London Mail, writing from Tokio, January 23rd, just a fortnight before the party at Port Arthur—one of the smart set to gather the poetry as well as the prose, said of the Japanese capital that "freedom of speech was severely limited," for war had its censors exceeding peace:

"There are many daily papers in Tokio alone, boasting, I believe, of over twenty, now under the strictest censorship. A few days since even the correspondents of the foreign Press were summoned to the police headquarters at Yokohama and warned in the most solemn fashion of the penalties they would incur should they disseminate information which the authorities wished suppressed."

There is music, however, and the correspondent strikes the key note of it with a hammer, thus :

“Japanese music is a wonderful thing, and the airs of Japanese songs sometimes remind one of the old, droning Psalm tunes still sung in those remote villages of the Scottish Highlands, where ‘man-made hymns’ are regarded as profane.”

“The songs are to be ‘taken seriously’ says the great vehicle for proclaiming public sentiment; and with that understanding, here is a nice old song, now sung and enjoying much popularity. Please imagine a party of smiling youths and maidens, in those bright clothes which in Japan are largely confined to children, singing it.”

“Revenge! Revenge!
How cheerful and happy are we.
We have conquered the enemy.
We have killed them all.
How joyous! How cheerful!
We’ll kill all our Mikado’s enemies as well.

“Our Emperor, our nation, and our parents,
They are all waiting for our triumph.
Bravo, flag of the Rising Sun, as you
Shake your folds in the air.

OBEDY THE EMPEROR AND GO AHEAD.

“‘Don’t mind whether it is death or life; obey the Emperor and go ahead!’” says one song. ‘Death on the battlefield before surrender,’ is the refrain of another. And this is not all empty talk. To the Japanese soldier and sailor surrender is still disgrace almost beyond atonement.

“This was brought strikingly before me a few days back. I was travelling in a Japanese ship, and as we had been some days out at sea we had no means of knowing whether war had broken out or not. In case of war there was at least a possibility of our being intercepted by a Russian cruiser. ‘If we do run into a Russian warship,’ the captain said, ‘we’ve got to escape or go down. If I talked of hauling down the flag, the very coolies in the engine-room would kill me. You do not surrender a Japanese ship.

“ Here is another song, striking the same note :

“ So our elder brother is dead,
 And our younger brother, he is dead, too.
 What, all our brothers are killed by
 the hands of the enemy !
 Then let us go out and fight them.
 For though we all die.
 Yet must we obey the commands of the Emperor.

“ Our sword is not long enough to strike down the enemy ?
 Then let us knock him down and kill him.

“ The prohibited songs are charged with the bitterest abuse of Russia. Many of these appeared in the popular Tokio papers, or were printed separately and sold by hawkers in the streets. Here is a typical one :

“ ‘ Cut off the wings of the Eagle to preserve peace in the Far East. The Eagle can fly a long way, but the Rising Sun will illumine the whole globe. The Eagle’s talons are very sharp, but once the Japanese sword is taken out of its scabbard, the Eagle will be driven off the Far East. When the Eagle’s head is cut off, Russia will be sorry that she fought with Japan.’

Even more typical is the following :

“ ‘ Bellicose Russia ! You always break the peace of the Far East. In the name of Heaven and humanity, Japan must cut you down.

“ ‘ Cowardly Russia ! In the name of peace you stole the lands which Japan bought with the blood of her sons.

“ ‘ Braggart Russia, the thief of the world ! You flaunt your eagle flight boastingly. Your Czar called a peace conference ; you break the peace.

“ ‘ Poor Russia ! You are like a blind serpent. History repeats itself. The Roman Eagle, ruined and disgraced, is the forecast of the fate of this Eagle.

“ ‘ Foolish Russia ! Divided at home, how can you hope to conquer another land ? You are like a group of crows. (This is a supreme insult. The flock of crows represents, in Japanese popular similitude, the acme of brainlessness and cowardice.)’

“ The same poet declares, ‘ Go ahead, go ahead our bravos ! Our flag of the Rising Sun, lighting the whole world, will fly from the walls of the castle of Peter and Paul at St. Petersburg. The flag

of the Rising Sun embodies our hopes. There is peace under the sword. There is peace within the smoke of the guns.'”

The progress of the people of Japan has a striking illustration in a report of a popular meeting in Tokio, by the war correspondent of the *London Mail*. He wrote two weeks before the beginning of the war saying he attended a great meeting “against Russia.” We quote his remarkable sketch :

“Japan is not yet accustomed to the orderly expression of public feeling, and the gathering was a strange attempt to apply a modified Western method to an essentially Eastern people. The speaking was wholly in Japanese. We took our boots off at the doorway, and, in the place of using chairs, squatted on our haunches from noon until six in the evening.

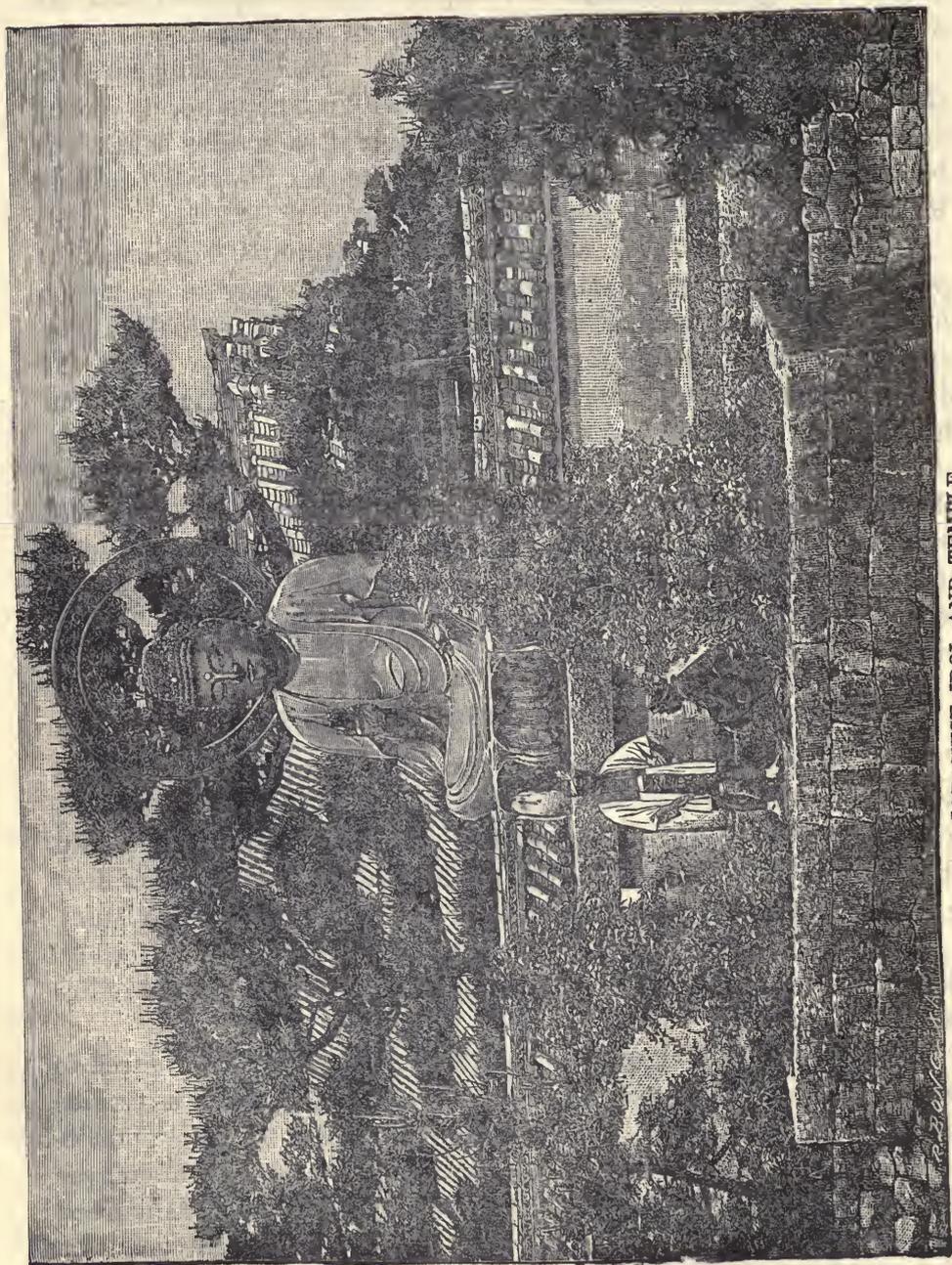
“The gathering was called to denounce the peaceful attitude of the Government. Police, private and in uniform, were scattered over the hall. Two constables sat on the platform taking down the words of the speakers, and an inspector sat in front, with power to put a stop to the oratory the moment it exceeded what he considered fair limits.

THE PERSECUTION OF PEACE MEN IN JAPAN.

“The speakers went as far as they dared, and the further they went the louder they were applauded. Hand-clapping, a thing unknown as a means of expressing approval in old Japan, was started time after time. The orators read name after name of four hundred men in all ranks whom they denounced as Russian spies. ‘All Russian spies must die,’ one little man declared vindictively. Some of them will die, and that before long, despite all the police can do.’

“Then they told of a newspaper editor who had dared to whisper peace, of a clerk who had lived some years in France before entering the Government service at home, of an old statesman who was suspected of wishing for delay. And each name was heard with that quiet, smiling hatred which is the most dangerous form of fanaticism.

“It is no pleasant thing to be a popular suspect in Japan



JAPANESE IDOL AND TEMPLE.

to-day. A friend of mine, a Russian exile full of great hate for that government of the Czar which made him suffer much, is thought by the mob to be a spy, because a Russian. The Government have given him a detective as a protector, who guards him constantly, living in his house. Two attempts have already been made, one carefully planned, to wipe him out of existence.

“The extreme war party make no secret of the fact that they will, if necessary, murder any Minister who attempts to make the nation give way before Russia. One popular journal not long since printed a poem, not obscurely hinting that the Marquis Ito might be assassinated with advantage to his country.

“Not many days after my arrival in Japan, the leaders of one of the most influential anti-Russian parties expressed their desire to see me. I met them in their own rooms, and, as we squatted on the matting, warming our hands over the charcoal-box, which afforded a miserable substitute for a fire, we discussed the situation. ‘We are bringing such pressure to bear on the Government that it must fight,’ they said.

RESTRICTIVE GOVERNMENT OF JAPAN.

“‘What do you mean?’ I naturally inquired. ‘Your system of Government does not give you power to throw the Ministry out. The Ministry can, with the Mikado’s consent, prevent even your protest being heard in Parliament. To talk of public opinion influencing the Government in Japan is absurd. What do you mean?’

“‘They told of plan after plan.

“‘And if they fail?’

“‘If these fail,’ came the deliberate reply, ‘two or three of our members must sacrifice themselves.’ Japanese history, even of the past twenty years, tells what that means. The political murderer is regarded by the crowd as a martyr and a saint. His tomb becomes a shrine.

“An old woman, tottering, feeble, but unafraid, came to see her grandson in the camp at Kobe, ‘My boy,’ she said, ‘I shall never see you alive again. Don’t be satisfied with killing one Russian. Before you die kill six, and then you will have been worthy

of our stock. Farewell.' She walked away without a tear in her eye. A friend asked if she did not feel sorrowful. 'Why should I?' she demanded proudly. 'My grandson goes to die for his Emperor. What nobler death can our family wish than that?'

"Those in England who think that the Russian war is being forced on an indifferent people by a strong Government are wholly mistaken. It is the Japanese people rather than the Government who desire war. The great fear among the masses is lest the Government should yield, or make concessions, and so rob the nation of its long desired revenge.

"No doubt the people will give freely. Many are already calling on the Government to impose fresh taxes. Individuals are offering subscriptions to a war fund, although in a nation where nearly all are poor these subscriptions are of necessity small. Women already are taking off their jewels for the national Treasury. Localities are proposing to rate themselves, unasked, at a yen (2s.) a head for the war. If necessary, the temples will be emptied of their unused treasure, and the precious metals in the old weapons of famous ancestors—prized more than life—will be given.

THE REVIVAL OF OLD TIME PASSIONS.

"In an hour like this, old national feelings revive. One old national feeling that has strongly come out is the virtual deification of the Mikado. Politically and religiously, the Mikado is, in the eyes of his people, more than a man; he is of direct divine descent, deserving the worship of his faithful subjects. This is the theory of the State.

"In days of fatness the advanced Japanese dismissed the matter with a smile and a shrug. To-day the sentiment reappears. It is the Mikado the people will fight for, not themselves. He will be supreme commander of all; in his hands the direct control of army and of navy will rest, and he may possibly even go to the front to encourage his men by his presence. And the presence of the Emperor will be worth two army corps. The only thing with which one can compare the feeling of the Japanese soldier for the Mikado is the devotion of the Old Guard to the great Napoleon.

“With possible war ahead, the people complain of nothing. Food has gone up all round. The dinner that was to be had for sixty sen now costs eighty sen. Yet no one grumbles. The strictest censorship has been quietly appointed, and all kinds of correspondence and telegraphic work are liable to examination. The papers are forbidden to publish details the people are longing to hear.

“The nation is kept in darkness about the negotiations, learning most of its news from abroad. All this is taken by the masses as a matter of course. It is their hour to show what the Japanese spirit is, and they are resolved to do it.

“The main dread is lest there should be no war. That would be the heaviest blow the Japanese people could be called on to endure.

“F. A. MCKENZIE.”

JAPAN BEFORE THE OUTBREAK OF WAR.

This is a most enlightening sketch of the people of Japan in the critical and anxious days just before the war, and shows the public spirit of Japanese and their warlike despotism. The tendency to right themselves by violence is pronounced, and their patriotism absolute and energetic, but relentless and of blood-thirsty tendencies.

Major Arthur Griffiths, an English army expert, whose touch in military matters tells of actual service, contributes from the seat of war a bright paper full of the geniality that is a pleasing expression of truthful rendering of information. He writes under the headlines—“Soldiers of Two Nations”—a comparison between the armies of Russia and Japan. The Major says, with self-evident intelligence and impartiality :

“In view of the inevitable conflict between the Russian and Japanese land forces, the relative value of the two armies, racially, physically, and professionally, is a matter of supreme importance. There are many strong points of difference, and due weight must be given to them as bearing upon the ultimate issue.

“Man for man, the advantage may be said to rest with the Russian soldier. He has a very fine physique, a well-grown,

sturdy, stalwart figure, with a hairy breast, and two strong legs on which he can march long distances without fatigue.

“He is capable of prolonged endurance, will bear great hardships without a murmur; he has been known to go without food for a couple of days quite cheerfully, and is at all times content with a small, spare diet. Although he cannot resist the potent temptation of strong drink, he is, as a rule, temperate, and, failing vodka, is satisfied with weak tea.

“A leading trait in the Russian soldier is his unfailing good humor. Nothing puts him out, not even the ill-usage of officers, who are sometimes harsh to brutality, but to whom, in spite of all, he is devotedly attached. He will still laugh when half frozen or drenched to the skin, or worn with strenuous service.

THE HALF FROZEN SOLDIER LAUGHS.

“He is as faithful and obedient to his superiors as a dog to its master, as docile and affectionate as a child to its father. The régime of the Russian army is essentially parental, but the ‘spare the rod’ principle does not always hold.

“Such qualities as fortitude, tenacity, blind, unquestioning courage will certainly be exhibited by the Russians of to-day as of old; but in other essential military qualities they may be found wanting.

“Marksmanship is inferior, the Russian soldier shoots indifferently; his intellectual powers are of a low order, and he cannot well be trained to the exercise of individual initiative and intelligence, the first need of the modern fighting man.

“Physically, the Japanese is inferior to his foe—smaller, shorter, weaker. Although he has a wiry frame, his strength is mainly below the waist, which is great, as shown by the prowess of Japanese wrestlers; but the men have weak chests, and are inclined to phthisis in cold climates. This is greatly due to the want of nourishing food, the nearly universal rice diet flavored only with rotten fish. The evil has been quite recognized by the Japanese authorities, and a meat ration was recommended for the troops some time back.

“It was not introduced on account of the expense in peace time, but its necessity is so admitted now that large contracts have been made in America for the supply of cattle. Whether these can be despatched or will be counted as contraband of war remains to be seen.

“If the Japanese suffer by comparison as regards stature, they are superior in other respects. They are said to be excellent shots.



CASTLE AT MATSUYAMA, JAPAN.

The service rifle is said to be one of their own invention; but, more exactly, it is only a modification of the Austrians' Mannlicher.

“‘Little men can shoot as well as big,’ and in this case considerably better; while the big men offer a better target than the small. As regards tactical training, the Japanese better repay instruction, and have had a good deal more of it.

“The Japanese have adopted the German model in drill, and adhere to it closely, and the result will be watched with keen interest.

“A competent critic, speaking of the Japanese infantry as a whole, classes them as uncommonly like our Ghoorkhas in India, possessing the same characteristics of dash and daring, of great personal activity and natural instinct for war.

“The same estimate places the Japanese infantry officers on a level with our Indian native infantry officers, but the former is undoubtedly better educated. The Japanese knows ‘his book’ well, and may be given to following it too implicitly, preferring in case of difficulty to work by rule and precedent than act on his own motion.

“Comparing officers, Russian and Japanese, as a whole, the latter bear off the palm. They come mainly from one class, the Samurai, the old professional soldiers of Japan, and have inherited the business. In physique they are generally inferior to their men.

NARROW CLIQUE OF RUSSIAN OFFICERS.

“Russian regimental officers come of a narrow clique, and are rather blemished by ingrained habits of indolence, and too often of self indulgence. They are much given to haunting cafés, and care nothing for field sports or vigorous exercise. A great blot in the Russian army is the great dearth of officers; the supply falls very far short of the demands of that colossal army on a war footing. Staff and superior officers on both sides rise to a much higher level, and have for the most part mastered their business, being well practiced in the theory and practice of war.

“The Japanese perhaps excel in their punctilious and precise way of working and their patriotic readiness to face any risks in the performance of useful service.

“For some time past the whole of Manchuria and Northern China has been overrun with secret agents, Japanese officers of rank and position in disguise, seeking out facts of vital importance.

“Travellers have constantly met coolies and others filling menial situations, hawkers, small traders, barbers and the rest, many of them quite indifferent to their work or the profits of their business, who when they found it was safe to do so, talked French

and admitted that they belonged to the Japanese Intelligence Department.

“It will be readily understood how admirably the mass of exact knowledge thus obtained will serve Japan when the real work of the campaign begins. Her generals will know every possible theatre of war by heart, the roads such as they are, the railway lines and their weakest points, where they can be most effectively attacked, impeded, wrecked; the natural resources, the strong places, the depots of supply, the amounts of munitions and stores on hand.

“A word as to the Japanese field artillery, compared to which Russia greatly preponderates. But the Japanese, as a set-off, has been at great pains to secure the latest and most approved patterns of guns. They are ‘quick-firing’ and of great range. A peculiarity is that they are carried very low on the ground; they ride on the trunions, which practically serve as the axle-tree.

“Japanese artillery men are reputed excellent shots, and the officers possess the highest scientific attainments. The guns are well horsed and fairly mobile.

“The mounted service of the Japanese army is not, however, its strongest point. Horses are not plentiful in Japan, and skill in equitation by no means common. In this respect Russia has, of course an immense superiority, and has an almost inexhaustible supply of cavalry, regular and irregular.”

CHAPTER XIV.

THE SIEGE OF PORT ARTHUR.

Experts Study Object Lessons in the Arts of War in a Tremendous School—Duels with Twelve-Inch Guns Immensely Interesting—New Views of Shore Defense from Ships' Fire—Elevated Range Bombardment Successful—Terrors of High-Flying Shells—Untimely Press Men Suppressed—How Steel Ships Suffer in Prison.

THE siege of Port Arthur is a splendid and exceedingly instructive historical fact, the conditions those of the latest armaments, all the modern improvements in great guns, firing balls with hardened heads, shells loaded with highest explosives, armor according to the modern proven steel, nothing lacking in the equipment—the army and navy men of all nations watching results with intense professional and scientific enjoyment.

Port Arthur, before the war a city, harbor and system of fortifications of celebrity, will have enduring fame for the value to the people at large, as well as those of the fleets and armies of the armed nations, that have wonderful entertainment and invaluable educational facilities. The two Empires on the North Pacific Ocean are affording the profession of arms, and the military and naval, at once occupation and enlightenment, and paying for it.

Russia has the more costly experience in the war school-keeping, but Japan seems to be proficient in scholarship, so highly prized under the circumstances. The Russians, having possessed Port Arthur by the process known in this country as "scrouging," having fair occasion to put on a pressure, offended China, Japan and England—so much so in the case of the Chinese that Russia can hardly manage to conciliate China, to join her in reducing the European habit of colonial extension in the most crowded part of the world.

The proceedings of Russia to capture Manchuria, and wasting

more than two hundred and fifty million dollars altogether in permanent betterments, have made enemies; but those who gained enmity for this should not throw so many stones until they can show they are innocent of the sin of ambition for more land, admitted to be proven against Russia.

Japan may also rank as a sinful empire, because she needs good land for her poor people, too numerous for her landed possessions. The other Empires have not Japan's good reasons for the expansion that would include Korea.

The history of Port Arthur before the Russo-Japanese war is in an instructive and agreeable way presented by a journalist historian of English-speaking, and we may warrantably add, writing proclivities. He sketched Port Arthur when that thundering war town was the center of commanding interest.

THE GREAT HISTORY OF PORT ARTHUR.

He tells in the able and brilliant columns of the *London Telegraph* of the startling scenes on the stricken lands and torpedoed waters, with the charm of vivacity, from sources of practical knowledge and painstaking industry of position, of the exchange of bolts and bombs establishing the reputation of the locality of the events of magnitude, of making their marks of distinction compensation for incidental loss in the colossal pyrotechnics of imperial conflagrations of fireworks, of astounding spectacular splendors, and volcanic lightnings and thundering, such as rend mountains, hush in ruin the industrial or festal tumult of the capitals that are the monuments of mighty peoples.

The world has been suddenly made acquainted, uncommonly well, with Siberia and Japan. The former is out of the way of the balmy breath of the winds that sigh so softly from the south, and the waves grow colder as they roll away, or flow far east in the ocean stream from the East Indies.

Enough happened within the first two months to make Port Arthur attractive to readers, and, therefore, writers of history, to turn the world's attention upon that East, the English journals will not call the Northern Orient.

The military correspondent of the *Telegraph* has the art of finding news, even in the hurly burly of fresh information noisily told; and he has never been more interesting and entertaining than after, almost apologizing for the "long pause" in the "lull of the war," he says:

"I find my friends almost as much as ever inclined to ask questions and to want answers, some of which at least can be, in large measure, supplied from the experience of the past. I cannot say that the long pause, which I have always anticipated as likely to follow between the decision of the naval contest and the beginning of military operations on shore, has seemed to me too long to devote to clearing up the different questions about which we shall want to have made up our minds, at least to some extent, before the campaign begins.

A MAGNIFICENT MILITARY DUEL.

"The great artillery duel that has been going on between the fleet and Port Arthur is of the first interest to us from more points of view than one. Hitherto with us the tenet has been quite as strongly held by sailors as by soldiers, by soldiers as by sailors, that it was only waste of ammunition and an abnegation of their proper duty for ships to engage forts.

"The ship gives, under most circumstances, a splendid target to the gunners on shore or fort battery. From the deck of a ship usually scarcely anything is visible of the guns of a fort. The conditions have been in no respect equal. Furthermore, as a rule, experience has very much tended to discount the material effect of the heaviest artillery fire at very long ranges.

"When at the battle of Gravelotte about one hundred and sixty guns had been concentrated by the Germans against the left of the French army, and it looked as if scarcely a mouse could live under such an appalling rain of missiles, General Sheridan, who had just come from the experiences of the American Civil War, and was attaché from the United States to the King's headquarters, annoyed the German gunners extremely by telling them that according to his belief, they would find that hardly any

serious effect had been produced by all their fire. He proved a true prophet.

“Of course, that was a case of the shell-fire of only comparatively light field guns, which cannot compare in destructive effect with such huge missiles as those that have been thrown into Port Arthur; but hitherto a very large part of our confidence in the security of English coast towns has depended on our applying to big ship-guns the scepticism which General Sheridan showed as regards the action of an enormous concentration of field artillery.”

The truth, force and aptitude of this is an excellent combine, and shows the importance of the siege of Port Arthur; and if the operation was not of the nature of a siege, it certainly is a typical case of a city beleaguered, taking the glory of the advertising, but getting the gain.

THE STORY OF THE CITY OF PORT ARTHUR.

There is an association with a great chapter of history and the identity of the superb scenery, the surrounding decoration framing the first full play and test of the latest and most searching and crushing weapons of the nations that bear arms, as if the burden was the chief end of the lives of men.

We give the story of the city:

“Port Arthur, the ancient seaport of Lu-chun-cheng, was until the war between China and Japan in 1894 in the undisputed possession of the Chinese. On November 21st, 1894, it was captured by Japanese troops. By the treaty of peace between China and her neighbor, which was signed at Shimonoseki on April 17th, 1895, it was ceded to Japan with practically the whole of the Liautung Peninsula, including all islands appertaining or belonging thereto.

“Owing to the action of Russia, supported by France and Germany, Japan was compelled to retrocede under Article 1 of a convention signed at Peking on November 8th, 1895, all the territory occupied by her in Manchuria, and by December 31st of that year the last Japanese soldier had been withdrawn.

“It is unnecessary to recall the process by which, in less than

two and a half years after its evacuation by the Japanese, Russia had established herself in Port Arthur, never of her own free will to quit it. No sooner had the lease been extracted from China than the Russian Government set to work to render their new possession impregnable for all time. It would not be out of place here to describe roughly the position and physical aspects of the port. Situated on the southeastern extremity of the Liau-tung Peninsula, Port Arthur is just outside the southern limit of winter ice, this immunity being one of its most valuable features.

“The harbor is an oval inlet of the sea, two miles long from east to west, and a mile from north to south; it is surrounded by hills of varying elevation, and its sole entrance is on the southern side by a narrow channel guarded at the southwestern end by a couple of dangerous reefs, and protected against bad weather by a narrow spit of rocky land known as the Tiger’s Tail, which runs diagonally across its northern extremity.

THE MANY TROUBLES WITH THE HARBOR.

“This harbor, however, was so shallow that until extensive dredging operations had been undertaken no vessel of any size could enter; even now there are berths for but three battleships in addition to smaller craft. For this reason the major portion of the Russian fleet has always been forced to lie outside the heads, or else enter the large swing basin or wet dock, which lies to the east, facing the entrance to the harbor proper.

“The approach to the harbor and basin is very confined, and from the nature of its surroundings is very easily defended. To the east, Kwang-chin Hill rises to a height of nearly 250 feet above the sea-level, and its elevation has been taken full advantage of by the erection on and around the summit of three powerful batteries mounting, besides smaller guns, four new breech-loading cannon, weighing sixty-three and a half tons, on fortress mountings. On the side facing the entrance and half way down the slope are two batteries of quick-firers, for the most part Canet 5.5in. and 75mm. guns, in addition to a torpedo and searchlight station.

"The fortifications extend from the Kwang-chin Shan Fort for a distance of nearly forty versts in the northern direction, and this line is joined by a circle of batteries on the hilltops surrounding the town to the second long line of defences starting south around the peninsula from the Mantow Hill. So much for the eastern side of the entrance.

"On the west the most important fort is the Wei-Yuen, and this is joined to several small quick-fire batteries commanding the entrance by castellated bridges. A short time ago the whole of these fortifications were surrounded by a high wooden palisade to prevent the inquisitive from learning too much.

"The width of the entrance from Pinnacle Rock on the west to the opposite shore is barely three hundred and fifty yards, whilst the three-fathom channel at its narrowest is not more than five hundred feet in width. Within the heads it widens out somewhat, and between the end of the Tiger's Tail and the entrance to the basin there is a width of four hundred and thirty yards; even this makes it a most difficult task for any vessel over three hundred feet in length to enter or leave either the harbor or basin.

THE ARTILLERY EQUIPMENT OF THE TIGER'S TAIL.

"On the Tiger's Tail are placed seven Canet 5.5in. quick-firers in an open battery at an elevation of not more than ten feet above the sea; at the extreme end of the spit is a quadruple launching slip for destroyers, from which two lots of four have recently been launched after being sent out in sections. Behind this, again, is a circular observation tower and flagstaff.

"The basin or east port was excavated primarily by the Chinese, as also the dry dock cut in its northern side. It has an average depth of three and a half fathoms and can accommodate nearly a dozen large vessels. The western end is devoted exclusively to torpedo craft, though a dock for these small boats is in the process of construction on the eastern side.

"The dry dock, repaired and enlarged by the Russians, is four hundred and fifty-two feet over all, three hundred and seventy feet over blocks, ninety feet wide at the entrance, and has a depth

on the sill at high water, ordinary spring tides, of thirty-two feet. These figures are interesting, for they show that, even with her draught augmented nearly six feet the Retvisan might still enter the dock for repairs at high water.

“An eighty-ton sheerlegs is in position on the land side of the basin, and immense engine shops and repairing houses are in course of construction wherever there is an available plot of land. Just inside the Tiger’s Tail the mud has been dredged away so as to allow destroyers to lie right alongside the building slip, and here eight to a dozen are nearly always moored.

THE GRAND OLD CHINESE CITY NOW RUINED.

“As to the town, the old Chinese city is rapidly becoming a mass of barracks, and on every side the dirty homes of the Celestials are giving way to fine stone buildings; the modern town is constructed on the European plan, its only and all-pervading fault being excessive filth, stench, and a complete lack of drainage. Fine water-works have for some time been in course of erection, and before long the electric light will be installed all over the town, though whether by the Russians remains to be seen.

“On the high hill at the back of the town are placed a lighthouse, signal station, and telephone office; from here a superb view of the surrounding country may be obtained. To the right of this hill (facing seawards) lies the newly-built residence of the Viceroy, the only respectable habitation in that quarter of the town. To the left stretched the new town, reaching almost to the surrounding hills about four miles to the east. Prominent amongst the many buildings are the new barracks, a series of twenty-four grey stone edifices placed in four rows of six each.

“Nearer the harbor are the prison, telegraph-office, Court-house and Customs.

“The point is this, that, not so many years ago, when our relations with France were not so friendly as they are to-day, a French admiral, who was at the time responsible for the form of construction of French ships, avowedly devoted himself to arranging for a system of high-angle fire to be applied to the guns of the

French broadsides, in order to take advantage of the enormous number of seaside resorts, which, during the nineteenth century have sprung up all round our coast. He proposed to threaten bombardment of these by long range fire, and thereby to exact ransom.

“Hitherto our belief has been that the cost of the heavy shells that would have to be so expended would be so great, and the effect that would be produced on anything but nerves by the uncertainties of long-range fire would be so small, that the whole scheme was futile. Indeed, when the late Sir George Tryon endeavored to read the country a lesson as to the extent to which a series of detached cruisers could bully our unprotected towns, there were not a few who inclined to think that he was somewhat playing to the gallery.

“The general answer was very much that which the Governor of Vladivostok made about the effect of the Japanese bombardment—that the game did not pay its expenses.

DEFENCES OF SEA COASTS FROM SEA POWER.

“How far that report from Vladivostok was or was not a quite legitimate ruse de guerre, intended to stop the very thing he most dreaded, we cannot at present tell; but the reports both from within and from without Port Arthur appear to suggest that there the tremendous bombardment by the Japanese fleet has really been destructive, not only of life, but of the fortifications.

“We shall, no doubt, be able to form a much better idea of this when the place is attacked by land than we can now, but changes have taken place in the conditions of bombardment since the last on any large scale—that of Alexandria in 1882—which make it at least exceedingly interesting to us to know how far they have affected the relative advantages of land and sea gunnery.

“For some time past, it is to be noted, the nations on the Continent have not at all accepted our view of the uselessness of naval attack upon forts. Zealous Englishmen have endeavored to warn us that, whether rightly or wrongly, foreign officers believe that they could successfully attack many of our coastward defences. Hitherto, the garrison artilleryman has, in consequence of our theory, looked upon his role as a very unwarlike one; but now in

most of our coast garrisons a game is freely played very like in essentials the 'war game' which was introduced into England from Germany soon after the Franco-German War.

"In this new form, under certain assigned conditions arranged as closely as possible to represent the facts of such a contest, forts are pitted against ships. The practice is much to be commended, for it certainly gives an interest to the duties of the garrison artilleryman and teaches him many practical lessons. We may be sure that the work that is now going on at Port Arthur will give the interest in the game a wholesome stimulus.

"No doubt the circumstances of Port Arthur peculiarly favor a naval bombardment. As was suggested some time ago, as long as Japan is able to pay, practically unlimited resources in ammunition lie behind Admiral Togo. On the other hand, a cry of distress as to the shortness of heavy ammunition has already gone up from Port Arthur. It must be extremely difficult over the congested railway to send fresh supplies at all, and somewhat doubtful whether they can in any case arrive in time.

THE LAVISH USE OF COSTLY AMMUNITION.

"According to the reports of those who have escaped from Port Arthur, for a long time after the bombardment began, every shot from the fleet provoked many shots from the fortress; but that lavish expenditure must long since have become impossible.

"It is this last fact that introduces the most novel feature into the present case. The range at which the fleet was able to fire was so enormous that two results, both of great advantage to the relative efficiency of the ship fire, followed. In the first place, by using what is known as 'high-angle fire'—that is to say, by directing the shell to points not in a direct horizontal line with the guns, but marked on a previously prepared plan—the shells were made to pitch over an intervening obstacle.

"Whereas, usually when firing at a target on a field day, the gunner looks over his sights and sees the object at which he aims, in this form of practice, which is sometimes called also 'curved fire,' and sometimes 'indirect fire,' the gunner does not see the

object at which he aims at all, but gives the elevation or range that will, according to the plan, carry the shell to the required distance, and he gets the line on intermediate points, which will direct it correctly.

“In this way the steadiness of the aim of the gunner cannot be disturbed by hostile fire, for the fortress gunner cannot see the ship that is throwing the shell, and can only vaguely guess where it is, while the exact position of the battery aimed at is perfectly known on the ship. Furthermore, the distance being so great, an auxiliary cruiser can be stationed at right angles to the line of fire, just as a range party is placed during practice on shore.

“By wireless telegraphy the fall of each shell can be reported to the firing ship, just as it would be by a range party, so that errors of range or direction can be corrected after every shot.

USE OF WIRELESS TELEGRAPHY IN MARKSMANSHIP.

“If to these changes there be added the fact that the shells fired are filled with what is called a “high explosive”—that is, a composite, which, when the shell acts properly, produces an explosion incomparably greater than that of gunpowder—it follows that the reports of the destruction produced by the bombardment on a place, in the case of which the Japanese have probably been able to mark down the exact position of every battery and gun beforehand, may well have been as great as it is said to have been, and far greater than any of which we have had previous experience in the bombardment of a fortress by a fleet. We may have to revise some of our previous conclusions in these matters.

“Whatever may have been the condition of the large Russian men-of-war at Port Arthur early in February it must be borne in mind that apart from the damage by shell-fire and torpedo, they must be getting in a worse state day by day, because steel ships need to be continually docked, and Port Arthur has only one dock, and that too small for big vessels. Consequently, whatever battle-ships or cruisers are hidden away in the inner harbor, they are getting their bottoms more foul each day, and if ever an opportunity occurs to use them, they will be not only ‘gummed up,’ to

use a favorite expression, but hindered in steaming by the condition of their hulls

“We know that the battleships *Retvizan*, *Tsarevitch* and *Sevastopol*, and the cruisers *Askold*, *Diana*, *Boyarin*, and *Pallada*, have been more or less injured, but what has happened to the rest of the fleet—the battleships *Pobieda*, *Peresviet*, *Poltava* and *Petroviovsk*? They cannot have been spirited away; but what they have been doing all these weeks, or what their state is now, we have no means of knowing. If it were true that at this late day they had gone out as rumored, we should have had news of a fight on something of a grand scale between big ships instead of a succession of poorly-parried torpedo raids by the Japanese.

ANOTHER RUSSIAN MYSTERY IN THE WAR.

“Then, again, week after week passes, and we have no intelligence as to what has happened to that other mystery, the *Vladivostok* squadron. Now it is robbed by its late commander, Admiral *Stakelberg*—our visitor at Portland in 1902—of the credit of having bombarded *Hakodate*. He has reached *St. Petersburg*, and expressed astonishment at this story. He admits that the ships went to sea, and that they cruised for some days, sinking a little Japanese merchantman, but he puts down all the rest as trimmings due to someone’s imagination.

“This officer ‘denied the rumors that the Russian squadron was not ready for war,’ and added that ‘war had been foreseen for a long time,’ and that the two Russian squadrons ‘were perfectly prepared.’ All that can be said in comment on this assurance is that hostilities began on February 8th, and to-day is March 18th, and we have yet to learn that either force has made a single adequate effort at even defence; while Japan, mostly by the skilful use of her mosquito craft, has gained command of all the near seas.”

The veracious history the true inwardness is in this letter :

“Tokio, February 18. The Japanese Government have achieved at least one great and decisive victory—they have ‘knocked out’ the whole British-American Press in one round. The situation in Tokio, as far as the Anglo-Saxon Press is con-

cerned, at this moment, savors of serio-comedy. From every English-speaking country throughout the world these eyes and ears of the public have gathered in the hope of seeing and hearing and transmitting the news to readers at English breakfast tables; and, although whispers and rumors of the conflict which is presumably raging in the Occidental seas reach our ears, and are raced on to the wires, we are seeing nothing.

"The victims of an impasse, irresistible and complete, doyen and amateur, rage round the portals of the Imperial Hotel, vanish in the direction of Government offices and the Legations, and return baffled again and again. We are in irons, the more holding because of their velvet covers—prisoners at large, with no possibility of escape.

"Why not go 'on your own,' and risk it? may be queried. It has been done before, and men have scored heavily by so doing. But this will be said or thought only by such as are ignorant of the Japanese way of doing things. In the first place, although the Jap may be handicapped while in the outside world by his unmistakable Jappiness, when at home he has the advantage of the impossibility of imitation.

THE MILITARY TROUBLES WITH THE PRESS.

"An Englishman may naturally be taken for an American, and an inhabitant of almost any one country in Europe may pass as a citizen of another with comparative ease. But the diverse anthropology of the Orient and the Occident renders it impossible for a six-foot Britisher to pass himself off as a five-foot nothing naval stoker, or as anything else. In the second place, the Government of this collection of remarkably tight little islands has seized, grasped, and put into practice the whole art of war.

"The initial desideratum in such an effort is to maintain secrecy as to your movements, and anything which might tend to, or result in, disclosure of facts is nothing more nor less than folly. Consequently, we have seen no flaming headlines. 'Departure of ss. Blank Castle with the Fiftieth Regiment'; no beatings of drums are heard in the streets, no wiping off slates on the steps of

the Tokio Exchange, and not a single war correspondent, native or foreign, has yet enjoyed the hospitality of the grim-gunned fleet or landed with his impediments on the coast of Korea.

“What though distracted representatives of cable agencies, naval experts especially engaged, veteran followers of armies, artist and photographer, big gun or small quick-firer of every longitude from ‘Frisco to Fleet-street supplicate, negotiate, and diplomatise generally, the result is the same, at present. Our formal applications, backed by recommendations from our Legations have been filed.

“The names of our interpreters, officially inquired and insisted upon, have been submitted, and the whole contingent of about forty correspondents is awaiting the result. There is nothing else to be done; there is no ‘get away,’ and although the whole newspaper world may rage, the hubbub has no effect on the little, calm-eyed, bristly-haired gentlemen who have made up their minds, and have at last taken the bear by the throat with the intention of holding on in such a death-grasp as the world has never before seen.

CROWD OF WAR HISTORIANS.

“‘We have been preparing for this for ten years, and I think we’re ready.’ These, the words of a little terrier-faced gentleman sitting opposite me, calmly patting his finger-tips together, and speaking in the deliberate, but non-hesitating tones of the student of English, conveyed more than it is possible to set down in writing. Completely ready—ships, men, money.

“A united nation—unanimous, unhesitating, and unafraid. No complication of thought influences them, no hesitation as to the meaning of right or the qualification of wrong, no exotic limitations born of sloth, security, and a desire for ease accumulated under the license of a limitless liberty; but a nation in arms, equipped, undivided, doggedly determined that she is in the right.

“The Westerner goes into action influenced by many emotions. Pride of race, patriotism, a desire to do his duty, a fear of funk, and, at the back end of all, the hope of return, the prayer

for life. But endeavor to picture to yourself a race, warriors from time immemorial, uninfluenced by the gentler teachings of Western civilization because ignorant of the same, whose cult, despite their small stature from the Western point of view, is athleticism and the development of their bodies, and whose desire on leaving their homes for the front is that they may not return, but that their name may be inscribed on the roll of those who have died fighting. Horrible, is it not? Yet 'It was a splendid fight; we had over 400 casualties.' This saying of a captain of Japanese infantry after the capture of Tientsin has passed into a proverb.

THE PORT ARTHUR UNIVERSITY OF WAR.

"The idea conveyed thereby influences the whole army and navy of Japan, and through them the entire population of whom they are the sons and brothers. Can you grasp it? But combine this desire for the death-grip with the most up-to-date and enlightened method, and then endeavor to ascertain or imagine the resultant sum-total. Add to a verile animalism not only the inherited instinct of fighting for the pure love of a fight, but the adaptation, not to say imitation, of the best results ascertained from the practical, scientific experiments in the art of man-slaying of all the nations of the globe.

"The potentialities are enormous. Again add, not a nation split up by a party or religious faction, or a diversity of interests, but a people politically, morally, and in all senses comprehensively united in a determined effort to prove to the world that they are the equals of all men."

The siege of Port Arthur is indeed a University of War, and there is nothing lacking on the spot in the combat between sea and shore, with the exception of the one thing in which Russia has been most massive and invisible—a great army arrayed and engaged in the grandeur of armies, artillery, cavalry and infantry, strenuously and decisively engaged. This is the foremost and clearest opportunity of the century for international instruction by example with the omission of the armies of Emperors who furnish the lessons; and their wisdom comes dear.

The Japanese navy, in assailing the Russian city of Port Arthur has been incomparably important, because the navy is all on one side; and on the other there are land forces and batteries, and a partially disabled once powerful squadron. Here are all the elements and armaments involved in an illustrative example of the utmost advances of the measure and the means of war.

Enough has already been ascertained to show that our cities on the Atlantic, the Pacific and the Gulf, should be interested in the application of Port Arthur history, to all our exposed cities. A fleet of enemies off Boston, New York or San Francisco, with the equipment and dash of the Japanese, could, but equivalent armaments to those of the Manchurian university, and energy great as that of the Japanese, barring the intervention of our navy might destroy our cities.

The forts that guard our shores are not as powerful defenders as the aggressors that might be sent against us; and our monster rifle at Sandy Hook should have shelter that would stand firm against men of war armed with twelve-inch guns, firing showers of hardened steel bolts, or shells with high explosives. It is a duty in the face of the experience before us to be active in time and aim according to the modern conditions of warfare—for if we fight anybody, the imperative necessity would be upon us to fight to a finish and see that our steel built ships are not confined to exposed harbors with insufficient docks, for they are the corroding prison depots of perishing navies.

CHAPTER XV.

MILITARY STUDIES OF LOGIC—STARTLING BATTLE SCENERY AT PORT ARTHUR.

Mathematics of Military Chances—Statistical Calculations of Size of Armies—Analysis of Russian and Japanese Resources and Foreshadowings of Gigantic Combats—The Wonderful Victory of the Japanese Fleet—Eye-Witness Description—An American First Amateur Spectator, and His Splendid Story of the Fighting.

THE Pekin correspondent of the *London Times* is in a position to know the inside of the military systems of Russia and Japan as Asia contains them. Perhaps the greatest distinction of the journalism of the times is that the *London* journal of that name is the best served and informed publication in the world; for the constancy and authenticity of its diplomatic news.

The *Times* has representatives in Washington City, New York, the capital cities of all the British colonies, and in Madrid, Paris, Rome, Berlin, Vienna, St. Petersburg, Constantinople, Johannesburg, Pretoria, Cairo, Delhi, Calcutta; and not the least, though last, Pekin. Just now the past, present and future secrets of Asia have a better chance of being intelligently, and in common times, impartially given.

This correspondent gave an estimate stating his information as to the number of troops in and about the seat of war, on both sides, and his estimate "secured the general attention of the best authorities in Europe." This was in the second week of March.

The acceptance of the estimate of the diplomatic writer was that then there were "not more than 150,000 Russian troops available at the outbreak of the war east of Lake Baikal;" and a military man, giving his opinion of the fighting strength of the Russians to meet the Japanese, says, with the exactness but not detail of expression:

"We must first see what strength the Russian field army will stand at after satisfying the necessary requirements of garrisons and railway defence. Port Arthur, a short time ago, held an estimated garrison of 25,000 men, but during the first week in February, a considerable number of men, probably not much under 10,000, left for the Yalu and other points, leaving some 15,000 men behind.

"The presence of the naval squadron makes good the deficiency, since there must be not less than 10,000 men of the navy at Port Arthur. It is therefore questionable whether the Russian military authorities would care to increase the garrison remaining to any great extent, since they would already have 25,000 men available from the two services, and all these must be supplied from the army stores and magazines, which do not seem to be unduly overstocked.

THE FAR EAST SIBERIAN CITY EXPOSED.

"Vladivostok will not be safe with a smaller garrison than 20,000 men, since it will be open to attack in force from seaward when the ice clears off; therefore, the two fortresses absorb at least 35,000 men of the army of East Asia. A withdrawal to Kharbin reduces the length of railway to be protected to an approximate 1,000 miles from the Trans-Baikal territory by Khailar and Kharbin to Vladivostok.

"The necessary guard for the line must be dependent upon the nature and frequency of the attacks to which it becomes exposed when the Japanese preparations for wrecking it begin to mature; but 30 men per mile throughout is a moderate estimate for efficient protection on the assumption that strong posts would be maintained at the chief bridges and stations, and the line only patrolled in places where damage done could easily be repaired.

"There are, besides, many obligatory garrisons to be maintained in the chief towns of Manchuria, just as there are in India, but if we put against this drain the volunteers and colonists, who would be placed in line at a moment of crisis, we may assume that the one will balance the other. Lastly, there is the deduction to

be made for non-effectives, owing to sickness and other causes, which would probably mount up to a high figure under the climatic conditions prevailing, and could be safely put at 10 per cent. These deductions would reduce the strength eventually available at Kharbin by 80,000 men, and would have lowered the strength of the field army to 70,000 men on February 8th.

“From Niu-chwang, the natural base of the Japanese, to Kharbin, the distance is roughly 400 miles, and in view of the inferiority of the roads and of the small prospect of the immediate usefulness of the railway, a great army would take at least seven weeks to reach Kharbin if it encountered no serious opposition. Allowing another fortnight from the present date for the assembly of the Japanese army at Niu-chwang, Kharbin could not be reached until the middle of May.”

SIZE OF THE RUSSIAN ARMY.

The question was subjected to close calculation to get the answer as to the size of the Russian army of effectives May 14th, a period of nearly fourteen weeks after the first blow was struck at Port Arthur.

We follow the result of the Pekin information and the Tokio military expert, with this result:

“According to the calculations of the *Militar-Wochenblatt* and on the basis of seven trains a day, the figure would be 133,000, but this estimate is excessive, since four trains a day are unlikely to be surpassed, and a large proportion of these must be devoted to supplies and material of war; if we allow that 800 men reach Kharbin daily, we shall probably be reasonably liberal.

“Presuming that the despatch of reinforcements began a month before the outbreak of war, this would mean a reinforcement of nearly 76,000 men, which, joined to the 70,000 already available, would give a field army of nearly 150,000 Russians at Kharbin by the middle of May.

“In order, therefore, to make sure of a victory at Kharbin and in view of the fact that she might have to carry out costly attacks against entrenched positions, Japan must be in a position to place

250,000 combatants at this point by the middle of May; and if the effort is above her strength, or the result of the first actions proves that a larger force is required, she would be wiser to refrain from embarking upon the adventure.

“The alternative line of advance, from some point on the coast near Vladivostok, is slightly shorter; but the railway terminates in the Russian fortress, the country is more difficult, the communications bad, less aid and fewer supplies would be obtained from the native population on the line of march, while the siege of Port Arthur is not covered by the operations of the field army, as it is by an advance from Niu-chwang.

PLANNING CAMPAIGNS FOR TWO EMPIRES.

“If Japan can leave a force to mask and invest Port Arthur, detail troops to guard the communications on the main line of advance, and still deploy 250,000 combatants at Kharbin by the middle of May, the enterprise is not absolutely forbidden, considered as a stroke isolated from after consequences. A serious breakdown on the Russian railway from any cause, or a success in the field entailing a disaster to the Russian arms, would diminish the difficulties in proportion to the success achieved, but neither can be calculated upon in the establishment of the plan of operations.

“The estimate of 150,000 men for the Russian field army at Kharbin by the middle of May is necessarily only an approximation. The Russian estimates, generally based upon a total absence of all serious consideration of the elements of time and space, suggest a far higher figure; on the other hand, Japanese opinion, so far as it can be fathomed, regards with the utmost suspicion even moderate calculations of the Russian numbers and of the troop-carrying capacity of the Trans-Siberian, and, starting with the assumption that the Russian army east of Lake Baikal was not more than 100,000 when war broke out, would credit Kharbin with the arrival of only 400 men a day.

“But, granted that the Japanese are the best judges of matters that concern their very existence, it must be declared that such estimate is dangerously optimistic, and that our allies will risk

much if they refuse to assume that by the time they reach Kharbin, they must be prepared to deal with a Russian army of 150,000 men."

There is a most serious observation next :

"Until the result of the first battle on land has been decided it is not possible to say whether the military aptitudes of the Japanese, and the lessons taught them by their former instructors from France and Germany, give promise of such success on land as the navy has won at sea."

The expert quotes Napoleon as to the comparison of soldiers of several nationalities, and adds, inclusive :

"Napoleon, in 1815, counted one Frenchman the equal of one Englishman, but also the equal of two Prussians, Belgians, Dutchmen, or Germans, and on this valuation based his plan. It is not a point upon which the modern German commentator upon the Waterloo campaign dilates at length, but such as it is, and for what it is worth, it stands on record. If we find that one Russian equals two Japanese, or *vice versa*, then naturally the question of what 150,000 Russians correspond to in terms of Japanese units must be faced."

QUESTION OF THE COMPARATIVE RACES AS SOLDIERS.

It has not been ascertained as yet that the Japanese soldiers are, man to man, inferior to the Russians, and the military authority we quote yields to the easy temptation of giving good advice, saying :

"The Japanese should beware of becoming intoxicated by their naval successes and should view the military situation with the utmost calm. They should remember Napoleon's advice to the most famous army of modern times—'*Il faut marcher avec prudence. Les Russes ne sont pas encore entames, ils savent aussi attaquer.*'—and they should consider that message as a warning to themselves.

"A great military empire is on its mettle ; the lives, the reputations, the fortunes of every Russian, from the highest to the humblest, are at stake. Incredible exertions will be made to

retrieve the situation; the Russian is a stout fighter, he has great traditions, and is not disheartened by defeat.

“The Japanese appear to have the game in their hands if they keep their heads cool and their ambitions within bounds. An advance upon Kharbin is a serious military risk unless the Japanese can bring 250,000 combatants into line four hundred miles from the sea; a defeat here spells disaster.

“But the Japanese have read their Mahan; they must know the pregnant words with which he advises a maritime Power to ‘grasp firmly some vital chord of the enemy’s communications and so force him to fight there,’ and they will surely perceive that if the fortune of war places Korea, the Liau-tung peninsula, and Vladivostok in their hands the vital chord of Russian East Asia is severed, and that Russia must fight on ground of Japanese choosing or not at all.

HINTS AS TO AMBITION IN JAPAN.

“In a combat between the elephant and the shark, if the elephant enters the water and suffers for it, that is no reason why the shark should begin to flounder inland in pursuit. A prudent strategy would not launch the army of an island empire into the heart of a continent; it would not play into the enemy’s hands and abandon all the advantages of position. It will be objected, the aim of Japan is to oust Russia from Manchuria and replace China, the lawful owner, in possession; how can this object be attained without ejecting Russia from Manchuria *manu militari*?

“But the real question is, will the presence of 250,000 victorious Japanese at Kharbin compel Russia to make peace and abandon the contest? There is nothing whatever to show that it will, and there is every reason to think that it will not. Kharbin, insignificant in itself, is the Moscow of East Asia, and all the lessons of Moscow apply.

“The greatest possible success at Kharbin, even entailing the annihilation of the Russian army, would settle nothing; it would simply mean that so many hundred miles further west a larger army would be collected, and that a fresh advance would be made

the next year, or the year after, when Russia was ready. There could be no hope, within any reasonable time, of establishing China in Manchuria in any posture to withstand the shock of a few Russian battalions; therefore the alternative before Japan would be the maintenance, for x years, of a great army in Manchuria, or a retirement with infinite loss of prestige and nothing of permanent value gained by the incursion.

“Japan can never hope to attain to that position of military superiority over Russia that England attained in the fourteenth century over France. So great was our superiority that when the Duke of Lancaster set out to march through France from north to south in 1373 the most trusty councillors of Charles V.—namely, de Clisson, the Duke of Anjou, even the doughty Constable du Gueselin himself—advised that the enemy should not be fought, since ‘the English have been so fortunate that they think they cannot be defeated; and in battle they are the most confident people in the world, for the more blood they see, whether their own or the enemy’s, the more eager they are for the fray.’ Yet what remains?”

SPECULATION OF GREAT EMPIRES HEREAFTER.

“Not one shred of French territory in our possession, for the simple reason that, given rival races of equal value and solidarity, with reasonable proportioned populations, the permanent domination of a continent by an island is against reason, against nature, and against sense.

“If Port Arthur, Korea, and Vladivostok fall into Japanese hands, the dominion of Russia in East Asia is ended. Its *raison d’être* vanishes, since the outlet upon the sea is lost. Established at these three points the Japanese can make themselves so strong that, so long as they retain command of the sea and hold their army in leash, they can consider their position impregnable.

“Port Arthur in Japanese hands is unassailable by land; Korea can be defended for the greater part by a chain of defensive works across the one hundred miles of the narrowest part of the peninsula on the principle of Torres Vedras; even if Vladivostok cannot

be held indefinitely against the might of Russia, it can be stalemated and rendered useless by the occupation of the islands commanding the entrance to the port.

“Here, then, is the vital chord severed, and here must Russia fight, five thousand miles from her true base, and with every moral and material disadvantage, or not fight at all. It is 1812 reversed, and it is Russia that is cursed with all the disadvantages of Napoleon’s fatal ambition. The Japanese army remains intact, the nation unspent, and take what course Russia may, she remains exposed to an offensive return, along all the wide frontage of the sea, by the concentrated weight of her enemy’s arms.”

Here we have added to military mathematics, cold blooded statesmanship, with the general tendency of discouraging everybody and that is not, as a rule, a winning game.

CERTAIN RESERVATIONS AS TO THE TRUTH.

The month of March was, in the conduct of the Russo-Japanese war, a time of reserves of truth, and deception as to purposes. All high officers in action wrote with other motives than those of setting forth the whole truth. March 19th, the authority regarded as most serious said that day :

“Russians are growing confident as their numbers rise, and evidently propose to make a Japanese advance on Mukden a very costly business. They seem to have intrenched a strong position near Liau-yang, their right flank protected by the river and streams of the Liau delta, while their left is covered by the Yalu force, which can fall back if outnumbered upon the Motien-ling position, which is exceedingly strong. If there are 50,000 Russians within hail and all under the hand of Linevitch, we can sympathize with his desire to try conclusions.

“It is not altogether in accord with the views that General Kuropatkin is believed to hold that the Russian army should fight a decisive battle at such an early stage of the campaign. In all his speeches he has urged the need for time and patience, and has rather deprecated than advised decisive encounters before the Russian army was fully prepared. No doubt the Cossacks will once

more prove their value, but they are far from their native plains, and the burden of the fighting will fall, as it always must, upon the world-renowned Russian infantry."

The sudden stroke with which the war opened, to the disadvantage of Russia, and the discord in telegrams and proclamations of explanation, without explaining, clouded the purpose of the Japanese Admiral, who was foremost in the first fight; and such was the disorder of contradictions that readers who care for true history sustained by instruction, as to the situation and the urgency that blows should be given and taken, become points of light that define the ground from the clouds and drive the mist away.

"Admiral Togo, in command of the Standing Squadron, then lying in Saseho, February 5th, the day before Japan's formal announcement of the end of diplomatic relations, got orders "to hold himself in readiness for immediate action,"—and on the 6th he assembled all the commanders of the ships and communicated to them the plan to be pursued."

THE TASK THAT FELL TO TOGO.

The task that fell to Togo, was "to convey to Korea the advance guard of a Japanese army, and, secondly, to secure its line of communications with Japan, not merely temporarily, but permanently. The Japanese base was Saseho, the Russian Port Arthur; the objective point of the transports carrying the troops, Chemulpo in Korea.

"The distance from Port Arthur to Chemulpo is little more than a third of the distance from Saseho to Chemulpo, and that a ship steaming from Port Arthur and taking a course slightly northward of the direct line to Chemulpo, might ultimately reach the latter place without being sighted by a ship taking the direct line from Chemulpo.

Admiral Togo, had he obeyed the simplest rules of strategy, would have massed his whole fleet to protect the transports, and after escorting them safely to their destination, would have either remained to guard them or gone in search of the enemy. In that

way he might have counted on attaining his immediate object. But to render the line of communications "permanently secure," he had to strike a crushing blow at the enemy, and in order to strike such a blow the utmost celerity of offensive action was essential. Had he delayed to insure the safe disembarkation of the troops, his doings would have been known at Port Arthur, and he might have found himself obliged to assume the defensive. He determined, therefore, to deliver an attack at Port Arthur simultaneously with the landing of troops at Chemulpo.

On the morning of the 6th he assembled his officers and explained to them his purpose, indicating a rendezvous whither the four squadrons of the fleet were to assemble without loss of time.

MARVELOUS CAMPAIGN OF THE JAPANESE ADMIRAL.

"The rendezvous was Mokpo, at the southwestern extremity of Korea. There the ships came together at noon on the 7th, and there they met a cruiser (the Akashi) which had just returned from vedette duty. Her commander reported that two Russian ships, the Variag, a protected cruiser of 6,500 tons, and the Korietz, a gunboat, were lying in Chemulpo harbor, and that the bulk of the Russian squadron was at Port Arthur.

"This intelligence possessed a significance not apparent at first sight. It showed that the Russians were unsuspecting of speedy attack. For the Korietz and the Variag had been several weeks at Chemulpo, and evidently they would not have been left thus isolated had there been an idea of immediately impending danger.

"In fact, everything went to show that, just as Russia, throughout the negotiations, could never realize the possibility of ultimate defiance by so petty an adversary as Japan, so after the negotiations she continued her hauteur to the point of neglecting precautions. Four of her ships were at Vladivostok, two were at Chemulpo, one was in Shanghai, one was at Niu-chwang, and others were struggling out from Europe, just as though the last thing to be apprehended was swift and strong initiative on Japan's part.

“Admiral Togo, on receiving the Akashi’s report, arranged his programme at once. He sent the fourth squadron—five ships with torpedo-boats, under Rear-Admiral Uriu—to convoy the transports to Chemulpo, and taking the other three squadrons with himself he steered for Port Arthur. Port Arthur lies north-west of Mokpo.

“Not until Viceroy Alexeieff’s report reached Europe was it clearly known that two line-of-battle ships and one cruiser had been struck. Since that time there have been many statements from many sources all tending to discredit the Viceroy’s subsequent attempts to minimize his losses.

“The destroyers having been instructed to return at once to their original point of departure, Admiral Togo had no immediate knowledge of their fate. After parting from them he had led his squadron westward towards the promontory of Shan-tung, and at daylight on the 9th, he changed his course northwards steering direct for the Liau-tung headlands. He could not even tell whether the Russian squadron would be found at Port Arthur.

THE ONE WORD BY WIRELESS TELEGRAPHY.

“The first intimation of its presence there was obtained from a message intercepted by the wireless telegraphic apparatus, a message in which the one word “Askold” could be deciphered. Presently the leading division signalled Port Arthur in sight and reported the Russian ships lying outside the harbor, some of them showing evident signs of having suffered by the torpedo attack. It was now nearing noon.

“The Admiral ordered the men to eat their dinners, and after joining his officers in drinking success to the fleet, ran up a signal reminding the men that the fate of the war depended on the deeds they were now to do. It has not yet been disclosed what formation he adopted in approaching and engaging the enemy, who, for their part, lay covering the entrance to the harbor, the disabled ships in the center of the line. Firing commenced at 8,000 metres, a range at which nothing less than an 8-inch gun could be really effective.

“The Japanese would certainly have lessened the distance so as to utilize their fine batteries of 6-inch quick-firers, but the heavily-armed land batteries on the two promontories materially influenced the tactics adopted. The Russians, on their side, clung tenaciously to the shelter of the forts. Whether they were suffering from the demoralization of the previous night’s surprise, or whether they regard ships as engines of harbor defence, the idea of attack in the open does not seem to have occurred to them. As for their gunnery, it was radically defective. Aided by the shore batteries they succeeded in striking only four of the Japanese ships and failed to inflict any sensible injury. In fact Admiral Togo was able to report to his Government after the action ‘the fighting strength of the squadron is absolutely unimpaired.’

KEENLY INTERESTING DETAILS ABOUT BATTLES.

“The Russians, on the contrary, according to their own admission, had four of their best vessels crippled. It is reported of the wounded Japanese officers that they describe the fighting as much easier than that in the battle of the Yalu when the Chinese were their adversaries.

“Chemulpo lies nearly due north; and the distance from Port Arthur to Mokpo is about twice the distance from Port Arthur to Chemulpo. It was therefore quite within the range of possibilities that the Russian fleet from Port Arthur might meet Admiral Uriu’s squadron with the transports at Chemulpo, and strike a crushing blow, while Togo and his squadrons were steaming across the Yellow Sea to Port Arthur.

“During the afternoon of the 7th, and the night of the 8th, a time of heavy weather and high seas, that contingency was an absorbing anxiety to the Admiral and his officers. All that Togo could do was to deflect his course northward so as to approach the direct route between Port Arthur and Chemulpo. He could not unveil the secrecy of his movement by using searchlights, and in view of the duty immediately awaiting his torpedo craft he could not send them to patrol far afield. As the sun was setting in a sky of rain and storm, the fleet found itself within sixty miles of

Port Arthur. The eighteen destroyers then received orders to set about their task. 'Go and sink the enemy's squadron. Success to you all!' was the Admiral's signal.

"The destroyers steamed in single column at a speed of twenty-two knots, a distance of two hundred meters separating each boat from its leader, and the last vessel alone showing a light. Presently two squadrons of eight destroyers in all bore northward, their objective being Ta-lien-wan, where two Russian ships were supposed to be lying. The remaining ten continued their course.

"At midnight they could dimly discern the Russian ships in the distance, and towering above them the battery-crowned promontories of Hwan-kin-shan and Liau-tie-shan that guard the entrance. The Russians were disposed in wedge formation covering the harbor's mouth, the huge Csarevitch, Admiral Stackelberg's flagship, bulking big at the head of the wedge."

STORY BY A JAPANESE WOUNDED OFFICER.

Lieutenant Malsumra, staff officer of the Japanese squadron, was wounded in the general attack. He reports that the starting place was Saseho:

"All preparations for action had already been made, the men-of-war were painted gray and all officers had received their preparatory instructions when our squadron at Saseho, on the night of February 5, received orders to proceed to Port Arthur and Chemulpo to find and attack the Russian squadron."

There are competent eye-witness accounts of the subsequent proceedings that caused many striking scenes and picturesque situations. The assembly of ships for the attack was off Mokpo, in Korea, and a scout ship reported "that five Russian warships were assembled just outside the harbor of Port Arthur;" and the squadron "steamed away amid the martial strains of the marine bands playing the Japanese national anthem on the decks of the Makasa and Idsume."

They were off for Port Arthur. The Russian man-of-war Rosso was captured on the way, and "there was great enthusiasm

on our ships, and with much laughter and joyful exclamation our men remarked, 'Russia has fallen.'"

The portion of the squadron that left for Port Arthur "found the enemy in the middle of the night lying just outside the harbor entrance. The lighthouse showed its light but not the fleet. They discharged a number of torpedoes at close range. On their return they reported that they had succeeded in torpedoing four big warships, and two had shown signs of sinking. Our squadron, supporting the attack of our torpedo flotilla in the dark, commenced a heavy long-range bombardment on the Russian shore batteries on the high hills.

"A sharp lookout was kept for our returning torpedo boats and for a possible Russian counter attack, but the enemy contented himself with firing wild from his land batteries.

RUSSIAN SHELLS LACKED EXPLOSIVE POWER.

"At daybreak we fell back outside of the line of vision and the Chitose was sent out to reconnoiter.

"Several of our ships were struck by the enemy's shells, but the Russian projectiles seemed lacking in explosive power. Our flagship was hulled and several shots passed over the decks.

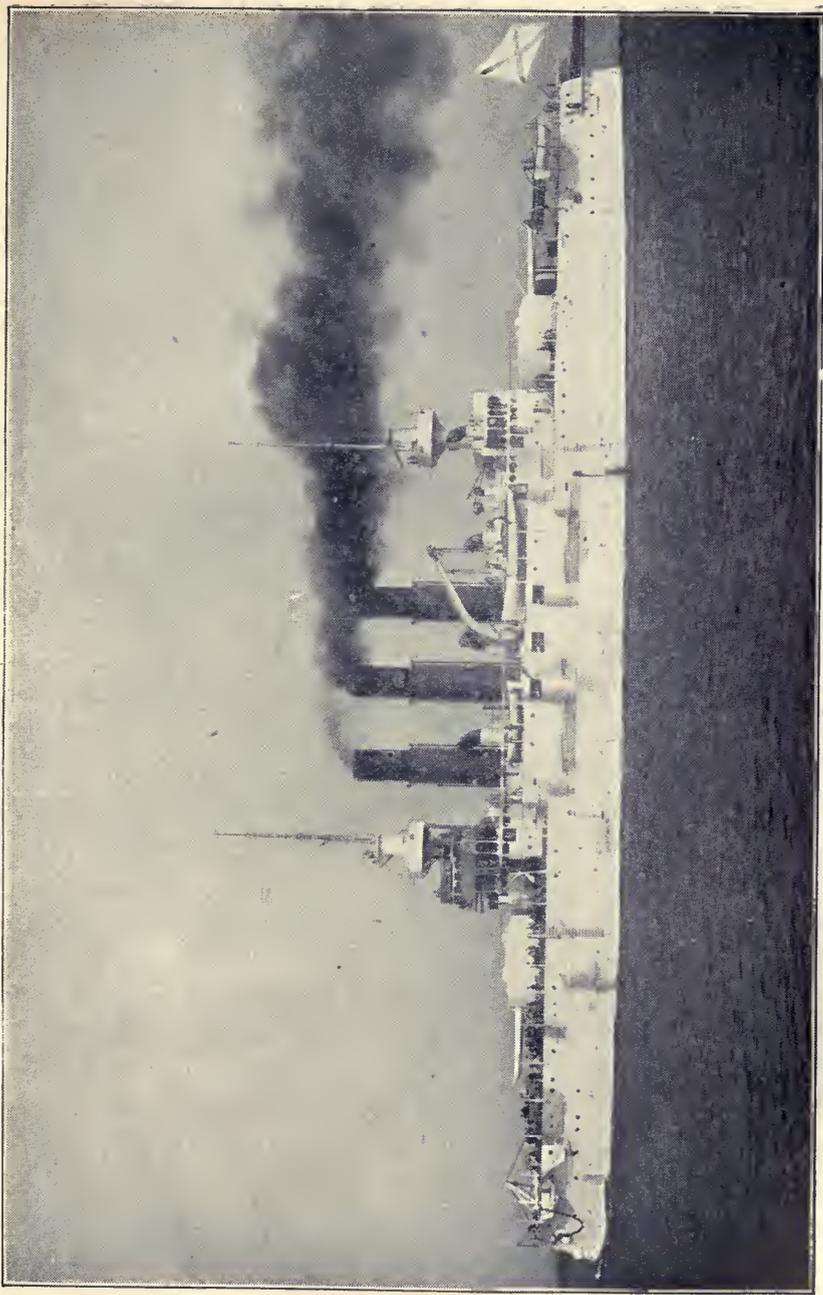
"At Port Arthur she met the merchant steamer Fuschow, carrying the Japanese refugees from Port Arthur, bound for Chefu.

"The Chinese steamer said she had seen two of the damaged Russian warships settling down. They are believed to be the battleships Pallada and Retvizan.

"Admiral Togo at once determined upon a general attack. The whole squadron was concentrated and steamed toward Port Arthur.

"Our flagship, steaming first in line, fired the first shot. Our line of battle, with slackened speed, passed the Russian fort and land batteries slowly in review, all our ships firing starboard broadsides.

"After passing the Russian line we continued turning to port so as to describe an ellipse, but the ships near our side continued firing.



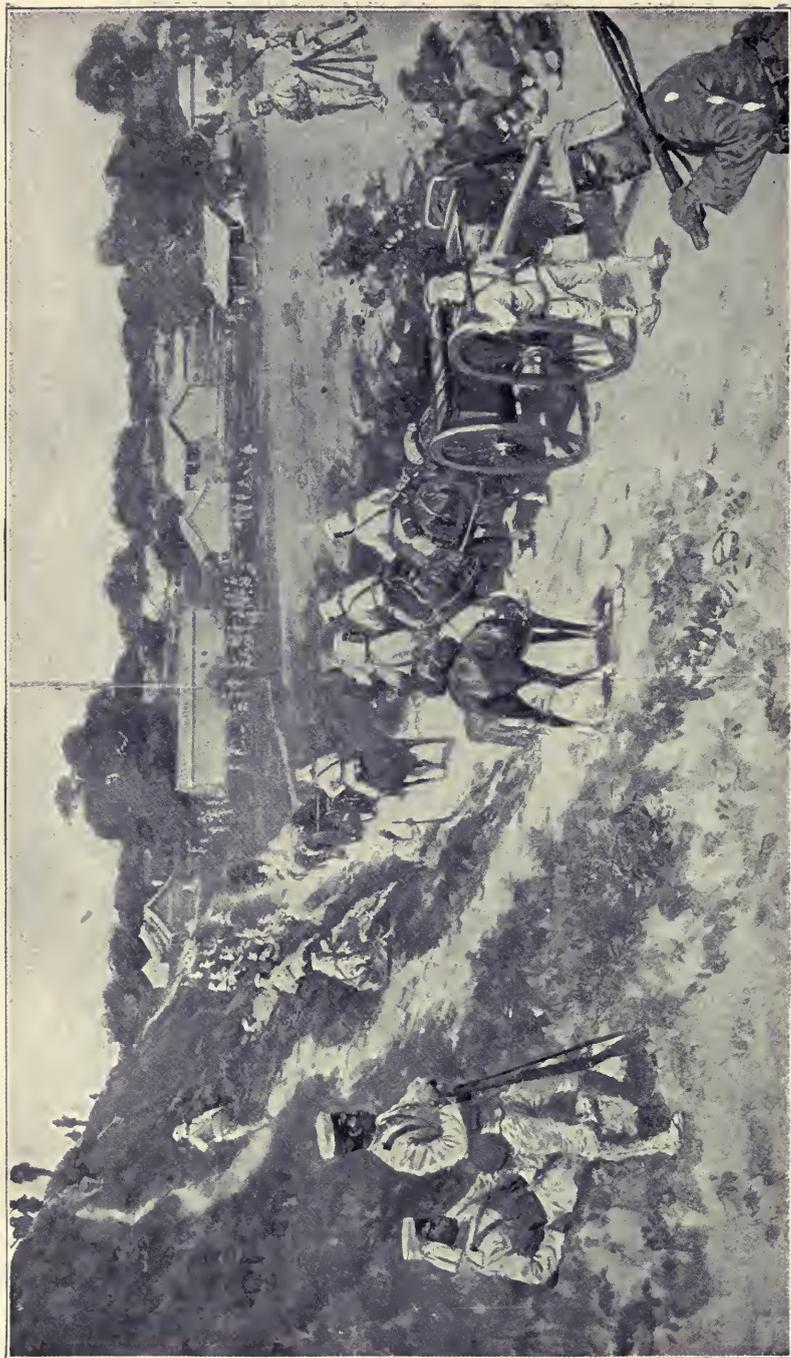
COPYRIGHT 1901, BY WILLIAM H. RAU
THE RUSSIAN BATTLESHIP RETVIZAN DAMAGED IN THE FIGHT AT PORT ARTHUR.



THE ASSASSIN OF THE SEA—ATTACK ON WARSHIP BY A SUBMARINE TORPEDO-BOAT



CREW OF THE JAPANESE WARSHIP ASAMA.



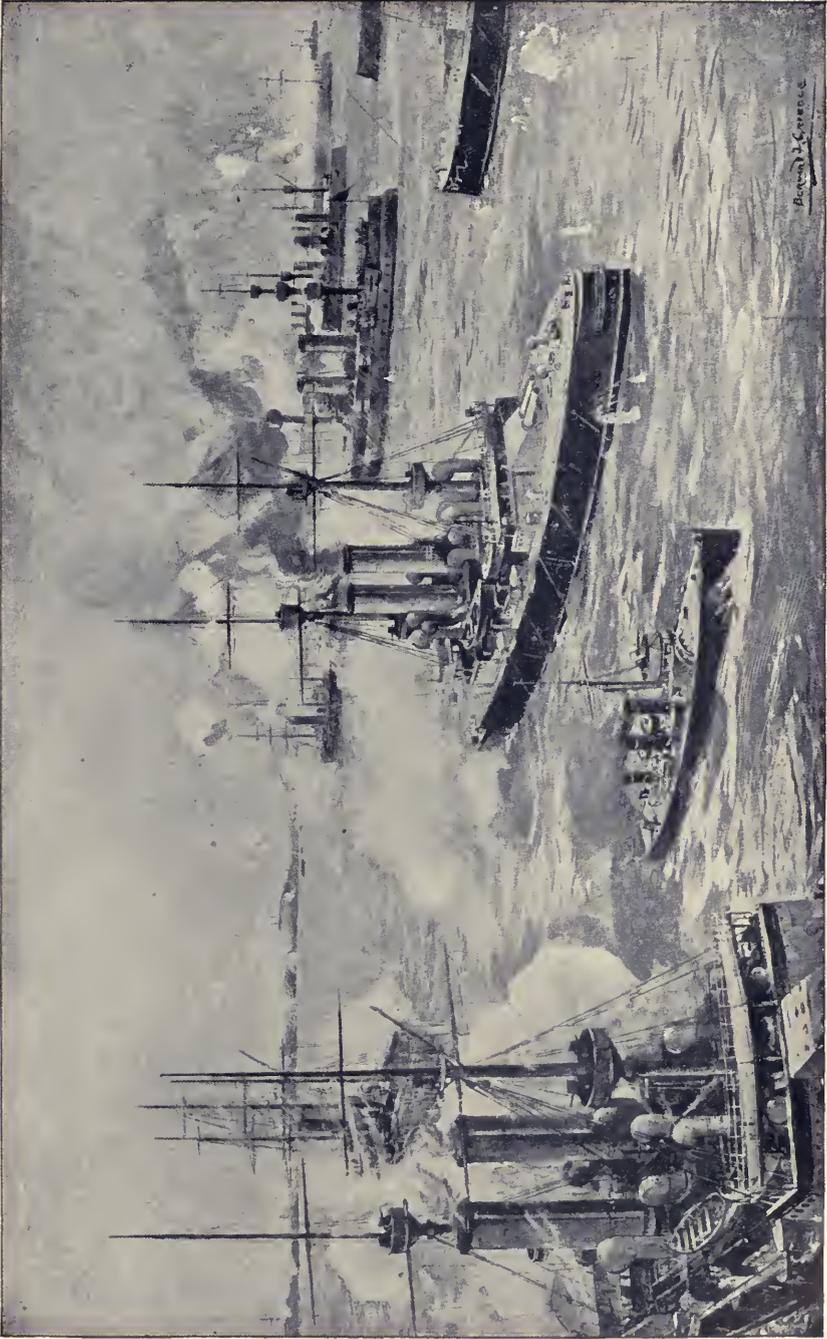
SCENE IN KOREA—JAPANESE TROOPS ON THE MARCH.



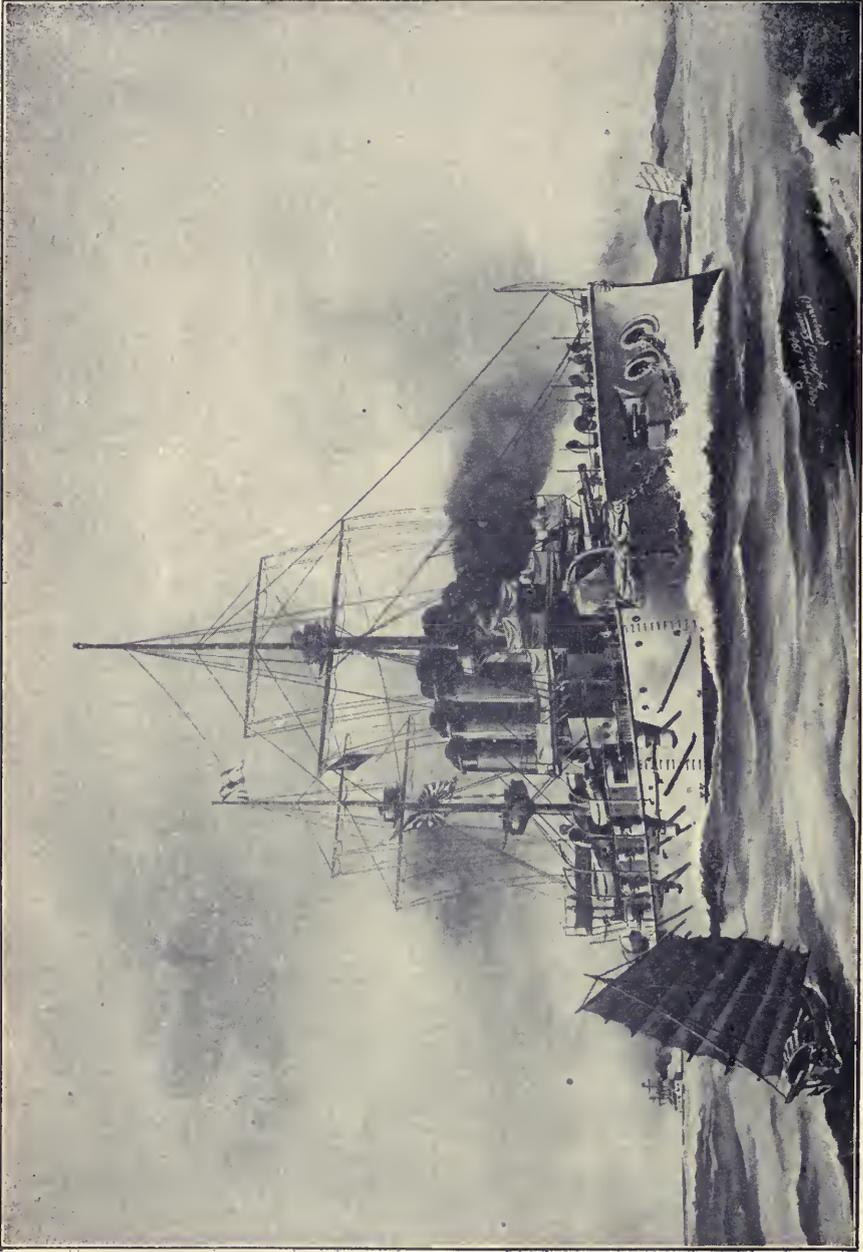
RUSSIAN SOLDIERS IN MANCHURIA—A NATIONAL DANCE IN THE STREETS.



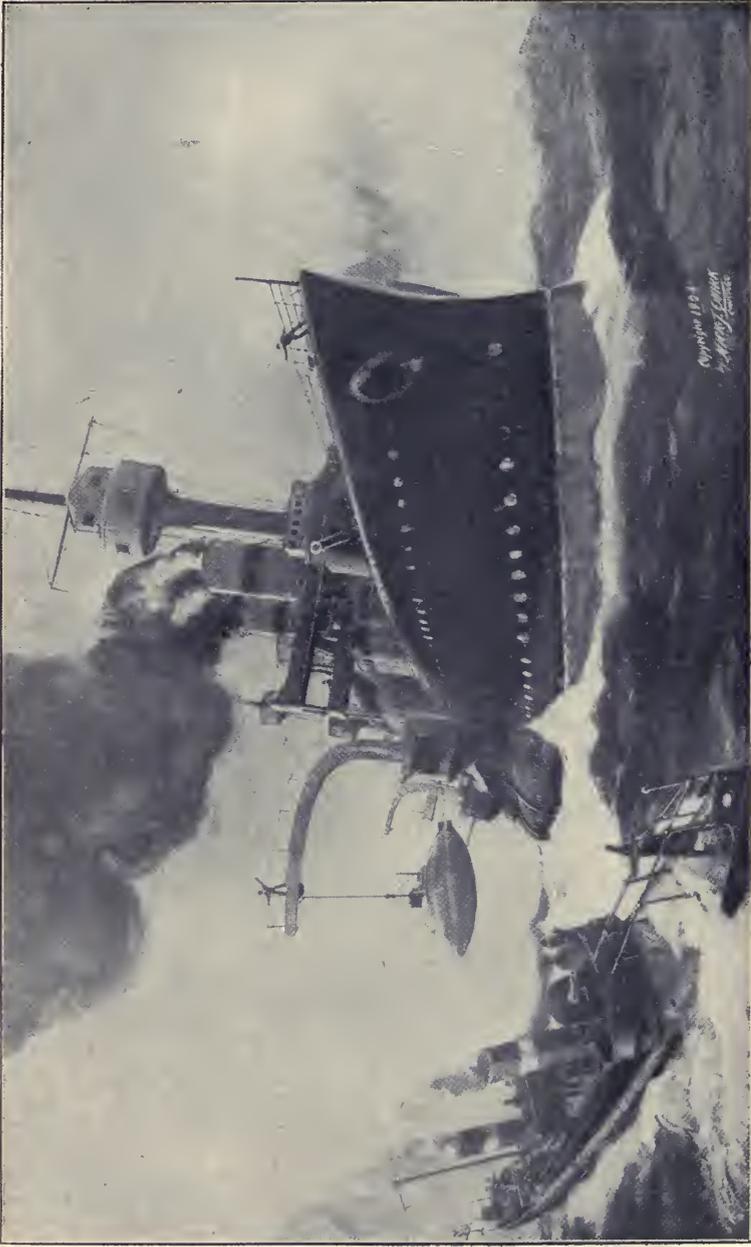
RUSSIAN ARTILLERY PASSING THROUGH A VILLAGE IN MANCHURIA



NAVAL BATTLE BETWEEN RUSSIA AND JAPAN NEAR PORT ARTHUR.



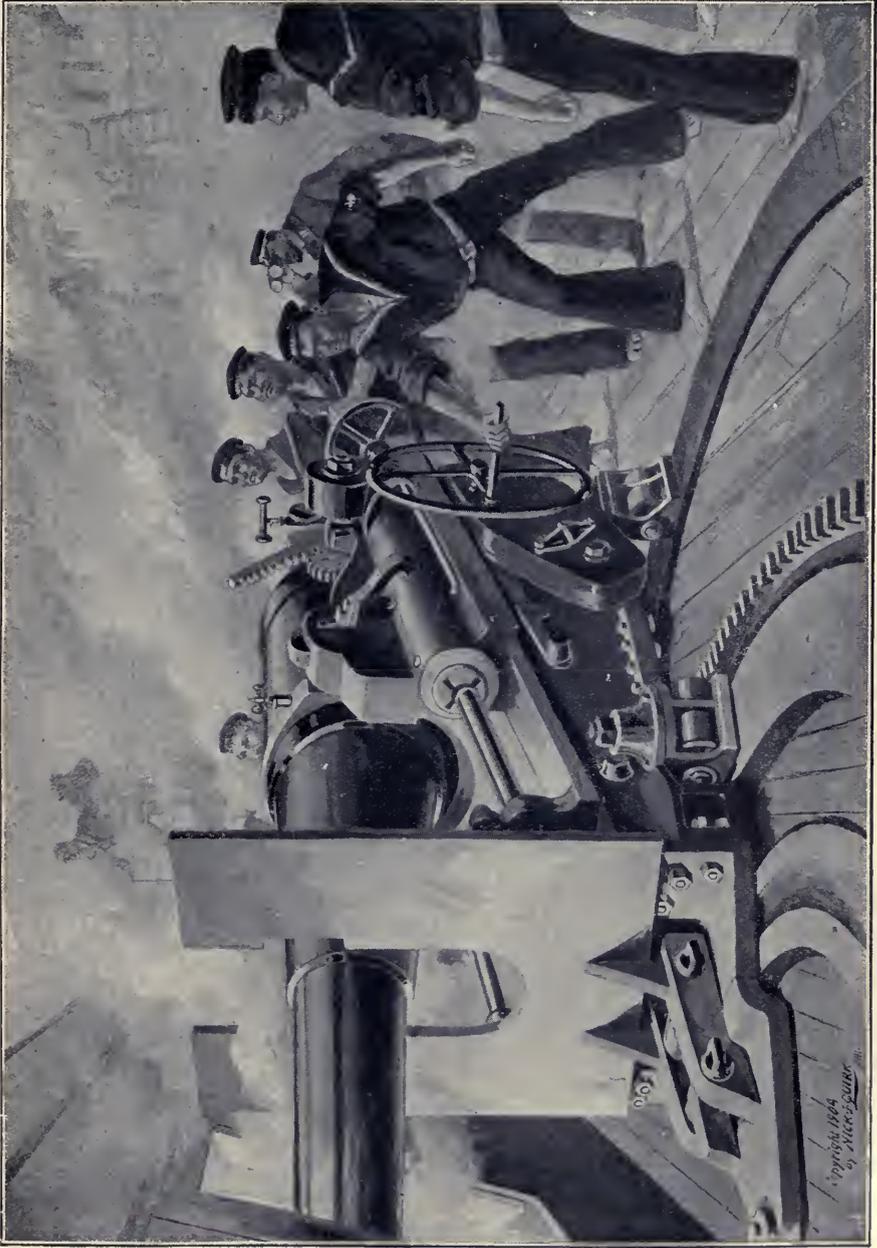
THE JAPANESE BATTLESHIP "HATSUSE" SUNK BY STRIKING SUBMERGED RUSSIAN MINE OUTSIDE OF PORT ARTHUR, AND 480 OFFICERS AND MEN KILLED, MAY 15, 1904.



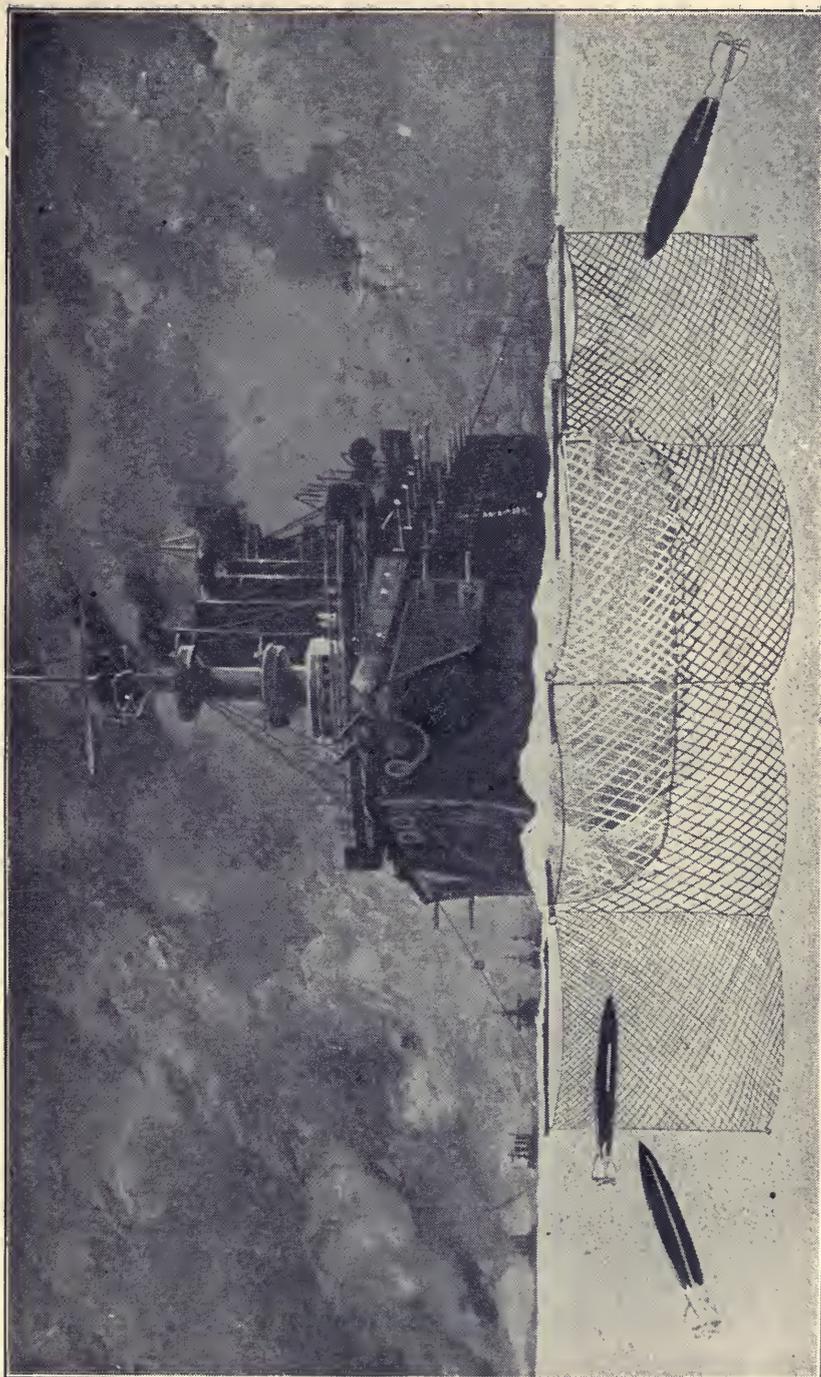
LOWERING A SUBMARINE BOAT AND STARTING THE LITTLE "SNEAK" ON ITS ERRAND OF DESTRUCTION. TWO OR MORE SUCH CRAFT CAN BE CARRIED ON A WARSHIP AND AS EACH SUBMARINE BOAT IS LOADED WITH THREE SELF-PROPELLING TORPEDOES, THEIR DESTRUCTIVE POWER IS VERY GREAT.



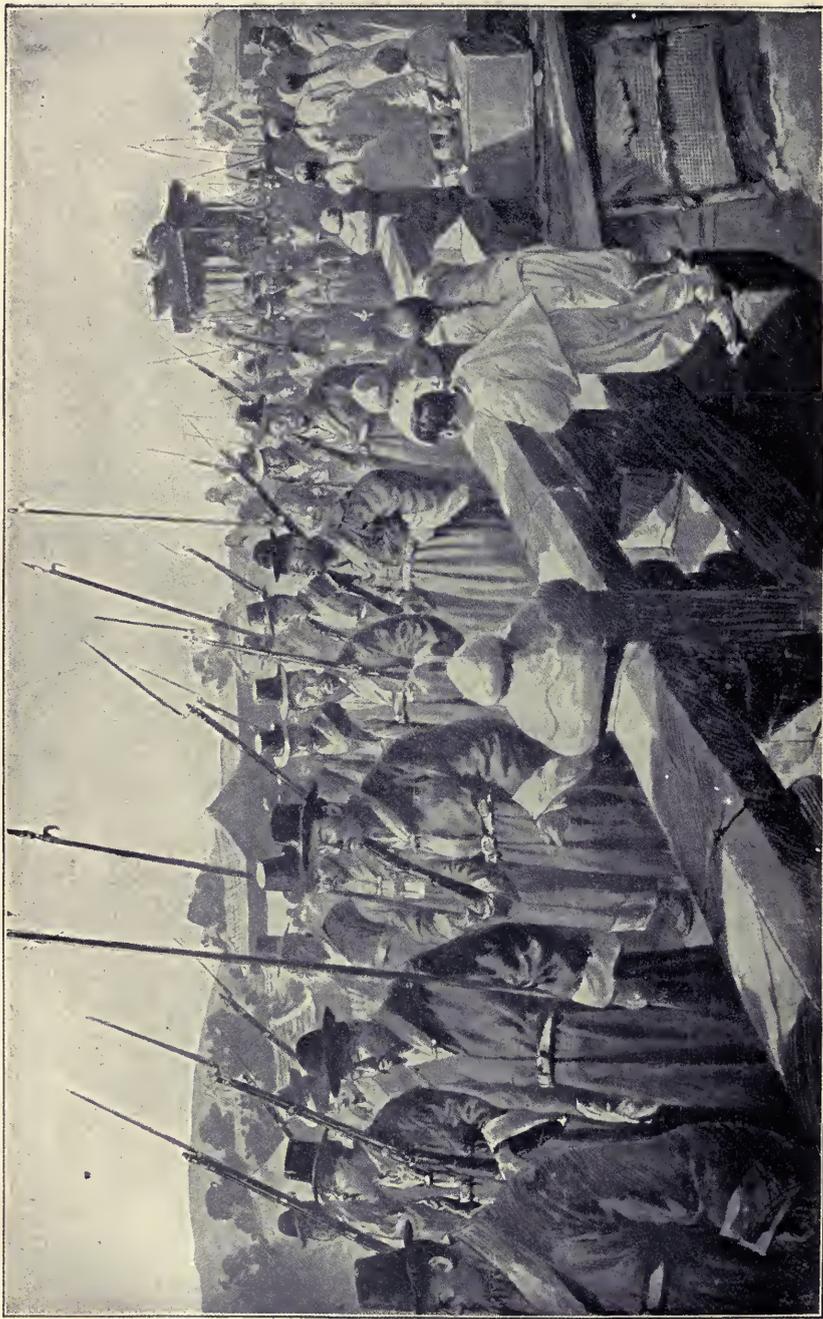
INSIDE TURRET OF A RUSSIAN BATTLESHIP
12 INCH RIFLE IN ACTION



“FOUR-POINT-SEVEN” RIFLE IN ACTION—IMPERIAL JAPANESE NAVY
(SIZE OF GUN CALIBRE 4. 7)



TORPEDO NETS TO PROTECT SHIPS—SHOWING HOW THEY ARE USED IN NAVAL WARFARE.



IMPERIAL PROCESSION PASSING THROUGH THE STREETS OF SEOUL, KOREA



WAR IN THE FAR EAST—COSSACK ARTILLERY.



TYPES OF JAPANESE SOLDIERS.

“On the second turn of the ellipse we drew nearer, none of our ships having been materially injured by the Russian return fire.

“You will see from this that our tactics were analogous to those of your Admiral Dewey at Manila, only you understand that we went over the course of his ellipse five times in succession.”

An American gentleman, Mr. George Curtis, a lawyer, arrived at Port Arthur just in time to see the fight. He says, on arriving he expected trouble, but there was none, only after the fight all strangers were ordered away. Mr. Curtis said: “What struck me most in the beginning was the great animation and gaiety reigning in the town, as compared with the last time I had been there, about a year ago. All the places of amusement were running at full blast.

THE BATTLE AND BANQUET SCENE.

“There were banquets, concerts and dances being given at the Marina Club upon the hill in the old town at the fashionable hotels, the Paris and Palermo, with daily and nightly performances at the theatre and at the Barovsky circus.

“The town was full of women, mainly French.

“Wine flowed like water; there was much high gambling, and the Russian officers were burning many more rubles than there salaries seemed to warrant.

“I understood that much money had changed hands over government contracts and in the purchase of supplies. Many comments were made by outsiders and by the common soldiers and sailors on the inferior quality of the goods obtained at top prices.

“On the night of February 8 a military banquet and ball were given at the house of Vice-Admiral Stark on the hill to celebrate his wife's name day—that is, the calendar day of her patron saint.

“All the prominent officers of the navy and of the army were there, from Viceroy Alexeieff down.

“The banquet had been served, toasts had been drunk and dancing was just under way about midnight, when suddenly there was a booming of guns.

“Vice-Admiral Alexeieff sent out an aide-de-camp to inquire

what this meant, and was told that it appeared to be a night maneuver undertaken independently by some officers outside the harbor.

"The Viceroy refused to believe this, especially as the sounds of cannonading continued, so that there was a sudden leave-taking of all the officers, who one and all had hurried down to the water front and took launches for their ships.

"It was for all the world like the famous ball given by the Duchess of Richmond in Brussels on the eve of the battle of Waterloo.

"You know Byron's ballad beginning, 'There was a sound of revelry by night.'

"After awhile the booming out at sea stopped and the big guns on the forts ceased firing. Meanwhile the inhabitants of the town were getting panic-stricken."

THE WAY SUNKEN EXPLOSIONS FEEL.

At this point let us take up the account of Mr. McCullough, who was on board the steamer Columbia, which left Port Arthur on February 8:

"On February 8, at 11 P. M., we were lying in quarantine outside of the entrance to Port Arthur. The Russian fleet was lying in three lines outside of us.

"On the eastern side of the entrance there were some additional Russian warships, gunboats and torpedo boats, cruising in the same line as ourselves, making a fourth line.

"Suddenly we felt a heavy submarine explosion. It shook our ship. Two more followed in quick succession.

"The Russian men-of-war then commenced firing from the outer line. The reverberations indicated guns of comparatively light calibre."

"We could hear their drums beating to quarters," Mr. McCullough says, while the Russian searchlights on every ship were turned.

"Steamboat launches and torpedo boats were rushing at high speed, and the uproar of the cannonade augmented.

“ Within ten minutes the firing ceased. We concluded it had been merely a night maneuver.

“ I was about to turn in again when the firing broke out anew.

“ Between 12.30 and 1 at night two large Russian battleships, painted a dull gray, passed in, taking up a position right across the narrow mouth of the harbor, while a large cruiser stationed herself close to the entrance under the lighthouse.

“ It seemed to us a strange maneuver for such a large vessel at night time, so we stayed on deck to watch further developments. At dawn we made out that one of the battleships was down by her bow. The other was down by the stern, while the big cruiser appeared aground with a heavy list to port.

“ The three had been torpedoed. Looking seaward we could see the Russian men-of-war bunched together with a ring of torpedo boats around them.

“ Further out to the westward we could see several Russian cruisers. All the vessels were in war paint.

EYE-WITNESSES OF SPLENDID SPECTACLES.

“ Beyond them hung some smoke, and we could barely discern the tops of a few masts over the horizon between 6 and 7 in the morning. The inner cruisers came back to the Russian main fleet.

“ The vessels that had been hulled down came slowly within sight. They were two-funneled cruisers of somewhat lighter drab color than those near us.

“ They lay in line stern on six or seven miles off shore. Then we noticed a number of soldiers on the forts overhead looking out to sea.

“ The decks of the strange vessels likewise with sailors and officers, all looking in the same direction.”

In describing the flight of heavy shot, Mr. Curtis says :

“ I shall never forget the peculiar sybilant, half-moaning sound the big shells made over our heads. Some nearly spent went zigzagging to the mark, but none the less burst as they struck the shore.

“ The first Russian ship to get away was a volunteer steamer

armed as an auxiliary cruiser. She passed out through the laboring fleet and ran out apparently intending to engage the enemy single handed.

"She had scarcely gone half a mile, however, before shells began to drop all around her so hotly that she turned and sought the protection of the stronger battle ships."

The spectators speak a great deal of the total mixup, and next to the hissing and moaning of the big shells, the mournful slowness of the Russian sailors in pulling up anchors when ordered to go out into the melee, one saying:

"They were amazingly slow about it, washing and fixing up their great wooden-stocked anchors instead of slipping their anchor cables and getting their ships under headway.

THE SLUGGISH WAYS OF RUSSIAN SAILORS.

"While they were thus engaged a heavy Japanese shell dropped right among the Russian battle ships off the harbor entrance, close to where seventeen torpedo boats were huddled together.

"At a quarter to eight the three cruisers turned and slowly steamed across the front of the Russian fleet, going eastward.

"Through my glass I could make out the rising sun standard of Japan flying from mastheads and gaffs; signs were also being exchanged.

"All the Russian men-of-war, excepting the torpedo boats, ran up huge battle flags. They began to weigh anchor slowly and clumsily.

"Gradually they all got under way and steamed after the Japanese cruisers fairly well in shore toward Dalny. Soon the Japanese were out of sight, going southeastward.

"Shortly after nine in the morning the Russian fleet returned to the original station, actually dropping the same heavy mooring anchors that had taken them so long to get up."

The credit of the winning, in the opening of the war with Russia, by the Japanese Admiral Togo, under orders, with a limited discretion wonderfully employed, was like a thunderbolt in

a tempest, and the movements of the victorious fleet seemed to have something weird in their flashing strokes of battle, startling disappearance and re-appearance, the modest statement by Togo of the success which was a masterpiece of strategy, resulting in a blow incredible in its time, place and circumstance, and the deprecating admissions by the Viceroy at Port Arthur, showing he had been to a bewildering degree surprised, beaten and shattered; and the pathetic proclamations of the Czar, charging the Japanese with barbarian immorality, obscured for a time the chapter of history that turns out to be marvelous in every phase.

Admiral Togo got the news he wanted on the 5th of February, which was that the Japanese answer to the Russians would be the rupture of diplomatic relations, and that the full intent and meaning was war.

DUTY TOGO HAD WHEN HE WON.

The duty of the Admiral was to escort a movement of troops, and to clear the sea "permanently." The first duty was that of escort to a certain point, and this was cleared, just giving time to Togo's squadron to deliver a blow at Port Arthur; and the Russians seemed to have arranged their drift of indifference just to suit the purpose of the aggressive Admiral, who, seeing the troops safely on their way, turned back in a storm, to disturb the festivities of the Russians, until the shocks of torpedoes announced hostilities.

The Japanese had perfected their plans, and there were no errors in execution. Everything passed on the tick of time, and there was aroused a prodigious clamor. There has been no hurry on the part of the Japanese. The Admiral knew on February 5th all he needed to know, and the clockwork was a true mechanism. There was obscurity over the astounded city, and the transformation scene a drama so startling it was incomprehensible from the Russian position.

When the torpedo assault was committed, Togo was quickly off, not knowing what he had done. He had not received communications from the shore, except there was a good deal of Russian cannonading, and the squadron got under way and out of sight, to

resume escort duty, and repeatedly returned to fight again. It was the opinion of the Admiral that he had done some mischief, and cleared the way as he was instructed; and he got on the 9th of February a wireless telegraph message, giving a key word that signified he had not gone forth in vain; and he returned, as on his side the coast was clear, and was indebted, as the whole world was, to the Viceroy's telegram to the Czar, when it was allowed to escape from his Majesty, the Czar. Togo got the news of his victory by way of St. Petersburg. This is, as at last fully revealed, one of the wonders of history, and there is added to the phrase that "truth is stranger than fiction" an achievement that adds emphasis to the adage.

CHAPTER XVI.

COMMODORE PERRY'S MISSION.

Detail of His Fleet—His Instructions from the United States Government—Stern Suppression of Correspondence—Prejudices of the Japanese Against the English Fifty Years Ago—Bold Bearing of the Americans and Its Influence—Conflicts of Jurisdiction—Our Commodore Now Esteemed as a Friend—The Squadron and Commission Given Commodore Perry—His High Courage and Commanding Address Gained for Him Marvelous Concessions—The Master Stroke of His Policy—Japan Owes Him and His Country a Great Debt.

MILLARD FILLMORE was President of the United States and Edward Everett, Secretary of State, when the famous Japan Expedition was organized and sent forth on a voyage which is believed to have largely influenced the people of Japan and ourselves.

In December, 1852, the Secretary of the Navy wrote Commodore Mathew Perry, making the announcement :

“So soon as the steam frigate Mississippi shall be in all respects ready for sea, you will proceed in her, accompanied by the steamer Princeton, to Macao, or Hong Kong, in China, where the vessels of your command will rendezvous. You will touch at such ports on your passage out as you may deem necessary for supplies, etc.

“It has been deemed necessary to increase the naval force of the United States in the East India and China seas, for reasons which will be found in the enclosed copy of a communication from the Secretary of State, addressed to this department under date of November, 1852.

“The force at present there consists of the steam frigate Susquehanna, Commander Buchanan ; sloop Plymouth, Commander

Kelly, and sloop Saratogá, Commander Walker. The store ship Supply, Lieutenant Commanding Sinclair, is on her passage to that station. There will be added to this force at the earliest day practicable, the ship-of-the-line Vermont, Captain Paulding; the steam frigate Mississippi, Captain McCluney; the corvette Macedonian, Captain Abbott; the steamer Princeton, Commander Lee, the steamer Allegheny, Commander Sands, the sloop Vandalia, Commander Pope, and the store ship Southampton, Lieutenant Commanding Boyle."

The people of the northern Oriental islands have greatly changed in the half century since they were visited by the American Commodore. At that time the Japanese were holding themselves under severe restraint in their relations with other nations. Their foreign intercourse was not disregarded but unpopular, and approaches from abroad, resented rather than held in esteem.

STERN RESTRICTIONS ON THE PRESS.

The commodore commanding gave explicit instructions opposed to the enterprise of the Press, not then strenuous.

This is a clause covering the principle:

"A subject of great importance to the success of the expedition will present itself to your mind, in relation to communications to the prints and newspapers, touching the movements of your squadron as well as in relation to all matters connected with the discipline and internal regulations of the vessels composing it. You will, therefore, enjoin upon all under your command to abstain from writing to friends or others upon those subjects."

And last and not least the journals and private notes of the members of the expedition were not to be published, until the nature of the news did not pertain to the journals and private notes.

The precautions against "Journalism," were taken for the sake of the good will of the Orientals, particularly the Japanese. The American humor was of such sharp edges, the Far Eastern Asiatics could not understand the peculiar ties of our off-hand literature.

Now we find the Japanese military system is so advanced and

adventurous that they are the first in time of war to put forward a code for the guidance of war correspondence. This is the recognition of the rights of the Press in time of war. In the present state of unreliable information in the Far East, the members of the Press would have converted the Perry Expedition into one of war.

The patience of Commodore Perry was sorely tried several times by the infatuation the servants of the Emperor had, that Europeans and Americans could be allowed to talk of public business in only one town. Communications were more difficult and apparently remote, between the Port of Nagasaki, and that of the capital city of the Empire. The Emperor himself was the most progressive man encountered—in fact his despotism was so intense he was in the isolated position of being the only free man.

PRIVATE CORRESPONDENCE SUPPRESSED.

The order to cut off private correspondence made an end of all the "our own correspondent" privileges, with a sweep that must be admired for its thoroughness. The final clause was this finality:—"Officers and other persons in the expedition must be considered as belonging to the Government, until permission shall be received from the Navy Department to publish them."

The President gave directions to be submitted to the Secretary of the Navy—and the memorandum was dated at the State Department, Nov. 5th, 1852.

"As the squadron destined for Japan will shortly be prepared to sail, I am directed by the President to explain the objects of the expedition and to give some general directions as to the mode by which those objects are to be accomplished."

Among the "general directions" this is paramount:

"Since the islands of Japan were first visited by European nations efforts have constantly been made by the various maritime powers to establish commercial intercourse with a country whose large population and reputed wealth hold out great temptations to mercantile enterprise. Portugal was the first to make the attempt, and her example was followed by Holland, England, Spain and Russia, and finally by the United States.

"All these attempts, however, have thus far been unsuccessful, the permission enjoyed for a short period by the Portugese to trade with the islands, and that granted to Holland to send annually a single vessel to the Port of Nangasaki hardly deserving to be considered exceptions to this remark. China is the only country which carries on any considerable trade with these islands.

"So rigorously is this system of exclusion carried out that foreign vessels are not permitted to enter their ports in distress or even to do an act of kindness to their own people.'

JAPANESE SLOW TO MAKE ACQUAINTANCES.

Further instances of the strong feeling of the Japanese half a century ago against foreigners were given, showing the state of affairs it was the mission of Commander Perry to remove.

The measure of success is displayed in this Tokio telegram, dated March 31st, 1904:

"At a meeting of Americans and Japanese held in this city in commemoration of the fiftieth anniversary of the signing of the Perry treaty between Japan and the United States, an American war charity, called the Perry Memorial Relief Fund, was organized with much enthusiasm. The sum of \$37,500 was subscribed, and it was decided to organize committees in all the larger cities of the United States.

"The fund will be disbursed under the direction of the Emperor of Japan to aid the destitute families of soldiers and sailors.

"Bishop McKim, of the American Episcopal Mission, suggested the organization of the charity. He said the memorial to Perry would be graven not on a pillar of stone, but on the hearts of the two great peoples. This charity is beyond the pale of politics, the speaker continued.

"The American Asiatic Society, he added, headed the subscription list with \$5,000. Baron Iwasaki and Baron Mitsui gave \$5,000 each. Prince Shimazu, head of the Satuma clan, and Prince Mori, head of the Choshu clan, subscribed \$2,500 each. J. W. Coppman and D. C. Blake gave \$1,000 each, and Count Inouye,

Count Matsugata, Count Okuma and United States Minister Griscom subscribed \$500 each.

"N. G. Smith, president of the American Asiatic Society; J. W. Chapman, representative in Tokio of the Standard Oil Company; B. C. Howard, of the Pacific Mail Steamship Company; D. O. Blake, of the American Trading Company; Professor J. O. Swift and Count Kabayama, president of the Soyada Industrial Bank, were appointed a committee to take charge of the funds.

"Count Matsugata proposed cheers for the President of the United States, and Mr. Griscom replied by calling for cheers for the Emperor of Japan. The meeting closed with the singing of the national anthems of the United States and Japan.

A CASE OF BAD TREATMENT OF SHIPWRECKED SAILORS.

"In 1831 a Japanese junk was blown out to sea and after drifting about for several months, was cast ashore near the mouth of the Columbia River, in Oregon. An American ship, the Morrison, undertook to carry the survivors of the crew back to their country, but on reaching the Bay of Yedo she was fired into from the neighboring shore. She repaired to another port of the island and attempted to land, but meeting with the same reception there she returned to America with the Japanese on board.

"When vessels are wrecked or driven ashore on the islands their crews are subjected to the most cruel treatment. Two instances of this have recently occurred. In the year 1846, two American whaling ships, the Lagoda and the Lawrence, have been wrecked on the Island of Nippon, their crews were captured and treated with great barbarity and it is believed their lives were spared only through the intercession of the Dutch Governor of Nagasaki.

"The deep-seated aversion of this people to hold intercourse with Christian nations is said to be owing chiefly to the indiscreet zeal with which the early missionaries, particularly those of Portugal, endeavored to propagare their religion. The Commodore will therefore say that the government of this country, unlike those of

every other 'Christian country does not interfere with the religion of its own people, much less with that of other nations.'

"It seems that the fears or the prejudices of the Japanese are very much excited against the English, of whose conquest in the East and recent invasion of China they have probably heard. As the Americans speak the same language, it is natural they should confound citizens of the United States with British subjects. Indeed their barbarous treatment of the crews of the vessels above referred to was partly occasioned by the suspicion that they were English."

STRONG PREJUDICES AGAINST THE ENGLISH

It is not often that any thing is as remarkable as the aversion to the English before the Perry mission fleet sailed, and we quote in this connection the official language of the instructions to the Commodore.

There was a good deal of the expansive ideas and pride that has been regarded as one of our characteristics in that period of our history covered by the Presidency of Millard Fillmore, who wrote a letter to the Emperor of Japan. The President of the United States, addressing His Imperial Majesty, the Emperor of Japan, saying:

"The United States of America reach from ocean to ocean, and our Territory of Oregon and State of California lie directly opposite to the dominions of your Imperial Majesty. Our steamships can go from California to Japan in eighteen days.

"Our great state of California produces about sixty millions of dollars in gold every year, besides silver, quicksilver, precious stones and many other valuable articles. Japan is also a rich and fertile country and produces many valuable articles. Your Imperial Majesty's subjects are skilled in many of the arts. I am desirous that our two countries should trade with each other, for the benefit of both Japan and the United States."

Here is another good word for our country, from the same to the same:

"Many of our ships pass every year from California to China,

and great numbers of our people pursue the whale fishery near the shores of Japan. It sometimes happens in stormy weather that one of our ships is wrecked on your Imperial Majesty's shores. In all such cases we ask and expect that our unfortunate people should be treated with kindness, and that their property should be protected till we can send a vessel and bring them away. We are very much in earnest in this.

COMMODORE PERRY AND THE COAL TRADE.

"Commodore Perry is also directed by me to represent to your Imperial Majesty that we understand there is a great abundance of coal and provisions in the empire of Japan. Our steamships, in crossing the great ocean, burn a great deal of coal, and it is not convenient to bring it all the way from America. We wish that our steamships and other vessels should be allowed to stop in Japan and supply themselves with coal, provisions and water. They will pay for them in money or in anything else your Imperial Majesty's subjects may prefer, and we request your Imperial Majesty to appoint a convenient port in the southern part of the empire, where our vessels may stop for this purpose. We are very desirous of this."

The hardest rub was to get the Japanese to agree that there could be any intercourse with foreigners, even such good neighbors as the Americans, at more than one spot in the kingdom, and that was Nagasaki.

The letter from the Commodore to the Secretary of the Navy indicated the interchange of intelligence that has assumed proportions of great utility in Secretary Cortleyou's department:

"U. S. Steam Frigate Mississippi, Madeira, Dec. 14, 1852.

"To effect this object, I am already provided with works for presentation, descriptive of the civil and political condition of the United States, such as the census tables, post office and railroad reports, reports of the Indian and land offices, military and naval registers, also with the magnificent publications of the State of New York, etc.

“And I have thought that a small printing press with type and materials would go far to facilitate our plans by giving us the means of putting forth information calculated to disabuse the Japanese of the misrepresentations of the Dutch.

“The government of Japan keep in employment linguists in all modern languages, and such is their curiosity that these publications, if admitted at all, would soon be translated.”

The Commodore, it should be observed, did not introduce with a view to translation the great library of Patent Office reports. It is manifest further along in this communication, that the commodore was stronger in discrimination than diplomacy; and fortunately he favored the Japanese before others. We quote:

“Fortunately, the Japanese and many other islands of the Pacific are still left untouched by this unconscionable government, and as some of them lay in the route of a commerce which is destined to become of great importance to the United States, no time should be lost in adopting active measures to secure a sufficient number of ports of refuge. And hence I shall look with much anxiety for the arrival of the Powhatan and the other vessels to be sent to me.”

THE COMMODORE OPPOSED TO THE BRITISH.

This unconscionable government is directly meant for England, and the commodore says how it would strengthen his hands if he had more ships. The business matters conducted by England, contained interesting statistics as two paragraphs were sufficient to show:

“By reference to the map of the world it will be seen that Great Britain is already in possession of the most important points in the East India and China Seas, and especially with reference to the China Seas.

“Singapore commanding the southwestern, while Hong Kong covers the northeastern entrance, with the island of Labaun on the eastern coast of Borneo, an intermediate point, she will have the power of shutting up at will and controlling the enormous trade of those seas, amounting it said in value to 300,000 tons of

shipping carrying cargoes certainly not under 15,000,000 pounds sterling."

The Commodore was not the only American in the Orient who needed ships to serve the country, as for example the Hon. Humphrey Marshall. On arriving out the Commodore reported all well and added something not so well.

"On arrival here I found my plans seriously deranged by the unexpected absence of the *Susquehanna*, she having been dispatched to Shanghai, by Commander Kelly, seven days after the departure of Commodore Aulick, and for the purpose of transporting the Hon. Mr. Marshall and suite to that place, apprehensions being entertained that the movements of the revolutionists in the north of China might endanger the American interests in that quarter. Whatever may have been the urgent necessity of sending away a ship of the squadron at a moment when my arrival must have been hourly expected to assume the command, and when I should have cheerfully co-operated with Mr. Marshall."

Mr. Marshall, did not, as the note following declares that he did not—shrink from publicity.

"Legation of the U. S. of America, Shanghai.

"May 11, 1853.

"Addressed to Commodore Perry :

"When you have decided the proposition I would be obliged that you would enable me to communicate the result to our fellow citizens.

"I am, Very Respectfully,

"HUMPHREY MARSHALL."

The presence of American ships of war, sensibly assisted in the favorable negotiations of treaties.

"Mr. Everett to Commodore Perry.

"DEPARTMENT OF STATE, }
WASHINGTON, Feb. 15, 1853. }

"The President is gratified to perceive that you are impressed with the importance of the enterprise confided to your direction,

the success of which will mainly depend upon your prudence and address. It will attract a large share of the attention of the civilized world; and the President feels great confidence that the measures adopted by you will reflect credit on your own wisdom and discretion, and do honor to your country.

"I am sir, respectfully your obedient servant,
" EDWARD EVERETT."

A WARNING FROM A GOVERNOR GENERAL.

The Commodore received early in his Oriental experience the following warning from the Governor General of the Netherland's Indies.

"September 22, 1852.

"I beg to remark in view of the object at present contemplated by both our governments that in case the Netherland's Chief of the factory at Dezima should have succeeded in opening negotiations with the Government of Japan, it is not unlikely that any proof of co-operation between America and Holland would prejudice these negotiations, as you are aware that the American expedition to Japan has not always been represented to be of a wholly friendly and peaceful character.

"Accept, sir, the assurance of my distinguished consideration,
"Your most obedient servant,

"DUYMAER VAN TWIST,

"*Governor General of the Netherland's Indies.*

"A. PRIONS, *Secretary General.*"

"Notes referring to events which transpired pending the preliminary negotiations of Commodore M. C. Perry with the authorities of Japan in July, 1853.

"The squadron consisting of the steamers *Susquehanna* and *Mississippi* and the sloops of war *Plymouth* and *Saratoga*, commanded respectively by Commanders Buchanan, Lee, Kelley and Walker, left Napa Keang, island of Lew Chew on Saturday the 2nd, and anchored off the city of Uruga, bay of Yedo, Japan, on the afternoon of Friday the 8th of July.

"I had, before reaching the coast fully considered and deter-

mined upon a course I should pertinaciously pursue in conducting the delicate and responsible duties which had been entrusted to my charge.

"It was to *adopt an entirely contrary plan of proceedings from that of all others who had heretofore visited Japan on the same errand, to demand as a right, not to solicit as a favor, those acts of courtesy which are due from one civilized nation to another.*"

The Commodore's announcement that he meant to be "pertinacious," and would demand as a right the courtesy due, and he was to claim rights instead of favors. It was the pertinacity with which this policy was pursued that gave immense success, that has been agreeable and profitable to both countries.

AMERICAN COMMODORE LAID DOWN THE LAW.

The reply was that Nagasaki was the only place, according to the laws of Japan, for negotiating foreign business and it would be necessary for the squadron to go there, to which *he was told that I had come purposely to Uruga, it being near to Yedo, and should not go to Nagasaki, that I expected the letter to be duly and properly received where I then was, that my intentions were perfectly friendly, but I would allow of no indignity, nor would I permit the guard boats which were collecting about the ships to remain where they were, and if they were not immediately removed I would disperse them by force!* On having this interpreted to him, he suddenly left his seat, went to the gangway and gave an order which caused most of the boats to return to shore, but a few of them remaining in clusters and an armed boat from the shore was sent to motion them away, at the same time showing their arms, which had the desired effect, all of them disappearing, and we saw nothing more of them near the ships during the remainder of our stay. Here was the first important point gained. . . .

"On the following morning, the 9th, the Governor of Uruga, 'Kayama Yezaimon,' came on board, thus giving the lie to the Vice-Governor." The Commodore adds:

"At this interview the original letter of the President, together with my letter of credence, was shown to the Governor, encased as

they were in the magnificent boxes which had been prepared at Washington, the exquisite workmanship and costliness of which evidently surprised his excellency, and, on leaving the ship, he made an offer to me, for the first time, of supplies of water and refreshments, but was told that we did not stand in need of anything. . . .

“Wednesday, July 13th.—The Governor came on board in the afternoon of this day, apologizing for not being earlier, by saying that the high officer from Yedo had only just arrived, he brought with him the original order of the Emperor addressed to the functionary who had to receive me, as also a copy and translation of the same in Dutch, and a certificate of his own verifying the authenticity of the appointment; he also said that the person appointed by the Emperor had no power to enter into discussion with me, but was empowered merely to receive the papers and carry them to his sovereign.”

EMPEROR'S LETTER AND SEAL VERIFIED.

Translation of certificate of Kayama Yezaiman, Governor of Uraga, verifying the authenticity of the Emperor's letter and seal.

“You can rest assured that the high officer, who has been accredited by the Emperor of Japan himself, and who consequently comes here to Uraga from Yedo for the purpose of receiving the original and translated letters, is of very high rank, equal to that of the Lord Admiral, I do assure you that.

“KAYAMA YEZAIMAN.”

We quote the Commodore:

“In the spring I have concentrated my whole force and will be prepared with store and coal vessels and all other conveniences for remaining, if it be necessary, an indefinite time, to secure concessions, as I believe they will be constrained to make.

“The undersigned is commanded to explain to the Japanese that the United States are connected with no government in Europe, and that their laws do not interfere with the religion of their own citizens, much less with that of other nations.

“That they inhabit a great country, which lies directly between Japan and Europe and which was discovered by the nations of Europe about the same time that Japan herself was first visited by Europeans, that the portion of the American continent lying nearest to Europe was the first settled by emigrants from that part of the world.”

The Commodore made only bold strokes, as in this case when he says shipwrecked men and others “shall enjoy all the freedom granted to the Japanese.”

AMERICANS WOULD NOT SUBMIT LIKE OTHERS.

“Shipwrecked men and others who may resort to the ports of Japan are not to be confined, and shall enjoy all the freedom granted to Japanese, and to be subject to no further restraint. They shall, however, be held amenable to just laws, or such as may be agreed upon by treaty.

“It is altogether inconsistent with justice that persons thrown by the providence of God upon the shores of a friendly nation should be looked upon and treated as pirates, before any proof shall be given of their being so, and the continuance of the treatment which has hitherto been visited upon strangers will no longer be tolerated by the government of the United States, so far as Americans are concerned.”

Fourth Japanese proposition :

“At Nagasaki they shall have no intercourse with the Dutch and Chinese.”

Commodore Perry's reply :

“*The Americans will never submit to the restrictions which have been imposed upon the Dutch and Chinese and any further allusions to such restraints will be considered offensive.*”

“With profound respect,

“M. C. PERRY,

“Commander-in-Chief U. S. Naval Forces, East India, China and Japan Seas, and Special Ambassador to Japan.

“His Highness Hayashi-Daigaku-no-kami,” etc., etc., etc.

Japanese statement of points agreed upon in the interview of

Commodore Perry with the Japanese Commissioners on the 17th of March, 1854:

"1—The citizens of the United States will not submit to degradations like those imposed upon the Dutch and Chinese in their confinement at Nagasaki, that place is not convenient for ships to resort to and does not answer the purpose.

"2—Lew-Chew is a very distant country, and a definite answer cannot be given.

IMPORTANT CONCESSIONS MADE.

ARTICLE 4.—Great difficulties were encountered in securing the immunities to Americans which this article grants. The meaning intended to be conveyed by the words "just laws" is, that Americans shall not be subject to the exclusive laws and customs of Japan but to laws based upon justice and humanity. This understanding is to continue until further negotiation upon the subject and the appointment of a consular agent.

"ARTICLE I.—There shall be a perfect, permanent and universal peace and a sincere and cordial amity between the United States of America on the one part, and between their people, respectfully, (respectively) without exception of persons or places.

"ARTICLE VIII.—Wood, water, provisions, coal and goods required shall only be procured through the agency of Japanese officers appointed for that purpose, and in no other manner.

"U. S. SLOOP PLYMOUTH,

"Hong Kong, July 22, 1854.

"*Sir*: Since my last report, by Lieut. Commander Sinclair, of the store ship Supply, on the 28th of February last, I have to state that during that month the Imperial troops encamped around the settlement of Shanghai, and the Imperial fleet anchored off that place commenced a series of aggressive acts towards the foreigners—the first by tearing down buildings that were being put up and stealing the materials, while the latter, without giving any previous notice to foreigners, commenced firing upon and searching all boats passing up or down the river. These acts were performed in the most brutal and insulting manner.

"Many complaints were made to the General commanding the troops, and to the Taoutae, commander-in-chief of the fleet. These two functionaries at length acknowledged their inability to protect the foreigners, and remarked that they (the foreigners) would have to protect themselves.

"On the 6th of March last a pilot boat, owned by an American citizen and having the American ensign flying, was fired upon by Sir H. Compton, one of the Imperial fleet, and ordered along side, which was complied with. On her reaching the Compton she was boarded by an armed body of men who immediately hauled down the American flag, dragged the crew of the boat up the side of the ship, and hung them up the main port by their queues."

Commander Perry demanded information who had dared to insult the American flag, and his distinguished methods brought complacency, politeness and apology, when it was the due of the country. The Perry treaty has been commemorated by Americans and Japanese at Tokio, as we have seen in a recent cable, and the honors were the more imposing because it was the most exciting period of the Russo-Japanese war.

CHAPTER XVII.
THE ARMY OF JAPAN.

In the China and Japan War—The Remarkable Rehearsal of the Siege of Port Arthur—In the War of the Japanese and the Chinese—Its Admirable Quality Proved Under Fire at Port Arthur—Out of This Came the Conquest of China and the Quarrel With Russia—Battered and Stormed by the Japanese in the War Between Japan and China—The Story of the First Siege is Instructive in Reading the News of the Second.

THE Japanese won their victories in the war with China by hard fighting, and they fairly whipped their enemies, and captured the celebrated Port, but were by Russian interference maddened by the pressure that turned over the fruits of the victory of Japan to Russia.

This it is, exactly, that caused the inflammation resulting in the Russo-Japanese war. Another thing to be studied is that the familiarity of the Japanese with Port Arthur is fully accounted for by the fact that they took the town, had it in their possession and surveyed it with a view to the contingency of war. In this light the wonder of the Japanese knowledge of the inside of the Old and New town ceases to be wonderful. It is not news that the Japanese in the course of the China-Japanese war besieged and captured Port Arthur November 21, 1894.

It is very interesting reading matter, however, when the same city has been under fire, and bombarded extravagantly, so that the world has given the deepest attention to the unprecedented use of the gigantic artillery of the modern siege batteries.

The story of the first "feeler" by the Japanese, was a reconnaissance to see whether the land defenses were strong.

The investigation was interrupted "for they left the neighborhood in a hurry as a torpedo boat sent to look for them found

their surveying instruments on the beach." The fortifications covered four miles of sea board. There were thirteen batteries and they were, we quote from the history of the siege:

"Well placed, and fitted with all modern implements and material of the artillerist's profession.

"The armament of the forts consists of about fifty 6-inch and 9-inch Krupp guns, several rifled mortars or howitzers, and a number of quick firing guns.

"The entrance to the port is also provided with an elaborate submarine field, and there is a small flotilla of torpedo boats attached to this port.

HERE WE HAVE A DUPLICATION OF HISTORY.

"On its landward side to the east, hills of from three hundred to six hundred feet are crowned with small forts, entrenchments and earthworks. To the west a shoal harbor and more mine defenses, covered by quick-firing guns, afford all the needed protection."

This was absolutely accurate information. The Chinese garrison of Port Arthur was estimated from 5000 to 10,000. The history from which we are quoting contains this significant information when the Japanese appeared as besiegers of the place the first time:

"The rear of the place appears to be relatively weak, although, in accordance with all the teaching of history, this would necessarily be the way of approach selected by an enemy. The garrison, however, has been considerably reinforced from Taku, and it is estimated that an expeditionary force of at least 15,000 men would be needed to achieve success.

"The population of Port Arthur was about 6,000 exclusive of the garrison.

"The Chinese made but feeble resistance. The Chinese troops and such vessels of the Chinese fleet as were not cooped up at Port Arthur were ordered to attack the Japanese wherever they met them, but there was very little delay in rapid retreating."

A Japanese army, as seen from a Japanese gunboat, was thus

described: "On the afternoon of the 20th of November, when we saw dark masses of men in solid columns, whom we afterwards recognized as Japanese infantry, deploying before the outlying forts of Port Arthur. The Japanese had to aid their landing four hundred barges and flatboats and one hundred steam launches. The transports and the fleet met at the mouth of the Pei-Yang, or Tatong River, on the 23d of October, at night. Twenty-five men-of-war, thirty-eight transports and sixteen torpedo boats were anchored together. On the following morning the fleet sailed, followed by twelve transports.

JAPANESE DO NOT SEEM TO FORGET THESE THINGS.

"The artillery was ahead, engaging the Chinese, whom the Japanese had steadily driven inward. The Chinese line was falling back and abandoning position after position, after feeble resistance. This was several miles east of the fortress proper. The Japanese fleet was moving in line ahead, the three flagships leading each division and co-operating with the land forces. The ships were the following:

"First Division.—The Matsushima, the Itsukushima, the Chiyoda and the Hashidate.

"Second Division.—The Fusō, the Hiyel, the Takao and the Yayeyama.

"Third Division.—The Yoshino, the Naniwa, the Akitsushima and the Takachiho.

"The small gunboats were shelling the Chinese lines and were close in shore. The naval and military forces were moving beautifully together.

"The next day the advance continued. The Chinese outposts were all driven in, and the outlying forts occupied. The Japanese kept up a terrific fire with their field artillery, machine guns and infantry, the big guns of the forts answering occasionally, and there was a hot fire for some time from the smaller guns. The fleet was moving continually, but kept out of range of the forts. The movements were now quite visible.

"The Japanese army was in three divisions and was moving

as if on parade. The regular volleys were sharp and unbroken. The manœuvring of the cavalry was done in dashing style, and they cut off the retreating bodies that were escaping from the forts. The artillery was splendidly placed and was doing deadly practice upon the forts. The Chinese were replying in an unspirited and desultory way, and evidently without any one directing them. The two northerly and easterly forts were occupied at noon.

“The Chiyoda and another cruiser then steamed around to Pigeon Bay, on the other side of the peninsula, and began to drop shells among the forts, which could not see the two ships. But apparently this was done more with the object of making a diversion than of doing material injury to the enemy.

ADMIRAL TOGO SAILS WITHOUT SHORE SIGNALS.

“On a signal from the General on shore, Admiral Ito’s cruisers all steamed past the forts just outside of range, when ten torpedo boats, covered by two cruisers specially detailed for the duty, divided into two squadrons of four each, dashed inside the fire line of the 50-ton guns and began plying their machine and rapid-fire guns with deadly effect on the Chinese, who had been driven in an easterly direction from the water-side forts by the Japanese army.

“The other torpedo boats tore into the mouth of the harbor and cut off the retreat of two small Chinese steamers which were stealing away along the shore. The first steamer reached the extreme point of the land to the east, landing some one in a skiff, which afterward carried him aboard a steamer lying some miles outside. The torpedo boats, however, afterward drove the two small steamers ashore, peppering them terribly under the very noses of the small forts, which fired 7-pound shells at the torpedo boats without hitting them. One steamer was sunk and the other was beached.

“The forts, meantime, were blindly blazing away at the Japanese fleet. The line aim of the gunners was good, but the shots fell short from lack of elevation. The Porpoise found the fire so hot that she had to steam outside at full speed. The torpedo boats

were dashing about in all directions, wherever they could get a shot at the Chinese, but were obeying the signals of the convoying cruisers, which again followed the orders conveyed by Field Marshal Oyama's field telegraph.

"The Chinese big guns fired fifteen rounds at the Japanese fleet. The latter did not reply, however, only drawing the fire off the torpedo boats, which did all the work. A British officer speaks enthusiastically of the latter, which, he says, would be a credit to any navy, for their dash, skill and precision, which will make them a valuable adjunct in future military operations.

THIS OLD STORY REPEATED WITH THE RUSSIANS.

"Gradually the firing of the Chinese guns on the land side was silenced, the gunners deserting their posts before the hail-storm from the machine guns, the rapid firing guns and the infantry. All night the Japanese gunboats and three of the larger vessels were throwing shells among the flying Chinese troops, who were escaping eastward, a mere rabble.

"All the naval and military experts consider the achievement of the Japanese as marvellous. They astonished every one. They are equal to any European army and navy. The Japanese generals and officers spoke of the matter with quiet dignity and without boasting. The men were held in splendid restraint throughout the engagement, and there was no unnecessary bloodshed. It was an honestly won victory, of which any nation might be proud.

"The Porpoise left for Chefoo, returning with the British fleet, which visited the place. The British officers were perfectly astonished at the order introduced by the newcomers in two days after the capture of the port. Some of the Japanese vessels had gone into dock, and were being overhauled and painted as calmly as if they had been there for years.

"Port Arthur was simply abandoned. The Chinese behaved disgracefully. When the final attack was made by the Japanese the place had a garrison of 8,000 men, of whom one-third were destroyed. The person who escaped to the steamer was Kung, the

Taoti in charge of the whole fortress. The British officers think that the taking of Wei-Hai-Wei will be a simple affair for the Japanese after this victory.

“Asked his opinion of the Japanese as allies, the British officer replied: ‘They would make very bad enemies. We could smash them at sea probably, but we could do nothing against Japan on land. We can teach them nothing in military science. They are masters of modern scientific warfare. The capture of Port Arthur was a perfect revelation.’

“The British officer fully confirms the reported atrocities committed by the Chinese upon Japanese prisoners, who were found with their heads and dismembered limbs stuck on stakes along the roadsides.

PORT ARTHUR AS A MILITARY UNIVERSITY.

“In connection with the above description of the capture of Port Arthur by an English naval officer, another story was cabled by a special correspondent from Hiroshima, Japan. The two accounts taken together give a complete story of the brilliant work done by the Japanese, ending with the capture of the port at five o'clock of the afternoon of the 21st of November, 1894.”

Remarkably interesting studies will attract many thousands throughout the enlightened world to the siege of Port Arthur, by the Japanese—the first occurring in the course of the Chinese-Japan war. It is a curious course of the old and new events on the same spot, the Japanese army assailing in the first war the Chinese and in the second, the Russians.

The Japanese fleets and armies in the war with the Chinese had harder work than anticipated, for the reason they overestimated the military and naval decadence following the demoralizing confusion of the Government of the Chinese and in the first cases of hostile contact the Chinese made but a shabby resistance, but when the Chinese had a few lessons under fire they fought well in the uproar of battle.

There is to be noted the very interesting coincidence, that in the two wars thundered around Port Arthur, the two Empires

engaged were, with one entirely Asiatic, China, and with the partially Asiatic, Russia. The Japanese had before their war with the Chinese, disciplined their military element so as to be able to lift up a sword of fine metal, and finished to a smartness rarely attained. The Japanese were then as now well set up soldiers.

It is something instantly interesting to read in volumes devoted to the war of the Japanese and Chinese, the chapter head, "The Fall of Port Arthur." There were at that time 1874, thirteen batteries, covering about four miles of the shore, and the forts were armed with about "fifty 6-inch and 9-inch Krupp guns."

THIS CHANNEL HAS BECOME VERY FAMILIAR.

The entrance to the harbor was a channel "two hundred yards wide" and beyond that a tidal basin—for a dozen large ships, and "an elaborate submarine field, and a small flotilla of torpedo boats." The hills on the landward were from three to six hundred feet high, and a shoal harbor "with mine defenses" and "defended by quick firing guns."

With the first attacks upon the Chinese squadron and shore batteries the Japanese quickly dispersed their foes, as they got acquainted, "line upon line and precept upon precept." The work of the invaders was cut out for them and showed that Chinamen could be taught to stick to their guns afloat or ashore, whether small and quick firing or heavy siege artillery.

In the first rush by the troops of Japan upon Port Arthur they swept fields clear of Chinese with impetuous facility. The soldiers of Japan were driven temporarily from a field upon which sharp fighting had occurred, and wounded Japanese fell into the hands of the Chinese, and when the reinforcements of the Japanese arrived and carried all before them, wounded Japanese were found with their heads, hands and feet cut off, and their bodies awfully mutilated. On the 19th all the army had passed before these victims, and the men were much moved at the sight. A few days later there was very hard fighting.

The garrison of Port Arthur was said to be from 5000 to 10,000. There had been a reconnoissance in August, and reinforce-

ments were sent. The Japanese scouts had been found engaged in making surveys, and retired in such haste that they left their surveying instruments on the shore.

The Port Arthur harbor at this time was described as "affording no room for the anchorage of a considerable squadron; but a fine tidal basin had been constructed capable of accommodating about fourteen large vessels. It is, apparently, a comfortable place in which to lay up a squadron, but somewhat ill adapted to the needs of a force which desires to get quickly to sea. It is here that the Chinese vessel damaged in the great sea fight off the Yalu River were docked for repairs, and were satisfactorily prepared again for sea."

THE DEFENDERS WHEN CHINESE.

This also serves well as a fair descriptive fragment now, and this was stated of the population: "About 6000, exclusive of the garrison, about 7000, and there are two large temples, two theatres and several banks in the town. The prosperity of the place—it was formerly a small village, consisting of sixty or eighty mud houses and a few inns—began with the determination of the authorities in 1881 to establish a naval dockyard at the port.

"The work was at first intrusted to native contractors, but they proved altogether incompetent, and in 1887 the contract was taken up by a French company, who, in three years' time, brought it to completion.

"At a meeting of the Emperor, Prince Kung and the Grand Council, it was determined that the court and the personnel of the government should leave the capital before it fell into the hands of the Japanese.

"It was believed that an *entente* existed between Viceroy Li Hung-Chang and Japan. It was even said that he had gone to Port Arthur to watch the operations there instead of following the command of the Emperor.

"The landing of the troops were as difficult as those of the late war, and the Japanese could not discover a decent landing place along the coast. It was impossible to land at Talien Bay, the

Chinese having fortified the coast, and planted torpedoes. This place was chosen, not that it was better than any other, but because the road from Wi-ju to Port Arthur passes here nearer the coast than anywhere else."

November 20th there were seen from the "look-outs" dark masses of men in solid columns "who turned out to be Japanese infantry, who were deploying before the outlying forts of Port Arthur.

HARD LANDING FOR JAPANESE.

"The landing, however, was most difficult when the tide was low, as a mile and a half of thick mud was left uncovered by the sea, and one could well imagine the difficulties of landing 25,000 men, soldiers and coolies, horses, artillery, ammunition, wagons, provisions, tents, ambulances, etc., under such conditions. Four hundred barges and flat boats and one hundred steam launches were hard at work.

"The transports and the fleet met at the mouth of the Pei-Yang, or Tatong River, on the 23d of October, at night. Twenty-five men-of-war, thirty-eight transports and sixteen torpedo boats were anchored together. On the following morning the fleet sailed, followed by twelve transports. The remainder, among which was the Nagota Maru, on board of which were the Field Marshal and staff, proceeded at night, no lights of any kind being shown on board, and the following morning arrived opposite the Chinese coast.

"General Yamaji had already landed with part of the infantry. He had encountered no resistance at all. There was not one Chinese soldier in sight. There are here four villages, each composed of half a dozen large stone houses, well and strongly built, but very dirty, yet much cleaner than those in Korea. At the approach of the fleet the people fled without losing a minute.

"A Chinese prisoner was sent out in the country to say that no harm would be done to the people, and that they could return to the villages in all safety. A few came back and sold their provisions to the Japanese at very high figures.

“The Chinese did not forget to be cruel when they had a chance. It was on the 20th when the Japanese were looking for field artillery positions, 6,000 Chinese made a sortie in three columns—on the left, the right and the center. All the forts were firing at us, and we were in great danger. A part of the army and artillery behind the advance guard and two battalions of General Yamaji’s division repulsed the Chinese after five hours’ fighting.

On the 21st the Japanese fleet made a demonstration at six in the morning, but did no fighting. At half-past six A. M. the Japanese artillery, which had taken position during the night, opened fire on the three forts on the right, and displayed magnificent marksmanship. The Chinese forts on a hill five hundred feet high answered strongly.

STORMING OF THE PORT ARTHUR FORTS.

“At eight o’clock the forts were taken by assault of the infantry, who showed magnificent courage. Lieutenant O’Brien, of the United States Army, was present. At nine o’clock our left brigade, commanded by General Sasegwa, advanced upon the remaining eight forts. Fifty Chinese guns poured shell and shot upon them, but nothing stopped them. It was great fighting. At one o’clock all the forts were taken by assault and the army advanced upon the city.

“The inhabitants, who had been armed with express rifles and explosive cartridges, with one battalion of infantry defeated the Chinese. The wounded Japanese were found with their heads, hands and feet cut off, and their bodies awfully mutilated. On the 19th all the army had passed before these victims, and the men were much moved at the sight.

“The fighting to clear the cloudy shell, lasted five hours. A leading English journal said of this: “Port Arthur was one of the few strongholds of China which was given over to Europeans in order that the tremendous natural strength of the place might be reinforced by the best and latest engineering skill. It was mounted with powerful guns and encompassed by an elaborate system of mines on land and torpedoes at sea. Nothing but the most

brilliant strategy and almost reckless bravery accomplished its downfall.

“The word passed around the world that there was a new first class nation in Japan.

“The Japanese were rushed into the fight as stormers whenever there was a chance, though fifty Chinese guns poured shell and shot upon them, but nothing stopped them. It was great fighting. At one o'clock all the forts were taken by assault, and the army advanced upon the city. There was resistance in the city and the houses had to be taken by storm. Many Chinese were killed.

THE VAST HORDES DO NOT ALWAYS WIN.

“The sea forts fell without fighting, and all was finished at five o'clock. The Chinese generals fled after the first fort was taken. Had they surrendered, many Chinese lives would have been saved. Many Chinese were killed during the battle, but the Japanese, however, treated kindly those remaining in the city. Some 18,000 men were engaged on each side. There were 250 Japanese killed and wounded. The Chinese killed numbered 1,500. The dead were buried or cremated.

“When war between Japan and China was declared, a few believed the former would be simply overwhelmed by the vast hordes which the latter could put in the field, as it seemed incredible that a nation of 40,000,000 could overcome one of 400,000,000. But the general sentiment was otherwise. Japan for twenty-five years has been making rapid strides in civilization; she has welcomed modern education and manners, and has organized and equipped her army and navy according to the latest and most approved methods of warfare.

“China, on the other hand, has made little or no progress. A few bright minds secured good naval vessels, erected magnificent coast defences and armed some thousands of soldiers with effective weapons, but the results of their work were practically nullified by the prejudices and hatred of the masses against modern civilization, and by the deep corruption existing among almost all those in authority, great and small.

“It was the existence of these conditions which gave rise to the conviction of the sagacious few that the advantage would be with Japan; but it is doubtful whether any one looked for the brilliant and rapid successes attending the arms of that country. In every engagement the Chinese were outmanœuvred in all branches of warfare. Their armies were outgeneralled, their navy rendered ineffectual, and Japan’s successes culminated in the brilliant capture of Port Arthur.”



JAPANESE AT TEA.

CHAPTER XVIII.

RUSSIA'S TRAGIC LOSS.

The Loss at Port Arthur of the Hero Admiral and his Great Battleship—Full Detail of the Incomparable Disaster—The Career of Makaroff—Skirmishing Before the Awful Explosion—The News from Both Sides—Official Stories Clash—The Truth Will be Disputed as Long as Waterloo—Dismay at St. Petersburg.

THE Russians overwhelmed themselves with a sense of disaster in the opening moves of the Russo-Japanese war, that were in greater part chargeable to the official class of Russia, and the trusted favorites, because they had been too ignorant, the ignorance even out of astonishing indifference and carelessness, passing for information. They did not know themselves or their enemies—and had not measured and understood their weapons or the impending fatalities, that they could not have imagined, so profound was their sense of the incredible. With a daring dash the Japanese secured a sudden superiority over the Russians on the seas, and that gave them the obligation of the initiative.

It is difficult to read the first chapters of the history of the war—and it will be more and more so as time goes on, without an impression that there was in the action of the Japanese a "mighty magic," but close study tells that the Russians so believed in their bulk that they had no approximation to understanding the danger they were in.

The Emperor of Russia was sorely perplexed, as day after day the disasters continued. The emotional nature of the Russian's ruler was plainly discoverable under the imperialism of his utterance—his farewell to the guards, whom he called his brothers, and as the war dispatches revealed continuance of blunders, his sensibilities were aroused until he embraced and kissed the Second Regi-

ment of guards, as they were reviewed by him, departing for the enormous journey to the seat of war.

The greater of the Russian Admirals was also the most distinguished of naval mechanics—we refer to the ill-fated Makaroff, whose intense activities in and about Port Arthur, gave the Russian people hope—and upon what he was doing depended the confidence that the Russians would be able to concentrate their warships in the waters where the war was going, and dispute the mastery of the North Pacific seas with the Japanese, notwithstanding the great headway gained by the gallantry and genius of Admiral Togo, in his brilliant maneuvering, as well as keen and hard fighting.

RAPID RISE OF THE RUSSIANS FROM PROSTRATION.

The Russians were rapidly rising from the prostration of the first shock of the battle, when in a moment—in the twinkling of an eye—there came the incomparable disaster, that simply gave the sea for months to the Japanese, with the magnified power of the ability to base the operations of their armies where they pleased.

Vice-Admiral Makaroff had inspired the Russians afloat from the day he took command of the squadron inside the harbor of Port Arthur, by going forth and taking personal risks in confronting superior forces and forcing fights with them.

It was pursuant to the policy of reassuring the Russians that the great calamity, one of the high tragedies of the world's history, struck the Russians, at just the time and place where the infliction seemed almost exceeding all chances of remedy.

The facts of the tragic morning, April 13th, off Port Arthur, will be discussed with various contentions through all time.

Stepan Osipovich Makaroff, the fighting Admiral, and a popular hero in Russia, was born in 1848, and had been in active service for forty years. During the war with Turkey he commanded the gunboat Grand Duke Constantine, which he equipped himself with torpedoes, for he was a mechanical genius as well as an intrepid officer. His attacks on Turkish ships and his raids on

harbors won him promotion to the rank of captain, the orders of Vladimir and St. George and a sword of gold.

In 1882 Makaroff was assigned to the cruiser *Taman*, the guardship of the Russian Embassy at Constantinople, and made a study of the defences of the Bosphorus. He then spent two years as chief of staff to Admiral Chihacheff in the Baltic Squadron. Between 1885 and 1889 he made a tour of the world on the corvette *Vityaz*, to make hydrographic observations, his report winning a high premium from the Imperial Academy of Sciences. He looked the fighting man, and was the man of science, but that part of his personal presence only increased the potency of his popularity.

THE DISPUTED RESPONSIBILITY FOR DISASTER.

The Japanese official report (dispatch from Tokio, April 14th) states that Admiral Togo's fleet attacked Port Arthur in the morning and "succeeded in sinking a battleship of the *Petropavlovsk* class and one torpedo boat destroyer." The Japanese sustained no losses. One Japanese was wounded.

The first news of the successful attack and of the destruction of the battleship was received in Japan with intense satisfaction. Admiral Makaroff's death was deeply regretted. He commanded the respect of his opponents. The Japanese admired the manner in which he had rehabilitated the fleet after the first attacks upon Port Arthur and the splendid fight he was making against odds.

The Navy Department knew Togo left the vicinity of Port Arthur to return to a secret base. It was expected that he would reach telegraphic communications very soon.

Advices from Chefoo, April 14th, from both Russian and Japanese sources, indicate that the *Petropavlovsk* was torpedoed.

This was part of the Japanese plan. Having, under guise of an attack on the harbor, enticed out Admiral Makaroff, the hostile torpedo boats, of which there were four, it is said, crept up behind him as he went out to sea after the Japanese cruisers and awaited his return.

They dealt the blow as, apparently unsuspecting, he was nearing the harbor on his way back.

The ill-fated ship, the Petropavlovsk, the flagship of Admiral Makaroff, was one of the three first-class battleships—the other two being the Poltava and the Sevastopol—launched at the Cronstadt naval station on the Baltic in the years 1894–5, and designed for service in the Far East, with which fleet the Petropavlovsk has been since she was commissioned in 1898.

In the first attack on Port Arthur the Poltava had a hole blown in her hull beneath the water line, but it is reported, to be repaired at the Port Arthur dockyard, and the Petropavlovsk was twice previously damaged in the Japanese attacks.

THREE BATTLESHIPS STRICKEN.

All three of these battleships were built upon the same design, and their statistics may be summarized as follows: Cost of each, \$5,549,000; displacement, 10,960 tons; length, 367½ feet; beam, 65 feet; draught, 26 feet; indicated horsepower, 14,213; armor belt, 15¾ inches; deck, 3½ inches; side above belt, 4 inches; bulkhead, 9 inches; turrets, 10 inches; secondary gun positions, 6 inches; armament, four 12-inch, twelve 5.9 inch, thirty-four smaller guns and six torpedo tubes; speed, 16.3 knots.

A London dispatch mentioned that the Russians often crossed the water where the Admiral's ship was destroyed, and this review of the circumstances in a war correspondent's cable dated at Chefoo, says:

“There is every indication that the sinking of the Petropavlovsk was directly due to the Japanese attack.

“The report that the vessel struck a hidden or floating mine is discredited here, for the Russian fleet made sorties over the same course day after day without meeting with mishaps.

“It is known here that it was Admiral Togo's intention to lure the Russians out of the harbor and then to deal them a crushing blow by sinking or disabling the flagship at no matter what cost.

“A Chinese ship just in reports there is now no trace of the Japanese fleet before Port Arthur.”

The last dispatches about the active service of Makaroff are the following, and is to be accepted at the full value as a probability:

A dispatch from Port Arthur, dated April 11th, states that "Telegraphic communications have been interrupted recently, owing to torrential rains. The railroad embankments in South Manchuria have been damaged, thus delaying the movements of troops.

"Vice Admiral Makaroff, who personally supervises nightly the precautionary measures, spent Easter-eve in a guard-boat. During the usual Easter-night service the church windows were covered, so as to prevent the lights being seen by the enemy, and the absence of all illumination in the town was a constant reminder to the inhabitants of the possibility of an attack."

[The doomed admiral was certainly not following the policy of the original blundering.]

ALL QUIET BEFORE THE TROUBLE CAME.

The Emperor received a telegram on April 12th, reporting all quiet at Port Arthur, that the naval squadron was again putting out to sea, and that Vice Admiral Makaroff had sent torpedo-boat destroyers to explore the coasts where some of the enemy's torpedo boats are believed to be lurking.

According to telegraphic advices received by the Novosti from its correspondent at Liaoyang, a bombardment of Port Arthur and a fight on the Yalu were expected momentarily.

The first Japanese dispatch, written on the day of the destruction, says: "It looks rather as if the Petropavlovsk had been caught in the roadstead by Japanese torpedo boats, and as if the other Russian ships, deprived of their Admiral, had retired to the inner harbor before the Japanese fleet reached Port Arthur.

"This view seems confirmed by the dispatch of the commandant at Port Arthur to the Czar. He relates the sinking of the Petropavlovsk, and adds 'The Japanese squadron is approaching.'

"Our correspondent saw the squadron approaching, but the torpedo attack had taken place some hours earlier.

"Besides, it seems hardly conceivable that a single mine could send a battleship to the bottom with such fearful rapidity, though the simultaneous explosion of several torpedoes could have done so."

A private dispatch received at Chifu, April 13th, from Port Arthur, says the Japanese attacked that place at daylight, and that the full Russian fleet went out, under Vice Admiral Makaroff, and, assisted by the fire of the forts, drove the enemy off.

The dispatch adds that the town was not damaged. The effect of the bombardment of the forts and fleet was not mentioned.

The British gunboat *Espiegle*, which left Newchwang recently for Wai-hai-wei, arrived, and reported that at daylight, April 12th, while off Port Arthur, she heard the sound of heavy firing, saw the flash of guns, and believed that a fleet action was proceeding. Three men-of-war, of unknown nationality, were seen in the distance.

A DAY OF DISMAY AT ST. PETERSBURG.

"The day has been one of intense excitement in St. Petersburg. The first inkling of the catastrophe leaked out on the receipt of a telegram by Grand Duke Vladimir from his son, Grand Duke Boris, announcing the loss of the Petropavlovsk and the wounding of Grand Duke Cyril, who was first officer. The Grand Duchess Vladimir was almost frantic on the receipt of the telegram, being convinced that the message was only a precursor of worse news, as it was signed by Grand Duke Boris, instead of by the aide to Grand Duke Cyril, Lieutenant von Kube.

"Lieutenant von Kube had gone down with the ship.

"The youngest son of the Grand Duke Vladimir, Grand Duke Andrew, a dashing young guardsman, behind the fastest trotters, hurried to the Winter Palace, the Admiralty and elsewhere seeking confirmation of the news which came two hours later in a message to the Emperor from Rear Admiral Grigorovitch, the commandant at Port Arthur.

"A religious service was immediately held at Grand Duke Vladimir's palace, in which thanks were returned to the Almighty for the sparing of the life of Grand Duke Cyril, but the Emperor was so overwhelmed with grief at the death of Vice Admiral Makaroff that neither he nor his Empress attended the service. Instead, the Emperor sent a member of his personal staff to break

the sad news to Vice Admiral Makaroff's widow, who is living at Peterhof. Meantime, the city was filled with the wildest rumors, but the official dispatches were so meagre and private dispatches so conflicting, regarding what had occurred, that the public was kept in suspense for six hours. Then, although the report was incomplete, dispatches were posted on the Nevsky prospect and other war bulletin boards.

"The grief of the crowds, whose worst fears were thus officially confirmed, was touching. The Ministry of Marine was soon surrounded by thousands of persons eagerly asking for more details. In the crowd of inquirers were the stricken relatives of those who were on board the Petropavlovsk.

PRELIMINARIES OF EXPLOSION NOT WELL KNOWN.

"What occurred prior to the blowing up of the flagship was only vaguely known, except that Vice Admiral Makaroff, with his flag flying on the doomed vessel, sailed out to engage the enemy until his reinforcements appeared.

"It is thought possible that Vice Admiral Togo planned an ambush, by sending in a small squadron in the hope of drawing out the Russian commander to the open and then cutting off his escape.

"It is learned that the location of six of the mines planted by the Yenesei were unknown, the charts having been lost when that vessel went down. Probably it was one of these mines that the Petropavlovsk struck.

"Vice Admiral Makaroff's death is really a greater loss than would be that of several battleships. He was the pride of the navy, and enjoyed the implicit confidence of his sovereign, as well as of the officers and men of the service. Speaking of his death, officers here all remarked upon the strange fatality that he should lose his life on a heavily armored battleship, to which he had a particular aversion. That morning for the first time he raised his flag on a battleship. Previously he had gone out on board the cruiser Novik or the cruiser Askold. It was at the urgent request of his friends that he did not risk his life in this fashion, and transferred his flag to the Petropavlovsk.

"It is now an open secret that Vice Admiral Makaroff was not anxious to resign his command of the Cronstadt to go to the Far East, thus necessitating his leaving his wife and family, but the Emperor held such a high opinion of him that he declined to consider other candidates, although it was pointed out that Rear Admiral Rojestvensky, chief of the General Staff of the navy, who has just been appointed to command the Baltic squadron, and who is now destined to succeed Makaroff, as well as others, were anxious to distinguish themselves.

"The Emperor, in his summons to Vice Admiral Makaroff, said. 'My choice has fallen upon you, and I will not take a refusal,' and so the Admiral went to the Far East. The Emperor's sorrow is doubly keen on this account.

THE FUNERAL OF THE LOST ADMIRAL.

"By imperial command a requiem service will be celebrated at the Admiralty Church at noon to-morrow for the Emperor's favorite Admiral.

"To-night the grief-stricken widow, according to the Russian custom, had a requiem service celebrated at her residence. She had been much worried over the health of her husband, who suffered from diabetes, reference to which was made in a recent telegram from the Admiral, in which he said he was compelled to disobey orders as to taking regular sleep.

"The coincidence is generally commented upon that the ice-breaker Yermak, one of Vice Admiral Makaroff's greatest triumphs, steamed majestically up the Neva, having cut through the ice from Cronstadt, her enormous black hull dwarfing the warships moored alongside. 'There's Stefan Osipovich's ship!' cried the moujiks, who knew and loved Makaroff so well that they called him by his patronymic."

The Russian official report furnishes an argument that the loss of the Admiral with his ship was due to a mine, saying :

All doubt as to the cause of the destruction of the battleship, Petropavlovak, and the damage to the battleship Pobieda, at Port Arthur, is dissipated by the report submitted by telegraph to the

Emperor, April 21. In it Viceroy Alexeieff stated in a way that leaves the matter no longer an open question, that mines were responsible for the disaster. The admission of the presence of Japanese ships off Port Arthur on the night preceding the going out of the Russian ships, which were watched by Admiral Markaroff, tends to establish Vice-Admiral Togo's claim that his ships laid mines on which the Russian battleships struck.

THE VICEROY'S OFFICIAL REPORT.

The Viceroy's report was sent only after a thorough investigation, ordered by the Emperor, had been made. It was published next morning through the War Commission. It explicitly states that "under the starboard side of the Petropavlovsk there was an explosion," and specifically declares that a mine "exploded under the Pobieda." That the Russian ships did not run on their own mines is shown by the failure of the Viceroy to mention anything of the kind and by the positive statement of the port Admiralty that Admiral Markaroff was familiar with the location of the torpedoes defending the port. The Russian officials also fail to understand the surprising blunder caused by the mistake of the Russian torpedo-boat destroyers in taking the Japanese torpedo-boats for a Russian flotilla, which resulted in the loss of the Strashni.

The text of Viceroy Alexeieff's report to the Emperor concerning the Petropavlovsk disaster and the torpedo-boat engagement which preceded it, reads as follows:

"I respectfully report to your Majesty that on April 11, the whole effective squadron at Port Arthur sailed out six miles to the southward to manoeuvre, and towards evening returned to port. On April 12, a flotilla of eight torpedo-boat destroyers went out to inspect the islands, having received orders to attack the enemy should he be encountered in the course of the night.

"Owing to the darkness and a heavy rain three of the destroyers became separated from the flotilla, two of which returned to Port Arthur at dawn. The third, however, the Strashni, having, according to the evidence of her seamen, encountered several Japa-

nese destroyers, took them in the darkness for Russian ships and giving the signal of recognition, joined them at dawn. She was recognized by the enemy, and there was a fight at close quarters, in which her commander, midshipman, and engineer and most of her crew were killed. Malieff, her Lieutenant, although wounded, continued firing on the enemy.

"At dawn on April 13, the cruiser Bayan went out, preceded by destroyers, and hurried to the rescue. About sixteen miles from Port Arthur the Bayan saw the destroyer Strashni engaged with four Japanese destroyers. Shortly afterward an explosion occurred, and the Strashni sank. Driving off the enemy's destroyers by her fire, the Bayan approached the scene of the fight, lowered her boats, and had time to save the remnant of the destroyer's crew. Unfortunately only five men were swimming. Their lives were saved.

DETAILS OF THE DISASTER.

"The cruiser was obliged to fight on her starboard side with six Japanese cruisers which came up. Having picked up her boats, the Bayan regained the harbor, suffering no damage or loss, although covered with fragments of shells.

"The cruiser Diana and five destroyers hastened to her succor, and at the same time the other cruisers, the battleships Petropavlovsk and Poltava and some destroyers came out from the roadstead, and the other battleships left the harbor. In column formation, with the Bayan at the head, and the destroyers on the flank, Vice-Admiral Makaroff proceeded to the scene of the Strashni's fight, whither more Japanese destroyers and cruisers were approaching.

"After a short fusilade about fifty cable lengths distance (10,000 yards), the ships drew off.

"A squadron of nine Japanese battleships appeared at 8.40 A. M., and our ships retired toward Port Arthur. In the roadstead they were rejoined by the battleships Pobieda, Peresviet and Sevastopol, which were coming out through the channel. The squadron was drawn up in the following order: Askold, Bayan, Diana, Petropavlovsk, Peresviet, Polieda, Novik, five destroyers,

and two torpedo cruisers. They turned towards the left, but when approaching the mouth of the channel, the destroyers were signalled to return to the harbor, and the cruisers to proceed. Manoeuvring with the Petropavlovsk at their head, the squadron turned to the east, making toward the enemy on their right.

"At 9.43 A. M., an explosion occurred at the right side of the Petropavlovsk; then a second and more violent explosion under her bridge. A thick column of greenish yellow smoke was seen to rise from the battleship, her mast, funnel, bridge and turret were thrown up and the battleship heeled over on her starboard side. Her poop arose from the water, showing her screw working in the air. The Petropavlovsk was surrounded by flames and in two minutes sank bow first.

THE SAVING OF A FEW.

"Some of her crew escaped. The cruiser Gaydamak, which was a cable length away, lowered boats and succeeded in rescuing Grand Duke Cyril and forty-seven seamen. The destroyers and boats from the Poltava and Askold also picked up some of the Petropavlovsk's crew. Altogether, seven officers and seventy-three men were saved. The Poltava, which was following the Petropavlovsk two cable lengths astern, stopped her engines and remained on the scene of the disaster.

"At a signal from Rear Admiral Ouktomsky, the other warships made for the entrance of the harbor, manœuvring towards the Peresviet in line. A mine exploded under the starboard side of the Pobieda. She listed, but proceeded and entered the harbor, with all the other ships astern of her. The enemy remained in sight until 3 o'clock, and then disappeared.

"The night preceding the sortie of the squadron, lights and the outlines of ships were seen in the distance from the roadstead, and the commander of the fleet kept watch in person until dawn, from the cruiser Diana, stationed in the outer roadstead. He left her at 4 o'clock in the morning.

"In concluding, I take the liberty to announce respectfully that, despite the ill-success which has attended the Pacific fleet, the

crews of the ships retain their morale, and are ready to perform all duties required of them. The gracious words of your Majesty to the seamen at this painful hour of trial serve as a consolation and a support to all the force in their efforts to overcome the enemy, to the glory of their beloved sovereign and their country."

"Prince Sheremetieff has telegraphed his mother from Port Arthur that the body of Rear-Admiral Molas (Vice-Admiral Makaroff's Chief of Staff) has been washed ashore frightfully mutilated by the explosion which sunk the Petropavlovsk, and that Vice-Admiral Makaroff's body has not been found."

THE NEWS IN THE UNITED STATES.

"The news of the death of Admiral Makaroff caused a profound sensation in naval and military circles here, for he was probably better known than any other Russian naval officer. This was because of the fact that he had visited the United States in 1896-97, and also commanded the Russian North Atlantic squadron, which brought him into frequent contact with American naval officers in these waters, and sometimes into American ports on the west coast.

"The general opinion is that Makaroff was an officer of singular ability as a sailor, being thoroughly scientific in his methods, of more than usual intelligence and of physical presence which gave him a splendid power of command. In the matter of personal bravery he had no superior.

"Count Cassini, the Russian Ambassador, at noon to-day had not received word from his government advising him of the disaster that befell the Russian battleship Petropavlovsk at Port Arthur and the death of Admiral Makaroff and the other officers and men who perished with the sinking of the ship. The first information he had of the disaster was conveyed to him by a representative of the Associated Press. Naturally he was distressed at the news, but made no statement beyond expressing his sorrow.

"The disaster caused consternation in Russian quarters at Paris and made a deep impression everywhere. The Foreign Office and the Russian and Japanese representatives had not received

official advices on the subject up to this hour, and were dependent on the press reports.

"The death of Admiral Makaroff is generally regarded in official circles as further seriously crippling the Russian naval position.

"King Victor Emmanuel telegraphed to the Emperor of Russia his sorrow at the disaster to the battleship Petropavlovsk at Port Arthur. The King also inquired as to the condition of Grand Duke Cyril.

"Admiral Mirabello, Minister of Marine, has telegraphed to Vice-Admiral Avellan, Chief of the Russian Admiralty, expressing the sympathy of the Italian navy over the disaster and grief at the death of Vice-Admiral Makaroff.

EMPEROR WILLIAM SENT CABLE FROM SICILY.

"Emperor William, who is in Sicily on the German imperial yacht Hohenzollern, has sent a personal telegram to the Emperor of Russia, expressing his grief over the catastrophe to the battleship Petropavlovsk at Port Arthur, and his sorrow at the death of Vice-Admiral Makaroff.

"The tragedy of the Russian battleship Petropavlovsk, at Port Arthur, and the drowning of Vice-Admiral Makaroff have created an overpowering impression in Germany.

"The Vossische Zeitung declares that the name of Makaroff balanced the entire army in the minds of Russian patriots, and regards his loss as irreparable.

"It is an open secret that the Grand Duke's lady love is a cousin of the Czar, the divorced wife of the Grand Duke of Hesse, and a daughter of the late Duke of Saxe-Coburg and Gotha, who married a sister of Alexander III.

"It was announced from Berlin, December 12th, 1903, that the engagement of Grand Duke Cyril to the former Grand Duchess of Hesse, who was divorced from her husband, had been broken off, the Emperor having forbidden the Grand Duke to marry the Grand Duchess, whose former husband is a brother of the Czarina. It was said, according to the dispatch, that the Grand

Duke was deeply in love with the Hessian Grand Duchess before her marriage. One of the objections of the Emperor to the marriage, it was said, was the fact that the Grand Duke Cyril is of Orthodox Russian faith, while the Grand Duchess is a Lutheran. In addition, there seemed to be a personal objection on the part of the Emperor to receiving the Princess at the Russian court.

There has been a serious strain upon the Royal families of Russia, Germany and England. The Emperor William, was active and sympathetic and it was believed in making the match between the young Czar of Russia and the German Princess, the mother of the large family of daughters exclusively of the Czar, and therefore the prominence of the Grand Dukes, and King Edward of England, seems to have been a rather troublesome peace maker, for the Russian taste.

CHAPTER XIX.

BRILLIANTLY PEN-PICTURED BATTLE.

The First Army of Japan Passed the Yalu with a Rush—Climbed the Stony Hills—Stormed and Captured the Russian Batteries with Prisoners and Held The Ground—Russians with Inferior Guns Fought Bravely—But the Cause of Censure of a Good Fighter by Kuropatkin not Visible to the Naked Eye.

THE Russo-Japanese war is more and more commanding the attention of all nations. The incidents of the warfare are phenomenal and astounding. It seemed for some weeks that the navy of Japan had been so triumphant, as to insure her the sovereignty of the seas, but suddenly the frailty of the castles of steel, thundering over the deep, was illustrated by the equalization of dread and awful misfortunes.

The terrors of the tremendous forces engaged in the armaments, of combatants, and the weapons of offence are more formidable than the bulwarks of defense, and so the defenders are at a disadvantage.

The Japanese held that the fact of their victorious familiarity, in the province their armies advanced to reconquer, was of good omen. There were no mysteries for the Japanese in Manchuria.

They knew the country better than the Russians who had gained it by diplomacy. The drift of the armies to combat on the banks of the Yalu river was as certain and conspicuous as the attraction of the gravitation of war, between Russia and Japan, was to bombardments at Port Arthur.

The great guns of the shore batteries were answered by the great guns of the battleships, and the deadly shock of torpedoes was mingled with the blasting roar of mines. As the contending fleets clashed at the gates of Port Arthur, the armies of the contending empires marched to meet their fate on the banks of the Yalu.

With wonderful secretiveness the three armies of Japan, instead of going straight for a display of their magnificently stern array, disappeared from the gaze of the world, and there were many essays of experts in military science, showing how battlefields were to be found by fighting on them. After the adoption of policies held to be sacredly secreted, the plans of the generals were given to the wires, with details that most often have been displayed to hide the truth.

The boast of Japan and her friends and champions, was of the immensity of her armies moving to the front. The Russians were disposed, if not to modesty to moderation, except in avenues of the general assurance of success. However, Japan had the sea, and Russia the largest railroad in the world, and there were reports from the enemies of the Russians, that the armies that depended on the rails were of insufficient numbers.

KUROPATKIN'S CURIOUS REPORTS OF HIS PLANS.

The Russian Chief, Kuropatkin, is a man of large experience and tried courage, and a man of literature as well as arms. Curiously enough he has ever since he joined the Russian army at the front, seemed to be occupied in confiding his plans to his enemy, and this has been countenanced rather than condemned, all the way from Port Arthur to St. Petersburg. We have been told that Kuropatkin has made no secret of it that he had an army unequal to confronting the Japanese.

He has been free spoken, according to the dispatches, that cannot go over the wires without being approved by some of the friends or foes, that he could not muster the men to beat one of the three armies of Japan, without falling back, and the deep strategy we were told was to lure on the legions of the Mikado.

When the news of the battle on the Yalu came, we were told there was a Russian General who fought too hard, and lost a point in not being hasty enough to "flee" from the host of Japan. If there had been a suspicious military expert strategist, writing for the newspapers of the whole of the English-speaking nations, he

might have insinuated that the Russian leader was playing his game not wisely but too well.

There was what we are accustomed to have called severe fighting on the Yalu, and there was blood enough shed, and guns enough lost by the Russians to warrant the interpretation of Russian military management, as sincerity. Still, there may be more mystery in military strategy ten thousand miles away, than the judicious dream.

If the tactics of the Japanese on the Yalu has been a total surprise to the Russians, it is a case calling for close study, why something happened just when the Russian army was cornered, that the Japanese forces retired from their advantageous posts. There was, at any rate, fighting men found on both sides, and in the severe contests neither army lost military honor or strained the confidence of the warlike people.

CULMINATION ON FIRST OF MAY.

The first army of Japan had spent several days in operation, that "resulted in the crossing of the Yalu by their foremost Army, culminating on May 1, with the occupation of Kullencheng, north of the Bany river, opposite Wiju.

"Before crossing, the Japanese occupied a front extending from Yongampho to a point fifteen miles above Wiju, whence General Kuroki directed their movements extending down slightly beyond the mouth of the river.

"Their left cannot easily be accounted for, but it is understood that it extended a long distance, one detachment having crossed the river seventy-five miles above Wiju and disarmed a body of Korean soldiers.

"At Wiju the Yalu is split into three streams by two islands, which were held, respectively, by Russians and Japanese, the middle stream forming a barrier dividing the two forces. The breadth of the river-bed opposite Wiju is two miles. One mile above the islands the river Ai joins the Yalu. There is a range of mountains between the islands, culminating in a rocky promontory called Tiger Hill, which juts into the bed of the river one

mile from Wiju. Between Tiger Hill and the Korean shore is another island occupying the river-bed some miles above Wiju.

“Tiger Hill and the adjoining mainland formed the strategic key to the Russian position, and its possession was essential to the success of the Japanese plans.

“On April 28 the Japanese made their first move, occupying the island above Tiger Hill, after a brisk fight, in which they lost nine killed and twenty-four wounded.

THE RUSSIANS FIRING FROM A HILL.

“During the day the Russians opened fire with field artillery from the conical hill of Kuliencheng upon a number of Japanese and coolies, who were building a trestle-bridge from Wiju to the first island. Later in the day they shelled Wiju for about ten minutes, inflicting slight damage. The Japanese refrained from replying.

“At night, according to the Japanese, the Russians vacated Tiger Hill, which, with twenty-nine various points some miles above Wiju, were occupied. One division of Japanese infantry crossed the Yalu river, without opposition, from an island which they had occupied during the day.

“The Russians evacuated the island adjoining Kuliencheng on the twenty-ninth, and reoccupied Tiger Hill and the neck, evidently aware of the crossing higher up and desirous of strengthening their left against the development of the Japanese right.

“In the afternoon the Japanese upon the island above Tiger Hill were subjected to a heavy rifle fire from the dominating heights, and for the first time the Japanese used their artillery. Two batteries north of Wiju Castle were employed to search the slopes from which the Russians were firing, and for twenty minutes a scathing shrapnel fire was kept up.

“The Russians were seen laboriously climbing the steep ascents in a vain endeavor to escape the leaden showers, and many dead and wounded were left behind.

“The Russian artillery at Kuliencheng made ineffectual attempts to quell the Japanese fire, their efforts being in remark-

able contrast to the accuracy and concentration of the Japanese shooting.

“That night the Japanese concentration movement, which had been on foot for some days, came to a head, one division being already across the river and the other two massed behind a hill one mile north of Wiju and protected from the fire of the Russian guns at Kuliencheng. The concentration of the Japanese divisions was masterly, the Russians appearing ignorant that the Japanese left had closed upon Wiju.

“At daybreak on April 30, the scene was peaceful in the extreme. Across the sandy bed of the Yalu meandered three sparkling blue streams. Beyond the purple mountains of Manchuria stretched an endless vista, only on the southern slopes of the hills on the Korean side was there any evidence of war.

THE BROAD VALLEY BLACK WITH THE ARMY.

“Far north, however, the officers and historian saw the valley black with men, horses, baggage, ammunition trains and all the paraphernalia of an army on the move. The suggestion was that the army would cross the river, that the crossing was inevitable, and that the possibility of defeat did not enter the Japanese calculations.

“When the rising sun lit up the hills opposite, the Japanese, in thousands, were descried strung out in single file, streaming along the bridle path, traversing the lower slopes, as it wound in and out of the ravines. They gradually ascended, their object evidently being to occupy the heights commanding Tiger Hill and its approaches.

“Rounding the spur they came into view of the Russians on Tiger Hill neck, and were instantly subjected to a heavy shrapnel fire, and the Japanese batteries north of Wiju opened fire and speedily silenced the Russian guns. The Japanese, steadily advancing, soon held the heights, whence they brought a rifle fire to bear on the Russians, who were eventually compelled to cross Ai river and join their main force.

“During these operations the dramatic feature of the day was

witnessed. The Russians believed that the enemy possessed field guns only, and their positions were calculated to deal with the artillery of that calibre alone. For the same reason they had taken no pains to mask their guns, and the Japanese opened upon them with several howitzer batteries.

“On the first island opposite Wiju held by the Japanese is a belt of trees, vividly green and fresh looking. From out this a terrible rain of shell and shrapnel, which played upon the Russian batteries on Conical Hill, swept down men and guns, tore up the ground and smashed the rocks.

“In the air around the position were white puffs of smoke, denoting the explosion of shrapnel, while the hill itself, struck by the shells from the heavy howitzers, looked like an active volcano, belching clouds of gray-black smoke.

THE STORM OF SHRAPNEL BURST.

“No sooner had the storm burst than the Russian shrapnel streamed through the air in reply to the unexpected attack. The green of the trees was obscured by the smoke of bursting shells. Clouds of sand and dust raised by the missiles striking the ground floated on the wind, and the booming of the guns and the deep thundering of the explosions filled the valley for half an hour.

“The Russians stuck to their guns manfully, but gradually their fire slackened, and it finally ceased. The guns had been silenced and the gunners were dead. An attempt had been made to bring up horses and to remove the guns, but it was foiled.

“The Japanese fire was then directed on the Russian camp and picket lines, creating great havoc.

“The Russian loss cannot be ascertained, but the Japanese casualties in the artillery duel were two killed and twenty-five wounded.

“The trees hid the Japanese position from the Russians, and though we were to the right of the rear and saw the flash of every gun fired at the Russians, we were invisible to them. Their fire was directed upon the belt of trees from which the deadly hail came, but at a high angle.

“The fire of the howitzers enabled the Japanese to work their

guns from pits, while the Russian shrapnel was fired at random and rarely penetrated. The success of the day was with the Japanese, and the glory with the Russians, who fought their guns to the bitter end.

“ On the night of April 30th, another Japanese infantry division crossed the Yalu, followed by the third division. At daybreak of May 1st, we saw them on the Russian side of the river, stretched out in long, thin, black lines, sheltered by depressions in the sand of the river-bed.

“ We realized slowly that the Japanese contemplated a frontal attack. They must have emerged from the cover of Tiger Hill and taken a position in the darkness. Before any move was made, the Japanese guns opened upon the ground behind Kuliencheng with shrapnel and shell, sweeping and searching every inch of the ridges where the Russians were supposed to be. No Russian guns replied. They had departed.

THE JAPANESE STORMERS RUSHING.

“ Soon the Japanese fire slackened ; then the leading line upon the sand became animated and slowly crept forward toward the base of Conical Hill. It advanced for quite a long time, during which the suspense was painful to endure. Then came upon our ears the quick, grunting sound of distant volleys stuttering down the wind, and the sound of heavy musketry fire.

“ The line showed gaps, faltered and then melted away, some running backward, others taking to shelter, and many being mortally hurt, but the second line, which was close behind, gathered up the remnants and swept on, followed by line upon line. Closing on the hill, they diverged right and left, winding up the precipitous front and swarming over the sloping sides.

“ Meanwhile at the first volley from the Russians the Japanese artillery again began to plant shells upon the ridge, raising clouds of dust in every direction. The Japanese continued to climb until they were near the top, when they halted in a depression and massed to make a charge over the crest.

“ Then in the very midst of the dark blot upon the hillside ap-

peared two flashes and two enlarging clouds. This was another of those sickening accidents that occur on battlefields, and which have been too often experienced by ourselves when guns have been supporting an assault. Twenty-seven modest Japanese graves now occupy the spot, a heavy penalty for a slight misunderstanding. Worse of the same nature was to befall the Russians before long.

“At last a rush was made and the Japanese flag was bravely unfurled first on one side and then on the other, one dark figure racing along and defying the bullets of the retiring Russians to plant his country’s flag on the highest possible place.

“Japan had beaten the Russians at their first meeting on land, and had vindicated her right to claim a place among the nations. That was all we saw.

“They told us that there were 700 Japanese casualties. It was difficult to realize that such a number had been rendered *hors du combat* in so short a fight.

RUSSIANS LOST THEIR GUNS.

“What else happened during the day was only made known through the official report on May 6th.

“The capture of the Russian position at Kuliencheng revealed that the Russians were unable to remove eight of their guns, owing, it is believed, to lack of horses, which shows the deadliness of the fire which the Japanese directed against the Russian picketing lines on the previous day. Evidently the Russians anticipated more deliberation on the part of the enemy, whose dashing onslaught forced them to retire and leave these coveted trophies of war.

“Hardly had the Japanese captured the position of Kuliencheng than reserves consisting of the two divisions who had hitherto taken no part in the proceedings were set in motion. Both bodies of men, accompanied by mountain guns, hurried right and left on the Pekin road, with the intention of cutting off the retreat of the defeated Russians. The reserves of the remaining division followed at a more leisurely pace, employing delaying tactics.

“Fearful of losing part in the fray, the flanking bodies in

their haste outstripped their guns, and, after advancing on a line parallel to the road until abreast of the retiring enemy, they suddenly closed in, completely surprising the Russians, who were forced to take a defensive position at Hamatan.

"The body pursuing in the rear quickened its movements, and all three simultaneously engaged the Russians. A desperate fight ensued, the Russians at short range using their guns.

"The Japanese greatly outnumbered their opponents, and they inflicted terrible losses with their rifle fire.

THE CAPTURED GUNS WERE OLD.

"With loud cheers all three bodies, with bayonets fixed, charged the Russian position in almost solid masses with such impetuosity and backed by such superior numbers that they could not be withstood.

"The Russians hoisted the white flag in token of surrender.

"With the Russians were twenty guns, all of which fell into the hands of the Japanese. Twenty officers were taken prisoners and 400 men, more than half of whom were wounded. The Japanese estimated their casualties in this short fight at 300. The Russians must have lost treble that number.

"The latest figures of casualties and captures on May 1 state that the Japanese losses in killed were five officers and 160 men; wounded, 29 officers and 666 men; total, 860.

"So far as the Russians are concerned, 1362 dead bodies were buried by the Japanese, while 475 Russian wounded are in the Japanese hospital. The captures were 28 guns, 20 officers and 138 men, in addition to the wounded.

"The distribution of the Russian force, which had its center at Kullencheng, has been ascertained to have been approximately 2000 men west of Antung, 2000 at Antung and 5000 at Kullencheng. The Russians known to have occupied various points on the Yalu above Kullencheng took no part in the operations described, nor did any of those below Kullencheng.

"While it is remarkable that the victory rests with the Japanese, the fact remains that they outnumbered the enemy nearly

ten to one, and must necessarily have effected a crossing and scored a success.

“The Russian guns and rifles are old-fashioned.

“With the Japanese no fault can be found, except that they achieved results at great expense which might have been secured more cheaply. A demonstration in front of Kullencheng, which might have been accomplished with little loss, would have held the Russians and permitted a flanking movement on a wider and larger scale similar to the one which actually took place on the Russian left. Seeing that they were in possession of Tiger Hill such a move on the part of the Japanese would have been perfectly practicable, considering the number of men and guns at their disposal.

“These objects were achieved with the loss of 900 men, three-fourths of whom will soon be fit again.

JAPANESE CHARGE WITH FIXED BAYONETS.

“Though the fighting strength of the Russian forces has been impaired, their loss in war material is not very great. Many of the guns captured were old, and it is assumed that the Russians are well furnished with modern weapons. The moral effect of the defeat on the Russian army is serious.

“On the night of May 1, the Japanese headquarters encamped at Kullencheng. The troops, after a hard day's fighting, enjoyed a rest. During the night bands of Chinese swarmed over the two battlefields, stripping the dead of clothes and accoutrements. The Japanese, greatly enraged, established a system of patrols.”

This is a fine and intelligent story of a battle, in which the Japanese seem to have conducted themselves very handsomely and to have put into the fight brilliant generalship, while the men with guns did their part with steady courage and rushes that can only be urged when the rank and file are willing, devoted and enthusiastic.

It is desirable, in the midst of rumors, to take note that the writer of the story of the first battle between the Japanese and Russians on the Yalu, was an eye witness.

It is a clear case of eye-witness history, and there are many touches that could not be imaginary. This we emphasize because

there seems to have been no occasion for the Russian complaint that one division made too great a fight for the success of the other commanding general.

The most significant incident is that the Russians lost twenty-eight guns, and that they were old-fashioned pieces, while the Japanese had guns of the best quality, and had been so energetic that they dragged the light and heavy guns over the river and up the heights, so as to deliver from an excellent position a smashing fire.

It cannot be fancied rationally that the old style guns taken by the Japanese, in order to entice the Japanese officers to go on headlong to get into trouble. If the Russians do not have the best guns to serve in the field the demoralization of the army may be expected.

CHAPTER XX.

BATTLES ON THE YALU.

Fighting on Land and Sea—The Battles on the Yalu—Studies of the Military Experts—Shifting Scenes, Strife and Phases of Public Opinion, as the Combat Deepens and the Interest Incessantly Increases.

IN THE study of the war between the Empires of Russia and Japan, it should be remembered that the first clash of arms was in the first fortnight of February, in the midst of frozen rivers and harbors, and icy seas—the climate that of Siberia which has the reputation of being the most inclement upon our earth, with the exception of the Arctic regions.

The world's attention throughout May was concentrated on the Lower Yalu.

The native Chinese call the lower section of the river Ya-lu, or "Forked Ways." The upper, all above Wi-ju, they call the Ta-chiang, or Great River. The Koreans name the whole Amnok Gang. Opposite and just below Wi-ju, the river is divided by two islands, one of considerable size. Approaching from the sea, one is struck by the low-lying shores, and, if it is low water, by the wide stretch of sandy waste. The tide rises and falls (at spring tides) some 30 feet. The mouth is narrower than most maps would lead one to imagine, still it is wide and often stormy.

Behind Yongampo, and up river to Wi-ju, distance of about 40 miles, and stretching back some five miles, is a fine level plain, well cultivated and dotted over by Korean homesteads. Beyond this plain to the southeast rises a lofty ridge, about 3,000 feet above the plain, which, until recently, was covered by a forest and was a Royal hunting preserve.

Wi-ju or Yi-chu is on a hilly promontory at the upper end of the plain, beautifully situated, as most Korean towns are, with a once fine pavilion on the top of the cliff, which rises about two

hundred feet above the Ya-lu. The Koreans love to have their towns on hills.

The total population is not more than 8,000 or 10,000. Many of the people live in a straggling street along the Seoul road, or the great Imperial highway along which for ages the embassy, bearing tribute passed to China. This road is well made, very like a private coach road, well gravelled, and is about 15 feet wide for the first 20 miles towards An-ju. After this it is more rugged and often only fit for pack animals.

Up the Yalu above Wi-ju there is no important place near the river, the population is sparse, and travelling difficult. The Japanese in 1894 crossed a few miles above the town and took in rear the Chinese army, which was strongly intrenched on the low hills just below Wi-ju on the Manchurian side, at a place called Chin-tien-cheng, or "nine consecutive forts."

TWO CRIPPLING FAULTS OF RUSSIANS.

The Russians found themselves heavily handicapped at the start by two crippling faults of their own—first, the utter surprise of the garrison and squadron provided to defend the offending and obtrusive city and harbor of Port Arthur, already celebrated as a conquest by Japan.

The second surprise and even the more startling of the two, was the inability of the Siberian railroad, which appears to have been known by the Japanese before the Russians made the discovery.

Then came unexpectedly to the Russians and those who were inclined to be friendly with them, that in the tedious negotiations by those in charge of the foreign affairs of the Empires drifting into war.

The Japanese made a substantially fair proposal for peace. The essence of it being that Korea should be within the sphere of Japan, and that Manchuria should be within the sphere of Russia. The refusal of this by the persevering delays of Russia, gave the Japanese the advantage of a generally favorable public opinion of the nations of the earth.

The surprise inflicted upon Russia by the shocking disaster of her navy, was speedily understood by all competent observers, as nothing less than conferring upon Japan the most precious gift she could have asked, the command of the seas, in the center and around the shores of Japan. The sea power that bestowed upon them, the ability to make all the shores of the scenes of the seat of war safely bases of operations, and to a great extent the secret movements of the armies, in competition with these potentialities, the six thousand miles of Russian railroad from the Baltic to the Yellow Sea, became a flagrant and progressively increasing disaster.

Americans were better able to understand the situation than Europeans, because less prejudiced, and in the earlier incidents of the war less interested than others. The writings of Captain Mahan, of the United States Navy, were already famous, and the distinction of the theories of the far-famed Captain were illustrated by the events of the war more and more.

OPINIONS OF UNITED STATES STAFF.

The United States have recently organized a general staff of the army, and it is the application of science and the professional military education, but the discipline of the staff officers does not permit extensive liberality in explanation and construction of movements of fleets and armies, while the great issues are depending, as is noticed in the military experts of the European staffs not particular to maintain a nicely poised neutrality.

There has, however, been given out opinions of the staff officers sufficiently decided in commentary and approximating to a consensus of opinion, that it must be regarded as in a high degree probable, there may be an end of what the people are prone to call the "luck" of Japan, and that on both sides heavy blows have to be taken as well as given.

During the months of February, March and April there was a great deal very confidently stated that while the Japanese were sweeping the seas, they would be unable to cope with the Grand

Army of Russia, of the life of which there happens a persisted over-estimation.

However, the Japanese themselves have not been ignorant of the capacity of the six thousand miles of railway from Western to Eastern Russia. If the staff of the Mikado have not possessed precise information and searching calculations entering into the refinements of the problem, they will have omitted a matter of the first importance, and they are not in the habit of extensive oversights however much they may have of preoccupation.

The "luck" of the Japanese, however, lasted through the most considerable combat of the hostile armies.

THE FIRST BATTLE OF THE FIRST JAPANESE ARMY.

The first army of Japan had a great river to cross, with rough ground beyond, held by Russian troops, and yet the battle was not won by the Russians, who lost position and artillery, and the special reason that the Japanese won the first honors—that is, that the Russian artillery was old style and inferior—is about the most ominous thing that has been said against the Russians.

Another statement cannot be neglected by those who would know the truth of history thoroughly. It is that, as a rule, when there is a brisk and heavy exchange of artillery fire, the Japan guns are served with better, stronger, more destructive ammunition, and directed with finer marksmanship than their foes have used.

The battle on the Yalu, May 1st, was a most interesting one, presenting a series of phases of uncommon significance. The military experts of Europe have dwelt upon the vicissitudes of the day, and the army of Japan does not lose honors in the course of the most incisive analysis.

The greater of the British journals (the *Times*) commenting with measured pace on the importance to Japan of this victory on the Yalu, says:

"The silence which has hung over the land campaign is broken at last by news which marks an epoch in the military history of the world. Russia, at the hands of the new Power in the

Far East, has suffered the greatest defeat that has ever befallen her arms upon Asiatic soil since Yermak the Cossack crossed the Urals.

“Japan has pierced the Manchurian frontier, shattered General Kuropatkin’s positions upon the Yalu at the first blow, and seized one of the strategical keys of the whole military situation. The territory occupied by her adversary is laid open to her invading armies, and at a moment when thirty thousand of the Tsar’s troops are in retreat before the Mikado’s forces, Russia must suddenly awake to the fact that she has equally miscalculated her prospects on land and sea.

“This is a great event. It is probably the prelude to greater, and henceforth the action of this supreme drama may be expected to develop rapidly upon more than one side of the scene of war.

RUSSIA WORSTED ON THE YALU AS AT PLEVNA.

“It is difficult to realize the full significance of what has happened; but two things at least are clear. Since the first repulse before the slopes of Plevna, Russia has known no such reverse as that which has been inflicted upon her in the struggle for the Yalu—her present misfortune being the more serious in every respect, since she failed then before a fortified position, but has now been driven out of one in spite of all the advantage conferred by modern weapons upon the defence. The second unquestionable point is that Dai Nippon, upon the field of Gen. Kuroki’s victory, has established her military status as a Great Power no less completely than her naval.

“Whatever the future course of the land campaign—and the horoscope of the conflict cannot be drawn from one battle, however decisively the first brilliant move may have been made—nothing is likely henceforth to extinguish the importance of Japan as a main and permanent factor in world policy.”

Five days after the May Day battle, the same high authority, after reading the reports from the high officers of the Japanese army, said:

“There are not wanting military observers on the Continent,

or at all events in Germany, who fully appreciate the soldierly qualities which the Japanese last displayed in the North China campaign of 1900. But Japan had not yet encountered a European foe, and the Russian army occupied a deservedly high place in the general estimation for its qualities of courage and untiring perseverance. The combatants have now met, and Japanese soldiers have proved themselves more than a match for the redoubted European foe."

A most valuable review of the reports of the highest officers of the Russian army of the first serious meeting of the Japanese and Russian armies has been written, and is here reproduced.

REMARKS ON REPORTS OF RUSSIAN GENERALS.

"The reports of General Sassulitch and General Kashtalinsky—who was erroneously stated to have been amongst the killed—will not lessen the impression which has been produced throughout the world by the Japanese victory of Chin-lien-cheng. They form an instructive commentary on the silly assurances which are repeated from Berlin, as well as from Paris, that there has been 'no serious fighting,' that the engagement was nothing but a series of 'skirmishes,' that 'concentration on the rear' has long been recognized by the Russian military authorities as inevitable, and that what has occurred on the Yalu has been foreseen by the court and by the General Staff.

"They show, what indeed was clear enough from the original Japanese report, that the action was on a very considerable scale, that it was contested by the Russians until further resistance would have jeopardized their entire force, that they were driven back with heavy losses in men and in guns, and that the Japanese cavalry followed hard upon the retreating troops to the immediate neighborhood of Feng-hwang-chenn.

"General Sassulitch admits that at the date of his despatch, two days after the battle, he was still ignorant of the extent of his losses, but he acknowledges that 800 wounded, including 14 officers, had been brought into Feng-hwang-chenn, that the casualties of the Eleventh and Twelfth Regiments were 'very heavy,' and that

the former had lost its colonel and two lieutenant-colonels killed and the latter nine company officers killed and wounded

“General Kashtalinsky puts the loss of the Eleventh Regiment alone, which seems to have sustained the honor of the Russian arms with great heroism, at 20 officers ‘and about 300 non-commissioned officers and men,’ and he adds that more than 200 wounded men—apparently all of the Third Division only—marched with their regiments to Feng-hwang-chenn.

“The Russian Generals have but little to add to the story of the loss of their guns, General Sassulitch admitting that 26 were abandoned to the enemy. His subordinate tells us that one officer at least endeavored to remove his battery by hand, after half his men and all his horses had been killed, while another battery tried vainly to escape over the mountain slopes.

BEATEN RUSSIAN TROOPS PRAISED BY OFFICERS.

“General Sassulitch affirms, of course, that the courage of his men is unshaken, ‘notwithstanding their heavy losses,’ and that they are ready for fresh engagements. Sturdy and tenacious fighters though the Russians have proved themselves to be on many a blood-stained field, the *Kreuz Zeitung* is doubtless right when it observes that this ‘palpable reverse’ must certainly ‘produce visible effects upon the spirit and *morale* of the troops.’

“The Russian Generals do not afford us any positive information as to the numbers engaged on their side, though they are confident that they were greatly exceeded by those of the enemy. That is not unlikely, though it is quite possible that they had a considerable force in the neighborhood which was never brought up, but was compelled to join in the retreat.

“The Russian Generals seek to console themselves and their countrymen and sympathizers by the reflection that the enemy must have suffered very heavily, particularly at the passage of the Aiho, at the capture of the Tur-en-cheng position, and on the hill held by the two battalions of the Eleventh Regiment.

“They did suffer heavily, and we have the preliminary report of their own medical authorities and General Kuroki’s statements

as to the approximate extent of their losses, but we know from these sources that the declarations of 'men who took part in the battle, which General Sassulitch thinks it worth while to repeat, to the effect that at least 3000 or 4000 Japanese were killed, are grotesque exaggerations.

"The suggestion which is repeated at several points in this officer's report, that the enemy, who so completely out-generalled and out-fought him, showed a reluctance to come to close quarters, stands in disagreeable contrast to the soldierly spirit in which his colleague, General Kashtalinsky, and his adversary, General Kuroki, bear witness to the splendid courage displayed by their several opponents. He states that the Japanese did not resort to the bayonet, that they could not make up their minds to come down and face the fire of the Russian batteries at Tu-ren-cheng, that they declined a hand-to-hand conflict and recoiled, and that their horse did not venture to approach a Russian detachment near Fen-hwang-chenn.

DELICATE QUESTIONS OF FACTS IN BATTLE.

"If these expressions were not designed to insinuate want of courage in the Japanese, they are singularly infelicitous. If they were intended to convey that imputation, they are both foolish and demonstrably false. General Kashtalinsky's account of the attack upon his position across the Ai-ho, and even General Sassulitch's own statement that Japanese bodies lay 'in heaps' at the fords, is proof enough, if proof were needed, that the Russians were beaten by enemies who are to the full as brave as they are skilful. Their skill, and the want of skill on the part of the Russians, appear again and again from passages in the Russian reports.

"General Kashtalinsky states that his ~~his~~ flank had been turned and the heights of Khosan, which commanded it, had been occupied by the Japanese. Nevertheless he received explicit orders to remain in his position. It was again turned during the action, after the rout of the Twenty-second Regiment, and General Sassulitch explains the abandonment of the Russian trenches by the fact that they were enfiladed by the enemy and that his supports

could not be brought up in time. The Japanese criticism on the Russian strategy is very severe. It displays, they say, the same defect as that of the Chinese in 1894—namely, a want of offensive initiative.”

THE EMPERORS AT WAR FORCING THE FIRES.

The Emperor of Russia returned May 21st to St. Petersburg from Moscow where he made a fiery speech, saying Russia would be the dictator of peace when it came. A member of his suite said on returning:

“It has done His Majesty an immense amount of good. It was the first time really that he had been in close, intimate touch with his people, and their enthusiasm and loyalty deeply affected him. He is now convinced that the nation at large is heart and soul with him in this war.

“The splendid bearing of the troops, although many of them were reserve men, satisfied the Emperor that he could rely upon them. The journey, indeed, infused new strength into both the nation and the ruler.

“Touching evidences of the deep affection of the peasants were given at many places. I recall one in particular. The Emperor slept at a monastery near Kremenchug. Early in the morning he went out for a walk attended only by an aide-de-camp, thinking to pass unnoticed through the village. But the peasants at once recognized His Majesty, and the news of his presence spread like wildfire.

“Hundreds of peasants soon collected, forming a devoted bodyguard. The Emperor talked to them in simple language, telling them that their little mother, Russia, had need of her sons in the Far East.

“The oldest of the peasants alone ventured to reply, it being contrary to the patriarchal custom of village life for the young to lift their voices in matters of moment. They said:

“‘You are our sunlight. Show us the way and we will follow. Our lives and all we have are yours.’

“The bodyguard kept growing, and when the Emperor at last

reached his quarters there were several thousand smiling, delighted peasants about him."

St. Petersburg, Monday, May 23.—Considerable irritation is manifested by the newspapers over the suggestion made by M. Dubail, the French Minister, at Peking, that a congress of the Powers be held for the purpose of effecting a conclusion of the war. The *Novoe Vremya*, says :

"The war is Russia's personal affair and she asks no one's assistance. When it is ended she will negotiate with the Mikado, but not with Europe. Therefore, we regret that the representative of Russia's ally should be the first to pronounce the word 'congress.'"

The same newspaper, speaking of the reception of the news of the Japanese naval disaster by the British press, says :

A CHANGE IN THE MUSIC.

"The hymn of uninterrupted triumph by Japan, which was sung by the friendly choir of the English press, has been changed by a few pounds of dynamite from allegro maestoso to agitato assai."

The Chinese Minister says China will not seek to participate in any congress at the conclusion of the war. Her negotiations will be direct with the Power occupying Manchuria. The Minister continues to insist that China is determined not to become involved in the war.

The United States Embassy has forwarded to the Japanese Minister at Berlin the names of the officers and men captured on the transport *Kinshu* and other Japanese ships sunk by the Russians.

Although the removal of duties on goods imported at all the Asiatic ports of Russia has been adopted as a war measure, to attract the importation of foodstuffs and leave the Siberian Railroad free during the war, no specific date or limit is placed upon its operations.

"Three splendid horses, were captured at the Yalu battle by General Kuroki, and presented to the Emperor. They were taken to

the palace, where they were inspected. Two of them are Russian bred, and the other is an Arabian.

"About 300 sick and slightly wounded men of General Kuroki's army arrived at the military hospital at Tokyo, with several guns, wagons and ambulances captured at the Yalu River, which will be presented to the Emperor.

"The Japanese are exercising great care with the food and general treatment of the Russian prisoners at Matsuyama. The rations include liberal allowances of meat, bread and tea daily. The prisoners' quarters are clean and sanitary. The majority of the wounded are making good progress.

"The Empress of Japan, the court ladies and the ladies of the foreign legations visited the Red Cross Hospital, inspected the arrangements and talked with a few wounded and sick soldiers.

"Dr. Anita McGee, of Philadelphia, who is in Japan in connection with Red Cross work, was received by Her Majesty, and accompanied the party to Tokyo.

"There is no discussion or dream of speedy peace, unless in that most remote country, The Hague."

CHAPTER XXI.

THE BATTLE ON NAN SHAN HILL.

Assaults on the Outer Lines of Port Arthur—Capture of the Walled Town of Kin Chou—Sixteen Hours Hand to Hand Fighting—Japanese Lines Raked With Artillery and Rifle Fire—Heavy Losses on Both Sides.

THE assaults on the outer lines of Port Arthur and the capture of the works at Kin Chou and Nan Shan reveal the character and extent of the sacrifice that must be made before the attack may hope to overcome a defence inspired by such equal intrepidity and self-abnegation. The persistency of the Japanese columns in the face of obstacles that might without dishonor be considered insuperable, and the dogged resistance of the Russians confronted by such odds, are alike beyond all praise.

As in all frontal attacks, the losses have been appalling. The acceptance of this tactical necessity by the skilled soldiers of Japan shows how important the mastery of Port Arthur is deemed, and leads to the sad conclusion that human life is to be as nothing in the hazards of the desperate game of war. The physical obstacles and the tactical preparations complicating the siege of Port Arthur are even beyond those that give Sebastopol and Plevna a memorable place in military annals, and the world must be prepared for tallies of death and suffering that will stagger humanity and disgrace its boasted civilization.

The fortifications of Port Arthur extend in two lines for nearly three miles on the northern and northwestern sides, and command all the high background of the fortress. The guns mounted in these and in the coast works exceed four hundred in number, and supplementing them is a general defensive system that is said to be adequately manned and to be as complete in essentials as tactical ingenuity and lavish expenditure can provide. The preliminary operations on the peninsula have demonstrated the courage and

obstinacy that will be united in the service of these forts, batteries and auxiliaries, and, though Port Arthur may fall, it will be only after a struggle that justifies the inspiring words of the officer commanding the beleaguered garrison.

One Japanese army swept the Russians before it toward Port Arthur, and another gradually drew near General Kuropatkin's defenses at Liao Yang.

After the most desperate land battle of the war, the Japanese army that is moving on Port Arthur is following up the victories, won at the cost of thousands of lives, by a close pursuit of the Russians toward that fortress. At Kin Chou and Nan Shan Hill, at the narrow end of Kwan Tung peninsula, the Japs covered themselves with glory, details of the storming of Nan Shan Hill, which is with a steep height of many hundreds of feet, showing that assault followed assault before the defenders were driven away.

The Russians retreated towards Nan Quan Ling, with the Japanese on their heels.

At the same time General Kuroki's army is moving steadily north against Kuropatkin. Japs have occupied the strongholds on their way north, there being two movements, one against Liao Yang and the other against Hai Cheng. Skirmishing marks the Japanese advance through Manchuria.

BATTLE RAGED FOR SIXTEEN HOURS.

The Japanese army has swept the Russians from Kin Chou and in a desperate attack stormed and captured the almost impregnable position of the Russians on Nan Shan Hill, west of Talienswan. The battle raged in the hills all through the night as the Japanese pursued the Russians south from Nan Shan and the head of Talienswan Bay.

The Russians had made elaborate preparations to check the Japanese movement south on the Liao Tung peninsula toward Port Arthur. They had fortified the high ground on the south shore of Talienswan Bay, their works extending to the east and the west. The extreme Russian right was at Hushangtao, and the extreme left at Nan Shan Hill.

This hill was the strongest part of the line; a series of batteries, strongly emplaced, crowded its crest, while rifle pits extended around its sides. Mines had been placed lower down on this hill, and around the base on the northern and eastern sides were stretched well-made wire entanglements.

Another line of defences, also protected with wire entanglements, extended from Yen Chia Tung, near the head of Talienwan Bay, due north of Liu Chia Tien, which lies south of Kin Chou.

A strong Russian force was posted at Kin Chou. It consisted of infantry and artillery.

JAP LINES FACED WEST AND SOUTH.

The Japanese first occupied the line of hills to the east of Kin Chou. Their position had formed an almost perfect right angle, showing its southern front to Talienwan and its western front to Kin Chou. Chiu Li Chan village was the apex of this angle; the extreme right of the Japanese line rested at Chen Cha Tien, which is almost due north of Chiu Li Chan, while the extreme left was at Chai Lsu Ho, a village due east of Chiu Li Chan. Back of this angle the attacking force assembled in complete security.

The Russians attempted to draw the Japanese attack, for their batteries opened fire slowly on the enemy. The Japanese, however, refused to be drawn into an attack until the positions of the Russians, their guns and their strength had been fully developed. To this end the Japanese began a series of careful manoeuvres, their officers working their way close enough to the Russian positions to draw the enemy's fire. They thus secured fragments of shells for the purpose of ascertaining the caliber of the Russian guns.

They discovered that the batteries on Nan Shan Hill included four heavy howitzers, ten old-style cannon and two quick-firing guns. The Japanese also discovered a number of large emplacements, but they did not learn the number of guns contained therein. These emplacements faced to the north and to the east.

The Russians had eight heavy guns posted on their right in the vicinity of Hushangtao, and another strong Russian position developed by these reconnaissances was on another hill southwest

of Nan Shan Hill, where the Russians had a series of shelter trenches.

On the shore of Talienwan Bay, close to the head of the bay, the Russians had established a series of positions. Here were set up the searchlights which nightly played over the Japanese angle in the hills to the northeast.

Further reconnaissances developed the fact that west of Liu Chia Tien the Russians had no defenses. Extending to the northward from Yan Chia Tien to the west coast of the Liao Tung peninsula there were no defenses whatever, except the force posted at Kin Chou.

This gap in the defense was a fatal defect in the Russian position, and when it was perceived the Japanese extended their right to the north and east, enveloping Kin Chou and the Russian extreme right. The Japanese left also was extended to Yen Chia Tung, on the shore of Talienwan Bay, and the center moved forward.

DESPERATE BATTLE ON THE HILL.

At half-past five in the morning the Japanese attacked Kin Chou, and for three hours they had an artillery duel with the batteries on Nan Shan Hill. The Russian gunners searched the Japanese lines with their fire, but failed to inflict much damage.

The battle was resumed at dawn the next day.

Three Japanese gunboats then entered Kin Chou Bay and in co-operation with the artillery on shore shelled the Russian positions on Nan Shan hill.

A Russian gunboat in Talienwan Bay steamed close to the shore and shelled the Japanese left. From dawn the batteries on both sides hammered away at each other.

At an early hour the Japanese infantry moved forward, and entered Kin Chou, the Russians retiring to the south.

The firing continued into the night, the Japanese pressing to the south and storming Nan Shan Hill. They followed the retreating Russians through the southern hills.

All reports indicate that the storming of Nan Shan Hill was a very bloody affair. The Japanese first centered their fire on the

Russian batteries, in which work they were aided by the four gunboats from Kin Chou Bay. They succeeded in silencing many of the enemy's guns.

The Japanese made a series of rushes, but they were in vain. The deadly rifle and cannon fire of the enemy checked them repeatedly.

Finally, at 3 o'clock in the afternoon, the Japanese reformed and stormed the crest of the hill. The Russians held their position doggedly, and it was 7 o'clock in the evening before the Japanese finally gained possession of the ridge. Then the Russians retreated toward Nan Ouan Ling, where a second line of defenses existed.

The Russians had a series of mines planted at Tafangshan station on the railroad, which were exploded. The station was destroyed.

A Japanese officer of high rank made the following statement:

"The Japanese in attacking Kin Chou and Nan Shan Hill had to fight against great odds. The Russians were in full command of the strategical advantages afforded by nature, and these advantages were augmented by the newest inventions for defense. The forts on Nan Shan Hill were armed with heavy guns. The Japanese had only field guns, heavy guns being unavailable on account of the difficulties of transportation.

"Our army deserves great credit for having driven the Russians from this stronghold; it was a feat previously considered to have been impossible. We have gained the strongest point barring our way to the investment of Port Arthur."

TEN KILLED ON JAPANESE FLOTILLA.

The following report has been received from Admiral Togo:

"The gunboats Thukishi, Heiyen, Amagi and Chokai and the first torpedo boat flotilla, under Captain Nishiyama, reached Kin Chou on Wednesday, May 25th. From dawn on Thursday the vessels co-operated with the army in bombarding Suchaton. The Amagi and the Chokai went in close and bombarded all day.

At 11 o'clock in the morning the enemy retreated from Suchaton, but they continued to fire from a position behind Suchaton.

"Our casualties were ten, including Captain Hayashi, of the Chokai, who was killed. The vessels were little damaged."

The general staff here has received telegrams from the commanders, commending the bravery and fortitude of their men.

THE BATTLE OF NANSHAN HILL.

Nanshan Hill must hold high place in Japanese history—and, for that matter, in the history of the world. The story of the battle which won it and lost it removes the last vestige of doubt as to the adequacy of the "little brown man" when pitted against the Russian.

At first it seemed that the fighting at the Yalu had done that, but many persons accepted General Kuropatkin's assertions in good faith and believed there was no real intention to contest the Japanese advance at the Korean border. This view of the matter weakened the moral effect of what was undoubtedly a demonstration of superior prowess.

But, if Kiulien-cheng was the result of a headstrong general's failure to properly carry out prearranged plans, no such plea can be made with regard to Nanshan. This hill, which is entitled to be called a mountain, being more than two thousand feet high, is the key to the position which is the key to the approach to Port Arthur.

Lying at the narrowest part of the Liaotung peninsula, or, to speak more specifically, upon the isthmus connecting Kwangtung with the larger peninsula, it afforded opportunities of defense almost as great as those of the fortifications of Port Arthur itself.

On the Yalu, time did not allow—and the Russians declare intention was lacking—for the completion of elaborate entrenchments. At Nanshan Hill time was ample and intention was given full scope. From Dalny, on the Russian right, to Nanshan, on the left, the isthmus had been made strong. Nature had done much to make the position impregnable, and the Russians did their best to supplement nature's work. Earthworks were thrown

up; in front of them the ground was gridironed with barbed wire, and catacombed with mines. Giant guns were put in place, and the whole was heavily garrisoned.

It would seem that such a position would be susceptible of successful defense against a vastly superior force. It was, from all accounts, desperately defended—but not successfully. Yet the fight was peculiarly one of man against man.

The Japanese are admitted on every hand to have displayed during the entire war an almost diabolical ingenuity in the manipulation of modern engineering. But the Russian has been held to be superior when it came to close fighting—though how that combination of circumstances can be cited as evidence of greater civilization we are unable to see.

Nanshan Hill was too high to be reached by the guns of warships. The Japanese had not been able to bring up heavy siege guns. Covered by lighter field artillery, their infantry went at this apparently impregnable hill.

Ten times they were driven back. Regiments were rent asunder by exploding mines; whole companies, entangled in barbed wire, were cut to pieces by a murderous fire. With the eleventh assault they took the hill, at the point of the bayonet. In hand to hand conflict Europe had been worsted by Asia.

Of course, with the capture of Nanshan Hill, the Russian left flank was turned, and that fact rendered the whole line of defense untenable. There was little else to do except to fall back, fighting, upon Port Arthur.

Japanese official reports place their losses at 3000, which shows the stubbornness of the Russian resistance. But it also shows the determination of the victors.

PORT ARTHUR—1894-1904.

The Japanese operations in Korea and Manchuria in 1904 have followed with surprising fidelity the plan of those conducted against the Chinese in 1894. The same landing places have been used, the same roads followed, the same positions, formations and moving tactics employed. Thus far this military policy has pre-

vailed against the Russians, as it did against the Chinese; not, indeed, so easily. Nevertheless, though at a cost of life immeasurably greater, the plans of Japan's armies have been successfully prosecuted. We come now to the moment when the tactics which in 1894 took Chinese Port Arthur are to be set in operation against that stronghold defended by a Caucasian garrison.

To-day the Japanese stand precisely where they stood on the evening of November 6, 1894. They have now taken Kinchau and the hills around it, with the loss of 3,000 men. In 1894 the corresponding victory cost them less than an hour's fighting and thirty men.

A FORK OF THE ROAD THAT IS FAMOUS.

Two roads run from Kinchau, the neck of Kwantung Peninsula, to Port Arthur—or rather the road forks ten miles south of Kinchau, the main branch following the railroad, skirting on the west the mountainous backbone of the peninsula and entering Port Arthur from the north; the other branch following the eastern shore and entering the city from the east. The latter road is commanded by the forts at Dalny. If both it and the main road are not now defended also by a continuous line of trenches, with frequent heavy works, the Russians have failed inexcusably to take advantage of the natural defences of the country.

On November 7, 1894, the Chinese abandoned Dalny. On the 19th the Japanese advance guard marched down the main road twenty-five miles, encountering no opposition, and took position just out of range of the guns on the outer forts around Port Arthur. Three columns, aggregating 6000 Chinese, assayed a sally against this party, the effect of which would have been disastrous had it been pushed with any vigor. In fact, the Chinese were dispersed by a few rounds of artillery without having themselves fired a shot.

The main Japanese army was but a few miles behind, on the same road, while a detachment of cavalry, with a regiment of infantry, approached by the eastern road.

Port Arthur is surrounded at a distance of two miles by a circuit of hills from 300 to 600 feet in height. These were then, as

they are now, crowned with a series of forts connected by redoubts and trenches, the works stretching completely around the city and being broken only at three points—namely, at the entrance of the two roads before mentioned and the mouth of the harbor. The forts on the north look down on a valley a mile and a half wide, on the other side of which rise hills of height equal to and at some points greater than that of the range immediately encircling the city.

A GAP IN THE FORTIFIED LINE.

These hills the Chinese had neglected to fortify. They were occupied by the Japanese on the 20th. Before light on the morning of the 21st the forces were disposed for an attack on the line of the Chinese forts. When the day broke forty siege mortars, field and mountain guns began pouring shell across the valley. The Chinese replied, but their practice was bad. At the end of an hour's artillery duel the Chinese firing grew weak. A brigade was launched against one of the forts on the elevation just west of the main road, known as Table Heights. A thousand Chinamen sallied out to meet it, but turned and fled on receiving a few volleys. Reaching the foot of the hill, the brigade halted to reform, then advanced up the shell-swept slope as if on parade—so say contemporary accounts—and with cheers at the top swept the defenders from the parapets, and turned the guns upon them and upon the two remaining forts on that hill, whose defenders at once abandoned them.

The strongest forts still remained—those stretching from the western road north and east to the shore, their chief strength lying in what were then known as Forts Shofuzan and Niruzan, on hills respectively 400 and 600 feet high. The plan was to reduce these by means of the heaviest artillery before sending the second brigade against them. The plan miscarried, the difficulty of dragging up the long-range guns to and mounting them in the position selected for them being so great that they were not ready to play. The infantry nevertheless advanced up the hill. Meanwhile the detachment coming by the eastern road was approaching, marching steadily under a hot fire. As the assault was begun,

Japanese torpedo boats, which they found close to shore in Takhe Bay, a point from which they could enfilade the Chinese forts, opened fire upon them. Halfway up the hill the storming party was momentarily overwhelmed by a series of terrific explosions in their faces—the hillside had been mined. The Chinese had, however, set the mines off too soon. What might, nevertheless, have demoralized the best troops of the world, had no effect upon the Japanese, who, pressing forward, seized the heights, finding, in fact, no formidable opposition at the summit.

The road to the town was still defended by Chinese, entrenched with repeating rifles. The Japanese found it impossible to advance in the face of the galling fire which was rained down upon the road, but a detachment succeeded in creeping upon the flank of the trenches and in driving their occupants.

The first siege gun had spoken at 6 o'clock that morning; it was a little after four in the afternoon when the Japanese flag was floated over the last fort, on Golden Hill, and the Chief of Staff, turning to General Ozama, said: "Field Marshal, I believe Port Arthur is now in the hands of our soldiers."

The Japanese captured, in less than eleven hours, the fortress before which they now stand, garrisoned this time by troops of another nation. It was just fifty years ago that troops of that nation held another fortress eleven months, and slew sixty thousand of the enemy before they yielded it. Which is likely to be repeated in 1904, the story of Port Arthur in 1894 or of Sevastopol in 1854?

FURTHER DETAILS OF THE FIERCE FIGHTING AT NANSHAN HILL.

The rushes of the Japanese troops up the slopes to the positions from which the Russians were driven were executed in the most brilliant manner. The most notable feature of the fighting was the manner in which all the Japanese movements were made in unbroken order.

The Russians had at Nanshan fifty cannon of mixed calibre, besides two batteries of quick firers, concealed in the shelter of loop-holed trenches. The quick firers retired to the highest posi-

tions during the climax of the battle. The Japanese artillery silenced some of the Russian cannon at 11 o'clock in the morning, and then the infantry advanced under a severe fire and penetrated to within 500 yards of the Russian lines. There they were stopped by entanglements and mines. Meanwhile the Russian infantry and quick firers kept up an unabated fire.

Finally, the Japanese infantry secured a position within 200 yards and repeatedly charged openings in the entanglements. Men were killed within twenty yards of the trenches.

Then the Japanese artillery bombarded the Russian position again, and, finally, in the evening, the entire Japanese line rushed the weakest points and carried the hill, capturing all the guns in their emplacements.

AN IMPERIAL JAPANESE BULLETIN.

Further details of the battle of Nanshan Hill are contained in the following despatch, received at the Japanese Legation from the Imperial Government at Tokio:

"The attack on Nanshan Hill commenced at 4.30 A. M. of the 26th. The enemy's defensive works were of a permanent nature. Their infantry ranged in two or three lines in covered trenches with loopholes, and emplaced machine guns on important points and offered a stubborn resistance.

"We ranged all our field guns upon the forts and the enemy's principal artillery, and silenced eleven of them, and while quick firers previously retired to Nankwanling and continued firing until night, our artillery concentrated fire upon the enemy's trenches and our infantry forces advanced to within four or five hundred yards from the enemy's position, but the wire entanglements and mines lay before us, and the enemy's infantry and the machine guns, which yet remained unabated, kept up firing upon us.

"Finally our infantry forces approached within three hundred yards of the enemy's position and tried several charges, but these still proved unsuccessful, officers and men falling within twenty or thirty yards of the enemy's position.

"Thereupon our artillery began a heavy firing, and in the

evening, during severest cannonading, the last charge was made and the breach was opened with great difficulty, through which we gained the whole height, expelled the enemy, and captured all the guns on the forts.

The assault on Nan Shan Hill was one of the fiercest and bloodiest affairs of modern warfare. In the earlier rushes of the engagement every man who charged was shot down before he reached the first line of Russian trenches.

It was found necessary to stop these infantry charges and renew the artillery fire from the rear before the successful assault on the Russian position could be made. The success of this charge was brought about by one detachment of Japanese troops, more intrepid than their comrades, who succeeded in piercing the Russian line.

A STROKE OF FORTUNE FOR JAPAN.

A splendid stroke of fortune was the discovery and destruction by the Japanese of the electric wires leading to the mines at the eastern foot of the hill. This prevented the Russians from exploding these mines when the Japanese infantry crossed the ground where they had been placed. It is possible that the fortune of the day hinged upon these mines. If the Russians had been able to explode them at the right time the losses among the Japanese troops would have been tremendous, and it is possible that the Russians would have been able to hold the hill.

Encounters between Cossacks and Japanese infantry are of daily occurrence. The Japanese foot soldiers are able to easily deal with their mounted foes.

Operations on a wide scale are being conducted with characteristic celerity. Japanese troops are advancing with great rapidity toward the northwest of this position, and there is a further movement toward the northeast.

A Japanese force, consisting of a battalion of infantry and a squadron of cavalry, on May 25, advanced along the Liaoyang road, but was soon compelled to retire toward Koumendza.

Another Japanese detachment, consisting of a battalion of infantry, occupied a position on the heights of the village of Dapu.

The Cossack's attack was received with a violent fusillade, lasting from 10 o'clock in the morning until 4 o'clock in the afternoon, but the Japanese failed in the attempt to turn the right flank of the Cossacks and intercept their retreat.

Two companies of Japanese scouts surprised a camp of 2,500 Russian troops on the 26th, seven miles west of Kuanjenain. The Russians, ignorant of the small numbers of the attacking force, fled in great disorder, leaving behind two guns and many dead.

DALNY IN FLAMES.

When the Fifth Division of General Oku's army occupied Dalny, they found the town in flames, it having been set on fire by the fleeing Russians.

The spread of the fire was, however, stopped by heroic measures, and the port and town are being utilized as a base of supplies for the second army during the investment of Port Arthur.

The Japanese found that the Russians had evacuated the town and port after attempting to burn or otherwise destroy everything which might be of use to the enemy.

The Russians blew up the gunboat *Bobr*, which lay in the harbor, and which had taken part in the battle by bombarding General Oku's position east of Nanshan Hill. They also blew up three Russian torpedo boats and scuttled three large merchantmen—the *Borea*, the *Zeid* and the *Nagadan*—besides many dredges and several steam launches. They also set fire to scores of offices, residences and warehouses, and destroyed some of the railroad sidings.

Unsuccessful attempts were made by the Russians to destroy the docks and piers, and the Japanese, when they occupied the place, found that more than 100 warehouses and barracks, besides the telegraph offices and the railroad station, were uninjured. Many small railroad bridges were destroyed and the great pier was sunk, but nearly all the dock piers were uninjured, and some 200 railroad cars were found in good condition on the tracks. Seven steam launches in the harbor had escaped destruction.

While so much was left undone by the Russians in the way of destroying piers, warehouses, barracks, railroad stations, tracks,

rolling stock and other material, which will be of great value to the enemy for military purposes, they ruthlessly set on fire or blew up many houses belonging to private residents, mostly foreigners.

It seemed as if there had been a deliberate effort to cause as much damage as possible. The section on the hill east of the town, where more than 150 of the best residences were located, was a mass of smoking ruins when the Japanese troops entered.

BANDITS PILLAGED THE TOWN.

For nearly four days, between Thursday, when the Russians fled, and Monday, when the Japanese troops appeared, the town of Dalny was the prey of hundreds of Chinese bandits, who pillaged the houses and stores and levied tribute upon such civilians as remained.

One junk which was leaving Dalny was sunk by bandits, and fifty persons were drowned.

Five hundred refugees from Dalny said that they fled, not because they were afraid of the Russians or the Japanese, but because of fear of the bandits. The bandits were pillaging the town when the Japanese troops appeared.

The Russian battleship, *Petrovavlovsk*, and the Japanese giant, *Hatsuse*, were destroyed without loss to the enemy of a man or a ship's boat. A mine, floating or stationary, did the work, sending hundreds of men into eternity in the space of two minutes and converting into irrecoverable junk a mighty fabric costing millions of dollars. There is no hope for a big battleship ambushed, as one may say, by a mine. Mines do not cost much—they are within the reach of any little one-horse nation. Venezuela might defend her ports effectually by hiring an expert in explosives and the materials to compose them. The money spent on a third-class cruiser would pay for 2,000 mines, and if one in one hundred blew up a battleship, a blockading squadron would not last long. The man who could invent a movable and dirigible mine, guaranteed to keep going for two hours, would put an end to war on the sea. Launched against an unsuspecting squadron about dusk by ar

innocent looking merchant steamer, these awful instruments of war would send the leviathans to the bottom before the crews had time to pater a prayer. The floating mine has become a greater terror than the torpedo tube. The hornet of a boat that carries the torpedo can be dealt with by an alert combatant. "If you go hunting a squadron of torpedo boats," says a well-known authority, "they will have quite enough to occupy them in looking out for themselves," and of the dreaded submarine he says: "It is a somewhat handicapped torpedo boat, inasmuch as its apparent advantage of temporary invisibility is naturalized by lack of speed."

But no defense is possible against the floating mine. The peace societies, however, should not be horrified by its pernicious activity. They ought rather to pray for the coming of a genius who should make it travel unobtrusively along the surface of the water "oft in the stilly night." No searchlight, however vivid, would discover it. The Russo-Japanese war promises to be a great educator and humanizer. In sensibility for the wounded and mourning for the heroic dead, no two enemies were ever so thoughtful in the history of the world. But why make horrid war if you are going to be so nice and sorry, the humanitarians well ask. Why not be good to one another, and leave war to nude savages with clubs and blow-guns who have no poetry or religion? There may be a powerful sentiment that way after the navies of Russia and Japan have met in the shock of battle on the high seas, and thousands of men have been blown sky-high by land mines and mowed down by Gatling guns. Then The Hague convention will be popular—until the horrors of the war have paled and the budget-makers have ceased to count the cost.

CHAPTER XXII.

SPLENDID SERIES OF BATTLE SCENES.

The First Army of Japan Passing the Yalu—Bravery of Both Belligerents—The Tremendous Play of Artillery—Military Spectacles Magnificent—Grand Charges of the Stormers—How Victory was Won by the Toilsome Patience that Perfects Preparation.

AMERICAN JOURNALISM was first to give the world a full and circumstantial account by a competent eye-witness of the very important battles in which the Japanese crossed the Yalu River. We quote the splendid battle pictures forwarded by the correspondent of the New York *Herald* with the first army of Japan.

It will interest the people of the North American Continent that the short cut managed to send first the news of the most picturesque battle of the war in Manchuria to the American press, and that means the press of Europe and the world, via. Victoria, B. C. The date of the memorable battle was May the 2d, at Kiulien-cheng, Manchuria, and published June 2.

Just a month passed in transmission. In this case it is not the instantaneous announcement of an event that arouses the attention of the people and gratifies their desire to read the full story of the great combat, and enjoy the spectacle as the eye-witness pen-painted it. The painting is not the product of a flash light, but a work of art shining in colors. The eye-witness of the battles, who has presented them in such vivid tints, clearly defined details of self-evident accuracy and the grand music of the great guns. His opening line is that in two days' battle for the possession and crossing of the Yalu River, General Kuroki, the commander of the first of the armies of Japan, scored a victory complete and far reaching, and the place where the letter was written, that all the enlight-

ened world will read, was a Korean town, on the banks of the famous river, opposite Wiju, a very familiar name on the maps, and in all the writings of the conflicts that leave no day unstained with blood.

It is a happy stroke of the correspondent to call attention to the perfection of the preparation of the Japanese for action, taking all particulars into account. It is about five thousand yards from Wiju to Kiulien-cheng, and the river flows in three channels between stretches of sand. On the Korean side is a range of hills from two to three miles from the Russian position. There are little valleys like pockets between the hills, and "this formation of country afforded General Kuroki an opportunity to conceal his movements from the enemy.

THE GENIUS OF JAPAN IN PREPARATION.

"The hills and valleys of Korea undoubtedly aided the wide-awake General to conceal from the enemy that he had brought up his whole army and was ready."

On the Japanese side of the river was a screen to conceal the masses of Japanese troops. This screen was the ambushade of an army, and there was under cover, secret and silent, batteries of howitzers that far outclassed the Russian artillery.

An English writer says of this: "The Russians believed that the enemy possessed field guns only and their positions were calculated to deal with artillery of that calibre alone. For the same reason they had taken no pains to mask their guns. When the Japanese opened upon them with several howitzer batteries they must have been thunderstruck."

Much has been justly said of the bravery of Russians on the field, but there is no trace of generalship. The story wired everywhere that the Russians fought so long as to spoil a great strategem, has no confirmation. The redeeming feature on the Russian side is that they did fight, and there is no show that there was a high commander. The great feature of the battle, that will give it celebrity, was the spectacular splendor—and the great guns of the Japanese were a sudden wonder.

A Philadelphia journal gives this editorial appreciation of the account we quote in this history of the war :

“Written on the field of battle, while the guns were still echoing and the smoke hanging over the scarred hills, it brings before the reader a vivid picture of the realities of war, and furnishes to military experts invaluable information.

“When the Russians opened in the morning the Japanese replied with all their thirty-six guns and simply smothered them. Half a dozen rounds were enough to show the Russians that their effort was hopeless and they gave it up. They could not get away and lost their guns.”

CARE OF THE JAPANESE ARMY REWARDED.

The man who wrote on the battle field, of the scene that gave the army of Japan a rest beside the river, says : “Upon the arrival of their engineers at the last of the hills, when Wiju and the Yalu were in sight, and further movements would be visible by the enemy, men were employed to erect along the roads a series of screens of corn or millet stalks, branches of trees and strips of matting. They were put up on the side next to the river and where there was a hill, which led straight down toward the arches, which were put up crossing the road and so close together that the entire way was covered.”

At one time there were parked out of sight nineteen Japanese batteries. There was a good supply of artillery ammunition, and “the Japanese battery positions were such that the guns could search every part of the hills held by the Russians, except those immediately back of Kiulien-cheng,” the place where this letter was written.

A very able writer says of the situation : “At daybreak on the 30th the scene as viewed from a high hill behind Wiju was peaceful in the extreme. Across the sandy bed of the Yalu meandered three sparkling blue streams. Beyond, the purple mountains of Manchuria stretched in an endless vista. Only on the southern slopes of the hills on the Korean side was there evidence of war. Dropping our gaze from the far north to our

feet we saw the valley black with men and horses, baggage and ammunition trains, all the paraphernalia of an army on the move. The suggestion was that the army would cross the river, that the crossing was inevitable, and that the possibility of defeat did not enter into Japanese calculations."

The American correspondent who made a reputation in a day, thus prepared the great story:

"When General Kuroki reached Wiju almost all of his army had preceded him. One regiment, division of General Hasegawa, and a battalion of another regiment came in with him, or arrived the next day. The division was quartered in Wiju. In the folds of the foothills, back of Wiju, are many small clusters of huts. In ten of the most substantial of these General Kuroki established his headquarters, with his staff.

BUILDING BRIDGES AT NIGHT.

"By night work the Japs now had completed a bridge over the first channel, from the Russian side, and Japanese field-guns were taken over and four batteries of howitzers. Two or three batteries were placed in position on Kinteito, and great quantities of ammunition brought up for them.

"The main stream of the Yalu, which separates Kinteito from Ching-ping, is here more than 400 yards wide, deep and swift.

"No attempt was made to bridge it. pontoons were brought up and lashed together in pairs, making catamarans, upon which planking was laid down as if for a roadway. Upon these catamarans the guns of four batteries were ferried across the swift stream.

"Emplacements were made along the southern side of Ching-ping for four batteries, three of which were howitzers. Trenches were dug connecting the guns, and others leading back to the cover of the bank, where reserve ammunition was stored. Three ammunition pits were dug under each gun.

"The Russian officers seemed to have very little interest in these things. Directly north of Wiju, on the Manchurian mainland, stands the bold hill called the Tiger. Its southern face is sheer and rocky.

“The main stream of the Yalu flows between Osekeito and Tiger Hill. A narrower channel cuts between Osekeito and the island which lies just above it, which is called, by the Japanese, Kurite.

“Kiulien-cheng was the Russian headquarters. It is a substantially built Chinese town, with wide streets and brick and stone houses, and from it the Mandarin road starts its long course over the mountains to Peking. The town stands on the flat ground. General Kuroki studied the ground, and must have been amazed by the facilities allowed him.

“The night of the 30th was extremely busy for the Japanese. During the day most of the infantry had crossed the river. The ‘X’ and ‘Y’ divisions and one battalion of ‘Z’ division were massed in the hills, just back of the river, and to the east of Wiju.’

THE WAR CORRESPONDENTS GROUPED.

The war correspondents saw at last from their island retreat a long line of men streaming down a little valley between the two big Manchurian hills and moving rapidly down the river close to the water. There seemed to be just about enough space for a path between the hills and river. The men were marching in column.

These were the men who were to make the frontal attack, the first decisive step to cross the river.

“The Russians opened fire on the Japanese, who seemed to have had little trouble, but the guns on the conical rock and in the batteries near it opened on Kinteito, and for a few minutes delivered a terrific fire. The shells struck all over the island. Every ruined hut, every clump of willows and every heap of sand, anything that looked as if it might afford the slightest cover for any Japanese, received a hail of fire. There was an energy in it that was desperate.

“The moment the Russians began to move, the Japanese guns were turned on them, and a perfect hell of shrapnel was poured over the battery position. Several batteries were engaged in the work, and their fire was terrible. The air seemed filled with shells, and their rush was like the roar of a strong wind through a forest of pines.

“ Before the first shell from a gun had found its mark a second was on its way. It seemed that nothing could live under such a fire, and its accuracy was as deadly as its rapidity. The practice of the Japanese gunners was a revelation.

“ Their angry roar voiced an implacable hatred as they strove to defeat the Russian intentions. Now began a wonderful and deadly game. The howitzers played along the crest of the rock with their common shell, and the field guns filled the air above it with shrapnel.

“ A haze of smoke from the bursting shells hovered above the rock, and through it could be seen Russians struggling to get their guns away.

“ When the guns from the southern bank of the Yalu began to reply to the Russian fire, the earth shook with the concussion.

THE FIERCE FIRE REDOUBLED.

“ The fire had been fierce before, but now it was more than doubled. There seemed no limit to the speed with which the Japanese could handle their guns.

“ All along the line of Russian hills the shells were bursting, and now the bullets of the howitzers joined their barking to the awful din of the field guns, and the spots of black smoke arising from the places where they struck showed where the shells were going.

“ The war gongs were sounding on both sides of the Yalu, and the roar rose over the valley with the roll and shock of thunder. For an hour it continued with undiminished energy, and through it all the men on the hills on the northern side hurried along toward their goal above the Russian position.

“ The day had become fine and clear, but soon there hung over the knob a pall of smoke from the bursting shells. Yet through it all the Russians kept coming, coming, steadily coming on into their trench. In groups of from a dozen to twenty, they appeared on the far slope, came boldly out into the open on the sky-line, and sauntered across the bald knob, disappearing into the brush near the slope that led to the trench.

“It seemed that not a foot of that ground escaped the terrible fire of the Japanese guns, and again and again we saw men fall. Once a common shell struck squarely among a group that had almost reached the cover, and threw them all headlong down the hill.

“But still they came on; and, as if they had not enough of it in crossing once, several times men ran back to pick up a comrade who had been knocked down and could not get away. No finer gallantry will be shown in all the war than was exhibited by these Russians on that bald knob yesterday morning.

“When we saw General Kuroki at his new headquarters here last night, after the fight was ended, he was very warm in his praise of their bravery. They had fought with the highest courage, he said, and had been “an honor to their country, poor fellows.”

- FIGHT FOR THE YALU ON.

“The fight for the Yalu was on at last in desperate earnest. Down went the Japanese advance, flat on the sand, and the crash of volleys was added to the roar of the guns, which all the time kept playing on the Russians. The field guns of ‘X’ division and some of the guns of ‘Z’ division had been put into position on the strip of low ground that connects Tiger Hill with the mainland.

“While the guns on Kinteito and Ching-ping Islands hammered the Russians’ position from in front, these guns raked the hills from the flank, scattering the shrapnel along every edge and gully, searching every spot which might offer cover to a Russian rifleman. The big howitzers down on the sand of Ching-ping roared and bellowed, and dropped their shells along the Russian position with terrible precision.

“All the guns were firing directly over the heads of their own men, but every shell went through to its mark with unerring accuracy. The guns kept pounding the Russians, while the infantry poured a terrific fire, but the Russians were showing some of their old fighting. Their courage was no less than that of their antagonists, and pound them as they would the Japanese could not

break their fire, and now the children of the Czar gave an exhibition of extraordinary gallantry.

“In describing the position of the Russian line mention is made of a low hill just west of the conical rock, upon which their batteries had been posted.

“Immediately back of these gun positions is a small field which had been under cultivation and is now bare of vegetation.

“It was half-past seven, or a little later, when I saw, through my glasses, a horde of Russians come up the western slope of this hill and run across the bald knob at the top. They were followed immediately by another squad and then another. At first it seemed that they were beginning to retire. But it soon became apparent that they were running toward the action instead of away from it.

RUSSIAN RIFLE FIRE INCREASES.

“They were in reality coming up from the direction of Kiulien-cheng and going into a trench which runs along the crest of the ridge there. Soon their heads began to appear above the top of the earthworks and immediately the Russian rifle fire increased in volume and vigor. More and more men kept coming in squads and more of them crossed the knob with incredible indifference to the fire, the Japanese aiming at them.

“The Japanese displayed all the qualities of good soldiers. The Japan praise for the Russian bravery on the field is a courtesy always pleasing, and when an enemy that has been overcome is praised—it is a form of self-praise.

“The Japanese when called upon to conclude the combat were deeply fatigued.

“They had been hard at work most of the night. They had marched a long distance over very stiff roads, and, moreover, they had been held in readiness the second night previous, and had had only such sleep as they could get in the fields where they lay.

“To see men who had endured such an experience now go forward on the double and keep it up, as they did, was a marvel.

“The Japanese infantry are justly celebrated for their fast

work, but they gave a wonderful exhibition of it here. The time had now come for the development of General Kuroki's full scheme.

"A few miles up the valley of the Ai river, from the point where it reaches the western bank of Tiger Hill, a trail strikes across the rugged hills to join the Manchuria road, which it does five miles back of Kiulien-Cheng. At the same place the road from Antung effects the junction with the Manchuria road. Near the junction of the three roads there is a hill called Hamatan.

"There was enacted that afternoon the last scene of the great drama of the Yalu. While the fighting line of 'X' and of 'Y' divisions was moving forward, the reserves were kept well up, and as the line swept up the hills and over the Russian position the reserves were crossing Ai below them.

WHEN THE RUSSIANS RETREATED.

"Immediately upon the retreat of the Russians the order was given which sent the reserves about their work. Already the reserves of 'Z' division had started up the valley of the Ai, and along the trail that leads from it to Hamatan. Now the reserve of 'Y' division, pushing rapidly beyond Kiulien-cheng, struck northward over the hills to come in on the Peking road beyond Hamatan.

"The reserves of 'X' division followed through the hills a little to the right of the road from Kiulien-cheng. 'Z' division had some mountain guns with them, and so had 'X.' The road through which they had to go stands all on end. It is nothing but hills and valleys. The Russians were in full flight along the road, and the task of the reserves of the three divisions was to concentrate at Than Tin in time to cut off the enemy.

"The Russians, hard pressed by the vigorous pursuit, turned and made a stand just as the Japanese commander expected they would. With one battalion of infantry and two batteries they took position on the crest of the hill and prepared for a desperate resistance. With amazing fortitude three Japanese columns came up at practically the same time and attacked the hill together, one from the east and one from the west and one from the south.

“Without waiting for their mountain guns, the infantry swarmed up into the face of the hottest fire the Russians could deliver, supported as it was by the rifles of the battle line of the infantry. The Japanese crawled up the hill on three sides. The Russians fought with extraordinary persistence and courage, pouring a terrible fire upon the advancing Japanese from their rifles. Still the Japs came on; they would not be stopped.

“They were fighting for the glory of Dai Nippon and it mattered nothing to any man in their line whether he left his bones on that hill or not, if only Japan gained the victory.

THE INEFFECTIVE RUSSIAN GUNS.

“The Russians held on until the enemy was inside of the range of their guns, which then were ineffective. Then they recognized the inevitable, and the white flag was raised over their line. Part of their force broke through the north, where there was a gap in the Japanese line, and got away, but 300 men with two batteries surrendered.

“They had suffered severely from the Japanese fire, but they had inflicted terrible punishment upon their assailants. Three hundred Japanese were lying dead or wounded on the slope of the hill to pay for the victory.

“So ended the fight for the crossing of the Yalu, in victory complete and far reaching for the Japanese. So swift and fierce had been the assault that the Russians were unable to care for their dead and wounded who were left on the field.

“But the end was close at hand now. The men of ‘Y’ division were across, some of them, and scrambling up hill a little in front of the Russian trench. Almost at the same time the first man of the ‘X’ division rushed up the bank on the mainland. They were directly below the Russian line.

“While some of the Japs were in the water, only a few hundred yards from the bank, Japanese shells were bursting along in front of the Russian works only a few feet above the water. It was an astonishing exhibition of confidence, both in their own accuracy, and in the evenness of their explosives. Let but a single

shell fail to function properly and the lives of many of their own men might be sacrificed.

"This, in fact, did happen at last to some of the men of 'Y' division. It was the old accident that happened in every war. Some of the howitzers were using a propulsive not as good as that used by the field guns. It was not absolutely smokeless, for one thing, and left little blue clouds over the gun after firing. Besides, it did not function as evenly.

THE LAST SHOT OF THE BATTLE.

"The first men of 'Y' division to rush the bank were swarming up the far slope of the hill just at the west of the conical rock. They were going to take the main trench directly in the flank, and they were hurrying to get in ahead of the men of 'X' division, who were already close within striking distance of the same trench in its front. A thick cluster of them rushed the top of their hill at the same time.

"Just as they did so a shell from one of the howitzers struck fairly among them and burst. Instantly they started on the run down the hill, but as they gathered in a bunch at its base a second shell struck and exploded. Thirteen dark figures left on the ground."

CHAPTER XXIII.

MILITARY FORESIGHT OF JAPANESE.

Marvels of Painstaking Preoccupation—Leap in the Dark at Port Arthur—Winning Sea Power With a Rush—All Shores of Navigable Waters at Once Open to Japan, and Every Battle Field in Manchuria Surveyed.

THE first blow delivered by the Japanese in the Russian war, February 8th, 1904, severely wounded the navy of Russia, and the surprisingly perfect military organization and transportation facilities gave the smaller of the fighting empires such a prestige, and so ardent and vehement her attacks that Jap victory followed victory, and there seemed no chance for the recuperation of gigantic Russia. The consolation of the defeated, we were assured, would come when the great armies met.

The Japanese Staff did not seem to be able to extricate themselves from the monotony of the campaign, the operations of the victors, closely pursuing the lines of the Japanese, in the Chinese war. There was no inside news from Japan, save the exception of the official reports. There were no confidences on the part of the combatants imparted to the war correspondents, and it is discovered that the problems of the press in war times have, in settling the relations of force and forces with swords and rifles, have been achieved and settled in Oriental Asia.

Evidently the Russian defeats at sea did not shake the good opinion held by Russians of themselves, in the swiftly coming time when the clash of armies must occur.

The victory of the Japanese in passing the Yalu proved that the supremacy of their officers in noting their resources in the field, prepared at all points and drilled in all the exercises of the courses of construction available in actual warfare.

The Japanese were smart up to the wire edge of their weapons, and as they were all thoroughly educated in the manufacture and high explosive power of torpedoes in warfare at sea, so were

the field batteries of "the little yellow or brown men" consummately designed, cast, mounted, served by marksmen and supplied with expertly perfected ammunition.

The defeat of the Russians acting on the defensive with a very broad and considerable river and otherwise advantageously posted on ranges of hills, was as plainly due to Japanese preparedness and forwardness in the soldiers' studies, schooling for the field, as they were for extraordinary soldierly qualities—and this development was the initial activity of an almost unbroken series of successes.

The Russian soldiers fought well, as they had on a thousand battle fields, but the fate of superiority in science and address, in equipage, and to use an expression one used of Americans in the Spanish war, they had the better "knack of being shifty" as well as brave and hardy.

GRAND DUKES WITH MUTINOUS DISPOSITIONS.

The manhood of the Russians was not exhausted, and the resources of the next surprise in men and material were not overdrawn. The Japanese had command of the seas from the beginning of the war but Russia contains five times as many inhabitants as Japan, and her territory is fifty times as large as the Empire of the Mikado.

The Russians have the advantage of the Japanese in numbers of people, but are so far away from the Far East that the Russian armies have been outnumbered in nearly all the skirmishes as well as the battles. The Napoleonic maxim abides that strategy is having superior forces at the initial points. Those who are out of the combat cannot ruin it.

The Russian military commander-in-chief has had from the first combats on the skirmish lines, to contend with forces outnumbering his command, and that he has been embarrassed and oppressed by Grand Dukes with mutinous dispositions, "meddling and muddling" appears to have been written in all the stories between the lines.

The atmosphere of the Russian camps, as well as courts, has

been redolent with the same arrogant imbecility that in diplomacy made the war with Japan when she was ready and Russia was not. Everybody in Japan knew from the first sound of big guns on the seas that Port Arthur was the first great objective point.

The first work of the navy was to provide footing for the army, and the inferiority of the Russian army, after forcing the fight, has been one of retirement of the Russians, and the military movements have consisted of retreats by the Russians before the Japanese by flanking activities, the same style of business by which Sherman flanked Johnson out of good places to stand, and especially rivers to cross, on the line between Chattanooga and Atlanta.

Sherman had the greatest army to flank with. The retreat of Johnson was a series of masterpieces, and when that consummate Confederate General yielded field after field he was not being incessantly defeated, but the people behind him grew weary and demanded battles, that hastened the end.

KUROPATKIN DISTRACTED BY A REAR FIRE.

General Kuropatkin has under most trying circumstances, been bothered by a fire in the rear, and we have heard so many times that the Ducal Party was demanding that the Russian Chief has been rebuked by those who have not won any victories by the sword.

They have demanded that the one army like that under General "Jo" Johnson, should be flung full in the face of a superior force. When the great confidence in that chieftain was overruled to make mad rushes, the result was that a certain series of "killings" took place, and Sherman marched to the sea, and through the Carolinas and Virginia too.

There have been many utterances from the Russians, taunted by the Press of the world, that they were "fleeing" before the Japs. No words of complaint have been heard from Kuropatkin. He retired before superior forces, and the more he retired the greater the chances of a grand battle on equal terms.

The fall of Port Arthur was doomed on the night of the 8th

of February, when the war began, and the grand Ducal Party would have thrown away the only Russian army that existed at the seat of war, if they had not been ashamed, and they have done their cause vast damage.

The Sea Power turns the formidableness of the seas against the fortifications, but those who perish in the final explosions will redeem with the honor of dying for duty the shame of the disaster that befell in the Ducal festivals, when the deep sound of the torpedo broke in upon the roar of revelry at Port Arthur on that eventful night.

Japan had the advantage of knowing that Russia with an immense amount of money in Manchuria and Siberian railroads, mills, docks, forts, arsenals and cities, would not yield the most precious province on the Pacific Ocean ; and so were able to make a proposal that Russia would reject, respecting the goal of authority in Manchuria, and at the same time propose a degree of absence in the case of Korea.

Each of the Empires wanted another Province, and Japan held the better hand in the game and could act upon the certainties of war, and enkindle it when the season and all conditions were most favorable to Japan.

JAPANESE WELL ACQUAINTED WITH THE COUNTRY.

One of the most important of the preparations for war in Manchuria, was the minute surveys of the country. The Japanese-Chinese war gave the victor all possible opportunities. In the Russo-Japanese war the invaders were much better acquainted with the country than the defenders.

The armed nations will study more profoundly, and perform realistic exercises, with greater zeal, in studying the game of war. Fancy such a fatality happening again, that the Japanese knew the superiority of their field artillery over that of the Russians who knew next to nothing about it, and indeed the Japanese knew more about the Russians than the Grand Dukes knew of their countrymen, humiliated by inattention to the business in hand, and had lost touch with the higher duties of soldiers.

CHAPTER XXIV.

RUSSIAN RAID IN THE SEAS OF JAPAN.

The Vladivostok Cruisers — Surprising Adventures—Great Destruction of Japanese Property Afloat — Immense Disturbance—Admiral Skrydloff's Astounding Achievements—Russians Take Comfort in Their Hero, Who Seems to Have a Magic Wand to Wave and Elude the Fleets of His Enemies—Picturesque Service at Sea.

PERHAPS the most striking eulogy and ovation of Admiral Skrydloff, the Russia Admiral, whose career in Japanese waters reminds one of Paul Jones, is in a cable or other telegram from the capital of Korea, as follows :

“ The recent movements of the Vladivostok squadron and the success of its attack on the Japanese transports on June 15th, justify the previous assumption that great possibilities were within its reach during the whole course of the war, particularly during the period from February 9th to May 3d, while Port Arthur was open and the squadron there could still be called a fleet in being.

“ Many times between the dates mentioned it was possible for the Vladivostok squadron to make a dash for Port Arthur with a large chance of success. The opportunity is lost now that Port Arthur is sealed and its fleet is unable to co-operate with naval reinforcements.

“ The latest appearance of the Russian squadron in the Korean Straits created surprise. The loss of the transports was a great shock, but the enterprise was to be expected. The result demonstrates the folly of allowing transports to sail without the protection of fighting ships. Even the almost absolute control of the sea which the Japanese possess scarcely justifies them in running necessary risks.

“ Their main squadron is now largely relieved of its exacting duties outside Port Arthur. Admiral Togo is seizing the opportu-

nity to refit his ships, and several are at the dockyards in Japan. The fleet is still numerous and powerful enough to provide a squadron for the protection of shipping in the Korean Straits.

"Who is to blame for the recent contretemps, or whether serious blame attaches to any one is uncertain. I am inclined to exonerate Admiral Togo. I think, if he had been consulted with regard to the transport sailings, that, in spite of his dashing tactics, he would, to judg e by the prudence he has displayed, have opposed the incurring of unnecessary risks. Moreover, he had previously taken measures to cope with the Vladivostok squadron.

"A Japanese squadron was off Fusan on the thirteenth bound for the Japan Sea. The Russian squadron having left Vladivostok the same day. Fortune favored the Russians. They kept eastward, bound for the south. The Japanese kept westward, going north, hoping that if the Russians were at sea they would follow the route of their previous cruise when the *Kinshiu Maru* was sunk. The squadrons missed one another. The Russians reached the track of the transports, destroyed them, and retired north."

THE STORY OF VLADIVOSTOK CRUISERS.

This episode of adventure, at time and place unexpected, has excited deep interest, the world awaiting further scenes in the drama of the seas that accompany the tragedies in Manchuria, of which each shifting of the scenery of the grandiose stage reveals the clashing arms and bleeding multitudes of grand armies.

The flight and chase of the Vladivostok cruisers open up important questions connected with guerilla and anti-guerilla war at sea, of the highest interest to maritime Powers. The *Gromoboi*, *Rossia*, and *Rurik*, these three cruisers have a respective displacement of 12,336, 12,200, and 10,940 tons, powerful armament giving a weight of broadside fire of 1,200 pounds to 1,300 pounds, and nominal speed of eighteen to twenty knots.

Of these cruisers, the *Rurik* is probably the slowest and least efficient, and as long as the division keeps together the speed of the whole will be limited to that of the slowest ship. The long inactivity of these cruisers and the existence of a fine dock at their

base may have enabled them to put to sea in good trim for cruising and fighting, but it would be a sanguine estimate that would give the Rurik a continuous sea-speed of more than fifteen knots at the outside.

It will be observed from the record of its course after leaving the Straits of Korea that this cruiser division steamed at an average speed of eleven and five-tenths knots, as was learned from a well-informed quarter that the division steamed due east and then south after leaving Vladivostok, we must believe that the Russian Admiral, apparently Besobrazoff, left port about nightfall on June 11.

FINDING FAULT WITH A JAPANESE ADMIRAL.

Three days' steaming at an economical rate of speed on the course attributed to him would have brought the Russian Admiral to the neighborhood of Tsushima on the evening of the fourteenth. He lay off that island during the night, and was last heard of in the Genkai Gulf at about 4 P. M. on June 15th, being then forty miles distant from Moji, at the entrance to the Straits of Shimonoseki, and having effected all the damage that lay in his power within the limits of time he was able to allow himself.

What was Admiral Kamimura doing all this time? We are not told, but we are informed that he started in pursuit at 9.30 A. M. on the fifteenth, and from other sources we learn that warships left Saseho the same day in chase of the Russians.

The inference, which may be right or wrong, is that Kamimura was at Saseho when the news of the raid reached him. By remaining in the Genkai Sea for so long the Russians ran a very fair chance of interception, and, if the Japanese arrangements had been at all on a level with the requirements of the situation, the Russian cruisers would have been followed and effectively kept under observation, if not also attacked by torpedo craft or warships, in the course of the afternoon or night of the fifteenth.

The Japanese proceedings in respect to the Vladivostok cruisers have from the first been singularly unfortunate. Admiral Kamimura has twice allowed the enemy to slip through his fingers, to effect considerable damage and to get off scot-free. Considering

the strong and fairly numerous division believed to be at his disposal and the enhanced power of the superior navy accruing from wireless telegraphy, the result is distinctly disappointing.

The Russian Admiral seems to have calculated to a nicety the number of hours he could allow himself for braving the islanders in the heart of their home waters. If he knew that Kamimura was at Saseho, he would also have known that at the first sign of his appearance there would be an angry buzz and hot pursuit.

DECIDING DESTINIES IN THE DARK.

With an inferior force, and at a distance of 650 miles from his base, the question he had to decide was what to do next. If he had shaped a course for Vladivostok, the chances are that the superior speed of the Japanese vessels would have led to a collision, or at least brought them to Vladivostok before him. He therefore very wisely steamed north-east, made prize of a sailing vessel four miles off Oki island, where he was seen 3 P. M. on the sixteenth, and continued his course towards the western entrance of the Tsugaru Straits, where he was seen and reported at 5.30 A. M. on the eighteenth, having covered the distance of 700 miles from the scene of his depredations in sixty-one and half hours, or at a continuous speed of 11.5 knots.

He was bound to ask himself what orders the Japanese Admiral would be given when the Korean Straits were reported clear of Russians, and he may have judged that, if Kamimura found no trace of his enemy in the straits, he would naturally head for Vladivostok at full speed.

If the Japanese had utilized the islands which stand like sentries athwart the northern approaches to the Straits of Korea for the purposes of wireless telegraphy, a perfect network of maritime intelligence might have been secured and all this loss prevented.

These islands lie in ideal positions for the purpose, forming a chain of natural posts of observation 250 miles north of the straits. With wireless equipment on the islands of Argonaut, Dagelet, Hornet and Oki, connected with the telegraph system of Korea and Japan on each flank, and supplemented by a service of scouts

for night patrolling, no enemy could well have passed unobserved and unreported, since the greatest distance between any two of these points is under 100 miles.

The position of these islands recalls the Cyanean rocks, which, according to ancient tradition, floated on the face of the waters of the Bosphorus to protect the entrance of the Euxine from the eyes of profane curiosity.

When the Russian Admiral reached the western entrance of the Tsugaru Straits he had been six and a half days at sea, and must have covered some 1,500 miles. In the old days sails allowed of systematized cruiser warfare, and there were no limitations to means of propulsion save want of wind, which affected both sides in equal measure.

EXTENSION OF RAIDS BY COAL.

Later the radius of action of the *croiseur-corsaire* was limited by the question of coal, which places cruiser warfare upon a totally different basis. Judging by our own experiences, and reckoning that the Russians steamed throughout their cruise at a reasonably economical rate of speed, we should expect the Rurik to have used up one-half of her *maximum* bunker capacity of coal by morning of June 18th, namely, between 900 and 1,000 tons out of the 2,000 she is believed to be able to take on board.

Her lease of life, provided no fresh supplies were available and the division did not come to anchor, would then be limited to June 24, by which time she, and probably her consorts too, must obtain fresh coal or run the risk of perishing by sheer inanition.

All this must have been considered before Besobrazoff left port, and, as he has not as yet been interfered with, we must believe that his plans are proceeding according to programme. It is a fascinating problem to weigh the chances of what these plans may be, since, if only a sailor of wide and varied experience can pretend to form a conclusion, it may be permissible for others to endeavor to point out the immense difficulties that beset the conduct of maritime war under new and wholly modern conditions.

Attention should first be drawn to the fact that the Russian

Admiral was last seen heading northwest, and that, continuing on his present course, he must either make for the Gulf of Tartary or traverse the Straits of La Perouse and enter the ocean. The Gulf of Tartary is not completely open to navigation before the end of May, and this fact may explain the long inactivity of the Vladivostok division, since at an earlier period this avenue of escape would not have been open.

There are at Vladivostok ships like the *Lena* which might serve as storeships and colliers, and might easily have left port with the Admiral and have been given a rendezvous at Nikolaievsk or elsewhere. Again, it is possible, during the long period that has elapsed since the war began, that the Russian Admiralty may have despatched colliers to meet the cruisers at some unfrequented island in the Pacific and have thus afforded them more scope and liberty.

THE MOVABLE BASE OF NAVIES.

The flying or movable base has not received the attention it deserves on the part of some naval Powers. It seems to have been proved that floating docks, constructed in sections, can be towed at the rate of 100 miles a day, and if to this be added storeships, colliers, and all the other requirements of a cruiser division, it is possible to transform some unfrequented island or harbor into a very valuable base, combining all the advantages of the useful with the unexpected.

Whether, however, we can credit the Russian Admiralty with the skill and energy required for the accomplishment of such a task is an open question, and of these two objectives—Nikolaievsk, or an island in the Pacific—the former seems more probable as the rendezvous of the colliers, if they have been provided.

But we have also to consider that the Russian Admiral must have been perfectly well aware that his appearance off the Tsugaru Straits and his disappearance to the north would be instantly reported at Tokio. If he had intended to make for Nikolaievsk unobserved, or to become lost in the ocean, he would have kept out of sight of land.

The hope of picking up a stray steamer or two off the straits would hardly have induced him to show himself at this point, since he would have known that the news of his appearance on the fourteenth would have been immediately telegraphed to Hakodate and the movements of all steamers cancelled.

On the other hand, he may have hoped and expected that the news of his northward course would reach Kamimura at Vladivostok about the nineteenth or twentieth and would have drawn him away from his watch.

In these circumstances, if Admiral Besobrazoff desired to regain his base, he would be likely to double in his tracks on the evening of the eighteenth and steam hard to the south, hoping to slip back to port unobserved on the night of the twentieth or twenty-first, when his enemy had been coaxed away.

THE GRAND DUKE WEAKNESS OF RUSSIA.

There is so much Grand Duke in the Russian strategy that there is a very fair chance that the Russian Admiral may not have been allowed to cut himself entirely adrift from Vladivostok, as his situation seems to require. So long as he can be used as a pawn in the game, so long may the Russian Admiralty cling to him in the desperate hope of diverting the Japanese from their prey at Port Arthur.

To some extent, indeed, his diversion in the straits may have reduced the pressure of pursuit if the Bayan and Novik and a few other of the faster vessels endeavored to escape their impending doom. The sudden appearance of the Novik outside Port Arthur on the fourteenth, synchronizing, as it did, with Besobrazoff's raid, had all the appearance of concerted action, but the cruiser returned to port, and there has been no further sign of an endeavor to escape. The act would not necessarily be impossible, given a fair share of luck and less than half the intelligence displayed by Prince Louis of Battenberg during the Mediterranean manœuvres of 1902.

All depended upon the action of Kamimura. If wise he could remain near Vladivostok till the morning of the twenty-

fourth or twenty-fifth, certain that, if Besobrazoff does not return by that date, he must have other designs in view and other means of replenishing his bunkers.

The regulation harbor of refuge is a terrible incubus to cruisers forced to use it, affording as it does a bench-mark to the enemy, who can always hope that here, at least, he will sooner or later run his enemy to ground. Long ago the criticism was made that the proceedings of the Japanese in relation to Vladivostok were the least satisfactory part of their sea strategy, and it was presumed, after the loss of the Petropavlovsk, that Kamimura would be reinforced and enabled to pursue his mission with greater energy, and to set a watch on the northern port.

"TOGOS, LIKE NELSONS, ARE RARE."

A very interesting letter from Tokio shows that this was indeed done, so far as the reinforcements went; but Togos, like Nelsons, seem to be rare. There was "only one Nelson," and it will be quite in accord with our naval history if there turns out to be only one Togo.

When a navy has its enemy fast shut up in a harbor of refuge, there is only one good and mistake-avoiding rule. It is the plan of St. Vincent, to "beard the lion in his den and never relax the grip." It has been by his tenacious adherence to this rule that Togo has practically destroyed the main part of the Russian Pacific squadron, and the neglect of the rule in the Sea of Japan has cost our allies those heavy losses they now deplore.

However valuable and important may be the science of the naval constructor, the engineer and the chemist in the arts and crafts of war, we always come back, at the end of ends, to the human factor, and have cause to remember that, because we entitle men admirals and generals, we do not make them so, any more than we make artists by styling them Royal Academicians. Nor can we estimate the indicated man-power of the human intelligence, as we can the horse-power of marine engines. Therein lies the fascination of what is rightly known as the art of war. Everything depends on the artist.

A neutral ship playing hide-and-peek with the fleets of nations at war. The following is from a special correspondent:

"Steamship Haimun (at sea), March 27:—Until we were afloat and free to roam in the Yellow Sea it was quite impossible to form an accurate estimate of the situation with regard both to the naval position at Port Arthur and the landing of troops in Korea. The most extraordinary rumors were on foot when we put out from our base and steered a course for the Hwang-ching-tau Islands.

"The weather was perfect, the Yellow Sea like an inland lake, and the water of Wei-hai-wei harbor as blue as the Bay of Naples. It had been our intention to make the islands, and then to steer northeast, skirting Port Arthur just inside the neutral limits.

PICTURESQUE SCENES ON THE WAR SEAS.

"As the yellow mountains of the Shan-tung province disappeared into haze behind us we made out the smoke of at least four steamers on our port beam. As the vessels were hull down, it was only possible to conjecture that they were the eyes of Admiral Togo's fleet keeping the watch upon Port Arthur which we believed kept the mouth of that harbor sealed.

"About 11 o'clock we made out the chain of islands which close in the Liau-tie-shan Channel to the south and almost simultaneously, so clear was the day, to the north rose up the bluff peak of the Gibraltar of the Far East, around which so much interest at the moment is centered. As the outline of the northern island of the Hwang-ching-tan group became more distinct we detected behind it a heavy bank of smoke.

"The first conclusion we came to was that part of the Japanese squadron was sheltering among the islands, using them as a convenient base from which to effect the absolute blockade of the enemy's harbor. Then, as we reduced the distance, we were able to distinguish the vessels which had caused the smoke—one, two, three, four, five—five warships in line ahead were slowly leaving the cover of the island steering a course for Port Arthur. Still we believed them to be Japanese, and the hope arose that we were about to witness an attack on the Russian stronghold.

“Then, as the silhouettes of the ships became defined, we saw that there was one with four funnels and that the construction of the others did not represent any Japanese vessels that we knew. It was a Russian squadron, without a doubt—the Russian squadron, which we believed to be port-bound, out thirty-three miles at sea. A hurried turn to the signal-book and we made out the three rear-most ships to be the Bayan, the Peresviet, and Pobieda. Of the first two we were certain, of the Pobieda we were not sure.

“The squadron was steering for Port Arthur, and at the same moment that we recognized the squadron we saw that a flotilla of five destroyers was putting out from Port Arthur.

EXPLOSION OF THEORIES.

“This exploded all the theories which have been put forward that the Russians were unable to leave the protection of their guns, and it also explained a rather puzzling circumstance which had been reported from Wei-hai-wei signal station a few days previously. A squadron of five warships was reported as a German squadron, but as the squadron was reported as having service paint, and the German warships are known to be painted white, it was rather curious.

Therefore it is quite reasonable to surmise that, as the Bismarck and Hertha somewhat assimilate to the type of Russian ships at the extreme distance at which the squadron was seen, the signalman saw the Russian squadron, in which case it must have been nearly seventy miles at sea. This latter is surmise, but what we ourselves saw is fact, and would confirm the Japanese statements that the arrival of Admiral Makaroff in Port Arthur has inspired new activity there.

“It is certain that a squadron even able to take the sea with the ten or twelve destroyers which the Russians still have left must, until it has been brought to book, constitute a check to any projected scheme of military landing other than that which has already taken place in Korea.

“As the weather was so perfect, and as it was only reasonable to imagine that the Japanese were aware of the movements of the

Russian squadron, we determined to stand away and hover in the vicinity, in the hope that a Japanese squadron might be in the neighborhood endeavoring to entice the Russians out and bring them to battle.

"We therefore stood away to the east with the intention of reshaping our course in the direction of Port Arthur after midnight. Although the watch was doubled and we were steering in a direction from which it was probable that we might have a reasonable chance of meeting a Japanese squadron, yet nothing was made out until 3.30 in the morning, when the officer on the bridge reported flashes, as if guns were firing. As these flashes were unaccompanied by reports, the impression of gun fire was abandoned, and the lights were put down as being either the stern lights of a torpedo craft flotilla, or flash signals between boats; either Russian destroyers night scouting or the Japanese fleet.

"As will be readily understood, it is not business for a neutral ship to meddle too closely with the night operations of two hostile fleets, as she is liable to be mistaken by either or both. We, therefore, followed the direction of the lights at slow speed and, with the mariners of the *Gospel*, 'wished for day.'

WIERD EFFECTS OF SEARCH LIGHTS.

"About an hour after we had lost sight of the lights, we descried the glare of the Port Arthur searchlight in troubled agitation. It was thrown over from side to side, often several times in a minute, conveying the impression that it could feel danger, but could not locate it. On a clear night the reflection of this light is visible for 80 miles, and we were within 60 of it.

"At last day broke, another beautiful, clear morning. Nothing was in sight; but on our port beam we could see a long, low film of dark vapor, which told the practiced eye that coal had been burning recently a few miles ahead of us. We went full steam ahead, lamenting that we had not the speed of a destroyer. The overhanging smoke haze grew stronger and stronger, until shortly before eight we sighted the mastheads of a squadron. Was it to be

the Russian squadron again? Half an hour of suspense, and then we were able to recognize the more familiar-looking Japanese.

“It was a squadron of twelve battleships and cruisers, accompanied by a flotilla of sixteen torpedo craft. There were only two battleships, the remainder of the larger vessels being first and second-class cruisers. We saw at once that we were too late, as the whole squadron was steering eastwards—a most imposing sight.

GOSSIP BETWEEN FLEETS ON SEAS.

“The larger ships in two divisions line ahead, the smaller torpedo craft stretching out in front of the squadron like the antennæ of some great poisonous insect, and the destroyers with a despatch boat covering the exposed flank. We bore down upon them, and immediately a torpedo-boat broke from the line and dashed out towards us at full speed, throwing great white curls in front of its cutwater, and, to cover the torpedo-boat, the despatch boat also increased its pace. We could see the torpedo-boat lay its forward gun upon us, and then the cruiser hoisted the signal ‘Who are you?’ By this time the red ensign was floating behind us, and after the usual courtesies the cruiser changed her course; but the torpedo-boat drew a ring round us, and the officer on the bridge shouted that they had attacked Port Arthur early that morning.

“The squadron by this time was moving fast, and as we were not boarded for search, there was no means of arriving at the details of the engagement. But the natural deduction is that the torpedo craft were waiting in their rendezvous in the north of the Yellow Sea; that the squadron left its base, which is further south, at night, picked up the torpedo flotilla at sea in the vicinity of its base, passing just north of us, so that we saw its signals; and that the flotilla steamed in and attacked, the squadron covering them from behind and forming the rallying point after the attack had been delivered.”

From the same authority, written some days later, we append the following:

“It was difficult to believe, as the Haimun put to sea in the most perfect weather, that a few hours’ steaming would bring us to

the theatre of remorseless war. Wei-hai-wei stood washed in yellow and blue behind us. As yet this sanatorium of the Far East had not donned her mantle of summer green, but stood out as barren and wind-swept as the rest of the rockbound peninsula. But late winter even could not take away from Wei-hai-wei the beautiful blue of her waters.

“There is a Japanese proverb to the effect that ‘the wandering dog finds the frog.’ Our mission was that of a wandering dog. Previous cruises had shown us that the Japanese fleet was not maintaining a close blockade upon Port Arthur.

THE WANDERING DOG FINDS THE FROG.

“In fact, at the moment their operations with regard to the Russian base were misnamed a blockade. Rather should it be said that by repeated attempts at sealing the narrow mouth of the harbor and by constant bombardments and successful torpedo attacks the Japanese had acquired such an ascendancy, moral as well as material, over the Russian squadron in these waters that it was not necessary for Admiral Togo to maintain a close blockade. As long as he kept the waters between the Shan-tung Peninsula and St. James’ Hall group patrolled, the seaworthy Russian ships in Port Arthur, even if they could clear the wreckage at their harbor’s mouth, were as effectually blockaded as if the Japanese fleet was on guard night and day.

“As far as the Russian torpedo flotilla is concerned, that is watched as carefully as a cat watches a rat from Admiral Togo’s flying base, which is much nearer the Russian port than his fleet base. As heretofore Admiral Togo had been fairly regular in his attacks upon Port Arthur, we put out in the ‘wandering dog’ spirit, in the hope that we might be able to witness the fighting which, according to the calendar, seemed to be due. We therefore steered a course which we hoped might intersect that of the Japanese fleet when it was bearing down upon Port Arthur.

“We left Wei-hai-wei late in the afternoon, trusting that if we did not pass the Japanese fleet in the night, we should at day-break make a point sufficiently near to Port Arthur to enable us

to hear the sound of firing if any should be taking place. Until one has put to sea with the express object of searching for something which one cannot afford to miss, one cannot appreciate the intense interest which attaches to the functions of the look-out.

“From experience we knew that such vessels as we might pass in the night would be without lights, and that unless we strained our senses to the utmost we might be passed at a few cables’ distance without being cognizant of the circumstance. But our vigilance was rewarded by nothing except, towards morning, the glare of the Port Arthur lights.

ANXIETY TO SEE SMOKE AT SEA.

“It would be impossible to exaggerate the anxiety with which we searched for smoke upon the horizon when day broke. But although the coast line of Dalny-Ta-lien-wan loomed up on our starboard bow, yet there was no evidence of vessels other than flotillas of Chinese junks, which seemed to be taking advantage of the fair weather to make the run across to the Liau-tung Peninsula. The owners of these junks are doing a roaring trade in supplying Port Arthur with foodstuffs, and if we saw one we must have seen five hundred of them during our three days of grace.

“As the weather still held fine, we determined to wait in the vicinity of Port Arthur until it became imperative to return to Wei-hai-wei. But though the sea remained as smooth as the waters of an island lake, and presented, as we thought, every advantage for long-range sea gunnery, yet we passed the next twenty-four hours without sighting anything except fog.

“A heavy bank of fog, which is common at this season in the Yellow Sea, enveloped the whole of the Shan-tung coast line. We skirted north of it and ran in towards the most northern island of the Hwang-ching-tau group. Here we quite expected to meet a Russian picket-boat, if not a division of their destroyers, as we were only a little over twenty miles from the Liau-tung Peninsula. But we saw nothing and, the promise for the night being good, anchored in seventeen fathoms of water.

“We kept all our lights up, as we did not wish our mainmast,
22—N R J

to which a long spar for the purpose of wireless telegraphy had been attached, to be mistaken in the dark for the mast of a man-of-war by any scout-boat. But, although we quite expected that we should be boarded, no one came near us, at least we were not cognizant of the proximity of any stranger. But we had a fine view of the powerful Russian searchlights. They were kept active until daylight, in spite of the fact that the moon rose just after midnight.

“On the morning of the third day we had to shape a course back to Wei-hai-wei, as, owing to the Japanese authorities having relaxed some of their regulations with regard to correspondents.

THE HAIMUN BOARDED BY THE BAVAN.

“But we determined to throw one cast more before putting her head homewards, in the hope of seeing something more interesting than a blockade-running junk. Nor were we to be disappointed. We had just run twenty-five miles off Port Arthur and made our old rendezvous south of Ta-lien-wan, when the lookout reported smoke under the land, and a short time afterwards added that he made out the vessel to be a man-of-war.

“At this period we believed all the Russian vessels to be shut in Port Arthur, and naturally came to the conclusion that the vessel which we could make out belonged to the Japanese fleet. Were there more behind her? Every glass was turned in her direction. But she has four funnels! ‘She is Russian,’ some one said quietly—the Bayan. There was no doubt about it now; we could see the ship which we had sighted before, and with whom we were familiar.

“Almost at the same moment that we sighted her, her captain must have come to the conclusion that we were worthy of closer scrutiny; for, whereas she had been sauntering along, she changed her course and commenced to steam towards us. We kept on our course, and then saw that the Bayan was putting on full steam to overhaul us, as the smoke was showing from all her four smokestacks. The first inclination was to telegraph to our own engine-room and tell them to drive the Haimun, for the national love of a

competition is such that, balancing the chances, we believed that we could have made Wei-hai-wei, in spite of the great leviathan of a cruiser on our heels.

“It is true that she registered 21 knots on her trials; but then you can always discount 20 per cent. of that, and she also labored under the disadvantage of not having been docked for about a year, and of not having a free run from Port Arthur, for fear of being ‘nipped’ by Japanese cruisers. It was therefore a fair chance and we would have liked to have tried it. But it was not the game. We were a neutral ship on the high seas, and were prepared to submit to the usual procedure customary between neutral ships and belligerents. We therefore continued our course at our usual economical speed. But in case of any misunderstanding, it seemed advisable, as we had the means, to inform Wei-hai-wei of our position; so we sent a wireless message informing them that we were about to be boarded by a Russian warship.

SCENE OF SEA FIGHTING.

“The Bayan was now standing parallel with us. She made out our ensign and then stood away, as if satisfied with our identity. Then she must have caught our wireless message on her receiver, for she suddenly changed her course and bore down upon us a second time. This time she steered a course to cut us off, and when she was about two and a half miles from us a yellow flash at her bows gave us the recognized signal to stop.

“The shot fell about half a mile from our port bow. As soon as we stopped, the Russian captain changed his course, and his ship presented a fine appearance as she bore down on us. Steaming about sixteen or seventeen knots, she gave one an impression of power. She manœuvred easily and was well handled as she rounded to under our stern, presenting her port broadside to our view. As she lay not more than two cables off, we were able to get a good view of her. She bore many marks of her recent engagements with the Japanese. Her upper works and funnels had received considerable damage from splinters of shells, the foremost of her four funnels particularly. It had, in addition to many small

holes, a large one, evidently caused by an extra large splinter, about halfway up.

Scattered over her whole broadside were marks of the Japanese shell. A length of about ten feet of her bulwarks halfway between her after funnel and mainmast was entirely gone. The upper part of the armor belt protecting the six-inch and three-inch guns had evidently been hit several times. Still, for all practical purposes, her fighting powers seemed undiminished. Her guns were kept trained on us as she moved round on to our beam, and it was plain that guns and mountings were in good order. Altogether, her appearance gave every indication that she ought to be able to give a very good account of herself in action.

UNDERSTOOD THE MYSTERY OF A FIGHT.

"They lowered a boat and in a few minutes the Russian First Lieutenant and the torpedo Lieutenant were on board us. They courteously asked for the Captain, and made the customary examination. But it was the wireless system which perplexed them, and the torpedo Lieutenant asked that he might be allowed to examine it. He was taken down to the chamber, and he immediately asked to see the message which had just been sent.

"Then we understood why they had suddenly made up their minds to board us. Doubtless they thought that we were giving information that might reach the enemy. In this they had quite mistaken the methods, and the message in question was willingly handed over to them, as a sign of good faith, while it was explained to the officers that it was not the intention to use their system of wireless to further or hamper the operations of either belligerent.

"The two boarding officers were still engaged in their examination when the Bayan began to signal vehemently for the boat to return. The order must have been most imperative, since the boat bundled away from us just as fast as it was able. It was hoisted in, and after acknowledging our compliment the Bayan steamed off at full speed in the direction of Port Arthur. She was flying an Admiral's flag, so we come to the conclusion that Admiral Maka-

roff was on board, and that he had received some information by wireless from Port Arthur, which made it imperative that he should decrease his distance from support at once. He had overhauled us about thirty-five miles from Port Arthur.

"We had a good look at the officers and men of the boat that boarded us. The officers were exceedingly fine drawn and wore that anxious look which bespeaks anxiety well-nigh unbearable. One must allow that one's sympathy went out to them, for, owing to the want of appreciation of the military situation, their leaders had handicapped them so that they who had hoped to be the hunters were now perpetually in a state of being hunted.

"The men also seemed to be weary, but being of a different clay their present temperament was not so clearly depicted as with the officers. They were, however, fine and robust seamen. As our cruise was over, as soon as the Bayan left us we returned leisurely to Wei-hai-wei."

CHAPTER XXV.

THE BATTLE OF TELISSU.

Hard Hitting—Japanese Held the Field—Remarks Regarding Kuropatkin “in Person” Commands—The Ducal Party is at the Front and Uses Wires—The Fight Highly Picturesque and Characteristic of the War—The Battles Have a Family Likeness.

UNBIASED, and therefore reliable information had been published for some months in reference to the hottest scenes of war, that Kuropatkin “is there all the while” and has the responsibility “in person;” and the grand circle of Dukes find fault with the General, perhaps desiring to try their Port Arthur high festivals and skill in the loss of battleships, through firing abundant champagne bottles, to so place the hands of the Japanese Admirals that the war may be carried on by two imperial aristocracies, one ashore and the other afloat.

There is in the Russian service two sorts of command—that of the Commander-in-Chief “in person,” appointed by the Czar, and the commander at a respectful distance, for his person is far from the fire line, though he is present and prevails through the wires. The Imperial Russian weakness permits the late Viceroy Duke to be a favorite meddler, and, of course, muddler in public affairs, especially in war times.

General Kuropatkin seems to have been the only man in high station on the Russian side who knew the first object of the war of the Japanese to be the combination of three well-known Japanese armies, all to fall upon the Russian forces at once. There were no persons outside the Ducal personages who did not know that the Grand Army of Russia, alleged to be commanded by Kuropatkin “in person,” was, in a Japanese consolidation, immensely outnumbered, also elated with victory and equipped with field howitzers proven to be superior to any other mobile batteries known in Europe.

The Russian aristocracy, taking long shots through wires, were permitted in amateur and actual commanding, enough to do much harm to the cause they desired to promote if they were in favor of their own country; and the amount of their courageousness was sufficient to prepare them to demand that the Russian army should be collected, driven into the midst of the three Japanese armies, and sacrificed in a rush on the besiegers of Port Arthur. That was not the purpose but the part.

There is something rather ridiculous in this Ducal improvement on Imperialism and the generalship of the veteran soldier, but it is a very grave matter for Russia. According to the situation it is proposed substantially to repeat exaggerated, on the land as the sea, the glorious deeds of the high old Admiral on the night of the ball of February 8th, when the interruption of the pleasures of the Viceroy by the thunder of the torpedoes in the undefended harbor, reduced plethora of the guests arrayed in their golden fleeces—that is, it was just fitted for such an attack as those defenders of Port Arthur would naturally arise under the Grand Ducal education, as it would be proper and eligible they should engage in the champagne style of defending the Czar and being present in full uniform when the fighting was not.

KUROPATKIN WORKED BY WIRE.

Imagine how reassuring it must have been to Kuropatkin, because Dukes commanding by wire, had been preferred to the General in person, and a great difficulty arose and a mortal danger threatened, to hear that the Viceroy had turned up at the front to interview, and no doubt to instruct the General just as he was going into a general engagement.

There has been a family likeness between the battles in Manchuria. First the Russians under Kuropatkin's direction with the assistance of other real soldiers, are placed in strong defensible positions, where they stay and fortify until largely outnumbered. Owing to the efficiency of the Ducal circle, this army goes into the field outnumbered with inferior artillery; and the commander of the minority "in person" is expected to explain himself to the

Dukes, those present and also in the far-off palace at St. Petersburg. The Dukes want to talk about it when the fight is coming on.

The real soldier is expected to explain himself, and of course the man "in person," who happens to be there, strongly posted, fights hard and without much noise on the subject of a personal character, and seems to be intelligent as to the battle business. His position is strong and the Dukes are out of personal danger, except in such a case as this :

THE LOSS OF THE PETROPAVLOVSK.

"The Tsar has presented the Grand Duke Cyril with a gold sword with the inscription 'For Valour,' in recognition of his gallant behavior when the Petropavlovsk was sunk at Port Arthur on April 13."

The fighting men of the Russian army "present in person," and well placed, stand up to their work bravely, and resist the weight of numbers and the crushing artillery of the Japanese through many hours in which the fields are desperately contested. The Japanese commanders of armies are capable men and the Mikado has the virtue of not meddling, while his Field Marshals take charge of things in their own fields, and don't spare orders to put in their brave soldiers, acting upon Napoleon's saying that "One must break eggs to make omelets." The Japanese obey and their blood is poured forth freely.

The masterful masses of the conscripts converted into solid soldiers from Japan, put in their artillery that is excessive in range and their great numbers enable them to present longer front lines than oppose and this enables "flanking" to come easy. The Japs follow the old idea of heavy fire on the centre of the foe and a grand move to double up the left flank of the contesting army, so that when the central division is so smitten by the shells of the big howitzers that it is in giving way condition, the commander who is there "in person," having inflicted heavy losses upon his opponent and received the full force of the attack, yields a few points and finds another place for another flight.

This is presented to the amiable readers of the press as the

“flight of the Russians” and we are told that they are “hurled” and that they “run.” The word “flee” is a favorite one. It doesn’t take the Russians long to stand up again, when knocked down, but there are a great many on both sides that never stand up at all. This is the general outline of a fashionable battle, as duly reported and celebrated, so that it may afford great pleasure to English-speaking people. Is that because England gives her attention to the increase and adornment of the liberties of Asia?

DOES A GENERAL COMMAND IN PERSON?

The aforesaid information goes on to say that General Kuropatkin has taken command of the Russian army in Manchuria “in person.” This was telegraphed from Lian-Yang June 23d. The leading dispatches for the day were:

“The severe losses inflicted on the Russians in the battle of Telissu were due to the shrapnel fire of the Japanese. The Russian trenches were low and exposed, and the shrapnel played havoc among their defenders. The smartness of the Japanese artillerymen in serving their quick-firing guns was astonishing. The necessity of reinforcing the Russian artillery is recognized as urgent. Fresh troops are continually arriving here.

“A number of Russians who have been missing since the battle of Telissu have rejoined their regiments and it is expected that the total Russian losses will be found to amount to 3,500.”

A part of this might be used with advantage as a telegram form, introducing a battle between the David and Goliath of Empires, who are fighting for one of the richest provinces for raising rice and beans and wheat, on the face of the earth, and therefore both agriculturally, and imperially interesting.

“General Stackelberg’s troops are not the only part of the Russian fighting machine about which their fellow-countrymen may reasonably feel some anxiety. There is another unsolved problem on the sea, where the Vladivostok cruisers are still at large, and Admiral Kamimura, we may presume, still cherishes hopes of catching them.

“In an interesting article our military correspondent discusses

the Russian naval raid and the Japanese dispositions with regard to it. It seems difficult to believe that Admiral Kamimura kept watch on the Russians with all the accuracy he might have done; and certainly, whether accident or want of foresight has been the cause of it, the Japanese fleet in the Sea of Japan has been a good deal less successful than its companion fleet off Port Arthur.

“The Tokio correspondent says that at noon on Saturday they were sighted to the northwest of the main island of Japan. Some further particulars are now forthcoming about their achievements in the Straits of Korea. It is to be noticed, in the first place, that they were under the command, not of Admiral Skrydloff, but of Vice-Admiral Besobrazoff; though Admiral Skrydloff is the author of the short despatch to the Emperor describing their operations.

CONTENTIONS AS TO STRANGE STORIES.

“Beyond containing an official confirmation of the loss of the Izumi Maru, as well as the Hitachi Maru, this account cannot be said to add to our knowledge; and in one particular it seems to be actually incorrect, since it claims that the Sado Maru was sunk, whereas she continued afloat and drifted into safety.

“The Tokio correspondent gives several details of interest with regard to the fate of these vessels. The Japanese who remained on board the Sado Maru were preparing to commit suicide when they observed the Russians making off; whereupon, they tried to stop the leaks, and escaped after drifting for twenty hours.

“This particular transport seems to have been treated very much more ceremoniously by the Russians than was the Hitachi Maru, which was deluged by shot and shell without any discrimination between combatants and non-combatants. The Izumi Maru was carrying a small number of sick and wounded, and these, or most of them; seem to have been taken on board by the Russian cruiser Gromoboi before she sank the vessel.

“It is hardly necessary to say that the Japanese at home receive the tidings of the lost transports with their invariable fortitude and calmness, not attaching exaggerated importance to the matter, though inclining to criticise the naval precautions.

“Admiral Alexeieff transmits from the admiral commanding at Port Arthur the consoling intelligence that all the damaged Russian warships have been repaired. Of a similarly hopeful tenor are the unofficial messages which tell us of prosperity and plenty within the fortress, and military bands discoursing there with agreeable regularity.

“The Chifu correspondent hears a rather different story from a Chinese refugee, to the effect that the Russians are short of food and forage, and that their clothing is almost in rags. In view of the nature of Russian plans and precautions thus far, we think that there is likely to be a good deal of truth in the story of the Chinaman.

“No more striking illustration could be desired of the limited view of the Russians and their wholly inaccurate estimate of their opponents than the luminous and careful account of the battle of the Yalu by our Tokio correspondent.

CLEAR HISTORY OF A BATTLE.

“Compiled from the most authoritative sources of information, it gives perhaps as clear and exhaustive a history of the battle as could be compressed within the limits of a single article. It brings out once more the laborious forethought and the no less admirable daring of the Japanese; but even more striking is the plainness with which the Russian commanders stand convicted of something like sheer blindness in gauging the intentions of their adversaries.

“They misconceived the Japanese plan and they failed to perceive its true objective. It was a disheartening commencement of the war, and, unfortunately for Russia, there is nothing to show that her generals have since then really taken to heart the costly lesson of the Yalu.

A military correspondent speaks of the appointment of Marshall Oyama to command the Japanese forces in Manchuria, with the title of Governor-General of the occupied territory. It will be received with considerable satisfaction, and speaking of the place of the battle field of Telissu, no soldier who studies it, will feel

any surprise at the heavy casualty list of June 15. It is a revelation of the tactics of the respective combatants, and if it is necessary to await more complete details before attempting to describe the course of the action, the general results are clear enough.

On the Russian side there were about thirty-two battalions, a cavalry brigade, and the artillery of three divisions—namely, ninety-six guns—and it seems reasonable to conclude that 35,000 combatants were on the field. Against these the Japanese brought up three divisions and a cavalry brigade, while it is alleged, that their artillery was double the strength of the Russian.

AN OLD FIGHT IN AN OLD WAY.

General Baron Stackelberg appears to have occupied the very restricted front allotted to an army corps by the Russian regulations, framed for the Massenschlacht on the Vistula, and to have fought an old-world battle in an old-world manner.

Nothing could have better suited his enemy. Trusting confidently to the power of modern arms and to their own skill and intelligence in battle, the Japanese marched boldly forward on a wide front, their centre acting as something better than a containing force, and their wings prepared to overlap and surround the Russian flanks. Taught by their training to rely upon the "invincible Russian bayonet," Stackelberg's troops began a very plucky offensive movement against the Japanese front and right, but at too early an hour of the morning, before the battle had taken shape.

While this movement was in progress the position in rear was itself assailed, the Cossacks and dragoons driven off the field, and the Russian right laid bare. To meet this attack Stackelberg had to divert his reserves to his right, the offensive in the centre withered away for want of nourishment, and the troops engaged upon it fell back, hotly pursued and suffering heavy loss. As the Japanese flank attacks developed, the confined position of the Russians became the target for converging fire, and the extension of the Japanese wings became steadily more and more dangerous, threatening to repeat the disastrous day of Sedan. A few hours

more and nothing would have remained for the Russian force but to lay down its arms.

“The decision of the Russian commander to order a retreat was taken almost at the last moment compatible with the possibility of effecting it, and General Kuropatkin can reckon himself fortunate that any part of his lieutenant’s force quitted the field with arms in their hands. It was no thanks to his generalship that they did so.”

Highly-colored word-pictures of the severity of the Japanese artillery fire have been put forward to account for the Russian defeat and loss of guns, but, in the position taken up by General Stackelberg, round shot or Greek fire would have been almost as damaging. It is true that quick-firing artillery had here its first chance of demonstrating all its power and of employing the *rafale* or gust-fire with fatal effect. But there should have been no surprise as to its results, since the trial-ground has long ago proved all that it is necessary to know about numbers of bullets which fall in a given space, in a given time, and similar questions so dear to theorists, and it only remains for generals to adopt tactics suitable to the age.

THE JAP QUICK-FIRING GUNS.

Stackelberg’s position would have been untenable even if the Japanese guns had not been quick-firers, since it was turned on both flanks and exposed to fire at effective ranges from front, flanks, and rear. Against such fire no human troops can stand up, and it is the affair of generalship to prevent its occurrence.

The Russians got clear after heavy losses, the record of which mounts up day by day. Kuropatkin admits 3,200 casualties, but states that his list is incomplete, and the fact is patent. The defeated troops seem to have covered twenty-two miles between 3 P. M. and night and to have continued their flight on the sixteenth, when they must have reached Kaiping in a very disorganized and exhausted condition. Japanese troops from Siu-yen appear to have reached the San-pa-ling pass over the Sung-yo hills on the sixteenth, and must have been just too late to head off the retreat, but the nature of the force despatched and the record of its proceedings are not yet known.

Some criticism has been aroused by the failure of the Japanese army at Telissu to pursue effectively, but pursuits are as easy in theory as they are difficult in practice. The Japanese who fought at Telissu had marched hard for five days, during four of which there had been constant fighting, culminating in the battle of the fifteenth with its serious losses.

ANOTHER ACCOUNT OF THE BATTLE OF TELISSU.

A Japanese scout having brought news that the Russians were massing a large army at Telissu, twenty-eight miles north of Pu-lan-tien, evidently with the intention of attempting to force the Pi-tsze-wo-Pu-lan-tien line, which forms the northern gate of the peninsula, General Oku resolved to assume the offensive.

He marched out of Pu-lan-tien on June 13, his right moving by the Ta-sha-ho, the center along the railway, and the left by three roads, the westernmost of which was the Fu-chau highway, while the cavalry rode on the extreme right by a road from Pi-tsze-wo to Hiyugochin.

The Japanese columns, driving in many of the enemy's outposts, bivouacked after a march of twelve miles, all the units being in their appointed positions.

On the morning of the fourteenth the advance was resumed, the left wing moving independently to Nan-chia-ling, while the center and right, preserving touch, reached the line Chiao-kia-tan-Ta-ping-kau, which is twelve kilomètres south of Telissu. The country was hilly and the advance difficult.

Reconnaissances now showed that the enemy was holding a line from Ta-fang-shin to Lung-wang-miao—a very strong position, but defective in facilities for retreat. This disadvantage, however, was outweighed by proximity to the railway, enabling the rapid arrival of reinforcements.

The Russian fighting line consisted of twenty-five battalions of infantry and seventeen squadrons of cavalry, with ninety-eight guns, to which constant additions arrived later.

The Japanese forthwith advanced to the Wang-kai-tun, Lung-kia-tun, Wu-kia-tun line, where, posting their artillery, they bom-

barded the enemy's positions from 3 to 5 P. M. During the night the center occupied the heights west of Ta-fang-kau, and at dawn on the fifteenth the right seized the heights from Lung-kia-tun, to Wang-kia-tun, which they were ordered to hold firmly without making any strong offensive movement, pending a flank movement by the Fu-chau column.

The morning of the fifteenth was foggy, but at 5.30 A. M. it cleared sufficiently for the artillery to open from the center and right, after which the center advancing upon the hills (?) valley of the Fu-chau river encountered a stout resistance, but at 9.30 A. M. the flank movement on the left began to develop.

THE MOVEMENTS OF COLUMNS IN BATTLE.

The infantry and artillery of the Fu-chau column reached the heights westward of Wan-kia-tun, thus establishing touch with the center, when both columns, in face of a heavy artillery fire, advanced steadily, scaling the precipitous scarps and pushing back the enemy to Ta-fang-shin.

Meanwhile the enemy's left, heavily reinforced by the arrival of new troops, attempted to turn the Japanese right by repeated attacks, necessitating the bringing up of the whole of the Japanese reserves, which, supplemented by timely movements of the cavalry threatening the Russian left and rear, restored the Japanese initiative, so that the entire line, gaining ground simultaneously, enveloped the position of the enemy, who at 3 P. M. commenced to retreat, which the Japanese withering fire converted into a rout, although the ground did not favor pursuit. The Russian casualties are unknown, but they left 600 dead on the left wing alone.

Liau-Yang, June 17.—The engagement at Wa-fang-tien on the fifteenth was of the severest character, and in one Russian regiment nearly all of the officers were killed or wounded. Red Cross trains filled with wounded are passing through to the north.

June 18.—The Russian retirement before superior forces at Wa-fang-tien and the Japanese advance to the east and northeast of the Russian position make a still more important engagement in the south imminent. The Japanese have now reached a point

where the opposing forces are more evenly matched in strength, and it is now possible for the combatants to meet under equal conditions.

It is officially announced that the Russian losses at Wa-fang-tien, where there were only two Russian divisions opposed to three Japanese divisions, were at least 2,000, and the engagement is regarded here as having afforded a remarkable exhibition of the qualities of the Russian troops, inasmuch as it has shown their ability to retain positions under an almost unprecedented percentage of loss—a fact testifying alike to the courage of the men and the skill of the officers.

ANOTHER SIGNIFICANT COMBAT.

June 19.—During the battle of Wa-fang-tien, fifty Japanese guns concentrated a terrific fire on the Russian position. The effect of the shrapnel especially was terrible. The battle was decided by the artillery. The Russians turned the Japanese left flank; but the Japanese, wheeling round, changed their front. The Japanese advanced on the Russian position, which was admirably fortified in three lines of defence.

The *morale* of the Russian army is excellent, and General Kuropatkin possesses the confidence and the love of the troops.

St. Petersburg, June 18.—A telegram from Liau-yang announces the arrival there of 1,100 wounded, including 55 officers, from Wa-fang-kau.

General Stackelberg's force is marching north, the railway being unable to transport more than a few thousand men.

The Russian forces engaged at Wa-fang-kau, the telegram adds, consisted of 42 battalions, while the Japanese army comprised 44 battalions. The latter was, however, greatly superior in artillery, having brought up more than 200 guns.

June 19.—The Liau-yang correspondent of the *Novosti Dnia* telegraphs that in the fighting at Wa-fang-tien the Russians lost about 3,000 killed and wounded.

Referring to the engagement at Wa-fang-kau, a foreign military attaché has expressed himself as follows :

“Those who advised the Emperor to force General Kuropatkin in that direction are very much to blame. All those concerned in military affairs will be of one mind as to the prudence of General Kuropatkin’s plan, which was to avoid the attacks of the Japanese until, having received his reinforcements and feeling that he had all the troops in his hand, he would deliver the decisive battle with forces equal in number to those of his opponent.

“It is a very fortunate circumstance that the troops engaged were under the command of General Stackelberg, a prudent officer experienced in warlike operations, who preferred retreat to the destruction of his forces. It is lucky that he did not yield to a feeling of vain-glory and advance at all hazards, or even fail to retire. Had he done so, all would have been lost. The reverse would have become a disaster even if he had merely yielded to the recklessness of his troops, who, as you know, only retreated after repeated and express orders to do so. It is necessary to wait yet awhile for serious operations.

THE THREATENING OF RAIN.

“The rainy season is close at hand. The Japanese wish to take advantage of the last few days of fine weather to sweep the whole of the Russian forces out of the Liau-tung peninsula. You may expect serious engagements. It is providential that the Russians have been able to realize that they have no interest in maintaining their positions. Let them pay no respect to persons and frankly retreat until the day comes when they shall be equal, if not superior, in number, to the enemy. That was General Kuropatkin’s first plan. I assure you that it is that of a skilful, prudent and circumspect strategist, experienced in war.”

Vienna, June 19.—Bewilderment marks the comments of the Austrian press upon the situation created by General Stackelberg’s defeat. If General Kuropatkin has a strategic plan at all Austrian critics are unable to perceive it. The most acceptable explanation put forward is that General Stackelberg’s force was sent southwards in the hope of creating a diversion, not in favor of Port Arthur, but of the Russian headquarters. On this supposition

General Stackelberg is acquitted of blame, for he is considered to have done his duty by arresting for a time the Japanese advance.

Uncertainty as to the fate of his shattered army and further doubt whether General Kuroki be not preparing to strike a hard blow at the Russian main body cause Austrian observers to suspend final judgment, but their present tendency is to believe that in detaching General Stackelberg's force the Russian Commander-in-Chief ran a tremendous risk with unpardonable levity, and that the Japanese will probably exact from him the penalty to which those become liable who seek safety in half-measures where whole measures are indispensable.

A. JAPANESE DISASTER.

The disaster to the Japanese transports and the consequent insecurity in Japanese communications, may, it is thought, hamper General Kuroki's freedom of movement more effectually than General Stackelberg's adventure. The report that Admiral Togo has once more attempted to block the entrance to Port Arthur is looked upon as a sign that the Japanese fleet is needed elsewhere, either for convoy work or in order to pay stricter attention to the Vladivostok squadron.

June 20.—The *Russkoe Slovo* publishes a telegram of date from Liao-yang describing the fighting at Telissu, which contains the following:

“The hardships of the retreat were terrible. Our men had to spend several nights in the open lying on the bare ground, which heavy rains had rendered sodden. Many of them had no overcoats, having abandoned them in the trenches.

“Nevertheless, worn out and famishing as they were after two days of hard fighting, these heroes retired in good order. Not a murmur passed their lips. Their only grievance was that our inferiority in artillery had made the day go against them. Many men who were wounded in the first day's fighting not only refused to leave the ranks, but would not go to the ambulance station to have their wounds dressed. ‘The doctors,’ they said, ‘have enough to do without us.’

"The Japanese artillery have the advantage over us in the quickness with which they find the range. Since their war with China the Japanese have made a minute study of this country. They have measured all the distances and know every fold of the ground, and hence can be certain of their aim from the beginning of a fight.

"All the positions have been divided by them into squares, so they can shell the exact section where the enemy are located. Their batteries are so skilfully masked that they cannot be detected, and, in fact, in the battle of June 15, the position of three of their batteries could not be ascertained.

"They send picked marksmen to occupy heights which appear to be inaccessible. These men are followed by others, who scramble down the mountain side and appear where they are least expected. No stage of the fight is missed by them, for their batteries are connected by telephone and wireless telegraphy."

THE RUSSIANS SELL THEIR LIVES DEARLY.

Commenting upon the reverse inflicted on General Stackelberg at Wa-fang-kau and the attempt to console the Russian public by pointing to the numerical inferiority of the Russian forces in the different battles fought up to the present, and the high price paid for their victories by the Japanese, Lieutenant-Colonel Rousset, the eminent French military authority, writing in the *Gaulois*, says:—

"All that proves what no one doubted—namely, that the Russians are brave and sell their lives dearly. But, on the other hand, it is no evidence of their skill. The dispatch of General Stackelberg could be understood if it were simply intended to protect the concentration of General Kuropatkin's forces, but in that case he ought not to have advanced so far, and, above all, he ought not to have allowed himself to be led into a snare.

"If, on the contrary, it were intended as a diversion against the investment of Port Arthur, attempted with the object of giving effect to suggestions from St. Petersburg, then the despatch of these insufficient forces would be a shocking example of the lamentable strategy of small batches. In such conditions, to expose those

troops to all the risks involved was an unpardonable blunder. I very much fear that the latter hypothesis is the true one."

The St. Petersburg correspondent of the *Echo de Paris* has interviewed the military critic, General Jolivanoff, manager of the *Russki Invalid*, on the consequences of the battle of Wa-fan-kau. The General regards the capture of fifteen guns as quite natural, and says that the war is teaching the Russian artillery officers lessons. They have learned that in the gusts of quick fire it is impossible to save guns placed in a defensive position, for the storm of shot and shell annihilates both men and horses next to the artillery, and, while the former can be reinforced, the latter cannot. Thus at Tu-ren-cheng, one battery had ninety-seven horses killed out of one hundred and eight. Reinforcing guns are now being sent out to the seat of war.

PREMONITION OF GREAT BATTLE.

The premonition of the battle of the concentrated armies in Manchuria is here clearly given :

"The most imposing force with which the Russians have been confronted during the present war is now drawn up at the head of the Liau-tung Peninsula. The Japanese force consists of the united armies of General Kuroki and Oku, each composed of at least six divisions.

"Facing them is the army under General Kuropatkin. At least three times the number of troops engaged in the battles of Kiu-lien-cheng and Telissu are already drawn up prepared for battle.

"The proximity of the rainy season renders a great battle absolutely unavoidable, though it is said that the Japanese are retiring south from the direction of Kau-chau. Two engagements have taken place to the northwest of Siu-yen, the last having been fought on June 21. Fighting between the opposing advance guards is constantly reported. These engagements show that the Japanese are daily and regularly advancing all along the line, and this, moreover, is officially confirmed. The range of the field upon which the approaching battle will be fought is being rapidly determined.

CHAPTER XXVI.

NAVAL WARFARE ON THE NORTH PACIFIC.

Stratagems and Tragedies in the Seas of Japan—Adventurous Voyages—The Terrors of Torpedoes and Great Guns—Russian Repairs of Wounded Ships and Restoration of Fleet—Daring Strife and Destructiveness of Discharges—Strange Scenes at Sea.

JAPAN has distinctly, since Russia obtained the sanction and support of the Powers of Europe that the conquest of Manchuria should not become a fixed fact as a possession of Japan, prepared for war with Russia. Certainly the Japanese had a right to complain that they were subjected to hard usage when they were crowded out of the richest province of any country; when they had won it with the sword.

Russia and England and other expansive nations gained territory, sword in hand, and held it by the title of the weapon with which they captured the huge territories annexed. It was especially severe on Japan to be ruled by Europe, under Russia's influences, out of both Korea and Manchuria. It was a sore thing, indeed, to Japan, to submit to see Port Arthur become the great all the year open harbor on the Pacific, and that the Japanese waters should be, perhaps forever, flanked North, East and Southwest by Vladivostok and Port Arthur.

There is abundant systematic historical evidence that the Japanese lost no time in making ready to fight Russia if she could get fair play from the Central and Western European Powers; and she began with a profound study of Port Arthur. There is not a square mile, hardly a square foot of it, that had not been surveyed during the Japanese war possession, to be in the line of useful knowledge in case that which has happened should come to pass. This was rarely useful forethought.

On the 8th of August, 1904, the siege of Port Arthur had been going on six months—attacked by sea all the time, and by

land as soon as the troops of Japan could be transported from the free waters of the shores of the Empire and landed.

The first blow aimed and dealt at the great objective was struck at Port Arthur, and there has been no intermission in attacks not due to the strain that resulted therefrom; and the siege will be one of the most famous in the naval and military records of the nations that learn and teach war more and more.

One of the disadvantages of Russia has been, from the beginning of hostilities, the imperial professions of the guardianship of the peace of mankind. The Czar believed himself the peacemaker. The latest speech at the Hague, before the explosion of war, was by the representative of Russia, and his utterances did not fail to distinguish the pacific attitude and benign influence of his master's empire as a specialty of the age.

Perhaps much the better way to keep the peace is to be prepared for war; and this holds good to men and nations irrespective of race and form of government.

JAPAN'S GREATEST LESSON IN WAR.

The war of Japan with China in 1894 was Japan's great lesson in the art of war, and an example indispensable to obtain the self-confidence to attack Russia and the mastery of the science made an art. Ten years of preparation were studiously and strenuously spent in making ready to make war upon Russia. Not a day was lost in perfecting the little empire for the assault upon the big one. The feeling of aggression was the mastery of the game. All weapons were tested and the best models secured by the Japanese.

All the modern inventions were examined with the keenest eagerness for exact information, and the batteries for battlefields of matchless howitzers were constantly finished in the highest style and exercised. After a time the howitzer ammunition was fixed worthy of the new guns, and the secrets of terrible chemical combinations were found and applied in shrapnel bombs, including not only torpedoes, and increasing the very latest phenomena of deadly destructiveness.

There is a broad sense in which the whole war between Japan

and Russia was conducted as a siege of Port Arthur. The first blows were dealt in the famous outer harbor, where all precautions suggested Russia were secured. The result of the torpedo shock, February 8th, and other incidents of lesser importance, was to give the command of the waters of the Yellow and Japanese Seas to the Japanese navy, and to make certain the rapidity and security of the transportation of armies.

The sovereignty of the seas provides for the use of the shores, and it was ideal war to direct the first blow so as to speedily place the great fortress in a prison and doom her to ruin. An invincible armada and army was proceeding with the genius of electrical mechanism. The first care was to overmatch all possible foes in Korea, the piecemeal of Northern Asia for the correct symmetry of Japan.

THE WIDE-SPREAD FAME OF TOGO.

Admiral Togo has made a world-wide reputation by the ceaseless energy with which he hunted and threatened, when he did not assail, the great Russian fortress and arsenal. After a time, it occurred to the Japanese admiral to try the Hobson adventure to obstruct the mouth of a harbor highly fortified and containing a hostile fleet, the primary purpose being to "bottle up the war ships." The importance the Japanese admiral attached to this attempted blockade appears in unceasing vigilance, firing his longer range of big guns at sight of the fleet and garrison of Port Arthur.

At least a dozen times the Japanese Government gave out official information that the assailed harbor was finally blockaded, and yet the hardy Russians succeeded in removing the obstructions. At last, when the great trial of arms was to happen, the harbor, always difficult, was found open, and the Russian ships, shattered on the first night of the war, were repaired and effective—not good as new, but still formidable. The labors and skill of the Russian mechanics were high testimony to the capacity and ingenuity of the iron makers of the north.

Both sides seemed disposed to provide exaggerated accounts of the siege and the strategies and fighting that made a spectacle and music of grandeur for memorable months. A philosophical his-

torian and scientific student of navies, writing for the New York Post, wrote, dating at Tokio, the best professional account of the wonderful midsummer drama, whose scenery were mountains and seas, fleets and armies, and the awful clamor of the great guns.

The New York Evening Post published special correspondence dated Tokio, June 30, discussed with fairness and ability the naval strategy of Admiral Togo, saying:

“Day by day the sortie of the Russian fleet from Port Arthur is becoming more comprehensible. It looked, after the first report, like arrant folly. But we know more now about what happened and what the design was; and if for nothing else, the performance was of permanent interest for the fact that it gave the first serious exhibition of tactics between two opposed modern fleets of battleships, cruisers, destroyers and torpedoedoes.

THE RANK OF TORPEDOES AS WEAPONS.

“The honor, naval men agree, lies with the torpedoedoes. At any rate, on the results of that day and night of striving and counter-striving the United States may be asked to build 300 more torpedo boats. Submarines are also regarded as having attributes which should have been of exceeding value to the Japanese in that sortie; so if, as reported, the Japanese have obtained some submarines, and if, as is also reported, the Baltic fleet comes east this summer, the world may hear of eventful actions.”

On June 27 there were telegrams from different places in Hokkaido, at the northern end of the Empire, that the Vladivostok squadron was out again. Thus the attempt on June 23 of the Port Arthur fleet to go somewhere “into space,” is explained. The union of these ships of war would put the control of the Yellow Sea as well as the Japan Sea in dispute.

In the spring tides are high at Port Arthur—never higher than in the week of June 23—and these, with the repeated dynamiting of the cement-and-stone-laden ships that had been sunk in the channel, enabled big ships to float out safely. Out they came, then; first the steamers whose business it was to clear the way of anchored mines; and in their wake three battleships—the Per-

esviet, the Poltava, and the Sevastopol—and closely after them the armored cruiser Bayan, and the protected cruisers Pollada, Diana, and Askold.

Japanese guardships made wireless signals to Togo beyond the horizon. Promptly assembling his imperial combined fleet, consisting of five battleships, various cruisers, and several flotillas of destroyers and torpedoes, he lay in wait with the larger vessels and sent for the destroyers, torpedoers, and a squadron of cruisers. Each ship, long before, had been notified of its appointed place and its appointed duty in this very emergency, just as Sampson's knew what to do days previous to Cervera's rush from Santiago.

Three destroyer flotillas went forward to observe the outcoming ships. They saw them joined at eleven o'clock by the battleships Cesarevitch, the Retvizan, and the Pobeida. Some of these were supposed to have been disabled and unrepaired. Yet here they came, in broad daylight, through a fairway that the Japanese had spent millions of money and hundreds of lives to obstruct, and which the Minister of Marine in Tokio was declaring that same day to be still impassable for deep-draught vessels.

ENTICING THE ENEMY FURTHER OUT.

An hour later a squadron of Japanese battleships and cruisers ventured from the fleet hiding place "to entice the enemy further out." The enemy held his course for two hours. At 6.15 in the evening he sighted Togo's main force. The channel had been freed, and the Russians were sixteen miles out of port, advancing in two single files. The Cesarevitch was at the head of the big ships, and by the starboard the Novik and leading the destroyers towards the three flotillas of Japanese torpedoers. Togo waited. An hour and thirty minutes passed. The Russians were within two miles and a half. Togo moved obliquely from his shelter then, connecting with his squadron of cruisers, and making a formation like the barbed end of a fishhook, issued forth.

The Russians turned to starboard, pointed due south, and kept almost broadside on. They had been headed off. Togo veered a little, still to preserve the course which would eventually,

if followed, have brought on a collision. At 8 P. M., or dusk in the Far East, the Russians, thirty sea miles from harbor, suddenly shifted their course to the north, back to Port Arthur.

The Japanese ships came about abruptly, and line abreast, pursued. They were going sixteen to eighteen knots, while the speed of the Russians was fourteen to sixteen. This would not enable them to catch up before coming within range of the shore batteries; so at 8.20 Togo turned his combined fleet to one side, single column, and sent ahead the destroyers and torpedoers. These "swept on like the wind;" they stood up on their tails, so fast were their screws revolving; and five miles outside the Port they were near enough for one torpedo flotilla to fire the first torpedo at the headmost, following it up with other torpedoes.

THE FRONT WAS A ROW OF PROWS.

Needing to wait till morning, the Russians stopped under the forts to the left, ranged themselves bow out and stern to shore, and dropped kedge anchors. Their front was a row of sharp prows. They spread torpedo nets; then, under the moonlight, they stood at bay.

Guns from shore and searchlights from shore tried to give defence and aid. But during the whole night the Japanese torpedoes kept running up, as Indians used to fight in bow-and-arrow days, discharging their missiles and quickly circling off.

Eight times the little black boats repeated the attack, searchlights from ship and shore, batteries from ship and shore, throwing a dazzle into their eyes and exploding shot into the Shirakumo, the Chidori, and Number 64, and Number 66, maiming the boats and killing or wounding seven officers and men. Waterspouts were thrown up by the falling Russian shells, so it was difficult to see what effect the torpedoes were having, till the Shirakumo, at 11.30 after sending two at the stem of the battleship Peresviet, saw a pillar of fire arise and the ship disappear.

Port Arthur's fleet evidently was not prepared for fight, but only for flight. Repairs to the Retvisan and the Pobied must have been merely temporary cobbling. It is recalled that experts en-

gaged on those repairs said weeks ago that although the ships might be got ready for sea they could not be restored for battle.

The most likely guess as to what they had hoped to accomplish by this sally is that they sought to make a junction with the Vladivostok squadron. That squadron was sighted in the Japan Sea, near the Straits of Laperouse, the gateway to the Pacific Ocean, on the 27th. Having got word that the Port Arthur fleet had not succeeded in gaining the open sea, it changed its objective.

At about eleven in the morning, tide being again at flood, the Russians one by one left the corner where they had been subjected to a most trying series of torpedo assaults and steamed into harbor.

JAPAN'S DEFINITE COMMAND OF THE WATER.

The water communications of Japan exceed by far in copiousness those of Russia by rail, and, therefore, up to the extent of her resources in men and money, Japan possesses this definite superiority, initial and continuous, upon the necessary field of war—Korea and Manchuria. Unless Russia can reverse or substantially modify this maritime condition, her inferiority must endure until Japan has sent forward her last reserves or exhausted her treasury.

On the other hand, the known action of Admiral Togo at Port Arthur shows that Japan is not satisfied with the degree of maritime preponderance so far established. There is no other way of accounting for the reiterated efforts to block the entrance to the port, or for the repeated bombardments of the Russian works.

However much we may deplore the loss of life which has accompanied this double misfortune, it is unfortunately true that Japan can better spare 20,000 men than a first-class battleship. Loss of men is nothing to a nation of nearly fifty millions, since when men fall others can take their place, and the cry of "another for Hector" finds a ready and eager response. But the Hatsuse cannot be replaced, and has probably gone down in water too deep to make salvage operations practicable.

Moltko is credited with the saying that, to succeed in war, a nation required the four G's Geld, Geduld, Genie, and Gluck.

It is the last, the ever-inconstant and intangible luck, that

failed Japan when one-sixth of her battleship-capital foundered with the splendid Hatsuse. Nothing that human foresight can have prevented seems to have been wanting in naval precaution, and the loss of this fine ship can only be attributed to one of those fatal mischances inseparable from all kinds of warfare, but most of June 19. The total loss of life in the Hitachi Maru is supposed to have been about 1,000. Three British were among the number—Captain Campbell, the chief officer, Mr. Bishop, and the chief engineer, Mr. Glass.

All accounts agree that the Russians deliberately butchered combatants and non-combatants alike, whereas they showed much clemency in the case of the Sado Maru, allowing the majority to leave before torpedoing the vessel. Moreover, when they were asked for a longer time limit they replied, regretting their inability to grant the request, inasmuch as consideration for their own safety forbade delay.

ADMIRAL SKRYDLOFF'S REPORT.

St. Petersburg, June 19.—Vice-Admiral Skrydloff has sent the following telegram to the Emperor:

“On June 15 our cruiser division encountered in the Straits of Korea a Japanese transport steering from the south in the direction of the Japanese coast, which was visible on the horizon. The vessel proved to be the Japanese transport Izumi Maru, with troops on board.

“On the expiration of the time given those on board to lower boats and leave the ship, of which part of the crew took advantage, the transport was sunk by our guns. Shortly afterwards to the southeast two more transports, which proved to be the Hitachi Maru and the Sado Maru, were seen, the one with troops and the other coolies, horses, and railway plant, besides the crew on board.

“The transports refused to surrender, and at the end of the period granted those on board to take to their boats the two vessels were sunk by torpedoes and shells. The losses on the three transports, the tonnage of which aggregated about 15,000 tons, consisted of a portion of the troops and crews and of a large quantity of war material and railway plant.

“On June 16 our squadron fell in with the British steamer Allanton proceeding south with a cargo of coal from the Port of Mororan in the island of Hokkaido. The want of clearness in her papers and the irregularity of her log excited suspicion as to the neutrality of her cargo. The steamer was, therefore, sent to Vladivostok in charge of a detachment of soldiers under Lieutenant Petroff. She has arrived at Vladivostok, where a Prize Court will consider her case.” The squadron was under the command of Vice-Admiral Bezobrazoff.

MANŒUVERING DESTROYERS AT SEA.

Tokio, June 18.—The latest accounts show that at 9 o'clock in the morning of the fifteenth the Japanese transports Hitachi Maru and Sado Maru were steaming seventy miles from Moji, the former leading by seven miles, when they sighted three Russian cruisers at a distance of 8,000 mètres, the *Rossia* being ahead of the other two. Both transports forthwith put about and steamed back at full speed.

At 1,000 mètres the Russians opened fire on the Hitachi Maru, and continued firing till they were within 500 mètres. Ten shells struck her, killing many of the men and disabling the ship. Having accomplished this, the Russians passed on and torpedoed the Sado Maru, which was also disabled. Then they returned and rained shrapnel on the Hitachi Maru from a distance of 200 mètres for nearly two hours, finally torpedoing and sinking her at 3 P. M. The first discharge of shrapnel killed and wounded over 200 men.

While the Russians were dealing with the Sado Maru some eighty of the crew of the Hitachi Maru took to their boats. About fifty of these men proceeded to the Sado Maru, and the remainder reached land; but except these all on board the Hitachi Maru seem to have perished.

When the Sado Maru was disabled, about 600 lowered boats and rowed away. The remaining 400 resolved to perish with the ship, and were cheering and preparing their weapons in order to commit suicide when they observed the departure of the Russians, who apparently dared not remain longer. Thereupon the men

remaining on board the Sado Maru, seeing a hope of life, tried to stop the leaks and to construct a raft. The vessel drifted for twenty hours, when all were saved.

The Russian Minister of Marine received June 16, this :

“According to information received up to the fourteenth inst. from Rear-Admiral Vitoft at Port Arthur, the work of repairing the warships there has been brought to a most successful conclusion, alike as regards the battleships under the orders of Rear-Admiral Prince Ukhtomski, the cruisers commanded by Captain Reitzenstein, and the torpedo boats, thanks to the unremitting labors, the energy, and the absolute devotion of all concerned—Admirals, Divisional Commanders, the Port Commandant, and the other Commanders.”

THE IMPORTANCE OF A RUDDER.

In this connection the incidental success in getting an essential piece of machinery that restored a Russian ship to the service, is illustrative :

“The train which Colonel Spiridonoff succeeded in taking into Port Arthur at great risk almost immediately after the investment of the town by the Japanese troops landed at Pi-tsze-wo, contained besides war material, a rudder sent by the shipbuilding firm which constructed the battleship Cesarevitch. This rudder was intended to take the place of that destroyed by the Japanese torpedoes, and if it had not been found possible to get it through to Port Arthur the battleship could not have been repaired there.”

This was sent the Russian General staff from Lieutenant General Sakharoff :

“Since the morning of the 23d, the enemy have continued their advance on Kai-ping. The way was led by the cavalry in three detachments, each of four or five squadrons. Next were seen dense lines of infantry, and behind these marching columns. Towards evening the enemy's line of outposts extended along the valley of the river Kho to within fourteen kilometres south of Seng-yu-cheng. Behind them was grouped the cavalry. The village of Mo-tsia-tung, situated on the enemy's right flank, was occupied by infantry with

machine guns. Firing went on all day. We had one soldier wounded. The frontier guards, under Sub-Lieutenant de Meyer, prepared an ambush and suddenly opened fire on a squadron of Japanese cavalry, which sustained considerable losses in men and horses.

"Since June 21, a movement of the enemy has been observed from Khanza (Kan-tse), on the southern road from Siu-ren to Kai-ping, along the intermediate mountainous route branching off from Khanza to the north and leading to Hsia-kho-tung.

WELL TOLD STORY OF A FIGHT.

"On the 22nd, the Japanese occupied the village of Siandiao, but towards evening they evacuated it under pressure from a detachment of our advance guard. The enemy concentrated three battalions with six guns and four squadrons of cavalry at Ma-tsia-vai-tse, and at dawn on the 23rd, a detachment, composed of one battalion of infantry with two guns and two squadrons of cavalry, made a sudden attack on a sotnia of our advance guard bivouacking at Siandiao. The sotnia was obliged to retire, and the Japanese occupied the Black Mountain to the north of Siandiao, as well as the pass to the east of that position on the road from Siandiao to Siankhatin.

"When the first shots were fired, troops were concentrated on a position on the heights near Hsia-ko-tau. Four sotnias with three horse mountain guns were ordered to move from Hsia-ko-tau over the pass to Siandiao. The Japanese were dislodged by the fire of our artillery from the position they occupied, and, reinforcements having arrived, our detachment proceeded at eleven o'clock in the morning to an attack on the whole of the enemy's front. The enemy fell back in utter disorder. At one o'clock in the afternoon the village of Siandiao was occupied, and from there the fire of our artillery pursued the Japanese, who retreated precipitately to Erl-ta-kau and beyond.

"Our losses were three officers wounded, one bruised, seven soldiers killed, fourteen wounded, and one missing. The officer commanding the detachment speaks in high terms of the behavior of our artillery.

"On the 23rd, some Cossacks prepared an ambushade at Lio-tsia-khe, seven kilometres north of Seluchang, and a Japanese detachment which fell into it lost fifteen killed and wounded. On our side Sub-Lieutenant Polozoff was wounded.

"At about eleven o'clock in the morning of the 22nd, a Russian detachment which was making a reconnaissance six kilometres east of Ai-yang exchanged shots with the enemy's advance guard. Towards noon our detachment advanced and attacked the right flank of the enemy, who were dislodged from several advanced and fortified positions."

A NIGHT OF DOOM.

Tokio, April 20.—Good work, indeed, has been done on board the Japanese mine-ship, the Koryu Maru, escorted in her dangerous occupation by torpedo boats and destroyers.

Imagine a dirty night, with dense fog, drizzling, icy sleet, cold so intense that the thermometer registered 20 degrees Fahrenheit below zero, and the ship's compasses temporarily rendered useless. Such were the conditions under which these plucky Japanese did their deadly work on the night of the 12th instant.

Seeing their way with covered lights, these black masses moved noiselessly in the silent night, engaged in the work of laying mines. The continual flashing of the searchlights from the forts of Port Arthur, energetically doing sentinel duty and keeping faithful guard over the entrance to the harbor, not only failed to expose the Japanese flotillas, but helped the Japanese in their work by revealing to them their own position.

How innocently the Russian admiral with his fleet was decoyed out of the harbor the following morning, the 13th, by the third fighting detachment of the Japanese fleet, a few twenty-three knot cruisers! An easy prey, thought the admiral, and too tempting a bait to be ignored; for were not Russian losses to be retrieved? It was an excellent decoy, capable of moving swiftly, big enough to be tempting, yet not formidable by comparison; and when the Russians had been lured fifteen miles from their haven, the Japanese first fighting detachment, which had been skillfully

concealed behind Miao Tian, emerged from the fog at the psychological moment, ascertained by means of wireless telegraphy.

Confusion took possession of the Russian fleet, and there was agitated signalling and a race back to protect the port, led, unfortunately for himself, by the Russian admiral on the great battleship Petropavlovsk. The Petropavlovsk, instead of being in the van, should have been in the rear, covering the retreat of the smaller craft. How keenly the Japanese must have been watching to see if the work of the night was going to bear fruit, as they saw the Russians racing for the very spot where they knew the deadly mines were laid!

A SIGNAL OF MEMORABLE LOSS.

Then, when at last a huge explosion did occur, hurling a column of water high into the air and concealing the Petropavlovsk in a dense vapor, the crew of the Japanese destroyer which led the pursuing fleet cheered as they had probably never cheered before. For it must have been the most impressive sight they had ever witnessed. When the vapor lifted, they saw only the topmasts of the Petropavlovsk in the place where a few moments before a mighty ship of war had been racing at top speed for the harbor.

The badly-damaged condition of the Pobieda was seen as she limped along, listing to one side; and the Japanese witnessed the disorderly scene at the harbor entrance, when, in the mad scamper for safety, the Sevastopol and Pobieda collided.

What a tragedy it was! And for the Japanese, what a morning's work! And what fearful kind of thing is this mine which destroyed the Petropavlovsk? It is a special mine known in the Japanese Navy as the Oda mine, the invention of Commander Oda, its chief feature being that it has only to be dropped overboard.

Once in the sea, it can be trusted absolutely to adjust itself in the desired position and remain there. Such a facility is plainly of the highest importance where the laying of mines has to be done within the field of an enemy's searchlights, and within effective range of guns from which a shell would explode a whole

cargo of projectiles, blowing into fragments the ship and all on board.

Thanks to this facility, the Koryu Maru and her torpedo and destroyer consorts were only occupied for twenty minutes on the night of the twelfth in the actual laying of the field of mines, whereas the laying of an ordinary mine, which has to be anchored with the point of percussion in the right place, involves considerable difficulty and great delay.

Although the authorities are purposely vague regarding the Oda mine, another point claimed for it is that, whereas the ordinary mine can only be counted on to flood one water-tight compartment of a battleship at the rate of some fifty tons of water per hour, the Oda mine operates over a much wider area, and with such destructive force that a vessel striking one is virtually doomed.

ACCOUNTING FOR AWFUL EXPLOSION.

Notwithstanding this, however, some Japanese experts are disposed to think that the singular rapidity of the Petropavlovsk's catastrophe is explained by the vessel having struck two or even three mines. The mines have to be separated by an interval in feet approximately equal to the number of pounds of explosive with which they are charged; were they placed closer, the firing of one would probably explode the others.

An interval of about one hundred yards is required with mines containing three hundred pounds of explosive. They are laid in transverse lines. As the blowing up of the Petropavlovsk appeared to the onlookers like one explosion, the probability is that she was steering diagonally across the lines and that the explosions were practically simultaneous. Certainly only the most terrible injuries could account for her immediately sinking.

The mines are made in the torpedo department at Yokosuka, about twenty miles from Yokohama, which is in charge of Chief Constructor Taneda. It was he who explained for me the Oda mine. He told me that Commander Oda is giving much thought and labor to perfecting it, and that he is assisted by Commander Takebe, Captain Kubota, and Chief Warrant Officer Takenaga.

Automatic adjustment and unerring position are the points being striven for.

The new cruisers Nisshin and Kasuga received their baptism of fire in chasing the retreating Russian fleet into Port Arthur, and later bombarded Port Arthur from behind the Liautishan promontory, dropping the shells into the citadel with high angle fire. The Japanese officers speak enthusiastically of the sighting apparatus with which the guns are furnished; they say that it is superior to anything else of the kind in the Navy.

These officers also combat strongly the deprecatory view entertained in some quarters regarding high angle fire, asserting that the enemy has virtually no protection against it, and that it must be most damaging if accuracy in sighting the guns can only be ensured. It was by high angle fire that Wei-hai-wei was reduced in 1895, and the Russians at Port Arthur have suffered so much by it that they probably appreciate its value.

The disaster to the Russian fleet on the 13th inst. probably justified the repeated attempts to seal the entrance to Port Arthur, for the effect was shown by the fact that the Russian warships were more than an hour in entering the harbor on that day.

CHAPTER XXVII.

SOME STARTLING FEATURES OF THE WAR.

Of Asiatic Empires, Races and Religion—In the Armies that Tread the Wine Press of Blood—There appear the Brotherhood of Brave Men—Wonderful Story of a Japanese Christian Colonel's Death, Showing How a Hero, a Japanese Hero gave Testimony—He was a Christian, and Died as a Martyr—Death Took Pity.

IT will sound strange to English speaking people to learn that, after the war had been in progress four months, the Far Eastern public remained ignorant of Japanese strategical plans, except in so far as it had been possible to deduce their nature from actual movements in the field.

But the whole course of events have been mapped out by sundry American and European critics, a consensus being observable in one point only—that a landing would be effected at Niu-chwang, for the purpose, first, of relieving the pressure at the Yalu, and, secondly, of threatening the main line of the Russian communications southward of Hai-cheng. But that is precisely what has not happened.

Perhaps it was too obvious to promise success. So, doubtless, those that predicted it will now say. In Japan, however, or at any rate those who were closely watching the developments of the situation, never believed in a Niu-chwang landing as a cardinal feature of Japanese strategy; and for a very simple reason—the thing would have been too perilous.

The Japanese do not take needless risks. They will dare anything when the moment for daring comes; but, on the other hand, they will neglect no precaution nor trust anything to chance so long as discretion and provision are possible. Port Arthur, even with a greatly crippled squadron and a partially obstructed exit, still commands the Liau-tie-shan channel much more effectively

than it can be commanded by any fleet having its base 100 miles distant.

A landing at Niu-chwang, or any point on the west of the Liau-tung Peninsula, would mean a line of communications lying almost within gun-shot of Port Arthur. It would mean, also, an army virtually isolated and deprived of all co-operative capacity throughout the most important stages of its work.

There did not appear to be any compensation for such a risk and such disadvantages. Besides, the Japanese never doubted their own ability to deal directly with the pressure at the Ya-lu. On the contrary, they would probably have been glad to find Kuropatkin expending greater energy in that part of the arena. Thus Niu-chwang has been left severely alone, and the plan of campaign, as it unfolds itself, has been found to follow the lines of 1894. What the Japanese did in their war with China proved to be about the best they could have done, and they seem content to take the same course now.

JAPANESE SOLDIERS WON GLORY AT YALU.

Since the Yalu battle Japanese officers speak with increased assurance about the qualities of the Russian soldier. They pay a very high tribute to his stubborn courage. At Hoh-mu-tang he was seen in an almost desperate position, his line of retreat severed and the enemy closing in on him from all sides.

The fierce valor he displayed at this crisis, his wolf-like ejaculations, his head-erect rushes over the bodies of dead and dying comrades, his blindness to danger—all resembled the behavior of a wounded boar rather than that of a man. It is in such terrible situations that he is seen at his best, and the Japanese declare that, as they witnessed this spectacle of intrepidity, these men of splendid physique, with deep-chested voices and of grandly warlike mien, it seemed profoundly pitiful to destroy them. But in situations less disturbing, less provocative of passionate emotion, the Russian soldier seems to want *elan*. He has not the dash of the Japanese private, and he appears to be proportionately inferior for offensive purposes. This deprecation, however, is made with diffidence, whereas the appreciation is emphatic.

Another point which has greatly moved Japanese admiration is the devotion of the common soldier. A striking example of this was witnessed for the first time at the battle of the Yalu, when, a wounded Russian officer having been taken prisoner, his body-servant came and surrendered of his own accord, solely for the purpose of tending his master.

The man never left the officer's side. He remained by him the whole night without closing an eye, and from his demeanor at the time the wound was surgically treated it could be seen that the first symptom of harm to his master would have been resented by the soldier, even at the cost of his own life.

It is plain that in nearly every case where his body servant survives a wounded Russian officer can be sure of safe conveyance from the field of battle. This unflinching loyalty appeals strongly to the Japanese, but they do not endorse the idea of detailing men to act as body-servants to officers.

RUSSIANS AND JAPS BETTER ACQUAINTED.

By this time the Russians are probably beginning to understand what kind of treatment they may expect as prisoners in Japanese hands. Hitherto their notions seem to have been very strange. Whether through sheer ignorance or because of designedly false teaching, they appear to have regarded the Japanese as savages, capable of resorting to any cruelty.

Thus, when a shipload of prisoners was recently en route for Japan, two of them attempted to drown themselves, their idea being that on arrival they would be put to death with horrible tortures. Perhaps this fantastic notion is responsible for what unfortunately seems to be a well authenticated fact—namely, that in some instances the Russians have stabbed, shot, or otherwise brutally maltreated Japanese lying wounded on the field of battle.

The enormous number of mines strewn by the Russians in the seas adjacent to Port Arthur and Dalny has been much commented on in Japan. Apparently the interests of neutral commerce are little if at all considered in selecting positions for these engines of destruction. It is evident that, since the limits of territorial

waters were originally fixed with reference to the range of old-time artillery, some modification is necessary now that gun-fire has become effective up to distances of seven or eight miles.

But, pending international recognition of such an extension the laying of mines without any warning in the fairways of trading steamers seems a barbarously dangerous method of asserting the new limitation. This is one of the questions which will come up for discussion after the war. Meanwhile the immediate business of the Japanese is to remove the mines, and, as they lost a torpedo-boat and a despatch-boat when the navy undertook this task in Kerr Bay and Blakeney Bay, a safer and less expensive method is now resorted to. Divers are employed.

The Japanese diver is extraordinarily skillful, and since in moderately calm weather it is possible to detect a mechanical mine by careful observation, the diver finds no difficulty in going down and cutting the moorings, so that the mine floats to the surface and can then be easily taken up. It is said that a competent diver can deal thus with about thirty mines during the day, and as the Japanese have three hundred divers busily at work, Ta-lien-wan Bay and the Liau-tie-shan waters should soon recover their navigability.

This is the story of the last two hours of two Japanese spies who were caught by Russian Cossacks just as they were about to shatter with dynamite a bridge on the line of the Manchurian railway.

They had made their way to the bridge through the Cossack lines, and were about to shatter it to pieces, in view of a company of the Czar's men, but at the last moment were not quick enough.

When the accused were led into the little room of the Chinese "fansa," which had been turned into a court-martial hall by the military authorities of Harbin, the judges and spectators, consisting almost wholly of officers, could not conceal their feelings of admiration for the doomed men.

The formalities of the court-martial were of the simplest order, and the hearing of the trial offered little of interest, seeing that the accused openly, and not without a certain patriotic pride,

accepted the responsibility of the crime weighing upon them. They gave their names and rank without the slightest tremor of voice.

"Tchomo Jokoka, forty-four years old, colonel of the staff, passed out first from the Military Academy of Yeddo," said the elder of the prisoners, a short, thick-set man of strong and energetic countenance.

"Teisko Jokki, thirty-one years old, captain of the staff," said the other, taller and slighter in build than his comrade, with a thin and deeply bronzed face. As he gave his name he turned a disdainful look on those in court. A moment later he added:

"Buddhist."

"And you, colonel?" asked the president of the tribunal, "are you of the same religion as your co-accused?"

"No, sir; I am a Christian."

Seeing the looks of astonishment produced by this declaration, he added quickly: "I am all the same a true Japanese, born of Japanese parents. But in my youth I was won over by the soft words of Christ, and was converted from Buddhism."

Colonel Jokoka spoke in English, and it was an Englishman employed in the Russo-Chinese bank who translated his testimony. A Chinese acted as interpreter to Captain Jokki.

The explosive substances found on their persons were now shown to the prisoners, but they did not seek to exculpate themselves, nor did they deny in any particular the declarations of the Cossacks who had arrested them.

The interpreter next translated to the officers the military public prosecutor's charge, demanding for them death by hanging.

I watched the faces of the two men when this was read out. Not a single muscle did they move. Impassive as statues, they betrayed by no outward sign the painful workings of their brain.

Their advocate pleaded for a remission of the death sentence to one of hard labor, in consideration of the full avowal they had made. This speech for the defense made no impression on the two prisoners, and not a word did they utter.

Knowing that the law admitted of a reduction of the extreme

penalty, we all expected a lighter sentence than that of capital punishment, but after a deliberation of half an hour the tribunal condemned the two officers to the maximum punishment—namely, hanging.

Jokoka and Jokki heard the sentence with as unconcerned an air as if it had fallen upon strangers to them. Indeed, had the verdict been a lighter one, they would probably have shown surprise.

Only confirmation by Gen. Kuropatkin was awaited. I was present when the commandant read out Gen. Kuropatkin's order changing the mode of death to shooting.

"It is well," was Jokoka's reply. "I am ready." His companion said nothing, his most disdainful look expressing indifference as to the deaths that awaited them.

Jokoka asked leave to write to his family and embraced Jokki. The latter now opened his lips. "I die more tranquil than you, colonel."

"How so," asked the other.

"I have done my duty to my country and my Maker. You have only earned the thanks of your country."

"What do you mean, captain?"

"I have often thought, colonel, of what you have told me of Christianity. You boast of its superiority to my creed. Well, I find that you are not in accord with your Christ's teachings. I, on the contrary, have nothing to reproach myself with."

"You are perhaps right, captain. But now I have a favor to ask of you. Will you authorize me to perform the first really Christian act which has been allowed me in my life. You know that I have still a bundle of notes of the Chinese rank. There are, perhaps, a thousand rubles. I want to hand over this money personally to the commandant to give to the Russian Red Cross for their wounded. Do you agree to this?"

Jokki stood reflecting a moment. Then he said: "I have always felt great affection for you, colonel, and if this makes you happy, give the money to our enemies."

When the commandant returned to the prisoners Jokoka

handed him a sheaf of white bank notes with red inscriptions, saying:

"There are about a thousand rubles here. We beg you to give the money to your Red Cross."

"But had I not better send it to your families?"

"Oh, no! no!" the condemned men cried with one voice. "The Mikado will not forget our wives and children. Do not refuse us this satisfaction," added Jokoka; "divide the money among your wounded."

The commandant still insisted that the officers should send home to Japan all they left. For one moment Jokki appeared to waver. He glanced at his comrade in misfortune. The latter only reiterated his wish to make amends in this way for the wrongs committed in his life. The captain bent his head, acquiescing at last.

Our commandant yielded. He then asked the two Japs whether they wished for anything.

"The Buddhist's reply was: "I should much like a bath; after that we will be at your disposal."

A bathroom is an unknown article in Harbin, and the commandant could only send for a couple of pails of water.

The Christian colonel earnestly begged to be allowed to see a clergyman before going to his death.

As there was no Lutheran chaplain on the spot, the Russian priest of the regiment was sent to him. Jokoka begged him to read out the Sermon on the Mount. This was read in Russian, Jokoka following the text in his Japanese Bible, which had been left with him in his cell. When the priest came to the words, "For if ye love only those who love ye, what reward will ye have? And if ye welcome only brothers, wherein lieth the virtue?" Jokoka closed the book, joined his hands and bowed his head a moment, his lips moving.

"Jokki," he said, "you are right. You die more peaceful than I, for I have never felt so strongly how much my life has been in disaccord with Christ's teachings."

The carriage which was to take the two men to their death

was now waiting. Outside swarmed the crowd—that hideous crowd, always alike at such times—merchants out of work, seedy adventurers who had flocked out to the far East on the lookout for an odd job.

The two Japanese went to their doom as impassive as ever. Only the colonel, one could see, was a prey to painful thoughts. Both lighted their cigarettes, and asked not to be tied to the posts.

The commandant took a couple of handkerchiefs from his pocket and handed them to the prisoners. Jokoka himself bound his eyes, but Jokki refused disdainfully to do so, declaring he wished to watch the operations.

Twelve soldiers were posted in front of the colonel, another twelve in front of the captain.

“If you have any pity on these unfortunate men,” said the commandant to his soldiers, “aim at their hearts. Death will be instantaneous.”

Jokoka fell to the left. Jokki, without having twitched his eyelids, fell forward. Both were riddled with bullets. Our good soldiers had taken pity on them.

CHAPTER XXVIII.

PORT ARTHUR'S DEFENCES.

A Military Expert Engineer's Sketch of the Fortifications
—Their Form and Situations—The Town in an Amphitheatre in a Ring of Hills—The Equipment of Artillery
—The Greatest Siege of Modern Times.

“**P**ORT ARTHUR may be described in a word as a strong fortress, guarding a cramped harbor and a small dockyard. The site lends itself admirably to land defence. The old Chinese town lies at the northeast end of the inner harbor, where the Russians constructed a fine basin some six acres in extent, provided with one dry dock. Around this basin are placed the buildings of the dockyard, surrounded by a twelve-foot wall, built of local stone.

“Just outside this wall, on a little eminence, stands the palace of the Fun-da-tun, or the Chinese mandarin of the scarlet button. It has been cleansed and is now occupied by the Admiral Superintendent. Close to it, in the Chinese town, is the headquarter building of the land forces and garrison offices. In a wooden kiosk on the green slopes of the eminence the band plays daily. Even now, we are carefully informed, the ladies listen to the music in the pauses between the sound of the cannon.

“The view from the public garden embraces the whole dockyard, but only a glimpse of the sea, for the Zolotaya Gora, or Golden Hill, hides the water to the east of the narrow entrance to the harbor. The hill of Wei-yuen, the spit of which, running inwards to the north, is called the Tiger's Tail, blocks the view to seaward west of the entrance channel.

“The eye roams unchecked over Golden Hill, with its Marconi mast, its quarry, and the heaps of Cardiff coal at its base. Similarly one can see the quick-firing defences right and left of the harbor, the back of the lighthouse, and the gorges of the powerful

forts to the east and south. But placards inform you that closer inspection is *strogié vozprashaetsa*, or 'severely forbidden.'

"Woe betide the unfortunate who should level field-glass or telescope on the grim guns whose muzzles, pointing over the parapets, not from embrasures, greet the enemy from seawards.

"The shipping in the harbor, as I sat in the kiosk, listening to the strains of Glinka's 'Life for the Tsar,' lay huddled close together in the narrow estuary, which many yards of fetid mud separated from the shore. The daily supply of cattle and fresh vegetables from Chifu was to be landed at high tide from Messrs. Butterfield and Swire's steamer lying off the Tiger's Tail.

"In the foreground, along shore, was the Variag, the latest production of Cramp's yard in Philadelphia. To the south were the low hills between me and Pigeon Bay, their summits showing the masonry gorges of the forts defending them. Nearer to the east, the Sung-shoo hills died out in swelling curves. On these an army of masons, bricklayers, carpenters and shouting Shan-tung coolies were busy erecting the new town of Port Arthur.

PREPARATION FOR SPRING RAINS.

"The roadways were prepared with cement and macadam, the drains cut deep to carry off the torrential spring rains. All around were rising rapidly barracks, hospital quarters, club-houses, casino and hotel. Poor and stunted trees were planted to give the shade which is so conspicuously absent. Indeed, at that time the Russians were raising a beautiful town as quickly as the Genii built the Palace of Aladdin. Was it, like the structure of the Arabian Nights, destined to vanish as quickly as it came?

"The strategical value of Port Arthur is that it commands, as far as any land fortress can command, the Gulfs of Korea and Liau-tung, and might serve as a base of operations either against Taku and Tien-tsin, Chifu, or Wei-hai-wei, not to mention Kiao-chau. Its land communications, placed as it is on a peninsula, are defective, unless its holders command the sea.

"We have seen that Stossel's line of defences across the Kin-chau isthmus, impregnable from the front, turned its Achilles' heel

to the Japanese light-draught craft in Kin-chau Bay, which, silencing the guns on the Russian left, enabled their brothers of the army, wading waist deep in the water, to turn the position.

“Tactically, Port Arthur is a difficult prize to seize. Its defences are divided into the land and sea forts, which again may be subdivided into seven sectors of defence, four on land and three on sea.

“The town lies in a great amphitheatre, its area encompassed by an oval ring of hills, rising by degrees to altitudes of some 1,200 feet to 1,400 feet. On every one of these hills are semi-closed works—that is to say, forts whose fronts towards the enemy on the land side are hidden and protected by mounds or parapets of earth, whilst their gorges, or sides away from the enemy, are closed by masonry walls inaccessible to scaling ladders, and provided with slits or embrasures for the defenders to fire through.

ACHIEVEMENTS OF ENGINEERING.

“It is General Vernander of the Russian Engineers, no unworthy successor to Todleben, who is responsible for the site, design and trace of these defences. Their form is similar to that of the works on Portsdown-hill, with modern improvements. That is to say, technically, they are on the kaponier trace, the ditches being very deep and defended by kaponiers or projecting turrets of masonry, roofed with earth. These are sunk deep in the earth, so as to be immune from the bursting shells of the enemy, and in them are placed quick-firing guns, which sweep the ditches with a hail of iron projectiles.

“The works have also escarp and counterscarp galleries. The guns in these forts I will presently describe. They resemble our 7.10-inch and 11-inch breechloaders, and amongst them a few 5.9-inch guns taken from the Chinese in 1900. I counted the hill forts as I drove round the excellent carriage road which leads from the Lake Ping-chui-tze, a shallow lagoon east of the harbor in which the torpedo-boats often lie, to Kee-kwen fort, due north of the Chinese town, They are some fifteen in number.

“Besides these are the batteries on Golden Hill. I estimated

their number at six to eight. I could not approach them. The guns in these latter I put down as 10-inch or 11-inch, Poutiloff pattern, mounted on over-bank carriages, with smaller quick-firing guns mounted near the Marconi mast and at intervals down the side of the hill sloping steeply toward the sea.

"It will be better to describe the perimeter of the works at Port Arthur, commencing from the east and dividing its seven sectors, or more or less independent areas of action. The first (land) sector from the east is 1,200 yards broad. It dominates Pe-tou-shan or Ri-tung-shan hill above Takhe Bay.

"The Russians term it 'Drakovy Position.' Its *point d'appui* is Pe-tou-shan fort, about 450 feet above sea level, with two dependent batteries on the sea side. Facing north are the two large Ur-tung forts, with seven smaller works, not shown on the map, armed with, in all, 80 guns. Of these guns, 2 are 28 centimetre, 32 are 22 centimetre, and 48 15 centimetre calibre. These guns fire north and northeast.

MEASUREMENT OF HILLS FOR DEFENCES.

"The second (land) sector occupies the summits of the Kee-kwan (Ichan) hills. It comprises five forts, marked on the map, to the north and northeast of the old Chinese town. This group of works prevents No. 1 sector from being taken in reverse. The third sector comprises the heights west of the old and north of the new Russian town. It comprises the large forts of An-tsz-shan and E-tse-shan, supported by the Sung-shoo or Sung-shan fort and three other works. It commands the parade ground, railway and road, and protects the preceding sector from being turned on its western flank.

"The extent of this sector is one and a half to two miles in depth and its front considerably more. It mounts 60 guns, probably of 15 centimetres calibre. There are many open works in it which cannot be shown on a small scale map. The fourth (land) sector extends from the south end of Sung-shan or Table Hill chain, along White Wolf Hill, to the extreme southwest of the Wei-yuen or Tiger Peninsula. It comprises four or five great forts.

“The Ta-ku-shan range comprises the An-tsz-shan and E-tse-shan front of the Table Heights or Sung-shoo chain. I now must describe the sea front, of three sectors, which we take in rotation from east to west. Beginning with the east, the fifth sector comprises the Golden Hill (Zolotaya Gora) position. This rocky eminence, which, surmounted by its Marconi mast, forms so striking a feature in the view of Port Arthur from the sea, is on the east side of the narrow entrance to the inner harbor.

“It commands the outer bay, the scene of so many attacks, studded with sunken vessels. It is 400 feet above sea level. At its base a battery and five coast defences are armed with four 30 centimetre and five 28 centimetre guns,

“The Chinese names for the forts on the flanks are Lâu-hut-si (Lâu-lui-chui) and Hwang-chin. Thirty-two medium and 48 quick-firing guns, some 18 of which are disposed in a battery at the sea level under Hwang-chin, complete the armament of the Golden Hill sector.

THE SOIL AND ROADS OF THE FORTRESS.

“The second coast group (sixth sector) is that of Wei-yuen or Tiger Peninsula, including the torpedo-boat slip and sheds on Tiger's Tail. The gorges of its defences are visible from the West Port, but their walls prevent the interior from being seen.

“The number of works on Wei-yuen is five; the highest, on the east, is 380 feet above the bay; the lowest, Ching-tsu, perhaps not 70 feet above sea level. The Chinese names for the forts here were Wei-yuen, Sing-tse-ying, Man-tau and Ching-tau. They mount 27 guns of heavy calibre, probably 22 centimetres,

“The seventh sector (third coast group) comprises the closed work south of Ching-tau fort and three coast batteries. These are armed with 6-inch mortars. It is said that a new work, 1,498 feet above the sea level, has been constructed at Liau-tie-shan. I doubt it. But that some new works have been built and armed along the shores of Pigeon Bay there is no reasonable doubt.

“A fortress has other needs than forts and guns. Its stores, abattoirs, wells, sanitary arrangements, hospital, barracks for men;

its forage, water, stabling, forges for horses, must all be provided. The communications to enable the men at the guns to be served with their wants are most important. In these details the Russians have always been *au fait*, and in this case as much as ever.

"It is near the old Chinese redoubt at Tong-chai-tze, that the arsenal, with its spare guns, siege and field, carriages, wheeler's shops, etc., lies. The road from the old town is fairly good. The old Chinese wells were foul and dangerous, but the Russians have sunk new ones; one or two on the artesian principle tap distant strata bearing absolutely pure water.

"The abattoirs, where some seventy head of cattle from Chifu were daily slaughtered, are in the same neighborhood, which was considered the safest from fire. Huge collections of groats, tinned provisions, etc., are stored in the long, low buildings near Tong-chai-tze; whilst cases of vodka from Poklevski Koziel's Siberian distillery were piled high in the station enclosure and carefully guarded.

DETAILED DESCRIPTION OF STRONG DEFENCES.

"The soil at Port Arthur is limestone. The rainfall is heavy in spring, at other times *nil*. There is plenty of snow in January and December. There was a vast number of horses, mules, and donkeys in the fortress, which the Chinese coolies, numbering many thousands, used in their labor. The habits of these Shantung folk were indescribably filthy, and in 1902, cholera, the swift avenger of dirt and neglect, carried off many victims.

"The sanitary arrangements for the troops are good. The new barrack accommodation is superb. Placed under the Sung-shoo or Sung-shan hills, the buildings include airy barracks, with detached dining-rooms, hospitals, officers' houses, orderly rooms, hospitals, etc. The communications are excellent, consisting, as they do, of macadamized roads.

"A fine metalled road leads to the new town from the old past the railway terminus over the Pei-yu-shan inlet, which it crosses by a solid wooden bridge some thirty feet broad. All this new town, excellently disposed, drained and looked after, is lighted by

the electric light, and scavenged by an army of chattering Chinese coolies.

“The approach to Port Arthur from the sea gives an opportunity of observing the batteries on Golden Hill, very difficult to distinguish from the rocks around the Marconi mast and electric light apparatus. This latter flashes a 10,000-candle-power light from at least two projectors.

“The test of the value of the above is tested in the final sentences, as follows, but as great energy was put into the siege, fighting is spoken of near Semaphore Hill. This is at the junction of the first land and Golden Hill sectors. If the besiegers can establish their heavy guns, as some aver, in this part of the perimeter of the forts, it is difficult to see how the Russians can hold out for long, as the dockyard, the two towns, basin, and West Port would all be subjected to the fire of the invaders. But to get many heavy guns into these places is vastly difficult. It was precisely this vast difficulty the Japanese overcome and enabled them to drive out the Russian fleet.

FIRST SHELLS FROM TOGO'S SQUADRON.

“As one steams in, the low hill of Pei-yu-shan with the estuary bridge appears facing the entrance. It was here and in the Russo-Chinese Bank close to the basin that the first shells from Togo's squadron fell in February. The quick-firing gun batteries, armed with some eighteen guns each, almost look into the ship's portholes, both to port and starboard as she enters.

“To the west the torpedo-boat shed on Tiger's Tail and the torpedo-boats in the West Port anchorage used to attract attention. To the northeast, to starboard, are seen the thousands of tons of Cardiff coal, stored in this spot before the war began.

“As the entering ship is ordered to anchor off Tiger's Tail Point, the whole dockyard before described is visible, with the masting shears protected by Golden Hill and the great scar in the latter, where it is intended to make a second dry dock.

“I could not help remarking, on both my first and second visit, the cramped space in the harbor or West Port at low tide; and

thinking, first, where was a fleet to lie, and secondly, where were its lame ducks to be treated?

"The shops in the town, mostly kept by Germans, were not bad, and, as the port was free, one could purchase food, drink, and other necessaries much better and more cheaply than elsewhere in Russian dominions, where strict protection obtains."

A very clever article from Captain William G. Haan, of General Staff, United States Army, who was appointed to the Military Academy from Indiana and graduated June 12, 1889. He was assigned to the artillery as second lieutenant, promoted to first lieutenant in August, 1896, and captain in February, 1901. During his service with the Coast Artillery, Captain Haan has devoted much time to the study of fortifications, and on that subject is one of the best informed of the young officers of the army. Upon the organization of the General Staff, Captain Haan was selected for that special service, and is at present on duty with the War College at Washington.

DESPERATE AND DEADLY WORK AT PORT ARTHUR.

He has made a close study of military matters and the current news, and sheds light as he writes, and gives an admirable explanation of the Port Arthur fortress and the desperate and deadly work that has distinguished the siege:

"The inner line of the Port Arthur fortifications to guard against land attack is approximately five miles from the centre of the harbor. These fortifications are, in every sense of the word, permanent fortifications; that is, the guns were placed there in time of peace behind parapets constructed of concrete and covered in front of this with masses of earth, and in front of the parapet either ditches or other similar obstacles.

"The forts in this line are, moreover, so placed that they mutually protect each other; that is, the fire of one sweeps the ditches and front of the other, making it thus practically impossible to carry any of them until the guns of the adjoining forts are either silenced or destroyed.

"The guns mounted in these fortifications, while not as large

as those used for defence on the sea front, are, nevertheless, heavy guns, six-inch calibre, throwing a shell weighing 100 pounds to a distance of about five or six miles. This is not the extreme, but the 'effective,' range of these guns.

"In front of this line of permanent works are many detached forts, placed in advanced positions mutually supporting each other, and are supported also by a line of permanent works. These detached works are so placed that, in case any of them fall into the hands of the enemy, they are made untenable by the fire of the forts in their rear, whose fire sectors cover the entire interior of the detached works. These detached works about Port Arthur are mostly of a semi-permanent nature; that is, they were probably built since the war began."

FORTIFICATIONS TEN MILES LONG.

These were mounted before the Japanese assaults:

"Sixty six-inch guns, rapid fire; 100 five-inch and four-inch guns, rapid fire; 200 smaller calibre rapid fire guns; 200 machine guns.

"This will give, under the assumption that the line of final resistance is ten miles long, fifty-six guns to the mile, or an average of one gun to about thirty yards.

"We have every reason to believe that the pupils who studied under General Todleben, one of the world's greatest military engineers, and who planned the Port Arthur fortifications, have completed these works so efficiently that an open assault is a practical impossibility, so long as all the guns are manned and the parapets on their flanks held by well-trained infantry and machine gun fire."

One cannot refrain from thinking of those two great American commanders, Grant and Lee, who were pitted against each other in the final campaign of the Civil War. Here is presented a problem in warfare that is ideal, looking at it from either side.

Lee, one of the greatest defensive commanders, with all the scientific knowledge of the highly educated and scientifically trained practical military engineer, in command of an army not discouraged by defeat and of the highest moral courage.

Grant, great for his clearly made plans of campaign, persistent in their execution; an educated and trained soldier who had to his credit in the Vicksburg campaign a success to equal the brilliancy of which the student must go back to Napoleon's celebrated campaign in Italy.

He, moreover, was in command of all the Union armies, insuring thereby co-ordinate action. Grant's entire training and experience and his very character made him an ideal aggressive commander. The army he commanded could not have been better for the work in hand.

These great commanders, each in his ideal sphere, thus worked at their mighty problem until exhaustion, losses, lack of provisions, money and ammunition caused Lee's surrender, though not his humiliation. To-day, both in the North and South, and to all students of military history, Grant and Lee stand side by side as among the greatest of the world's scientific commanders.

JAPANESE OFFENSIVE METHODS OF WARFARE.

Of Japanese methods in war we have had opportunity for but little observation, but all our observations indicate that their entire system is based upon the theory that offensive warfare alone can lead to final success.

Their experiences with the Chinese were all of an aggressive nature. All their battles in the present war with Russia—at the Yalu, Nanshan, Tellissu, Simuchen, Yantze, Yushulintsu, and at all the passes—indicate that their theory about carrying fortified positions, though somewhat harsh to the European military student, is yet effective and apparently sound.

Probably the most intense and persistent attacks on fortified and well-defended positions held by Russian forces in the present war took place at Nanshan Hill by troops besieging Port Arthur.

The history of the Russians since Peter the Great indicates, in a general way, that their most successful mode of warfare, in actual combat, has been a defensive one.

Without going into details or citing examples too well known in history to need repetition, the Russians are, by their traditions,

training and experience, probably the leaders of the world in defensive warfare. Even at Plevna, in a war against a weak nation, where the Russians, as a nation, made aggressive warfare, the investing force fortified itself and awaited thus, behind its earthworks, an attack by the besieged garrison.

Here, when the Grand Duke Nicholas, who commanded the Russian army, was almost prevailed upon by some of his counselors to make an assault upon the works, "Totleben protested with the whole weight of his influence."

The commander at Port Arthur, General Stoessel, is not a weakling, and that he is determined to resist to the very last may be gathered from a remark written to a friend of his recently, and published in St. Petersburg: "I do not know if we shall ever see each other again. My own decision, orders or no orders, is, however, made. My life is given to Russia; whatever happens, I do not surrender; Port Arthur shall be my tomb."

"I DO NOT SURRENDER."

The Russian commander, thus cut off practically from all communication with his government at home, has made up his mind what he is going to do, and has decided—"I do not surrender."

The Japanese have war schools of their own that seem to be peculiarly suited to the temperament of their own soldiers. They are bold in their plans and methodical in the execution.

As to the uncertainty of a most hazardous nature, such as an open assault. Moreover Totleben reasoned, "Though you may only have 10,000 men hors de combat in an open assault, you demoralize 50,000, and a considerable time must elapse before they can be reorganized for any ulterior operations; whereas, by pursuing the investment patiently to the end, the troops will then be in good condition for anything." Totleben's advice prevailed, and the assault was not made.

Totleben was a trained soldier and an eminent engineer—trained in typical Russian fashion. His reasoning in this case was sound, for in three weeks they got possession of the fort by "defensive operations."

It is the peculiar aggressiveness of the Japanese and the calm retreating strategy of the Russians that has suggested the remarks above concerning the two American commanders, Grant and Lee, in the Civil War, the object of one of whom was to save the Confederacy and the other to save the Union by destroying the Confederate army.

The object of the defense of Port Arthur is, primarily, to save the Russian fleet; and, secondly, to preserve a secure naval base for future naval operations in case Russia is able to send to the Orient a sufficiently strong navy to get command of the sea. The object, then, is a very important one from either point of view.

CHAPTER XXIX.

STIRRING SCENES OF WAR.

Sketches Brilliantly Well Drawn—The Remarkable Gifts for High Command of Admiral Togo and General Oku—The Use of Infernal Machines Told With Much Interest—Superb Story of a Forlorn Hope Turned Into a Storming Party Victorious.

TO follow the course of Admiral Togo's campaign after the fateful April 13, which gave him the undisputed command of the seas, it will be necessary to trace the various bases from which he has operated. When, on February 6, the Japanese fleet left Sascho with the knowledge that the whole of the Russian fleet except the cruiser and gunboat at Chemulpo was in the vicinity of Port Arthur, Mokpo was selected as the advanced base, while one of the bays behind the St. James Hall group, near Hai-ju, was the flying base for the torpedo craft.

Mokpo had already been connected by cable, laid by the specially prepared cable-ship, with the Tsu Shima cable station. The initial success and the consequent paralysis to the Russians enabled Togo to change his fleet base at once, and it was moved up to the bay behind the St. James Hall group, which was at once connected by cable with the Chemulpo land line, as well as by wireless telegraphy, a complete chain of wireless telegraphy being established all along the Korean coast connecting the Ping-yang entrance with Tsu Shima.

The Hai-ju Bay remained the main naval base until the end of April, though Chinampo, which had to be protected as the sea base of Kuroki's army corps, was used as a subsidiary base for the coaling of torpedo craft; also the torpedo craft were able to use Thornton Haven in the Hai-yung-tau group as a flying base.

At the end of April the main base was moved a step nearer to Port Arthur, and Togo established his headquarters in the Elliott Islands, from which base he covered the landing of the two army

corps now in the Liau-tung Peninsula as well as carrying out his recent operations against the Port Arthur approaches. At his anchorage in the Elliott Islands he was able to coal with Welsh fuel, stored there by the Russians. As each base moved nearer to Port Arthur it was immediately connected with the cable.

After the final effort to block the entrance to Port Arthur with sunk merchantmen, it may be said that the naval operations have been a series of mining operations. Finding that, after the sinking of twenty-two ships, a channel remained for vessels of moderate draught, Togo determined to sow the entrance to the harbor with a further supply of the same mechanical blockade mines which had proved so disastrous on April 13.

THREE HUNDRED MINES AT PORT ARTHUR.

The constant torpedo attacks which the Russians have repeatedly reported, were in reality mining attacks. The Japanese vessels, with the utmost audacity, crept in at night, and have succeeded, as far as information goes, in laying no fewer than three hundred of these diabolical instruments within a mile radius of the entrance.

The Russians have, however, during the same period shown a more adventurous spirit. As soon as they discovered that a channel remained open to them through which a vessel of three thousand tons could pass in safety, they embarked upon a mine-laying project of their own. Constant observation had shown them the course which the Japanese battle squadron usually steered when it demonstrated against their fortress. Therefore by May 14 the mining vessel Amur, escorted by the gunboat Bohr and a division of destroyers, was busy laying counter-mines in the roadstead, some of which were exploded for the purpose of destroying the Japanese mines, while others, towed out on junks by launches, were seen drifting in the waters which it was expected the Japanese squadron would shortly navigate.

May 15 was generally foggy in the Yellow Sea. But these south wind mists were breaking up and the fog hung in patches. Taking advantage of the cover which at daybreak the fog had

given, the Amur laid a field of mines outside the three-mile limit. Then, as the fog cleared seawards, she steered for the cover of the peninsula, which was still shrouded in low-lying vapor.

The wheel of fortune turned against the Japanese that morning, for the squadron, comprising four battleships and two cruisers, which Togo had told off to hold open the North Toki channel for the passage of the gunboat flotilla under orders for the Pe-chi-li Gulf, steered right across the waters which the Amur had prepared.

MASTERLY HANDLING OF THE JAPANESE FLEET.

When the Japanese squadron, with the Hatsuse leading, reached the fatal area, the fog had completely lifted in the vicinity. This lifting, however, was only local. The first explosion did not damage the flagship sufficiently to warrant the anticipation of fatal results. The squadron opened out to avoid the field, and help was being arranged when, about twenty minutes later, the Hatsuse hit another mine. This was a full charge, and in about ten minutes this magnificent vessel sank in thirty fathoms of water. It had proved a bad week for the Japanese nation, as, with the other three vessels, which were lost by mining operations and accident, the fighting strength of the navy was reduced by 22,000 tons. However, as a set-off against this loss, the Russian cruiser Bogatyr was a total wreck.

It is stated from Russian sources that she ran ashore in a fog; but the Japanese believe that she was beached after having run foul of one of the mechanical mines laid by their squadron, on its last visit to Vladivostok, during the fog which at the time was said to have rendered Admiral Kamimura's operations abortive.

To all outward appearances it would seem that the Japanese have felt their losses very slightly. Naval officers will talk to you of the end of their comrades in the Hatsuse and Yoshino with a smile; in short, they will converse of the death of their men in a spirit which strikes us of the West as uncanny and devoid of feeling. But I am inclined to think that the loss of the Yoshino and Hatsuse on the same day really made a great impression upon the navy, and it almost confirms me in the view which has constantly

arrived at the back of my mind, "that it is only in success that we know the Japanese."

After the loss of the Hatsuse the enterprise of the fleet for a period seemed to come to an abrupt standstill. One is strengthened in this view by the fearful sacrifice in life with which it was necessary for the army to carry the Russian positions in front of Kin-chau, when the position could have been rendered untenable if shelled from Ta-lien-wan Bay, and far more effectively shelled than from the other flank from Kin-chau Bay.

Speaking academically, one may say that the Russian position at Kin-chau should not have cost the life of a single infantryman, and, attacked as it was, should never have been taken; it certainly would not have been carried if the defenders had not been inferior troops indifferently commanded.

COSTLY PAY IN BLOOD FOR POSITION.

Considering the position and the nature of the attack, the price paid in casualties for it was cheap in the extreme. The reason why it was attacked along the isthmus, as it was, is tolerably clear. The situation of the First Army Corps and the near approach of the rainy season rendered it imperative that a better sea base than either Chinampo or Pi-tsze-wo must be procured without delay.

Dalny had been selected as the most suitable, and the clearing of Ta-lien-wan Bay of mines and obstructions was proceeding so slowly that it fell to the army to make a herculean effort. How nobly the Japanese infantry responded to what any other general but a Japanese might have considered an impossible task has already been told.

Although it is probable that the real story of all these earlier operations in the war will never be chronicled with any accuracy of detail, since no independent experts have been able to witness them in favorable conditions, yet from the many stories which are now dribbling in from both sides, it is possible to form a more or less clear outline of the operations in the Liau-tung Peninsula.

Pi-tsze-wo was first seized by Admiral Hosoya's squadron on May 5, and two especially selected companies of marine infantry

disembarked to make the landing good. Then during the next five days the leading division of General Oku's army corps landed at the same spot, the advance troops pushing at once to the railway and seizing the station of Pu-lan-tien. This was not reached by a direct advance.

The troops followed the coast-line in a south-westerly direction and then turned sharply inwards. At Pa-lan-tien this advance guard was fortunate enough, after a little skirmishing with detachments of the Railway Guards, to capture four uninjured locomotives and some rolling-stock, a most important capture at this juncture.

THE EARLY LANDING OF JAPANESE TROOPS.

In the mean time Kerr Bay had been found practicable, and by May 25, the best part of two more divisions had landed in the Peninsula. During this period General Oku had occupied Port Adams, and after some severe fighting cleared the hills which command the railway in the vicinity of the San-shi-li-pu station from a formidable hostile obstruction detached from the Kwan-tung garrison.

The Russians now held the walled Chinese town of Kin-chau and the lower spurs of Mount Sampson as an advanced position to the chain of hills which join Warren Cliff and Liu-shu-tun. This latter was their main position.

These hills, which vary in height from 800 to 150 feet, make a magnificent defensive position, which, if protected from sea attack on both sides of the isthmus which they command, would be practically impregnable from a land attack from the north.

The lower range, through which the railway passes, has about five miles of front, covering a land approach not more than 2,000 yards in breadth, the rest of the approaches being shallow water and mud flats. It is supported on the left rear by the higher hills of Warren Cliff, which furnish a sequence of admirable defensive positions.

It was evidently the Russian general's intention to hold Kin-chau as long as possible as an advance position, and then to fall

back upon the main chain of works, which he had every right to believe impregnable until the Japanese made full use of the sea approaches.

Nor were the preparations which the Russians had made for the defence of the position wanting in ingenuity; even the Japanese information, usually of the best, was at fault. They believed that no permanent works existed. But ever since the isolation of Port Arthur by land became inevitable, the Russians had worked night and day. At least five permanent works existed, and the whole line of the position was strengthened with field works, in most cases the head cover being complete.

The Japanese divisions which had landed at Kerr Bay marched to join the headquarters of their corps along the north shore of that inlet. As the columns moved along they suddenly came under a heavy shell fire, Chance had given the Russians a favorable opportunity.

THE SUPERIOR WORK OF RUSSIANS AT SEA.

On the 15th, after the disaster to the Hatsuse, the small Russian squadron, consisting of the Amur, torpedo boat, the Bobr, gunboat, and four destroyers, had been cut off from returning to Port Arthur by the arrival of the Japanese gunboat squadron, which was *en route* for the Gulf of Pe-chi-li, and which closed in to the Hatsuse's assistance.

Disappearing in the fog which still clung to the coast, the Russian flotilla made its way into Ta-lien-wan Bay, and were able from their position in the Bay to shell the Japanese troops with disturbing effect as they were concentrating upon Kin-chau. Having effected this diversion, it is believed that this squadron made its way back to Port Arthur under the cover of darkness, the Bobr, it is understood, to meet its fate in fishing for Japanese mines in the entrance to the port.

While General Oku was concentrating his recently landed troops and slowly pushing southwards the Russian observation posts upon his front, the Japanese gunboat squadron had proceeded up the Gulf of Pe-chi-li as far as Kai-ping, and had landed marines

and sailors, presumably to demonstrate against the Russian force which had reoccupied Niu-chwang and was holding the railway junction at Ta-shih-chiao.

Although this was reported as a permanent landing, it proved to be nothing more than a naval demonstration, and by the 24th the gunboats were back again at Society Bay, having in the meantime re-formed at the rendezvous after a hasty visit to Kin-chau Bay.

On May 26th the artillery of the Fourth Division and the gunboats had shelled Kin-chau, and General Oku, having determined upon it as the point from which to proceed to the assault of the Russian main position, intended to attack it that night. The troops actually fell in for this attack; but the evening brought heavy thunderstorms, with such vivid lightning that the night assault was postponed and a daybreak attack ordered.

THE STRATEGY OF JAPANESE COMMANDERS.

The right wing of Oku's army occupied Kin-chau early on the 27th, and meanwhile the gunboats, preceded by a flotilla of torpedo craft, slowly felt their way into Kin-chau Bay, to a nearer range than they had occupied on the preceding day. They had to advance with extreme caution, as there was every reason to apprehend that the bay was mined.

General Oku allowed his men but a brief respite after the leading division had captured Kin-chau. His field artillery was massed on the lower spurs of Mount Sampson and in the plain southeast of Kin-chau, and the fire concentrated on the two Russian works between which the railway passes. But a far more deadly preparation was in store for the Russians.

By continuous sounding the gunboats had been able to work right round past the left rear of the foremost Russian works and to open a searching shell fire upon the defences they thus unmasked. The little torpedo craft also, creeping in to an annihilating range, filled the reverse of the Russian works with rapid fire from their spiteful six-pounders.

The inferno of shell fire can well be imagined. But it was not yet a one-sided struggle; and from dawn till dark the Russian,

grim and dogged, held his own. And what a mark the Russian gunners had! It is doubtful, with perhaps the exception of Omdurman, whether gunners ever had an easier target than was given to the Russians that day. Out in the blue bay the black hulls of the gunboats, and on the isthmus three divisions—that is, between 30,000 and 40,000 men—were moving southwards across the narrow span.

Forty thousand men massed over six square miles; for Kin-chau is only four miles from the summit of the Russian position, and is under two miles across. So narrow is it that the stress of the advancing Japanese front pressed the flank battalions into the sea; so that men with their rifles held horizontally on their shoulders were wading chest deep in the water.

A STARTLING WAR PICTURE.

Two peaks and a rib of hill rise athwart the Kin-chau isthmus. This was the sole cover afforded to the Japanese army. Behind this the leading division massed.

About noon, according to the evidence of the officers of the gunboats, two half-battalions of the First Regiment of Infantry debouched from the cover of the peaks and the fire of the supporting artillery redoubled. It was to be an attempt to carry the nearest Russian work with the bayonet. Fifteen hundred yards had to be crossed: 800 down a slope to the deceptive cover of a miserable fishing village, and then a final 700—the gentle upward slope of the Russian glacis. Down the slope the line of glistening bayonets swept. Then there crashed the dreaded roll of small-arm fire.

The Russian infantry had been waiting for the assault. Scourged, decimated, disordered, the forlorn hope reached the treacherous cover of the village. A moment to breathe and to enable the officers to pick the line of advance, and then a brief struggle to win a way up the glacis. A gallant effort, a few brave souls butchered in the toils of the wire entanglements, and the forlorn hope had failed—had been annihilated except for the paltry few who found safety amongst the crumbling walls of the fishing village.

As the assaulting column melted away, the artillery preparation reopened with increased energy. And thus the afternoon passed into evening. Between the lulls in the preparation, other desperate assaults were attempted. But, though the field artillery gave respite to the Russian defenders, the ships had no mercy for them. One by one the vulnerable points in the line were searched out and rendered untenable.

There is a limit to the amount of punishment that the best troops can sustain if the attack is from the rear as well as from the front. That limit will be reached much sooner when the troops have already suffered bombardment, as had the Russians in Port Arthur. Just before nightfall the limit came.

A heavy assaulting force from the Fourth Division found that it could face the diminishing fire of the defenders. It struggled up to the entanglements and the abattis. Fresh lines of gleaming bayonets joined. The charging columns of infantry behind it were let loose. The great shout which precedes victory broke out from ten thousand throats, and in a great glittering wave the bayonets were into the nearest work. It was all over.

CHAPTER XXX.

RUSSIA'S RUINED FLEETS.

The Grand Viceroy Duke at the Bottom of Two Disasters—Admiral Alexeieff, the Duke of Doom—The Splendid Story of the Crippled Ships—The Admiral's Report was Falsification—Still There Were Fighting Men Who in the Slaughter Pen Died Heroes, and Their Fame Will Never Fade.

THERE is no mechanic, no artisan in war who is not proud of great strokes of restoration in a crippled engine or a shattered ship. The actual condition of the Russian fleet, largely of damaged vessels, the official falsification about it, and the revealed truth of the repairs, appear in this letter:

“The telegram published throughout Russia over the signature of Admiral Alexeieff catagorically stated, with an emphasis to which the niceties of the Russian language lend special weight, and on the authority of the Commander-in-Chief of the Russian fleet at Port Arthur, Rear-Admiral Vitoft, that every one of the damaged Russian battleships, cruisers, and torpedo-boats at Port Arthur had at last been restored to full and complete efficiency.

“Between the real position of affairs in regard to the larger units forming the Russian fleet at Port Arthur, as known to the higher officials of the Russian Naval Department, and the position of affairs as given out in this sweeping telegram for home consumption, there is a wide gulf. A Russian technical authority in close touch with those officials has supplemented other information on the subject, and the picture thus filled in may be left to speak for itself.

“To begin with, the cumulative evidence against the “complete” restoration to efficiency of the Retvisan is convincing. That vessel and the slightly more powerful battleship Czarevitch were, on February 8, the largest and the most heavily armed, as

they were the newest, of the eight Russian battleships at Port Arthur. They and the protected cruiser Pallada were the first Russian vessels struck by the Japanese.

"The Retvisan was badly holed below the water-line in the vicinity of her engine room. Her pumping and other auxiliary machinery was buckled and smashed, and her frames, angle ribs, and plating buckled and thrown out of alignment over a considerable area forward and aft of the rent made in her side by the well-aimed Japanese torpedo. The structural damage caused to the vessel altered her alignment to such an extent that her main shafting buckled badly.

REMARKABLE REPAIRS OF RUSSIAN SHIPS.

"Efficient repairs to this battleship, repairs demanding months in a well-found dock and involving partial reconstruction of her hull structure and realignment of her shafting, were impossible at Port Arthur, where no adequate provision had ever been made for such contingencies by equipping the dock stores with a sufficiency of heavy repairing material.

"The 12,000-ton Czarevitch was damaged on the same night as the Retvisan. Her damage was mainly structural. Neither her engines nor her boilers sustained serious damage. After herculean effort she was patched up after a fashion with light plates in stock, which subsequently gave trouble when she attempted from her anchorage to fire two or three broadsides. The damage, however, which particularly crippled her as a moving or manoeuvring unit was the damage to her main steam steering gear, which the Port Arthur dock was not in a position efficiently to repair."

Details of the naval battle of August 10, show that the Russian battleship Czarevitch made a remarkable struggle. When the battle opened six battleships on each side opposed each other on almost parallel lines in the vicinity of Round Island.

The cruisers and torpedo-boat destroyers on both sides were ordered out of range. When the fight had been under way for some time the cruisers and smaller craft became engaged. Finally, the Czarevitch was surrounded by four battleships and two cruisers.

She endured hours of terrible fighting pluckily. The shell which killed Admiral Withoft rebounded from the turret.

The Czarevitch has never attempted to head for the open under her own steam since her mishap, and with the Retvisan she must be crossed off the list of alleged fully-restored and effective battleships.

Within a few hours of the crippling of the Czarevitch and Retvisan another Russian battleship, the Poltava, of 10,960 tons and $16\frac{1}{3}$ knots, was seriously damaged during the first bombardment of Port Arthur by a heavy Japanese shell. Apart from damage to her armament and deck erections and to one at least of her cylindrical boilers, she was damaged under the water line, and her repairs were delayed for nearly two months, as the Czarevitch and Retvisan were given priority. She has been patched up since then and is now relatively effective, though incapable of steaming more than 15 knots at the outside. Her armament is a heavy one, but she is in all other respects distinctly inferior to any of the Japanese first-class battleships.

DETAILS OF DISASTER AND AMENDMENT.

The first-class battleship Pobieda was damaged by striking a mine when the Petropavlovsk, a sister vessel to the Poltava, was sunk. Her injuries were again exactly of the kind with which Port Arthur is unable to deal adequately—namely, structural damage over a considerable cubic area, and damage to one set of her Belleville boilers, which has reduced her steaming capacity to between 14 and 15 knots.

The Sevastopol and the Peresviet remain, and the Sevastopol is an 11,842-ton battleship of indifferent construction, only capable of steaming barely 16 knots even under forced draught. She was launched as far back as nine years ago, and her boilers require renewal.

The situation, then, with regard to battleships is that two good, though handicapped, battleships, two lame ducks, and two more or less hopeless cripples from the first Russian naval line of battle actually available at Port Arthur.

The Russians, who dashed out of the harbor of Port Arthur, were aware of the enormous odds against them, but the call of duty was a summons to glory. It is worth while to remember that the "Duke" in command when the Russians lost the chance of winning the Japanese and Yellow Seas February 8, had the ordering of the imprisoned fleet in Port Arthur, and sent forth a foolish falsehood of the condition of the ships. He seems to have wanted to bear false witness about the disastrous opening of the war, and he ordered the dash that was made, and the men that followed, and so he has doubly destroyed the navy.

THE MEDDLESOME GRAND DUKES.

Here is one of the schemes hatched by the common conspirator to divide the supreme command of all the army. Here again is our Alexis. The Ducal destroyer of the Russian fleet desires to try his hand on the army. He is an example of the business-like reports made by the great General, who knows the evil of a dissolute gang of Dukes, squatted in the shadow of a throne.

General Kuropatkin has sent the following telegram of August 2, to the Czar: "Our troops retired from Haicheng by the Anshanchian road. In spite of the extreme heat of the day, the movement was carried out in perfect order by the men without any molestation by the enemy.

"Every effort was made to lighten the burdens of the infantry, and a number of carts were given to each company to carry the men's greatcoats and the kit bags.

"Nevertheless the heat of the sun was so intense that, in spite of the measures taken to relieve the soldiers, the number of the men who succumbed to sunstroke was considerable. No serious news has been received to-day of the troops posted on the east front."

But mark the fight the heroes fought with crippled ships—

"Theirs not to reason why;
Theirs was to do or die."

Some one had blundered.

A Russian torpedo-boat destroyer entered Chefoo Harbor at

5.30 o'clock, on August 11, and reported that six Russian battleships, four cruisers and half of the torpedo-boats escaped from Port Arthur.

A severe naval battle raged southeast of Port Arthur, whence the Russian fleet escaped August 10. The Russian ships made a concerted dash from the harbor, in the course of which they were attacked first by Japanese torpedo-boats and next by the battleships and cruisers of Admiral Togo's fleet. Four Russian cruisers and five battleships escaped from the harbor, but were unable to get away from the Japanese fleet. At least fifteen of Togo's vessels were in action with the Russians in a few hours after the sortie.

The Russian ships made their sortie from their harbor in the half light of early dawn. They steamed out in single column, the flagship moving slowly until clear of the mine beds. Then all pushed forward, scattering as they left the harbor's mouth. They dashed from the harbor by twos and threes, evidently seeking to scatter the enemy's fire. The Retvisan and Pobieda stayed close together.

A furious attack was made on the Russians by Togo's torpedo-boats and torpedo-boat destroyers. It was supplemented by a severe fire from the Japanese battleships and cruisers. Most of the Russian ships had a sufficient start to escape the fire of Admiral Togo's battleships, but the Japanese cruisers followed them closely, the big guns blazing all the way.

It became evident that the Japanese gunners were prevented by the heavy sea from firing as accurately as usual, or else that the Russians were determined to make it a finish fight, for the battle lasted day and night.

CHAPTER XXXI.

SOME OF RUSSIA'S SPECIAL SORROWS.

Why the Greater Empire in the Asiatic War Was Sore Stricken—Flash Lights of Information—A Combination of Russian Discouragements.

THIS is intelligence by the way of a Russian Admiral, and a Paris newspaper :

The St. Petersburg correspondent of the *Echo de Paris* reports Admiral Wirenius as saying that no official information of the fate of the Port Arthur and Vladivostok fleets had been received. There was, he said, nothing to show that the situation was as desperate as had been represented in the English telegrams.

He said he was convinced that the Japanese had well equipped spies among the Russians. Admiral Togo had certainly obtained information beforehand of the contemplated sortie of the two fleets. "We are," concluded the Admiral, "undoubtedly the victims of traitors or spies."

Here is an account of the evil genius of Russia, who bobs up serenely when there is misfortune in the air :

Telegraphing from Niu-chwang, under date July 11, the special correspondent of the *Berlin Lokalanzeiger* says that the anomalous position of Admiral Alexeieff is likely to prove a danger to the prospects of Russia in the campaign, as well as a serious hindrance to General Kuropatkin.

The Russian Viceroy appears to assert his right to retain a considerable body of troops around his person in Mukden, much to the disgust of the officers, who are said to refrain from mutiny only from the consciousness that a representative of the Tsar cannot be got rid of by violent means.

Admiral Alexeieff himself lives in his state car on the railway. A roof has been constructed over the car and flowers have been planted around it. The Viceroy countermands military

orders and detains reinforcements as they arrive by inspecting them while his chief of staff is sent two or three times a week to Ta-shih-chiao in order to observe the movements and dispositions of General Kuropatkin.

The correspondent declares in conclusion that only the immediate recall of Admiral Alexeieff can ameliorate this undesirable state of affairs, since, at this juncture the Viceroy's presence is not only useless but positively dangerous.

The Germans can afford to tell the Russians scraps of truth.

An English authority tells this cheerful story of the grim fate of the Russian Commander-in-Chief :

A TERRIBLE DAY OF BATTLE.

Hai-cheng has been evacuated by the Russians. It is now in possession of the Japanese, and General Kuropatkin is withdrawing his army with what speed he can along the railway to Liao-yang. He is a beaten man, and a beaten man who knows that he is beaten, and has no hope of retrieving the disasters of the present campaign. The most he can pray for is to effect his retreat in tolerable order. For it is easy to read between the lines of the short despatch which the General has just sent to the Tsar, and see to what desperate straits the Russian Commander-in-Chief has been reduced.

The heat is terrific ; there are many cases of sunstroke ; and carts have been requisitioned to carry the coats and impedimenta of the soldiers. Such provision of transport may be due in part to the General's care for his men ; it is probably due even more to the urgent necessity for hurried retreat. To get away before the Japanese can strike is the General's overwhelming anxiety.

This evacuation of Hai-cheng stands on a very different footing, say, from the evacuation of Newchwang. For it was a position carefully chosen by General Kuropatkin as soon as he took over the supreme command, and, strong by nature, was made stronger still by fortifications.

Hai-cheng, distant from Liao-yang about forty or forty-five miles, was a sort of advanced post of that great center, but the

Russians made one of their many irreparable blunders when they allowed the Mo-tien-ling Pass to fall, practically without a struggle, into the capable hands of General Kuroki. No explanation has been offered of this, but that the blunder was soon realized the desperate but ill-managed attempt to recapture the pass plainly showed.

When Kuroki advanced in his turn and drove the Russians out of Yang-tzi-ling and Yushulintzu, with a loss to himself of a thousand killed and wounded, he rendered still more insecure the Russian positions at Hai-cheng, to the southwest.

The two days' fight at To-mu-cheng, when the Russians left behind them a hundred and fifty dead and were driven back on Hai-cheng itself—finally compelled General Kuropatkin to give an order which has long been seen to be inevitable. That General has yet to win a battle. Not a solitary gleam of good fortune has cheered him since he undertook an appallingly difficult task, which was rendered practically impossible by divided authority, jealous rivals, and interference from St. Petersburg.

FOUL PLAY SHOWN.

Here is a military expert's remarks relating to the foul play shown Kuropatkin, and there is a double-edged dagger in each paragraph:

"By the time that Kuropatkin arrived—and it must be remembered that it was only a very short time before the Yalu battle that he did so—the position was for the time nearly past remedy without either discredit or disaster. He had hardly had opportunity to ascertain all the facts, amongst which the nature of the communications between the Yalu and the main army was perhaps the most important of all, when the Yalu defeat fell upon his unfortunate head.

"The degree in which he was responsible for it cannot be judged justly until more of the facts are before us than are so at present. We know, from the dispatches which have reached us from the Japanese side, that a very large amount of Chinese labor had been employed by the Russians in the endeavor to connect

their main army with the Yalu; but whether this had been done by Alexeieff's order or not we cannot judge.

"In any case, the arrangements were so incomplete that everything that had been done in the way of road-making proved to be only of advantage to the Japanese, and the fortifications were so ill-placed or so inferior that after the battle on the Yalu they were abandoned without a struggle.

"No doubt the brilliant manner in which the Japanese troops were handled and the success with which they fought at the Yalu was nearly as much a surprise to Kuropatkin as it was to the greater part of the civilized world; though he had, before he left Russia, spoken in terms of great respect of his enemies, and has in every way behaved as a gentleman towards them, which is more than can be said for his great rival, Alexeieff.

KUROPATKIN'S POLICY.

"The difference between Alexeieff's hanging and Kuropatkin's shooting Japanese officers taken in the act of attempting to destroy the railway marks the difference between the two men at every stage. As soon as Kuropatkin had made himself acquainted with the state of affairs, he proposed the only rational policy: the abandonment of Port Arthur, the withdrawal of its garrison, and, as soon as it was safe, a falling back of the army on Harbin.

"Again Alexeieff's star rose. After a fierce struggle in St. Petersburg, Kuropatkin received the positive order not to withdraw, but to despatch the fatal expedition which received its quietus from the hands of General Oku. He sent that historic one-word message, signifying 'I hear and obey!' much, evidently, like the old steward in Hogarth's picture, who holds up his hands in despair at the orders of his young master, which he knows mean ruin for the ancient house. Since then Kuropatkin has been struggling in vain—I doubt if any one could have done much better—to redeem that fatal error. Certainly the ancient house will not be saved by the dismissal of the faithful old steward, and the substitution for him of the flatterer who has won his power by pandering to the tastes of his young master."

The special correspondent of the *Petit Parisien* in St. Petersburg, explaining the delay in furnishing the Russian artillery with modern quick-firing guns, says :

"Thus, when the war broke out in February, 1904, the Russian artillery found itself in the midst of the work of transformation, and consequently by no means in a position effectively to resist the Japanese artillery with its ultra-modern, quick-firing, long-range guns, whose crushing superiority was but too well proved at the battle of Ya-lu. The Russians were, therefore, obliged to despatch to Manchuria the greater part of the quick-firing batteries with which the European regiments were provided.

RUSSIAN ARTILLERY A WEAK POINT.

"The foundries and workshops were engaged day and night ; yet they hardly succeed in turning out more than sixty pieces with their corresponding gun carriages per month. On the other hand, the large guns from Kronstadt and those from the fortress at Warsaw are at Port Arthur."

Here are clippings telling the truth about the sufferings of the Russian soldiers :

"The Japanese have occupied the old inland town of Niu-chwang with forces landed at the seaport of the same name. Hai-cheng and the railway thereto are in Japanese hands, and a large force is concentrating with the object of capturing the Russian column which was driven from that place before it can be succored from the north.

"The triple defeat of the Russians in Manchuria has produced for the Czar's forces the most critical moment of the history of their occupation of the country. Driven from fortified positions of their own choosing by the concerted movements of the Japanese armies, the Russians are faced with three calamities. The first is the abandonment of Southern Manchuria after a fight at Liaoylang ; the second is a possible surrender through being cut off ; the third is to be driven west into China and there disarmed."

The story of the Russian Government's decision respecting the Malacca is instructive. The assurances given by the Foreign

Office were not absolute, as was supposed, but were contingent upon the imperial consent, which had not then been obtained.

A council was summoned at which were present the Grand Dukes Alexander and Alexis, Admiral Avellan, Count Lamsdorff, and Professor Martens.

The Grand Dukes upheld the action of the cruisers, which was taken in obedience to express orders issued by the Grand Duke Alexander, despite the fact that he has no official connection with the warships or the navy.

His view was that the Malacca should be conveyed to a Russian prize court in the usual way, and if the British battleships prevented her reaching her destination their opposition should be construed as an overt act of war. Admiral Avellan and Grand Duke Alexis are alleged to have endorsed this proposal, which, in their opinion, was in harmony with Russia's indefensible right.

ANOTHER GRAND DUKE'S BLUNDER.

Count Lamsdorff and Professor Martens, however, pointed out that technically Russia was in the wrong, and it would be a grave mistake to allow a serious quarrel to originate, in which Great Britain would be universally recognised as the defender of the rights of all nations. Further, he laid stress on the circumstance that by a fatal mistake German ships had also been seized, and that this very friendly Power would be obliged to side theoretically with England, whereas her attitude on the Dardanelles question was favorable to Russia.

It was further pointed out that assurances had already been given to the British Government, which it would be inadvisable to nullify, and, finally, the resolve of Great Britain to use violence, if necessary, was relied upon to compel the decision.

How strong the opposition was against what may be termed the legal element of the Russian Government may be inferred from the length of time it took before a final resolution was come to. But at last legality conquered, and the matter was satisfactorily settled in the British sense, although the theoretical question of the status of the cruiser was steered clear of.

The curious fact then became known that Count Lamsdorff himself was not informed that the course of the Malacca, which should have been the Dardanelles, had been changed by the Grand Duke to Libau, when he received information that the Porte, acceding to the British demand, had refused to allow the Malacca to pass the Dardanelles and the Bosphorus.

Opposition to Count Lamsdorff is not confined only to the influential war party outside the Foreign Office. Even in the Ministry of Foreign Affairs there is a clique siding with the influences which he has been combating, and the press organ of that section, the Russ, published an article congratulating the Captains of the cruisers on their heroic action and offering best wishes for the success of their future operations in the Red Sea.

It is questionable whether the matter would have been settled satisfactorily if the German steamers had not also suffered through excess of zeal on the part of the commander of a cruiser. For Germany has made it known here that if her shipping be unmolested she is ready to support Russia's claims respecting the right of Volunteer Fleet ships to pass the Dardanelles as merchantmen, and then operate as auxiliary cruisers elsewhere.

A NEWS SANDWICH THAT SHOCKED.

The terrible losses in the vicinity of Wa-fang-kau became known late on the night of June 20 in Kronstadt and in the capital even before the publication of the official telegrams. It is thought that, sandwiched in his telegram from the front, one of the Russian war correspondents managed to convey, by means of previously agreed upon code words, the news that General Stackelberg's force had lost 200 officers killed and wounded and about 4,500 men killed, wounded and captured.

However the news reached the capital, it spread rapidly, and the publication of General Kuropatkin's telegram subsequently found intelligent people in less humor than ever to accept as absolutely trustworthy the figures officially, or purporting to be officially, telegraphed from the front.

The Russian military censorship and the Government behind

it have themselves to thank for the scepticism with which intelligent people in Russia now accept official statements and figures given out as coming from Manchuria. I say given out advisedly, for it is becoming daily more apparent that tricks are being played upon the country by officials who dread the effect which would be produced on the population everywhere by an abrupt publication of unwelcome facts in all their nakedness.

The authorities, however, appear to be simply preparing a rod for themselves later on. It is too late in the day to prevent accurate information from finding its way into Russia. I could name several large business houses in the Russian Empire which are *au courant* of the serious blows dealt to Russia's forces, long before garbled and mutilated versions of the affairs are passed for publication in St. Petersburg by the military censors.

RUSSIAN REMOVAL OF CENSORSHIP NOT A FACT.

In spite of official statements to the effect that the censorship in many respects was to be abolished during the present year, it was never more strict, and never more annoying. It must be borne in mind that when the Russian Government, at the very beginning of the war, declared their magnanimous intention of taking the people of Russia and the world in general more into their official confidence in regard to current events than they had hitherto done, those circles were not in the despondent mood they are in at the present moment.

Four months ago the Ya-lu had not been crossed by the Japanese, there had been no Kin-chau and no Wa-fang-kau, and people here would never have believed it possible that June running out would still find Kuropatkin marking time without a single success of any magnitude to set against a series of Japanese victories.

A St. Petersburg telegram to the Cologne Gazette states that all reports from the seat of war are imbued with the firm conviction that victory is now no longer distant from the Russian arms. The explanation of this sanguine spirit is so simple that these alleged expectations will delude no one, even in St. Petersburg.

The various extracts from letters written by Russian officers and men in the field to their relatives at home, are neither sanguine nor even cheerful. The tinned food is said to be scarcely fit to eat, and where it is edible it is neither nourishing nor sustaining.

Provisions, moreover, are sometimes wanting altogether, medical and sanitary arrangements leave much to be desired, and the doctors and surgeons, though sufficiently devoted to their service, are often insufficiently trained or inadequately equipped.

These are only a few of the numerous disabilities under which the Russian soldier is apparently compelled to labor. There is, moreover, the extremely important consideration that the Russian, unlike his adversary, takes the field overladen, while his feet are shod with enormous boots, which, alike in the mire of the flooded plains and upon the rocks of the mountain side, are a serious impediment to his efficiency.

CHAPTER XXXII.

CHANGES IN WAR SHIPS.

Bulk Less in Request and Speed More Wanted—Torpedo Boats Multiplying—America Is Moving With Others and Leads in Having the Most Powerful Piece of Artillery in the World.

ONE of the lessons of the Russo-Japanese war is the interest of naval nations in smaller battleships, with greater guns for the sea, and heavier field batteries.

In the opinion of many naval authorities, naval appropriations should be expended in the construction of large battleships. It has been claimed that these have proved their efficiency and this is the arm of the navy that renders the best service, at a cost in the case of line of battleships of the United States, of seven and a half million dollars, and still there is at intervals additional room for more money.

The expense of both the warring Asian Empires sustains largely the rather radical but very able Senator Hale of Maine, in opposing the seven and a half million monsters, especially the storied turrets. Articles in the newspapers have had attraction for many people, two of which are known as "The New Scouts," and "The New Torpedo-boat Destroyers."

The articles, though dealing with vessels of two distinct classes, have one point in common. They suggest doubts of the wisdom of recent increases in pecuniary expenditure and of recent distribution and employment of a comparatively large number of vessels.

"Is it certain," says the writer of the article on the Scouts, "that we have laid out our money to the best advantage?" In the article on the new destroyers we are given to understand that "four 30-knot destroyers can be produced for the cost of three of the later type, which must be about three knots slower under similar conditions of lading."

The history of the class of vessels called "Destroyers" is of much general interest. In 1885 the French launched several vessels—the Bombe and her sisters—of greater size and higher sea speed than the then torpedo-boats of the first class. They were of the kind known as *contre-torpilleurs*, the presumption being that they were designed to act against torpedo-boats. England was not contemplating any thing of the sort but was building vessels, not to act against, but to supplement, or even take the place of, torpedo-boats.

THE DESTROYERS OF TORPEDOES CLASSED.

The Fearless and Scout—the latter an inherited proper name borne formerly by a brig, and not a class-name—appeared in the Quarterly Navy List for the first time in April, 1884. They were of 1,430 tons displacement and 3,200 i.h.p. The Scout at first was fitted with no less than eleven torpedo-discharges, but these were reduced to seven before she hoisted the pendant, and was still further reduced later.

There were not wanting at the time officers who endeavored to obtain for the British Navy the provision of an efficient class of anti-torpedo-boat craft, but their endeavors were unsuccessful, fast gunboats like the Rattlesnake—which would have corresponded to the Bombe class—being constructed as "twin-screws torpedo gunboats." Like the "torpedo cruisers," they were meant to use torpedoes, not to hunt down boats built to use them.

In the pages of the Navy List may be noticed evidence of an attempt to convert this class also into a "torpedo gunboat." The Sharpshooter is so styled in July, 1887; but six months later has become a "twin-screw gunboat, first class."

The vessels of this group were admirable sea-boats. Their habitability compared favorably with that of other small craft. Their speed fell very short of that which had been promised; but they were equal in a moderate rough sea to running down almost every torpedo-boat then in existence, and to disconcerting even the fastest torpedo-boats when about to make an actual attack. They were fitted with a torpedo armament, which impaired their efficiency for the purpose for which they had been built,

In the meantime their number was largely increased. Seventeen were added to the Navy in the Naval Defence Programme of 1889. Our fleets were now provided with a fairly large group of vessels able to keep with them in any weather, having a coal endurance sufficient—under a proper system of reliefs—to permit of their remaining with a fleet of the time when in the waters most likely to be infested by torpedo-boats issuing from hostile ports, and capable of dealing effectually with such boats if they ventured to go to any considerable distance on the really high seas.

The "Sharpshooters" had defects, it is true, but those could have been avoided in the construction of additional members of the class. The effect of giving them a torpedo-armament soon showed itself. Their torpedoes promised to be of little use against a torpedo-boat; whilst to use them against ships would be to divert the "Sharpshooters" from their proper function and leave our fleets still without the defence against torpedo-boat attack.

TORPEDO BUSINESS VERY ACTIVE.

The multiplication of foreign torpedo-boats and still more of foreign torpedo-boat stations adjacent to waters in which our fleets in war time would almost certainly have to operate in some way or other showed plainly that our want of mobile, active, offensive defence against torpedo-boat attack was understood abroad.

Those who at the time were concerned in the consideration of the probable conditions of our future campaign will not have forgotten the extreme discomfort of the position that had thus been created. Efforts to make provision for counteracting the activity of an enemy's torpedo force had failed, owing to misuse of the floating material allowed. At the same time the merits of the torpedo were being unremittingly extolled.

In the 1891 manœuvres, as stated in the official report, "It was considered desirable to give facilities for trying the effect of offensive tactics against the torpedo-boats themselves. For this purpose the Barracouta and five fast gunboats"—viz., four Sharpshooter class and the Rattlesnake—"were attached to the Red side as 'torpedo-boat catchers.'" They were put under the orders of

the late Admiral S. Long. The offensive defence proved thoroughly satisfactory. The torpedo-boats were reduced to impotence.

The officer in command of their side reported concerning them that they had "no chance of eluding the catchers," and that "nothing remained for the boats but to retreat before their swifter foe, only to encounter on their return voyage more catchers."

This led to the evolution of the "torpedo-boat destroyer"—that is to say, a vessel intended to destroy torpedo-boats.

The first appearance of vessels of the class in the Quarterly Navy List is in that for October, 1893. The "Naval Annual" for 1894 (p. 9) says that

"It was determined to meet the torpedo-boat construction in other countries by building vessels fast enough to catch and powerful enough to destroy foreign torpedo-boats, yet which should not be too large or too costly to admit of providing them in sufficient numbers for the work which they are intended to perform."

GREAT INTEREST IN THE NEW WEAPON.

As stated in the article in the Times of the first instant:

"The destroyer class was designed specifically for the purpose of meeting the menace of French torpedo flotillas in the Channel, and for possible service from a base in the Mediterranean, or from certain foreign ports."

The diversion of destroyers from their proper functions and attaching them to fleets has ended in failure, as ought surely to have been foreseen. They are now largely treated as big torpedo-boats told off to accompany fleets, the movements of which they hamper with their society.

The necessity of giving fleets approaching an enemy's coast companions capable of dealing with hostile torpedo-boats remains as acute as ever. So a new class has been evolved, to which—why, it would be difficult to explain—the name "Scout" has been given. "Scout," as the designation for a vessel sent beyond signal distance to obtain intelligence, is an English naval term as old as the seventeenth century. The new Scout seems to be meant to do anything but scout. Confusion of language nearly always indi-

cates confusion of thought, and readers of your articles will, no doubt, like to know what strategic function a few so-called "Scouts," costing \$1,375,000 a piece, are likely to prove capable of performing.

There is no doubt that the experience in the war between Russia and Japan will determine a policy of greater provision for smaller and swifter vessels, such as are described by the naval experts abroad.

The fashion was started by the French and followed by the British, and pursued with increasing expenditures and gains in confidence. The new fashions of artillery are demanding an increase of weight of metal and range of fire.

ASTONISHING ARTILLERY OF JAPAN.

The field artillery of the Japanese have simply astounded the Russians, and the greater howitzers for field guns, and the more forcible ammunition by the use of higher explosives. The decisive advantage the Japanese have in their field guns has helped the winning of half a dozen fields, and caused especially the capture of many guns from the Russians, whose losses of old and decidedly inferior guns, while it rudely bruises the tenderness of military honor, are a blessing in disguise.

The United States have, however, the distinction of pre-eminent leadership in great guns. We refer to the gigantic steel 16-inch rifle now at Sandy Hook, capable of hurling bolts of steel weighing 1,200 pounds twenty miles with accuracy. If the Russians could have had the foresight to prepare for war with Japan, one such gun as our 16-inch rifle would have been capable of smashing all the battleships of Admiral Togo from any point of considerable elevation in the neighborhood of Port Arthur.

We have but one of the greater rifles; but a duplicate of that would, if Russia had been served by logical and sober men, have transferred the sea power from Japan to Russia in the seas that command the shores of the islands and peninsulas that are contested, the Empire that is lavishing all the resources that are imperial.

CHAPTER XXXIII.

NOTABLE SIEGES OF THE PAST.

Evolution of the Art of War Illustrated in Its Various Important Stages.

IN NOTHING, perhaps, is the gradual evolution of the art of war more clearly indicated than in operations against fortified places. The relative preponderance of defense over attack, or of attack over defense, according as the efficiency of arms or of fortifications has been increased from age to age, presents one of the most interesting studies in history.

The further we recede from the present, the longer we find the sieges to have been. Until gunpowder and explosive bombs were invented, the defense was, for the most part, stronger than the attack, with some few exceptions in favor of the more advanced nations, like the Romans, when opposed to barbarians.

Herodotus tells us that the siege of Azotus, one of the five royal cities of the Phœnicians, by Psammetichus, King of Egypt, lasted twenty-nine years. The siege of Troy, about twelve centuries before Christ, by the allied Greeks, who had vowed to recover Helen, the wife of Menelaus, and to avenge her abduction, endured ten years. While the Homeric account must be regarded as very largely fabulous, it yet may be accepted as illustrating very primitive methods of warfare.

The walls of Troy were not designed to repel attack by any really formidable engines of war, and hand-to-hand combats are the chief episodes of the great Grecian epic. The place was taken at last, according to Homer, by a child-like piece of strategy.

Nebuchadnezzar, 598 B. C., besieged Tyre thirteen years before it fell. Cyrus the Great, 538 B. C., captured Babylon by diverting the water of the Euphrates and marching his army through its dry bed, under the massive walls and into the city, where Belshazzar was feasting and carousing. Camillus, after a siege of ten years, 396 B. C., took Veii, a rival to Rome, by drain-

ing the Alban Lake and entering the city through the tunnel which supplied it with water.

The city and Island of Rhodes, 305-4 B. C., held out a whole year against the remarkable engineering genius of Demetrius, son of Antigonus, the would-be successor of Alexander. The operations of Demetrius were the wonder of his age. His masterpiece was the "helopolis," or "city-taker," a wooden tower 150 feet high, sheathed in iron, traveling on wheels and moved by the united strength of 3,400 men. His battering rams were 150 feet long, and each was driven by 1,500 men.

The Rhodians were reduced to such extremity that they used, in working their catapults, ropes made of the hair of their women. But by many devices they frustrated every assault, and in the end Demetrius was obliged to confirm the independence of their city.

FAMOUS DEFENSE OF SYRACUSE.

The Romans under Marcellus, 214 B. C., besieged the great and powerful city of Syracuse, in Sicily. The fame of its defense is chiefly due to the wonderful energy and mathematical genius of Archimedes, the geometrician. For eight months he constantly invented and created new engines to meet and repel the attacks of the besiegers.

Historians say that without his aid it would have been impossible to resist the Romans. The machines of Archimedes on the landward side of the town discharged from the top of the walls stones of enormous weight, beating down and dashing to pieces all before them.

On the seaward side other machines flung great beams, heavily weighted, upon the ships of the Romans, sinking many of them instantly. With a huge iron grapple other ships were seized by one end and hoisted into the air and then allowed to drop. Sometimes by a particular contrivance they were whirled swiftly about while still suspended, and in falling cast all of the men into the sea.

Even Archimedes, however, could not produce machines of defense that would counterbalance the great superiority of the Romans in numbers and material resources. By their persistence

and dogged valor they gained at the end of eight months a foothold within the outer rampart, and therefore had less to fear from the ingenuity of the geometrician. It took three years, however, for them to gain possession of the city, in the sack of which Archimedes was slain.

The superiority of the defense over the attack was well illustrated by Carthage in 147 B. C. The inhabitants had been tricked by the Romans into the surrender of their arms and military munitions; but they shut their gates, and, without weapons, engines or ships until they had made them anew, they kept the besiegers out for two years.

CONQUEST OF JERUSALEM.

Seventy years after the birth of Christ the most atrocious of all the conquests of Jerusalem took place in consequence of the "Great Revolt." Titus, afterward Roman Emperor, commanded the besieging army. The material means employed by him were those familiar to readers of ancient history, but added to these were cruelties, committed because of their moral effect, which have rarely, if ever, been equaled.

The Jewish prisoners were crucified before the walls in full view of their countrymen. These stubbornly submitted to famine rather than surrender to a yet more horrible death. Whole families perished of hunger, and heaps of putrefying dead lay in the houses. The siege began about the time of the Passover, and it was not until the 7th of September that the Romans forced their way through the inner walls. They slew all whom they found, meanwhile setting fire to the buildings in every direction.

The entire city was razed with the exception of three towers, which were left as trophies of victory. The Romans here again owed their success to their greater numbers and resources and to a better mastery of the art of war. Jerusalem was perfectly isolated, and the defenders must have died of famine had it not been taken by storm.

The Dark Ages witnessed a relapse in the art of war, and yet present a few memorable sieges, notably that laid against Paris by

the Northmen or Danes, under Rollo and Siegfried, A. D. 885-86. After ravaging for more than forty years a good part of France, of which Charles the Fat then was King, the two forces formed a junction in the Seine before Paris, with 700 barques and more than 30,000 warriors.

The siege began on the 25th of November, and was conducted with such crude art as the barbarians had derived from the Romans. It lasted for thirteen months. There were eight assaults and several sorties.

In November, 886, Charles the Fat came with a large army to relieve the place; but, instead of doing so by force, made a treaty with the Vikings, giving them 700 pounds of silver and free permission to pass over into Burgundy. In this instance the Northmen might very probably have taken the city if they had known better how to conduct a siege. Communications between the Parisians and their friends without was never completely cut off for any considerable period.

In the course of the crusade against the Saracens there were many memorable sieges, more characterized, however, by barbarity on either side than by skill. The taking of Acre in the third crusade consumed more than two years, 1189-91, and required the efforts of several hundred thousand men, 100,000 of whom, according to Saracen historians, were slain.

PARMA'S GREAT FEAT.

During the struggle of the Netherlands to free themselves from the yoke of Philip II of Spain, occurred three of the most famous of all sieges: those of Haarlem, Leyden and Antwerp. Space can only be given to the last of these, which is the most remarkable.

Gunpowder had long before changed the whole general science of warfare. But Alexander Farnese, Duke of Parma, introduced into his operations against the great commercial capital of Belgium, then also the richest port in Europe, more daring engineering schemes than had ever before been tried by any commander since the days of Demetrius.

All the other details of this siege might well be neglected in order to give room for a description of the monumental exploit of bridging the Scheldt, below the city, in face of most formidable difficulties, so as to cut off communication with the sea, by which route alone it could hope for succor. But this was not his only feat.

Of this siege Motley says: "Land converted into water and water into land, castles built upon the breasts of rapid streams, rivers turned from their beds and taught new courses, the distant ocean driven across ancient bulwarks, mines dug below the sea, and canals made to percolate obscene morasses—which the red hand of war by the very act converted into blooming gardens—a mighty stream bridged and mastered in the very teeth of winter, floating icebergs, ocean tides and an alert and desperate foe ever ready with fleets and armies and batteries—such were the materials of which the great spectacle was composed; a spectacle which enchained the attention of Europe for seven months, and on the result of which, it was thought, depended the fate of all the Netherlands, and perhaps of Christendom."

Desperate and vain efforts were made by the Antwerpens to destroy Parma's bridge, and failing in that, to cut the dykes, so that the Scheldt could sweep through them, and thus give access to the city across the tide-covered flats for ships bringing supplies and reinforcements.

The battle at the dykes, half in water and half on land, was one of the most spectacular known. Parma, however, held Antwerp closely blockaded, and the prospect of starvation after nearly a year of siege, compelled capitulation on August 17, 1585.

RICHELIEU COOPS UP THE HUGUENOTS.

Rochelle, the stronghold of the French Calvinists, withstood several attacks of the opposite party until Richelieu, the Cardinal-statesman, resolved to prove that he also was a warrior. The famous siege of Rochelle was begun in July, 1627. The Huguenots in the town were supported by an English fleet and army.

Louis XIII and Richelieu took charge of the siege in person

in October, but in November the English forces withdrew. Richelieu, anticipating a renewal of the attack the next year, undertook a work intended at once to baffle foreign enemies and to place the town at his mercy.

A vast wall was constructed along the whole front of the port, with but a small opening in the middle, which was commanded by batteries. By the return of spring the work was completed under the vigilant supervision of the Cardinal himself. Another English fleet appeared, but found Richelieu's wall unassailable and retired.

As the siege proceeded the Huguenots were reduced to feed on their own horses and on bits of stewed leather. The Mayor kept a dagger on the council table to stab any man who should talk of surrender. The siege lasted more than a year, and only 5,000 of the original 15,000 defenders remained when they consented to yield.

The Island of Crete was lost to the Venetians in 1669 after a siege of its capital, Candia, by the Turks, which is commonly reckoned to have lasted twenty-four years, and during which 200,000 men perished. The Ottoman army kept Candia blockaded the greater part of this period.

SEVERE TEST OF GIBRALTAR.

Gibraltar, one of the "Pillars of Hercules," regarded as impregnable, was made so by the British, who took it from the Spaniards in 1704, and have since held it. The Spanish and French besieged it from July 16, 1779, until February 5, 1783. In November, 1781, the besiegers were driven from their works and the latter were destroyed.

Early in the next year the besieging force was increased to 30,000 men against the 7,000 in the garrison, and were supplied with an immense train of artillery. Huge floating batteries, bomb-proof and shot-proof, were constructed. There were also a large number of ships-of-war arrayed against the fortress. It was proposed to make a grand attack both by land and sea with 400 pieces of artillery. Six months were spent in preparation.

There were partial cannonades early in September, but the main attack was commenced on the 13th. The fortress had less

than 100 guns to reply to the 400 of the besiegers. Disregarding the attack from every other quarter, the English commandant concentrated the whole of his ordnance upon the floating batteries in front of him. For a long time he made no impression on the enormous masses of iron and wood. But in about two hours it was observed that the red-hot shot had begun to set the wooden portions of the batteries on fire. Soon afterward their cannonade partially ceased. The flames increased, and towards evening the enemy's guns were silenced. Eight of the ten floating batteries were on fire during the night. The loss of the besiegers were 2,000; that of the besieged only eighty-four.

In October a British fleet brought supplies and reinforcements and, the allied fleet having been scattered by a storm, did not venture to attack it. This was the end of the most important siege that Gibraltar has undergone.

The siege of Saragossa in Spain by the French in 1808-9 was distinguished by the heroic conduct of the inhabitants. Pestilence spread among both the besieged and the besiegers. It took five months for the latter to penetrate the ramparts. The houses could be captured only by fighting from chamber to chamber.

In the beginning of February the deaths were from 400 to 500 daily, and thousands of decaying corpses were scattered about the streets. A great assault was made on February 18, 1809, and part of the town was carried. On the 20th it was surrendered. All the great leaders were dead or prostrate with fever.

FALL OF SEBASTOPOL.

The siege that attracted most attention in the nineteenth century was that of Sebastopol, in the Crimean War, 1854-5. It began in September of the former year, the besiegers being the French and English, with a small force of Turks. Sebastopol, by the Russians, was accounted impregnable. The fortress occupied some rugged heights, enclosing a part of the town. The principal and stronger parts were the fort known as the Malakoff, the central bastion, the Redan and the Little Redan.

The besiegers suffered much from inadequate commissary

arrangements and supplies, while the Russians were able for months to maintain their communications with the immense productive country behind them.

A very severe winter interfered seriously with the siege operations, but in the spring they were renewed with very great vigor. Several battles were fought around Sebastopol, with great losses on both sides. The more famous of these were at Inkermann and Balaklava.

On August 16, 1855, a Russian army sent to relieve Sebastopol was defeated at Tchernaya. There were many destructive bombardments, in which ironclad ships in the harbor for the first time took part. The allies were able, with their heavier and more numerous ordnance, to inflict much more injury than they received.

A great assault had been delivered on June 18, by the French on the Malakoff, and by the English on the Redan, but failed. From August 19 to September 8, a continuous and terrific bombardment was kept up. On the latter date the second great assault was made. The French carried the Malakoff, the Little Redan and the central bastion of the fortress, but the British were again driven back from the Redan.

The success of the French, however, had rendered the place no longer tenable, and after setting fire to Sebastopol and to their ships the Russians withdrew. The victory has been won by superior battering power. The siege had lasted eleven months and eight days.

GRANT TAKES VICKSBURG.

In the Civil War of 1861-65 in this country there were but two very remarkable sieges—that of Vicksburg and the Petersburg-Richmond siege.

Vicksburg is almost a natural fortress, and as it was the key to the possession of the Mississippi river, the Confederate Government had fortified it as well as lay in its power. The movement against Vicksburg was begun by Sherman, under Grant's orders, in December, 1862, and temporarily failed.

In January, 1863, Grant himself took the immediate direction of it. With the assistance of the navy he cut loose from his base

above Vicksburg to cross the Mississippi at Grand Gulf with his army and begin the attack from the lower side. His line, when complete, was fifteen miles long. He whipped the Confederate armies which were hovering about his rear and right flank while the investment was proceeding and taught them to keep at a safe distance.

On May 19 an assault was ordered and was repulsed with great loss. A second assault was made on May 22 with like result. Reinforcements were sent to Grant and Vicksburg was tightly held, with daily and nightly bombardments, until after six weeks of harrowing peril and privation it was forced on July 4, 1863, to surrender.

The besieged had suffered much from lack of food, and many of the noncombatants had burrowed chambers in the clay bluffs facing the river for protection from the Federal bombs.

Vicksburg was chiefly subdued by the tightness of its investment. It was not provisioned for a long siege. A tremendous labor was required of the Federal troops to make their works of circumvallation as strong as those of the defense, which Grant knew to be necessary, in spite of the superior force, to prevent a successful sortie.

The heaviest cannon used by the besiegers were lent to the army by Admiral Porter, of the navy. The only other siege guns were six thirty-two-pounders. But the field artillery was abundant. The investing lines were at no point more than six hundred yards distant from the works of the besieged and the artillery fire had proved very effective.

PETERSBURG AND RICHMOND.

The siege of Petersburg was one of the largest military operations known in history. It began in June, 1864, and lasted until April 2, 1865. The lines of circumvallation finally enclosed the defenses of Richmond, as well as those of Petersburg, and were many miles in length. General Grant had about 150,000 men and General Lee some 50,000.

Formal investment was not resorted to until the Federal Army

had made repeated assaults upon the Petersburg defenses, and had been repulsed with the loss of more than 9000 men. The Federal right flank rested upon the James river, above Bermuda Hundred, and the left was near the Weldon railway. On July 30 a mine was sprung under one of the principal Confederate works; and an assault was again made, but was repulsed with a loss of 5000 Federal soldiers.

In the autumn the besieging lines were extended north of the James river, close to the Richmond defenses, and were also steadily extended to the left. The situation of Lee's army grew worse with each day. The lines of supply leading into Richmond became fewer and more slender, and early in the year 1865 the Southern commander saw the necessity of attacking the investing army with a view to forcing his way out of the city. Fort Stedman, on the right of the Northern works, was taken by the Confederates in a heavy assault on March 25, but was recaptured. Lee was thus compelled to wait the movements of his antagonist.

The final operations of the siege began in the last days of March. From this time on there was continuous and heavy fighting. Grant sent a strong column to flank the Confederate right and to cut Lee's sole remaining communication with the army under Johnson and the country south of him. The movement culminated in the battle of Five Forks, which determined the immediate fall of Petersburg.

The evacuation of Richmond by the Confederate forces and government followed two days later, and the surrender of Appomattox on April 9 virtually marked the ending of the war.

METZ AND PARIS.

In the Franco-German War of 1870-71 the siege of Metz and that of Paris are the two great salient spectacles, and they had a certain dependence upon each other. Had Marshal Bazaine's army not been shut up in Metz and held there for seventy days by the Germans, it is not likely that they could have remained before Paris for one hundred and twenty-nine days, as they did, without a severe struggle.

A more reprehensible thing than Bazaine's surrender was the rendering of his troops powerless within the fortress of Metz at a moment when they were most needed in the open field.

Almost as soon as the news of the fall of Sedan and the capture of Napoleon III reached Paris in September, 1870, steps were taken to form a government of national defense, and means of protecting Paris was organized. The Germans, who were already before the city, completed its investment on September 19. Gambetta left Paris in a balloon in October to set up a provisional government in the provinces. All able-bodied males were called to defend the capital. The defense was active and ardent, but proved from the first futile against the great odds opposed to it.

THE GERMAN SIEGE OF PARIS.

The Germans repulsed successive sallies at Malmaison, Champigny, La Bouget and other suburbs. Dismal news came from Metz. The French army within its walls had either to starve or surrender. It submitted on October 27th. The army of the Loire was the only hope of Paris. It attacked the Germans to the north of Orleans, and, after several days of combat, was defeated. A sortie at Champigny, at first successful, ended in the Germans recovering their positions.

Near the end of January, 1871, there remained in Paris provisions only for another fortnight. More than 40,000 inhabitants had already succumbed to privation. Negotiations for capitulation led to an armistice on January 30th, followed by the Prussians taking possession of the city.

Plevna, the Turkish stronghold in the Balkan region, held out against the Russians in the war of 1877-78 from the early part of July until December 10th, through the sheer valor of its defenders. Some of the most terrific fighting of modern times took place on its steep slopes.

The Russians, who were the assailants, were put upon the defensive, and only the lack of a competent leader on the part of the Turks probably saved the Czar from a bitter defeat. Reinforcements were quickly brought forward until the total Russian

strength was 120,000 men and 440 guns. The Turks were estimated to have 50,000 men.

After a desperate sortie on December 10th, which failed to break the line of investment, Osman Pasha surrendered. The Russian killed and wounded in this siege are said to have been 18,000 and the Turks about 13,000.

In the Anglo-Boer War of 1899-1900 the siege of Ladysmith in Natal stands out prominently. It was the capital of a district and the junction of two railways, and had been used by the British as a depot for military stores, although this choice was severely criticised. It has been described as "a teacup in a saucer," the edge of the latter being represented by the high surrounding hills.

SIEGES IN THE BOER WAR.

When the Boers, in October, 1899, began to invest Ladysmith, the British had 12,000 soldiers there, including four regular cavalry regiments, and the colonial mounted troops; six field batteries, a mountain battery and a naval battery. General Joubert, in command of the Boers, opened a bombardment of the town at 6,000 yards.

On the night of October 30th General White, in command of the British, made a sortie with his entire force. One column became isolated, was surrounded by the Boers, and the mountain battery and an Irish and an English battalion were captured. The Boers made a feint of entering Ladysmith, and the British retired thither, recapturing two cannon on the way.

This unfortunate sortie reduced the garrison to less than 10,000 men, and soon afterward the force besieging the place was increased to 18,000. The Boers, with heavy guns, fired shells into the town daily from a long group of hills which commanded it. Entrenchments were constructed and strengthened day by day.

Those of the inhabitants who did not leave the town by permission of the Boer General deserted their dwellings and lived in bomb-proof caves. Cavalry and light artillery sallied forth from time to time, but accomplished nothing to compensate for their

losses. Armored trains went back and forth between Ladysmith and Colenso until, on November 2d, the latter place was occupied by the enemy. The bombardment of the besieged was then begun in earnest.

On November 9th a general assault was made, but was repulsed. The British drove the Boers from positions which they had held near the city. Lyddite shells thrown into the Boer lines demoralized them, but they were strengthened soon afterward by the arrival of cannon from the Transvaal. They mounted these on all the points of vantage within range.

The rigors of the siege were by the end of November severely felt. Rations were reduced and fevers were prevalent. There were several sorties, in which the British destroyed some of the Boer guns.

RELIEF AFTER DESPERATE FIGHTING.

Meanwhile General Buller was advancing with 20,000 men to relieve Ladysmith, and in view of his approach the Boers themselves began to convert their position on the Tugela into fortresses. They had trenches on both sides of the river, protecting each other, and all protected by cannon on the elevation back of them. Entrenchments extended along the Tugela for twenty miles. Buller attacked the Boers, and lost all his field artillery and 1,100 killed, wounded and captured.

The Boer position was so well planned that both their entrenchments and their gun emplacements were completely hidden from the attacking force. The fire from the rifles, smokeless powder being used, caused almost all the British casualties.

After Buller had retreated, the Boers, on January 6, 1900, carried some British entrenchments south of Ladysmith three times, but were finally driven out of them at the point of the bayonet.

General Buller resumed the movement against the besiegers with a reinforced army, amounting now to 31,000 men. An attempt to break through the Boer line at Spion Kop failed after hard fighting extending over several days.

A third attempt was made in February, but the British were again compelled to retreat. General Buller then, on February 14th, began a turning movement of the left flank of the Boers. After several days of heroic fighting the way to Ladysmith was cleared on February 27th, and on March 1st Lord Dundonald's cavalry entered the town.

The siege had lasted 118 days. The rations for the fighting men just sufficed to keep them on their feet. The only water which they could procure was so polluted that it caused fever and dysentery. Toward the end the cavalry horses were killed and eaten. The stock of medicine became exhausted in January, and the death-rate had increased enormously. Three hundred and forty-six soldiers and officers died of disease and 259 were killed.

CHAPTER XXXIV.

ON THE ROAD TO LIAU-YANG.

Strong Position for Defense—An Excellent Road—Hot Water a Good Beverage—Chinese House—Black Bread—Russian Cavalry—The Cossacks—Flanking Fight.

FROM a special correspondent at the front with the First Army, Manchuria:

“We stood at the top of the pass, lost in astonishment.

Word had gone forth some days before that the Russians on our front held a strong position on the same range of mountains which the central column on the main road to Liau-Yang would have to cross at Motien Pass. Prepared as we were, the reality exceeded our greatest expectations.

“For several hours we had climbed up through a deep valley that grew ever narrower, while the wooded mountains on either side grew steeper. At last we came to the pass, a steep and high divide. The Russians had built an excellent road that zigzagged up the pass in an easy incline. Trees and brush had been cleared away from the road, and on the sides of the hills half a mile back trees had been felled, which formed a battis. This clearing also gave openings from the lines of trenches which we caught sight of, over which infantry and artillery fire could sweep the road and the lower hillsides. Nature had rendered the position ideal to defend, yet the Russians had left it without firing a shot!

“Our astonishment grew as we looked about us. It was raining, as it rains on the first day of the rainy season in Manchuria, and yet we could not forbear, drenched as we were, to investigate further. As the road crossed the crest of the divide Russian trenches ran from the right and from the left, and on each side on the farther slope was an open road by which the guns could be hurried into position. We turned to the left. Here a long trench, man high, ran for three hundred yards. Farther on down the val-

ley, with trees felled in their front, were other trenches. Traverses led to these trenches by which the defenders could come and go.

“We retraced our steps to inspect the Russian left and followed the gun road. Soon this divided. One branch led up to an eight-gun battery position. Gun ports, ammunition, bomb-proofs, casements to shelter the men, were all complete—built by a competent military engineer—below this gun position, on the south side of the slope, was a continuous infantry trench. Pursuing our way, we found that the gun road branched again to a four-gun position. The main gun road continued turning down hill in a wide circle and meeting the main road a mile and a half in the rear. This was the line of retreat for the guns in case they could not, at the end of the action, be taken off the main road.

A STRONG POSITION AND STRATEGY.

“A path followed up the hill, which now circled, following back the contour of the valley over which the Japanese army would have been obliged to pass if it had stormed the position. Along these ridges trench followed trench. Long trenches of trees in their front had been felled to give a good sweep at the road for infantry fire. We even found some trenches overgrown with grass and bushes which must have been used during the Japanese-Chinese War.

“We walked along the ridges for two miles. Trench succeeding trench. Some of these were covered with branches of trees to hide the fresh earth from the sight of the enemy. In some cases the foliage was still unwilted, showing how recent had been the Russian intention to hold this second Plevna. Our strength and courage gave out before we reached the end of the field works. Why had the Russians left without fighting?

“One staff officer informed us that each of the two Japanese columns north of us outflanked the Russian positions. The right wing of the first army had pushed its way forward until it threatened the Russian retreat from the Motien Pass, facing the centre of the army on the Liau-Yang road. The centre in turn had arrived at a place where it could reach, without hindrance, the line

of Russian communications from this pass that we were examining. In each case the enemy had withdrawn. It was a series of moves on the chess board of war which forced a retreat for fear of a check-mate. Another view was that the Russians were trying to draw the Japanese on. Other officers did not agree with this view. They did not believe that the Russian line of retreat had been seriously threatened. They could not explain the departure of the enemy except on the ground that the Chinese had given the Russians false information in the hope of looting what stores were abandoned.

“As we descended into the valley beyond the pass the latter view was given a show of truth when we saw the Chinese carrying away the Russian black bread that had been left behind. Here a large Russian force evidently had encamped. There were the emplacements for tents, bake oven, lean-tos for horses, houses built of interlaced willow branches. One Chinese house was still burning in which Russian black bread had been stored. The courtyard was plastered inches deep with crumbled bread that had turned to a brown paste from the rain. There was bread everywhere. Heaps of it were along the road where bags hastily tied up had given way. Everywhere were dirty Chinamen carrying away this uninviting bread paste mixed with mud.

HOT WATER A BEVERAGE.

“At last we were too weary to investigate further. We turned into a Chinese house occupied by some Japanese officers of our acquaintance. In spite of my mackintosh my undershirt was wet with the rain. Our friends welcomed us. The inevitable cup of boiling hot water was brought. Nothing is more refreshing when one is exhausted than a cup of hot water. Hot water is an institution in the Japanese army which other nations might well copy.

“The Japanese soldier bathes inwardly and outwardly with hot water whenever he gets a chance. Whether the day is cold or hot, hot water is the first refreshment served. It seems to warm or cool you as need may be. The soldier's canteen is made so that it can be put on the fire and water boiled in it. The Chinese house, among other defects, is unprovided with screens—in

fact, it is open to the winds of heaven. On a rainy day, and on any day for that matter, it is filled with a swarming pest of insects. We talked awhile with the officers, but were at last driven out into the rain again by the thousand sticky, buzzing flies.

“On our way back to headquarters we met John, our Chinese cook, and a Korean with one tent and some food. We camped on top of the pass. It rained in streams. The water was driving through the tent cloth, leaking down on our heads and running in rivulets along the ground.

HARDSHIPS OF WAR CORRESPONDENTS.

“After a miserable night we returned to headquarters. The Russian force had withdrawn from our front, and the announcement was made that we were likely to remain where we were, without advancing further toward Liau-Yang, for over ten days.

“We had marched through a number of short valleys cut with rough roads, and the question of the possibility of using cavalry in this country was a pronounced one. There is not the least doubt that a brigade of American cavalry with pack mules could get over this country without difficulty. The nature of the country would permit, contrary to what has been generally believed, a competent cavalry general to cut up any transportation over these roads.

“So far the Russian cavalry has done nothing to interfere with the Japanese lines of communication. Day after day I have noted the opportunities afforded by the country for daring cavalry work which would prevent any army from snatching an hour's sleep. But the Cossack does not show himself. His only anxiety seems to be to get to the rear, and the only evidence we have of his presence is the swarms of flies that cover the filthy spots where he has camped.

“It was not unlike my own country. There were oak, elm, maple and poplar trees, besides many another. The valleys were well watered and the soil was fertile. Corn and beans grew in field and on hillside. Nature smiled. Only man was found

wanting. The villages were small and scattered. The houses were poor, without windows and with floors of mud.

"The peasants were poor, filthy, illiterate and ignorant. Scarcely can they count money, for they are used to trade for their products for other commodities without any medium of exchange. The roads are not really good. Yet the country yields rich crops, which make the wealth of the land after all. There is plenty of water power. Why there are no prosperous villages, no libraries, colleges, schools, railroads, electric lights, good clothing and food, comfortable houses and the thousand and one other things that fill our life without our noticing them? Why is it that the farmer works with insufficient and primitive tools?

LACK OF ACTIVE RUSSIAN MINDS.

"Some would say that the fault lies with the Chinese Government. Some truth may lie in this view. But, after all, a country is not made prosperous by its government. Industry is not lacking, for there are no more tireless workers than the Chinamen, who are seen working from morning to night in the fields. Surely labor produces wealth; yet the laborious Chinaman is dirt poor. What is the trouble in this land? The Chinese invented many things long before the Western world rediscovered them.

"The thought came to me in a flash. Here are no minds of action! Here are no minds that develop, organize and co-ordinate. Labor they have more than they need; but they have not that power of understanding the opportunities which mother earth offers us, and making the best use of such opportunities. These are the qualities of the American business man."

A war correspondent writes as follows:

The first army, before the movements about to be described, occupied the valley between the Yantsuling and Mo-tien ranges. The Guards Division on our left lay at Towan, the division in the center, which I accompanied, occupied Tiensutien, and the Twelfth Division the maze of rocky mountains around Yush-ling.

The Russian line stretched from Hwantsu-ling in the north to Taitensu in the south. It consisted of two forces. One centered

at Tanghoyen was composed of the Third and Sixth Divisions of Siberian Sharpshooters, which we had already encountered at the Yalu and at Mo-tien-ling. The other, centered at Amping, was the Tenth European Army Corps. Both forces were augmented by various detachments, and at the same time it may be assumed that the component divisions were considerably short of full strength.

The immediate object of the Japanese was to drive the enemy from the right bank of the Tang-ho, and then from the left bank. The effecting of this plan would result in retreat of the Russians upon the outer line of defences which protected Liau-yang from the south. Kuroki would then be in a position to join hands with the Second and Ta-ku-shan armies in a general attack on the carefully-selected positions taken up by Kuropatkin.

THE JAPANESE FLANKER.

The order to advance from the Tientsien position came on August 25, and after heavy fighting on the twenty-sixth and twenty-seventh, Kuroki found himself master of the left bank of the Tang-ho.

The Tang-ho won, General Kuroki was free to take up his allotted place in the general line of attack upon Liau-yang, for the enemy had retired upon the outer of the tripple line of defences guarding the city. But here it is necessary to estimate the strength of the first army, which differed considerably in number from the force that crossed the Yalu. Continual drafts had replaced not only losses at Kiu-lien-cheng and Mo-tien-ling, but had augmented the establishment of each infantry regiment by 25 per cent. That is to say, a company of infantry formerly two hundred strong now numbered two hundred and fifty, making a battalion a full thousand and a brigade six thousand. In addition, two brigades of reserves had joined us. The force under General Kuroki therefore numbered three divisions of a fighting strength of sixteen thousand men each, and two brigades of six thousand each, practically four divisions.

August 29 the Guards advanced on the west side of the

Peking road until their outposts were in touch with the outer line of the Liau-yang defences.

August 30 the Twelfth Division made the preliminary move of the flanking operation by which Marshal Oyama designed to cut off the retreat of the enemy and force them into a decisive battle. Kuroki's army had merely moved eastward without losing touch with the other armies. But now a most important development took place. On the thirty-first the Twelfth Division established themselves in a position near Kwan-tung, facing west and about ten miles from the railway. During the day they prepared artillery positions and reconnoitered the country.

THE STORY OF A GREAT FIGHT.

They only needed daylight of September 1 to inaugurate the attack. But Kuroki's army was divided, a division, a brigade, and two battalions remaining west of the Tang-ho, whilst two weak divisions were upon the north bank of the Tai-tse, completely beyond the reach of succor from the forces investing Liau-yang. A gap of fifteen miles of rough country, the Tang-ho, and the Tai-tse separated Kuroki from the rest of the Japanese army. The Russians had thrown away a succession of chances.

On the thirty-first they had the Twelfth Division wholly at their mercy, but failed to fire a shot. Up to the night of the thirty-first, Kuroki could have retired into the mountains in rear if the gap had been broken and his force cut off. But once the artillery and baggage had crossed the river he was entirely committed.

Kuroki's position seemed inconceivable that the Russians did not swoop down upon him; and hardly less conceivable that Marshal Oyama should have jeopardized so considerable a portion of his forces upon an undertaking that lacked the essential elements of success.

The Japanese Commander-in-Chief may have been justified by the knowledge that the Russians permit liberties which an enterprising foe would turn to advantage. But he will find it hard to explain why he took a liberty, regardless of consequences, at a point which was the crux of the whole situation.

On the morning of September 1 General Kuroki and his staff took up a position on a commanding hill facing west, and dominating the plain that divided us from the railway. This hill was immediately north of the Tai-tse and barely a mile from the pontoon bridge. Its crest was crowned by an old Chinese keep encircled by an ancient crenellated wall. Deep shadows were cast by the buttresses and bastions of these bygone defences.

Straight ahead, beyond a plain of ripening crops, towered a mass of mountains shutting out from view the city and environs of Liau-yang. From behind the mountains the railway stretched northeast, right across our front. It was ten miles distant from our point of observation, but long trains drawn by pairs of puffing engines were clearly visible passing up and down the track. Each truck, each wheel, the firemen on the engines, could be discerned through glasses. To tear up this iron road that seemed so near and render impassable to troop or transport trains was our object. But those ten miles of waving corn held ten times ten thousand Russians.

A RUSSIAN KEY LOST.

The Russians, to the number of three divisions in the earlier stages of Kuroki's movement, were centered in the mass of mountains bordering the Tai-tse, and blocking the view of Liau-yang. The nearest point of these mountains was a mound two hundred feet high, hereafter called No. 131, that rose from the water's edge and afforded an excellent position for the enemy's guns.

In the plain fronting the mountains, and twelve hundred yards northeast of No. 131, stood Manjayama, an eminence one hundred and fifty feet high. It possessed a flat top five hundred yards long and one hundred broad at its widest part, its circumference at the base measuring perhaps two thousand yards. This insignificant hillock turned out to be the key to the Russian position, a key of which the Japanese managed to possess themselves by a dashing attack, but which they were unable to turn in the lock for want of strength. In the hands of the Russians it dominated the line of advance upon the railway; in Japanese hands it constituted a direct menace to that railway.

On the Russian side I could pick out small bodies of men moving hither and thither in and out of the patches of tall maize and millet. Rifle shots cracked out now and then, and occasionally would come to the grunt of a volley. Gradually the massed infantry before me lessened in number, only to appear further on at some new point nearer the enemy. Presently two batteries limbered up and crawled along the road that disappeared in the yellow corn. Half an hour afterwards they came into action at the edge of a field, where their movements were hidden from the enemy by the wall of tall stalks. Then the rifle fire increased and the Russian advanced parties were seen falling back before the slow encroachment of the Japanese infantry.

A HEAVY FIRE BY RUSSIANS.

Whilst preliminary movements were taking place the enemy's artillery were busy. From positions which we could not at the time determine they subjected our guns to a heavy and regular shrapnel fire. Eight of their guns, firing in quick succession, gave us a pretty exhibition of gunnery. In the translucent air above our artillery position would suddenly appear a white puff and a dart of flame. Then as one says one, two, three, the others would come, until all eight little tufts of white fleece appeared in a row in the blue sky, floating slowly down the wind like swans upon a river. Next the eight noisy bangs of the exploding shell struck harshly on the ear, then came the eight sustained screams from the speeding bullets, and finally the deep accumulating booming of the guns themselves.

The Russians fired in the course of the day shells estimated at between 1000 and 2000 in number, at a position where men and guns were plainly visible. Yet the Japanese casualties amounted to one man killed and seven wounded. Some days later, when visiting the Russian gun positions, I discovered the reason of such indifferent shooting. Looked at from the Russian side the clump of trees appeared to grow upon the ridge where our guns were. As a matter of fact they were a full 400 yards behind the ridge. The Russians evidently took their range from the trees.

The forces of the Russians started out of the trenches in batches and made frantic dashes for the further side of the hill. Frequently they miscalculated the proper moment, or rather the Japanese gunners were too cunning for them. A shell would burst and scatter; then out came the Russians, hoping to get away before the next came. But when the Japanese tumbled to this procedure they fired a single shell and a salvo a few seconds after. One shell dropped right amongst a bunch of five men. When the smoke cleared I saw four figures lying prone and one sitting up.

THE TERRORS OF MODERN ARTILLERY.

The fire of so many guns has an awesome effect upon the spectator, who feels small and humbled by the terribleness of the sound and the thought that human life counts as nothing before relentless hail that is the consequence of each discharge. A rifle bullet is comparatively friendly; it is small and merciful and has a human eye behind it, not far distant. But shells, coming from miles away, are sped into space irresponsibly to deal death and destruction. They have lost the human attribute, have gone from human control, their mission to maim and kill. For twenty minutes the ground trembled and the air vibrated to the deep-throated bellow of cannon. Then the guns ceased firing and silence fell upon the plain.

The Japanese rose out of their temporary trenches and formed up in loose open lines, one behind the other. A muffled order ran along the ranks. The front line stiffened, fixed bayonets without a sound, and started forward stealthily. The remaining lines sank back upon the ground. There was a brief moment of suspense. Then suddenly the air was rent by a crashing volley, and a thousand voices shouted hoarsely. The Japanese were in the open fronting the Russian position. The Russians had hastily fired into the line of figures that showed abruptly on the edge of the millet field facing them.

The Russians had cleared a space of some hundreds of yards in front of their trenches. The twelve-foot millet stalks had been broken twenty inches from the ground and then pressed over, one

across the other, until they formed an obstruction as formidable as any wire entanglement. Upon the edge of this prepared space the Japanese found themselves when they had passed through the cover. Their answer to the Russian volley was a shout of defiance as they dashed headlong into the open, across which they could see thousands of Russian eyes behind the spurting rifles. The Russians changed from volley to independent fire that came in tearing gusts and withered up the line of Japanese struggling through the network of broken stalks.

MASSES OF MEN IN FIERY HURRICANE.

The attackers melted away before the hurricane of fire until only half their number was left. Then they wavered, and then they came scrambling back to their comrades, a broken and battered remnant. The second line now sprang up and advanced, with the third line hot on its heels. Again the Russian rifles ripped the air with multitudes of screeching bullets. Again the Japanese dashed into the entangling millet, only to find their brave and willing feet hindered and tripped, their onset stayed by a cunning device. As they struggled forward the greedy bullets took heavy toll, and the nearer they approached the Russian line of fire the faster men fell. It was an impossible attack; again came a scrambling retirement. The Japanese attempt had failed. The Russian line was not to be pierced.

Kuroki's staff were in great anxiety, for they found themselves confronted with a greatly superior force, whilst their line of retreat might at any moment be broken by a downpour of rain that would render the Tai-tse unfordable. They had only one course open—to bluff the Russians. This they did to the fullest extent, employing every available man to act upon a vigorous offensive.

What would have happened had the Russians followed up their repulse of the Japanese attack and discovered the thinness of the line, or if they had tried to force their way through on their own initiative, can only be conjectured. By now it will have dawned upon the reader, as it did slowly on those of us who were watching the operations, that not only had the flanking movement failed, but

that from the moment of its inception it was doomed to failure. The Japanese position was one of jeopardy. They dared not desist for a moment from pressing upon the enemy and keeping up the appearance of being heavily backed. Nor could they lose sight of the fact that they were there for the purpose of striking at the railway, though it is difficult to think that General Kuroki did not realize from the beginning that his task was impossible.

Waiting until the moon went down, the Japanese infantry went forward with great caution. Every man in the section of the line facing Manjayama took part in the attack; no reserves were left. In close order they advanced over the broken millet field and found themselves upon a line of pickets instead of the masses of men they had encountered in the afternoon. They swept over the pickets and onward to the trenches at the foot of Manjayama.

A SPLENDID CHARGE IN VAIN.

The hastily aroused Russians were firing wildly at nothing in particular. The Japanese line was broken up in the advance and separate parties opened fire upon the dimly perceived figures in front, and perhaps on each other in the confusion. The officer in command had lost touch with his men, and it became necessary to rally the attacking line. In every direction flickering lines of flame showed companies engaged in firing heavily in the darkness.

Suddenly there rang out, loud and clear, above the noisy fusillade, the Japanese bugle-call, "Cease fire." Instantly every Japanese rifle was silent. In a second the Japanese commander took in the situation, and touch was re-established between the broken links of the attacking line. Then came the brisk call, "Resume firing," followed quickly by the "Charge." Shoulder to shoulder the double line of Japanese pressed up the hill, bayonetting the parties of riflemen that barred their advance. On the top they charged the trenches whence the Russians were fiercely firing into the dark line that never hesitated or faltered. Then came a heroic fight in which the Japanese lost heavily, but succeeded in routing the defenders.

A converging cannon and rifle fire nipped in the bud each movement of the Russians, and during the day they found it impossible to close upon Manjayama.

At night, however, they made two desperate attacks, in one of which, by means of hand grenades and an irresistible bayonet charge, they practically annihilated a Japanese battalion. The storming party on this occasion reached the plateau on top, where an unshaken line of defenders met them with a scathing rifle fire that killed and wounded every man, not one of the Russians escaping to relate the disaster that had overcome them.

FRIGHTFUL BATTLEFIELD SCENES.

On the 5th I went over to Manjayama, but found myself unable to make a careful examination of the scene, owing to the horrible sights which met the eye in every direction and the overwhelming stench that assailed the nostrils. One of our party was so overcome that he was sick on the spot and had to be led away. Dead bodies lay everywhere, some swollen and blackened, all rotting in the hot sun. Many were literally torn to pieces by shell explosions, whilst the ground was saturated with blood. The Japanese were busy cremating their own men and burying the Russians, tasks that occupied them for some days.

Throughout the 1st Manjayama had been shelled by the Japanese and subjected to two infantry attacks. On the 2d and 3d the Russians had shelled it incessantly and made four night attacks.

The top of the hill was scored in the most remarkable manner by both bullets and shell that had glanced upon it and ricocheted into space. The ground was littered with shell splinters, shrapnel, and rifle bullets. For several days the wounded of both sides could not be attended to owing to the incessant fire. Exposure within certain zones meant instant death, so the medical staff were helpless; indeed, they found more than they could do in the rear.

The sufferings endured during those few days are appalling to contemplate. The infantry in the firing line also went through a time of terrible trial. For days they had nothing to eat but dry rice, and water was unprocurable. All the time they lay close in

the trenches, subjected to a continuous nervous strain that put sleep out of the question. Truly Manjajama was a scene of horror calculated to fill the most confirmed jingo with terror and horror of war.

This movement by Kuroki was the most picturesque and bloody of the Japanese Stonewall Jackson. Opening the most destructive battle in modern warfare, and the special correspondent present in behalf of English-speaking people gives a series of the rarest pictures that the galleries of war paintings afford.

A

CHAPTER XXXV.

SPLENDID BATTLE AT SEA.

Tragedy of a Fleet Destroyed—The Japanese Give the Russians Credit for Heroic Conduct and the Account is One of the Best Modern Pictures of Navies in Combat.

AN account written by a Tokio correspondent on the fight between Admiral Kamimura's fleet and the Vladivostok cruisers is as follows :

"The morning of August 14 broke beautifully clear Admiral Kamimura's four cruisers, forming one squadron, steered south from a point on the Korean coast. At 5 A. M. the three Vladivostok cruisers were sighted off the port bow steering south at a distance of 10,000 metres. The Japanese prayed earnestly that these troublesome vessels would not again elude pursuit.

"Every precaution was taken to avoid observation, the Japanese steering across the rear of the Russian vessels, which advanced southward apparently unconscious of the enemy's proximity. Presently, sighting the Japanese, the Russians put about and steamed northward at full speed, the *Rossia* leading, the *Rurik* in the rear.

"It was now 5.20 A. M., and the two squadrons were 8,000 metres apart. The Japanese opened fire, and soon there was a hot interchange. The Russians were in single column, line ahead, while the Japanese were crossing their course in two squadrons in a 'T' shape, raking the enemy fore and aft, whereas his ships masked each other's fire.

"The Japanese projectiles repeatedly took effect, whereupon the enemy, recognizing the disadvantage of his position, changed his course for the purpose of bringing his line parallel with the Japanese, but this manœuvre threw the *Rurik* out, owing to her inferior speed, thus enabling the Japanese to concentrate their fire on her at a range of 4,000 to 5,000 metres. Thereupon the *Rossia* and *Gromoboi*, observing the *Rurik*'s plight, circled round

her for the purpose of giving her succor, thus again exposing themselves to the Japanese raking fire, which was poured hotly into them, the Russian vessels replying with every available gun.

"The Rurik now burst into flames and began to describe circles, her steering gear having been injured. The Rossia and Gromoboi also caught fire. Flames poured from their portholes and evidently there was much confusion on board, but the crews succeeded in extinguishing the fires. Meanwhile the Rurik began to go stern down and had a list to port. Her brave crew, however, never flagged, serving her guns repeatedly.

"The Rossia and Gromoboi came to her assistance, but only exposed themselves again, suffering heavily and inflicting little damage, though the range now did not exceed 4,500 metres. Nearly every shot from the Japanese guns took effect. The Rossia took fire five or six times and on three or four occasions the Gromoboi burst into flames. Finally the Rurik had only two guns left in action and her mizenmast was shot away.

SCENES OF SUPERB SEA COMBAT.

"It was now 9 A.M., and the Rossia and Gromoboi, seeing the Rurik doomed, abandoned her and steamed away at full speed. Just then the fourth Japanese squadron, consisting of the Naniwa and Takachiho, arrived, and, leaving them to deal with the Rurik, Admiral Kamimura pursued the fugitives.

"The Rurik was now opposed only by two small cruisers, and renewed the fight with splendid gallantry, but owing to her crippled condition was unable to effect anything. Gradually she sank. Some of her crew jumped overboard, while others opened the portholes in order to hasten her sinking, but, with enduring courage, continued throughout to serve her guns. Finally she stood up and went down by the stern. The scene was strewn with hammocks and planks to which men were clinging. The Naniwa and Takachiho forthwith lowered boats and the men were ordered to save life, and were assisted by the torpedo squadron just arrived.

"Meanwhile Admiral Kamimura, abandoning the pursuit of

the Russian vessels, whose speed was unimpaired, although their hulls and armaments were severely injured, returned to the scene and aided in saving the lives of the Russians, of whom 601 were rescued. One died shortly afterward. About two hundred were wounded, forty-three severely, ten probably mortally.

“The captain, commander and most of the officers of the Rurik were killed. The Japanese casualties were forty-four killed, including two officers, and sixty-five wounded, including seven officers. The fighting power of the Japanese ships was unimpaired.”

DETAILS OF THE FIGHT OFF TSU ISLAND.

The following details of the fight off Tsu Island between the Russian Vladivostok squadron and Vice-Admiral Kamimura's vessels, were supplied by a Russian correspondent at Vladivostok, August 22 :

“The cruisers *Rossia* and *Gromoboi*, two of the survivors of our brave squadron, are again in this harbor after the most desperate battle of modern naval warfare. Half of the officers and forty per cent. of the men were killed or wounded in the unequal fight. The gallant *Rurik* was lost and the *Rossia* and *Gromoboi* became almost helplessly crippled, but there is grim satisfaction in knowing that they carried out their orders, fighting so as to weaken Admiral Kamimura's squadron, with the object of allowing the Port Arthur squadron to force the passage of the Korean Straits which had hitherto been impassable.”

The correspondent mentions many details of the battle, that he is enabled to give, on the authority of Rear-Admiral Jessen and other surviving officers of the squadron, many of whom are now in the hospital at Vladivostok, “tenderly nursed by the same devoted force of surgeons and attendants who worked over them all day long under the murderous fire of the enemy.”

Rear-Admiral Jessen hoisted his flag on the *Rossia* on the morning of August 12, and the squadron steamed out in accordance with previous instructions to meet Rear-Admiral Withoft (commander of the Port Arthur squadron). The purpose of the Vladivostok squadron was to draw off Admiral Kamimura so as

to clear the passage of the Korean Gulf for Admiral Withoft, whose vessels had been damaged and weakened in their fight with Vice-Admiral Togo.

“The Japanese fleet was sighted on the morning of August 14. It was barely daylight when the Russians observed by the smoke on the horizon four Japanese vessels steaming in column to the northwest. These vessels came up rapidly and proved to be four first-class cruisers of which the Russians identified the Iwate and the Adsuma.

RUSSIAN STRATEGY AT SEA.

“If possible, we would have gotten them dead to the north and then run to the southward to join forces with the Port Arthur squadron, avoiding a fight at that particular time, but the superior speed of the enemy prevented this. They edged us toward the Japanese shore, and, seeing that a battle was inevitable and that under any circumstances this was part of our mission we turned in the hope of coming in close quarters and damaging the enemy as much as possible; but the Japanese ships were speedier and they chose to make it a long-range fight. They had superior artillery and were better protected, especially with regard to their steering gear.

“The battle commenced at 5 o'clock in the morning at a range of six miles. The Russians were steaming so as to force the Japanese line when a shell struck the stern of the Rurik and irreparably damaged her rudder. She hoisted a signal to this effect and Admiral Jessen replied by signalling ‘Steer by her propellers,’ but the damage included one of the screws, and the Rurik was forced to lie to while the Japanese drew in and concentrated their fire on the crippled cruiser, allowing Admiral Jessen to proceed.

“Admiral Jessen, on the *Rossia*, seeing the Rurik in difficulty, swung around, followed by the *Gromoboi*, and threw her better armored vessel between the Japanese and the Rurik, taking the full force of the Japanese big-gun fire, while the Rurik's crew worked desperately and hopelessly to repair the steering gear.

"In the meantime wireless messages were humming in the air calling up Japanese reinforcements. Three smoke plumes appeared to the westward and they appeared to be from two second-class Japanese cruisers, one of which proved to be the Tokiwa and a third vessel of the Nitaka type. These vessels manœvered so as to get the range of the crippled Russian cruiser, putting her between them and the fire of her heavier escorts.

"The battle continued until eight o'clock in the morning. The *Rossia* suffered heavily. Her guns were largely unprotected and her crews were killed at their stations while the guns themselves were dismantled.

"The *Gromoboi*, which was better protected, had no heavy guns and was put out of action.

HOW JAPS FOUGHT TO FINISH.

"The Japanese persistently refused to close in, but lay off pounding us with their heavy guns. Terrible havoc was caused by the terrific bursting of the charges of the Japanese shells, probably of the new Shimose powder which wrecked and shattered everything wherever they landed.

"Our fire was steady and accurate, but only the larger guns were available.

"The *Rurik* signalled that her repairs had been completed, and Admiral Jessen signalled her to proceed to Vladivostok.

"Admiral Jessen then attempted to draw off the Japanese, so as to allow the *Rurik* a chance to escape; but succeeded only partially. The four big Japanese cruisers steered a parallel course, but never nearer than three and three-quarter miles. Admiral Jessen drew off to the northwest, while the three small cruisers hung on the flanks of the crippled *Rurik*, which kept up the fight until she and her enemies were lost on the horizon.

"The flagship continued the battle with the four armorclads until ten o'clock, when the Japanese vessels suddenly ceased fighting and turned and steamed at a greatly increased speed in the direction of Japan.

"It was impossible for us to follow them. The *Rossia's* four
NRJ

funnels were badly damaged, reducing her draught and lowering her speed; while many of the smaller steam connections were cut by the Japanese shells, making it difficult to ascertain the real extent of the injuries sustained. Both the *Rossia* and the *Gromoboi* were leaking badly. The former had been hit in the hull eleven times, while the latter had six holes on the water line. Every wave broke through the shell holes, which the crew covered as best they could with collision mats, stopping them on the inside.

"The two cruisers made the best of the way to Vladivostok, where they arrived on the evening of August 15th, without having sighted the *Rurik*.

"The Russian casualties were terrible. The surgeons, who had worked with heroic bravery under fire throughout the battle, continued their work until the vessels arrived in port, going almost without food and sleep.

CASUALTIES IN AMMUNITION HANDLERS.

"Curiously enough, not a mechanic on either vessel was injured, the heaviest losses being among the ammunition handlers.

"The details of the casualties are: On the *Rossia*, killed, 1 officer and 47 men; wounded, 9 officers and 169 men. On the *Gromoboi*, killed, 3 officers and 83 men; wounded, 5 officers and 193 men.

"The *Gromoboi* and the *Rossia* present a battered appearance. Their smokestacks show great rents, while the masts, bridges and ventilators look like sieves, and there are marks of battle everywhere. Guns are dismantled, boats shattered, and there are enormous holes in the cruisers' hulls through which a man could easily pass. Many of the cabins were completely wrecked.

"Some of the Japanese shells performed queer actions. On the *Rossia* a shell burst in a clothes cupboard. Garments therein were torn to shreds, but a mirror was not scratched. Photographs and knicknacks on a writing table nearby were not disturbed. In another part of the cruiser the walls were blackened by the smoke of a fierce fire in which eight men were burned alive; yet an almanac on the wall was not even scorched.

“On board the Gromoboi a shell entered the wardroom and wrecked the furniture; but a parrot cage was untouched.

“All the officers are full of praise for the coolness and bravery of the men who died in the battle without a murmur. Comrades took their places without awaiting orders. It was deadly work on the upper deck, where the gunners were without protection, and shells striking burst into a thousand fragments, killing and wounding men until the deck became a veritable shambles—strewn with dead and dying and slippery with blood. Not a single gunner protected by casemates lost his life. The value of protective armor was demonstrated whenever projectiles struck the armored portion of the vessels.

A BRAVE RUSSIAN CAPTAIN.

“There were many deeds of heroism during the five-hour battle, but the greatest praise of all belongs to Captain Dabich, of the Gromoboi, who remained at his post on the bridge from the beginning to the end of the fight, when wounded in the back, he persisted in resuming command directly the wound had been dressed, but yielding to the entreaties of his officers, he sought shelter in the conning tower. No sooner had he entered than a shell struck the foot of the tower, glancing upward to the overhanging cover and entered through the peephole, killing a lieutenant and two quartermasters, wounding two lieutenants and again wounding Captain Dabich in the head and breast. Not a single man in the tower escaped. There being no one to steer the ship, the captain, severely wounded though he was, dragged himself to the wheel and managed it until another quartermaster had been summoned.

“Subsequently learning that the men were depressed by the fact that he had been wounded a second time, the captain insisted, after the second dressing, on being supported along the deck to the casements, encouraging the sailors, saying:

“‘I am alive, brothers. Go on smashing the Japanese.’”

When Captain Andreieff, of the Rossia, ascertained that only three out of her twenty big guns could be fired he coolly gave orders to get explosives in readiness to sink the ship. Captain

Andreioff is usually nervous, but in battle he was "cool as a cucumber." When not giving orders he was cheerfully conversing with the gunners at their stations.

Captain Berlinski was killed by a splinter which struck him on the head at the outset of the fight.

Lieutenant Molas also distinguished himself. A shell entered the compartment where he was directing the fire and set fire to the deck, on which a number of charges were standing about, then came an eight-inch shell which scattered the charges and caused a terrific explosion which threw the men in every direction and hurled Lieutenant Molas to the upper deck. Fortunately, he fell in a heap of dead bodies and escaped with severe bruises. Dense fire was then pouring out of the compartment, but Lieutenant Molas did not hesitate for a moment. Calling for volunteers he plunged headlong into the flaming compartment and succeeded in putting out the fire.

KILLED AND BURIED AT SEA.

Another officer, followed by a number of sailors, brought a hose and played water upon Lieutenant Molas and his men while they were removing the unexploded charges regardless of the fact that they might have exploded at any minute in their hands.

Only one of the dead was brought back—Captain Berlinski, of the *Rossia*. All the others who were killed were buried at sea, a farewell salute being fired as the bodies were slid over the ship's side.

The seamen of the *Rossia* and *Gromoboi* who survived are cheerful. They responded to the greetings of Vice-Admiral Skrydloff with joyful hurrahs.

On board the *Rurik* were twenty-four officers, a priest, eighty-seven petty officers and seven hundred men.

The death of Lieutenant Brash, of the cruiser *Gromoboi*, is reported to have been particularly tragic. He was hurled from the bridge of the cruiser by the explosion of a shell. Although mortally wounded the lieutenant continued to issue orders and encourage the men until he was removed between decks. A man

seriously wounded by the same shell continued doing his duty and did not report to the surgeons for treatment until the next day.

The Tsar received the following telegram dated the 17th inst. from Admiral Alexeieff:—

I submit to your Majesty the report of the commander of the cruiser squadron, who returned on the 16th inst. to Vladivostok with the cruisers *Rossia* and *Gromoboi*:

“At half-past four on the morning of the 14th, just as day was breaking, I approached the parallel of Fusan with the cruisers *Rurik*, *Rossia*, and *Gromoboi*, under full steam. Forty-two miles from Fusan, and 36 miles from the northern lightship of *Tsu Shima* Island, I turned westwards. We soon perceived ahead of us to our right, about eight miles to the north, a Japanese squadron of armored cruisers, which was holding a parallel course with us. It consisted of four vessels of the *Iwate* type. We veered to the left, and, steaming at full speed, made a course to the north-east with the object of reaching the open sea. The enemy, who had the advantage in steaming power, turned immediately and held a parallel course, forcing me to accept battle.

STEERING GEAR BREAKS DOWN.

“The fight began at five o'clock in the morning at a distance of more than 60 cable lengths. Shortly afterwards a second-class cruiser of the *Naniwa* type was seen approaching from the southern straits to rejoin the enemy. Observing my intentions to make for the open sea towards the north-east, the cruiser shaped its course in our direction and thus prevented the execution of our manœuvre. Consequently, choosing a favorable moment, I turned sharply to the right and steamed towards the north-east, calculating that I should be able to turn northwards before I reached the Korean coast.

“This manœuvre was not noticed in time, and, as our speed had now increased to 17 knots, it seemed highly probable that we should succeed in our intention, but in less than five minutes the *Rurik* left the line and hoisted the signal ‘steering gear not working.’ I accordingly signalled to her to steer by means of her engines and to keep on in our course. Not receiving a reply to

that signal, and seeing that all the Japanese cruisers were concentrating their fire on the Rurik, all my subsequent manœuvres had the sole object of affording her an opportunity of repairing her damaged steering gear by drawing on myself the whole of the enemy's fire in order to cover the Rurik.

“At this moment we noticed two other second and third class cruisers coming up to join the enemy. The signal ‘I cannot steer’ was then hoisted in the Rurik. Manœuvring in front of her I gave her an opportunity of retiring in the direction of the Korean coast, then two miles distant. About eight o'clock the signal to make for Vladivostok was hoisted; this the Rurik repeated and held on the desired course, the wave raised at her bow indicated that she was steaming at great speed. She followed in the wake of the cruisers *Rossia* and *Gromoboi* towards the north-west, fighting all the time with the enemy, who held a parallel course at a distance of 42 cable lengths from us. The Rurik was then about four miles south-west of us.

DAMAGE DONE TO THE CRUISER.

“The fight had now lasted fully two hours. We had sustained considerable damage. In the cruiser *Rossia* three funnels were holed and three of her boilers were rendered useless. She was thus unable to keep up full steam. About half-past eight the Rurik began to lag very much behind and she again began to veer from side to side. We saw that two second class cruisers had effected a junction and were engaging her. Thereafter, she was quickly lost to sight. As Admiral Kamimura, however, was following us steadily with four armored cruisers, and was thus drawing away from the Rurik, I continued the fight on this course, luring the enemy further away to the north in the hope that the Rurik would beat off her two opponents, and, in spite of the damage she had sustained, would be able to reach Vladivostok under her own steam.

“Shortly before ten o'clock the enemy, withdrawing to about 40 cables' distance, opened the most deadly fire of the whole engagement, leading us to believe that he would afterwards come up

to attack us, but to our general astonishment his whole squadron, still firing, bore away from us, the ships turning to the right in succession and ceasing fire, after five hours desperate fighting.

"I immediately proceeded to ascertain our losses and the extent of damage we had sustained. In the *Rossia* eleven holes had been made below the waterline and six in the *Gromoboi*. The loss of officers in the two cruisers exceeded half their total number, while those of the men amounted to 25 per cent. of the entire strength.

"In view of the above-mentioned circumstances it was absolutely impossible to renew the fight by returning to the spot where we had parted from the *Rurik*, which was then 30 miles to the south. It was necessary to stop the engines, taking advantage of the calm weather, hurriedly repair the more serious breaches, and proceed to Vladivostok.

"In conclusion I consider it my duty to testify to the gallant conduct and devotion to duty displayed by the officers and men of the squadron. They behaved as if they were made of iron, knowing neither fear or fatigue. Obligated to quit their hammocks to hurry into the fight, and being unable to take food of any kind beforehand, at the end of five hours of battle they still fought with the same vigor and steadfastness as at the beginning of the action."

I consider it incumbent upon me to add to this report of the commander of the squadron that, after making a personal examination of the cruisers, all of which were damaged by the enemy's projectiles, and taking into consideration the losses we sustained, I have been able to appreciate the high degree of firmness, courage, and self-sacrifice with which the respective crews discharged their duty in this unequal battle against numerically superior forces of the enemy.

CHAPTER XXXVI.

GREAT BATTLE OF LIAU-YANG.

A Mountain Battery—Roar of Artillery—Crossing the River—Rain of Shrapnel—Desperate Encounters—Awful Loss of Life—Burning the Dead—Sufferings of the Wounded—Immense Losses on Both Sides.

FROM a special correspondent we are able to present a full and vivid account of one of the greatest and most terrible battles in modern warfare.

“On August 25 General Kuroki effected a well-concealed concentration of his three divisions with the object of attacking the Russians at Anping. The Russians occupied a front ten miles long, parallel with, and distant five miles east of, the Tang-ho, a tributary of the Tai-tse.

“At 3 A. M. on the 26th, the centre division, to which I was attached, advanced and drove in the enemy's outposts, who were taken unawares. Sanguinary sword and bayonet conflicts ensued, in which both sides suffered equally. At daylight the Russians holding the advanced positions made a firm stand, but were gradually forced back by superior numbers upon their main line. This consisted at the point of attack of a section two [? miles] long in a high range running north and south. One Japanese column contained the Russian centre, while the wing columns, climbing the slopes on either hand, closed upon the flanks, which were slowly driven in upon the Russian centre or forced to retire to the rear.

“Having occupied the ridges on the right, the Japanese established a mountain battery in a position commanding the line of retreat upon Anping. The guns were brought to bear upon the Russians retiring and their reserves, doing considerable execution until assailed by the opposing artillery. The Russian field guns outranged the Japanese mountain guns and drove the gunners to cover from time to time. Meanwhile the infantry converging on the heights held by the Russians found their advance contested

with great spirit. Two mountain batteries were brought up to support the attack. Concealed in the maize at a distance of fifteen hundred yards they speedily altered the situation by a well-directed fire of shrapnel. Simultaneously the infantry used their rifles with deadly effect, and then dashed forward. The Russians retired precipitately running the gauntlet of the guns, which handled them severely, in spite of the brisk attack of the opposing artillery. The Japanese were now in full possession of the enemy's position, but were prevented from following up their advantage by a heavy thunder storm, which deluged the troops and blotted out the landscape.

"Throughout the time a terrific cannonade was heard from the southwest, where the left division was attacking its portion of the enemy's line. At twelve o'clock the seventeen batteries believed to be engaged fought a remarkable duel, of which only the deep bubbling roar reached us. In spite of the distance and the intervening mountains the agitation of the air was so great that it affected the onlookers like the vibrations of a magnetic current. At the same time the valleys immediately around were echoing with the fierce crackling of thousands of rifles.

LOUD THUNDER OF ARTILLERY.

"As an accompaniment to the music of this titanic orchestra there sounded the low roll of distant thunder heralding the coming storm. In the afternoon hostilities all along the line were suspended and could not be resumed, as the storm lasted until darkness fell. The troops bivouacked on the ridge vacated by the enemy, and spent a miserable night fully exposed to the inclement weather. The casualties of the division during the day were six hundred and thirty-seven.

"On the morning of August 25th an impentable mist obscured the hills and valleys, making the movement of troops impossible. Until two o'clock the Japanese were inactive, except that under cover of the fog they established a field battery on a position commanding the valley leading to Anping. As the afternoon wore on, the mist rose occasionally, and the battery at long range swept the road on

which parties of the enemy were seen retiring. At five o'clock the wind caught the curtain which was hiding the landscape, and by a sudden movement tossed it aside, displaying to my gaze a scene worthy of the great wars of the last century. Between two deep rifts in the hills the front of the broad valley containing the Tang-ho could be seen.

"On the far side stood glistening thousands of white tents, and the great baggage train stretched westward into the hills. Tents were falling fast, and being piled on wagons by the feverish efforts of a host of ant-like figures. Fronting the narrow bridge was a black mass of troops and baggage, and conveying it from different valleys in front of us were long transport trains, besides columns of artillery, cavalry and infantry. The Russian forces were in full retreat.

ALL THE POMP OF WAR.

"Within sight were three divisions of troops with an enormous following of transport. With the rising of the mist our guns opened a heavy and regular fire upon the upper part of the valley before the artillery. Our division, some miles to the right, now came into action, and we could hear the roar of their guns and see the smoke of the bursting shrapnel. In the valley beyond An-ping the loud rattle of musketry also came to us, showing on the left our infantry hot on the heels of the retiring enemy. Presently, far beyond the ridge, two Russian batteries came into action. The enemy's guns were directed against the attacking infantry which threatened the bridge and the melee of troops and baggage waiting to cross.

"Mingling with the white clouds raised by our shrapnel, we could see the darker smoke of the enemy's shrapnel, but the effect of the fire was veiled by the intervening hills. The block at the bridge was somewhat relieved near nightfall by cavalry fording the river. The stream was rapid and deep, the horses were almost covered by the rushing water, and many were unable to cross. Some were swept off their feet by the current and hauled out of danger by those more strongly mounted. As we watched the

shadows were lengthening, and presently the sun sank beyond the horizon, leaving great masses of crimson clouds to veil the Russian retirement. The retreat was conducted in perfect order and evidently planned beforehand. The enemy now retired to the left bank of the Tang-ho, to seize which was the immediate object of General Kuroki's movements.

BATTERIES OF FIELD GUNS.

“On the morning of the 28th our division occupied the right bank fronting the opposite heights, which in every direction were scarred and lined by the enemy's trenches. The river between was about two hundred yards wide. From breaking over occasional boulders in the bed proved that the current was swift. The Russians had all the advantage of position if they meant to stand, and it seemed as if Japanese gallantry would be highly tested before the frowning and precipitous mountains beyond the river could be gained.

“Owing to the broken nature of the hills on the Japanese side, the employment of artillery other than single mountain guns was impossible at the main point of the attack. On the right, which was resting on Anping, three batteries of field guns were pointed, commanding the enemy's left and weaker flank. At 8 o'clock the mountain guns opened upon the enemy's trenches, looking down the ford.

“No sooner had the shrapnel begun to burst than the Russians forsook their earthworks and streamed to the rear into the hollow, where the millet stalks concealed them. Immediately behind was a high, very steep ascent, and upon this the retreating Russians soon appeared toiling upwards, their cream-colored linen coats making each man a perfect target against the green hillside. Our guns now swept the slope, which afforded absolutely no protection from the hurricane of lead, but with little effect, for although the shrapnel burst with great precision and dusted the ground all round the slow-moving figures, I only saw three drop. Considering that the men retiring numbered about a thousand, and that they took twenty minutes in gaining the refuge, it is remarkable that

our guns, shooting at a range of three thousand yards, inflicted so little damage.

“While the retreating enemy were being shelled, the Russian batteries came into action and for some time sought in vain to locate the artillery position. When this was at last discovered a brisk duel took place between the opposing guns with little apparent loss to either side. In the meantime a great number of the enemy were perceived on the higher slopes to the rear, and two companies marched boldly out into the open downward to reinforce the trenches on the left, but before gaining their position, they were assailed by our guns at Anping.

FLED IN A HURRY.

“At the first shell they turned tail and fled up the ridge on the left, a few minutes before they were followed by the occupants of the trenches. An exact repetition had already happened. The Russians streamed up the slope, making frenzied darts to avoid the rain of shrapnel, which this time, owing to the greater number of guns employed, did considerable execution, and many prostrate figures dotted the line of flight. The enemy's trenches were now systematically searched for half an hour in preparation for the infantry attack. My position was perfect for observation, being on a peak a mile distant from and commanding the river for many miles.

“On the other hand our men, in four columns, lay close to the river under cover of the millet. At 1 o'clock the attacking forces set in motion four columns, which crossed the river bed, entering the water in a storm of long-range rifle fire. The column immediately beneath was very clearly visible. The men, in extended order, dashed into the water and were soon immersed to the waist and afterwards to the shoulders.

“Holding their rifles above their heads, some were swept off their feet by the rapid current, and a few were wounded. Fortunately for the Japanese, the Russian guns did not command the crossing. In ten minutes three columns were across; the fourth, attempting to cross at an unfordable point, had to return to seek a

better place. During their half-hour of exposure, I could not see any casualties, although the water and sand around them were churned by the rain of bullets.

“On the landing, the various columns, without delay, advanced in long strings into the ravines leading to the enemy’s main line a mile beyond the river. In the meantime, at the Peking road, five miles to our left, the Russians were actively retiring from before one of our divisions. Pressing forward, batteries, regiments, and cavalry crossed the river one by one and retired towards the mountains.

“Evidently the Peking road was the line of retreat for the whole force defending the Tai-tse. This was soon proved, as the right of our division advanced almost unopposed whilst the center of the right division and the left found their way disputed by the force covering the retirement. As the immediate object of our army was accomplished in occupying the left bank of the Tai-tse, the pursuit was not pressed. Our casualties numbered sixty, showing that the Russians did not contemplate a serious defence.

A COWARDLY RETREAT.

“It is impossible, however, to refrain from remarking on the pusillanimous flight of the enemy from their advanced trenches. I heard a foreign attache say, when he saw the Russians running, that it made him ashamed for white men. Possibly the Russians did exactly as they had intended; but their selection of the positions of some of their trenches suggested that they were meant to be held, and it is difficult to understand why they constructed earthworks for 2,000 or 3,000 yards offering an exposed line of retreat, unless they deemed it necessary seriously to retard the passage of the river by the infantry.

“The result of the three days’ operations was that Kuroki effected a communication with the second and central armies marching in the neighborhood of the railway. In conjunction they were now able to make a concerted general attack on the Russian position guarding Liau-yang. The enemy had retired upon the hills skirting the plain in which Liau-yang lies, having practically evac-

uated the stronger positions afforded by the mountainous districts further south and east.

"In following the fortunes of my division I have lost touch with Kuroki's headquarters, which are thirteen miles away as the crow flies and forty miles by road, and am unable at present to obtain information as to the degree in which our movements correspond with those of the other armies. It is assumed that our successful action on the 26th was accomplished earlier than was expected and resulted in breaking the enemy's advanced line and deciding them to retire on their main positions, at the same time permitting the other Japanese armies to close up practically without fighting.

FATIGUED BY THREE DAYS FIGHTING.

"On the 29th we advanced near the banks of the Tang-ho until within touch of the hills encircling Liau-yang. Our troops, after three days of incessant movement among almost inaccessible mountains, were greatly fatigued and rest was imperative in view of the exertions before them. At night they camped within two miles of the enemy. All night the hills resounded with the roar and rattle of guns and musketry, denoting close touch on the part of strong outposts.

"On the morning of the 30th I ascended a high crag to see Liau-yang; and upon turning a prominent shoulder suddenly found stretched almost at my feet a great plain in which was being fought a battle fraught with importance for all the world. Eight miles distant, a black mass amidst the yellow, ripening crops, lay the city; beyond it lay the railway line, marked by numberless bright new warehouses gleaming in the sun. Here and there puffed pairs of engines dragging trains of prodigious length. The Tai-tse wandered over the plain, turquoise to my front and right, glistening with patches of molten silver far to the north. To the naked eye there was nothing to suggest war; for certain little white clouds coming and going amidst twinkling flashes might have been but detachments of fleecy masses floating in the blue sky; yet the air was quivering from the continuous bursting of shell and the roar

of hundreds of cannon, and two armies aggregating nigh half a million men were hid among the hills and trees and growing corn.

“Glasses revealed men crouching on every sky-line, filling the trenches that lined the slopes, marching and countermarching in and out of the fields and plain. As the eye gradually became accustomed to the distance, trains of white ambulance wagons, ammunition columns and galloping cavalry were picked out in every direction. From the yellow cornfields darted livid flames of fire that dazzled the eyes. On the plain near the city stood a lonely, hill-capped hummock, from which a heliograph sparkled like a diamond. ‘Kuropatkin’s Eye’ we christened it. Above Liau-yang floated a silken balloon slowly careening on its anchor in the fresh morning wind. Viewed from a distance the scene was fair in the extreme, in spite of scorpions lurking in the bounteous crops on the richly clad hills.

HOW THE TROOPS WERE PLACED.

“Our information was meagre. Our own army occupied the right, resting near the junction of the Tang-ho and the Tai-tse. The centre was filled with the Second Army; the Central Army lay in the plain to the left, stretching, we understood, beyond the railway. Our front was perhaps twenty miles. The long semi-circular line of the enemy lay inside at a uniform distance of two or three miles. Liau-yang was the center of the circle. The Russian guns occupied the southern slopes of ‘Kuropatkin’s Eye.’ From there fifty batteries stretched in a line toward the hills. The Russian right occupied the plane on the left of the hills.

“The number and calibre of their guns was unknown; but it was believed that they used big guns, which have a great advantage over our smaller ones. During the day I could not see a single Japanese infantryman or gun. They lay in the valleys hidden by the ridges.

“Firing began in the early morning of the 31st, and continued incessantly all day and all night.

“In the morning of September 1 the bombardment of the Russian positions was resumed with fury until the atmosphere was

obscured by the smoke of bursting shrapnel, and the ear became so accustomed to the deep booming of the cannon that only a lull attracted attention. The Russian guns occupied the same positions as on the day before, and no change could be seen from a distant view. On that day a division of the Second Army made a desperate assault on the enemy's works, but was repulsed with great slaughter; but a repetition of the attempt by a night attack was successful.

PUSHING ACROSS THE RIVER.

“Meanwhile Kuroki's army, keeping touch with the Second Army, had not been inactive. One division had remained on the other side of the Tang-ho, facing the Tai-tse. My division, on the night of the 30th, crossed the Tang-ho, while the Third Division moved east to occupy the place we vacated. During the 31st we moved eastward, pushing our right in the same direction. In the night of the 31st a bridge was built at Kwan-tun in a bend of the river out of sight of the Russian guns placed on two high hills east of the city and the river. pontoons for the purpose had been transported all the way from the Ya-lu. Both divisions then crossed the Tai-tse, my division keeping near the river and the other swinging round to the north. Kuroki was now in a position to press home a flank attack that would spell disaster to the Russians if it were successful. On the morning of September 1 our guns began the attack. Six batteries were posted facing west, while a mountain battery occupied a low hill to the north. Beyond lay the Third Division.

“During the 1st we made no advance or progress, every attempt to push home the attack failing owing to the strength of the enemy, which was estimated at five divisions. A tremendous artillery fire lasted all day, and in the night a desperate assault by the infantry resulted in the capture of a low hill to the north-east of the Russian main position and five miles from the railway. On September 2 the Japanese guns advanced all along the line and continued their attack on the Russian main position. At night the Russians made two counter-attacks, but were repulsed with great loss after almost annihilating one battalion. On September 3

it was realized that the Russian forces facing us were too strong. Kuropatkin was believed to have practically evacuated Liau-yang and to have concentrated on the west bank of the river, throwing reinforcements north-east to check Kuroki.

“Meanwhile Kuropatkin holds our forces pressing north-east, and has Kuroki in a dangerous place should he initiate a strong counter-movement. The Japanese troops are greatly fatigued, but are fighting with great spirit. Those occupying the trenches in front have eaten nothing but uncooked rice for two days owing to the impossibility of lighting fires. Telegraphic communications with grand headquarters are interrupted, and exact knowledge of the positions of the other armies is lacking. Liau-yang has not been occupied so far, but it lies at the mercy of the Japanese. It is impossible to predict, but it appears as if Kuropatkin will get clear away with losses which will be trifling in comparison with the disaster which would have befallen him if the Japanese flanking movement had succeeded.

HAMPERED BY MOUNTAINOUS COUNTRY.

“Granting that the Russian forces have been unable to cope with the Japanese strength, it still appears likely that Kuropatkin will effect a masterly retreat. The Japanese have been greatly hampered in their operations by the mountainous country, but in following up the enemy hereafter that difficulty will disappear. The fall of Port Arthur, from which there is no news, now appears to be necessary to ensure success to the Japanese, who, perhaps, have tried to do too much. If the Russians succeed in getting away, the whole war will be placed on a different footing, and, while the balance is still in favor of the Japanese, there is now an opportunity for the Russians to retrieve a position in which a few days before a collapse appeared imminent.

“The Japanese object was to hold the Russians in front while General Kuroki made an unexpected attack on their left flank and cut off their retreat to the railway. This movement failed owing to the tactics of General Kuropatkin, who trusted that half of his army of twelve divisions would be strong enough to hold the Japa-

nese south of the Tai-tse while the other half protected his left flank and the all-important railway. The force at Liau-yang was so strongly posted and possessed so secure a line of retreat over the river that the soundness of the course adopted must appeal to tacticians. In any case, it upset the Japanese calculations, for they counted on a comparatively feeble resistance to their flanking movement.

RUSSIANS EVADING PITCHED BATTLE.

“There are indications to show that while the Russians contemplated a determined effort at a check they feared throwing down the gauntlet and fighting a pitched battle. They had very small reserve supplies at Liau-yang, trusting to the railway to furnish them with rations from day to day. The proof thereof is that they left practically nothing for the Japanese, who captured sufficient to supply their army for one day. The stores which were burnt appear to have been set on fire by the Japanese shells, which were systematically directed at the railway and warehouses. No men or guns were captured; in fact, the Russians got clean away after inflicting 20,000 losses on the Japanese, while suffering probably a smaller number themselves. After their retirement from the low eminence, four hundred yards by fifty yards, forming the key to their main position, the east bank presented a scene of carnage unparalleled in European warfare. The Japanese shelled this point all day, using seven batteries, and the right of the eminence was captured with a loss of 1,000 men. Thereupon the enemy shelled it for two days and made four night attacks.

“The last of these was peculiarly desperate, the whole of the first line of two hundred men falling in their ranks as if struck down on parade. For days the wounded on both sides lay in the open to die, succor being impossible within the zone of crossfire. The dead on the eminence were burned, but the slopes around were dotted with corpses swollen and rotting. Wire entanglements obstructed the Japanese attack, and the hand grenades used by the Russians proved very destructive at close quarters. A remarkable feature of the fighting on the flank was that before it was rein-

forced the third Japanese division, with two weak divisions, occupied a line of six miles, showing that experience had proved to them the value of thin lines as compared with the heavy Continental formations. The Russians, while throwing small bodies at the eminence with great determination, made no serious attempt to break Kuroki's line. Their lack of dash indicates that they refrained from any important movement which might jeopardize their retirement.

A war correspondent writes concerning this great battle as follows, furnishing an additional account of the horrid slaughter :

"The following figures show the number of men engaged on each side in the battle of Liau-yang, and the number engaged in six other great battles of history.

LIAU-YANG.		Total.
Russians, 170,000 ; Japanese, 230,000		400,000
AUSTERLITZ, DECEMBER, 2, 1805.		
Allies, 84,000 ; French, 70,000		150,000
SMOLENSK, AUGUST 17, 1812.		
French, 175,000 ; Russians, 120,000		295,000
LEIPZIG, OCTOBER 16-19, 1813.		
French, 130,000 ; Allies, 200,000		330,000
WATERLOO, JUNE 18, 1815.		
French, 124,588 ; Allies, 214,671		339,259
ANTIETAM, SEPTEMBER 16-17, 1862.		
Federals, 75,000 ; Confederates, 45,000		120,000
GETTYSBURG, JULY 1-3, 1863.		
Federals, 82,000 ; Confederates, 73,000		155,000

"Four hundred thousand Russians and Japanese fought the greatest battle of the war on the plains in front of Liau-yang. In point of numbers it was the greatest battle ever fought in the history of the wars of the world.

"At dawn an artillery duel began, which continued for nearly six hours. Twelve hundred Japanese guns in the hills surrounding the plains sent a rain of shot and shell upon the enemy, and the latter replied with seven hundred pieces of artillery. About

ten o'clock in the morning the Japanese infantry began to advance upon the Russian position, and from then until darkness fell the battle continued with great fury and with a long list of killed and wounded on both sides. An effort on the part of the Japanese to turn the Russian right flank was prevented by a brilliant cavalry charge, the Cossacks repulsing the flanking force.

“As the first gray streaks of dawn lighted the eastern horizon the deep booming of the cannon signaled the momentous news that the almost superhuman struggle between the Russian and Japanese armies for possession of Manchuria had begun. As the dawn grew into daylight the roar of the big guns increased until individual detonations were no longer distinguishable; and throughout the day it rolled and swelled in volume as the heaviest reports of nearby thunder. The steady roar of this artillery fire was penetrated now and then by the sharp explosion of shells, while under it all cracked the report of small-arm firing.

MAGNIFICENT SPECTACLE.

“The result was awe-inspiring. At night, from the housetops in Liau-yang, the spectacle was one of unparalleled magnificence. The crest of the line of crescent-shaped hills that sweep about the city were held by the Japanese armies. The rattle of musketry firing ceased, but the heavens were illuminated by the shaft-like flashes of fire that spurted from the mouths of twelve hundred cannon the Japanese mounted upon these hills.

“These twelve hundred cannon were showering shell and shrapnel upon the great Russian host, spread out over the plain as a blanket, with the frequency of hailstones; and through the spectre-like night the rushing of this deluge of death-dealing instruments sent a gruesome, terrifying vibration. From the plain the Russian artillery was bombarding the Japanese positions. There were no campfires within either lines, yet the glow of a great radiance spread over the scene—the flame of artillery dissipating the sombre hue of the hour. From the housetops the scene was like an inferno surrounded by a great circle of flame.

“Upon the hill and plain were assembled the largest bodies of

warring men that were ever assembled since precise history began to be written. In the Japanese lines were full 230,000 men with 1200 cannon. Opposing this monster army were 170,000 soldiers and something like 700 guns, commanded by General Kuropatkin.

“Four hundred thousand men, each striving to the limit of his abilities to deal death to a fellow-being; each ready to sacrifice himself upon the altar of his country’s cause; all imbued with the most fanatical spirit of war—the Japanese brave to the point of an uncontrollable frenzy; the Russian more stolid and less emotional, but grim and determined.

“About this field, by the side of which all other battlefields must pale into insignificance when compared upon the basis of the number of men and guns engaged, men were falling by the thousands, and the fertile soil of hill and plain was being made sodden by the stream of human blood that flowed in ever-increasing volume.

NAPOLEON’S INVASION OF RUSSIA.

“When Napoleon invaded Russia he had 450,000 men in his first armies and called up his reserves of 150,000 men. Against this mighty force the Russians pitted an army of 300,000; but at no time were these large forces engaged. Smolensk, Napoleon’s first big battle on Russian soil, saw 175,000 Frenchmen and 120,000 Russians in deadly turmoil. In the Civil War in the United States Grant used more than 100,000 men in the Peninsula campaign; but to Liau-yang belongs the distinction, among all the wars of modern times, of nearly half a million men striving like demons in war’s deadly endeavors.

“This herculean struggle of death, which is impoverishing two nations of its soldiers, began at four o’clock in the morning. At that hour cannon boomed forth on the Russian south front, and a few minutes later, almost as though it were a reverberation, the storm of cannonading burst over the eastern lines.

“For hours thereafter there was witnessed the most magnificent artillery duel in all the world’s history. From their points of vantage on the hills the Japanese worked their guns with frenzied effort. Over the plain, literally deluging the Russians, fell a

shower of shrapnel, the terror of soldiers the world over. The Russian response to this fire was steady and accurate. The answer was with explosive shells, that puffed little volumes of white smoke into the green foliage of the mountain sides as they hunted out the Japanese positions and exploded.

“The work of the Japanese gunners was systematic. The vast plain over which the Russian army was spread seemed to have been plotted in squares by the enemy’s engineers. Square by square the Japanese guns searched the whole plain. Square after square became the aim of these deadly accurate guns, and upon each square in turn they massed their fire, scores of guns pouring into each one a stream of shot and shell. Thus working the whole field, they covered the range of the Russian position, from right to left, with mathematical precision.

LONG LINES OF WOUNDED RUSSIANS.

“For four hours this cannonade endured, its fury never abating during all that time. Its effect was soon reflected in a steady procession of wounded Russians. In less than an hour after it began the litter-bearers, ambulances, transport wagons and every sort of vehicle that could be impressed into service began arriving at the gates of the city.

“Maimed and bleeding men were crowded into these conveyances, which rolled through the town toward the railroad station all day long, and which were still rolling as the night wore on. Trainload after trainload of wounded and dying were dispatched northward to Mukden and Harbin, and over the battlefield burial parties were working at night by the aid of glimmering torches.

“While the radiant sun of day streamed down upon Manchuria, the scene before Liau-yang, from the ancient walls of the city to the crest of the hills, was one of death and desolation in quantity impossible to estimate or describe. That thousands had fallen on either side was known. Time alone can make the accurate account of the harvest of souls which had marked this day, made appalling by the deafening roar of heavy guns and the demoniacal cackle of 300,000 muskets.

“After the four hours of uninterrupted cannonade there was a brief lull, portentous of more awful hours to follow. Nor were they long in their delay. About ten o'clock, after an hour of desultory artillery fire, the Japanese infantry swept out of its coverts, and in open order moved forward across the plain.

“The moment the enemy came within range the Russian infantry opened its musketry fire. Volley after volley followed; but with that frenzied enthusiasm which has marked every detail of their campaigning, the Japanese swept on. Russian shot and shell opened great gaps in the advancing lines of the enemy, but for every man that threw up his hands and gave up his fight there seemed to be two to take his place. The main Japanese attack was directed against the Russian center and right, lying south and southeast of Liau-yang, and there the fighting was most desperate and disastrous.

HURRICANE OF SHRAPNEL.

“Covering the Japanese advance, the artillery poured an unfailling stream of shrapnel into the Russian ranks, this fire continuing until the lines came so close together that it could no longer be protracted. This was for a brief period only, for the Japanese rushed forward with such impetuosity that by a few minutes after ten o'clock the two lines were in touch, and hand-to-hand conflicts were in progress at many points.

“From many of the eminences of minor degree within the Russian lines magnificent spectacles of the battlefield were obtainable. In the immediate front, behind their shelter trenches, crouched the Russian infantrymen. A little farther on were the Japanese, advancing by spurts, rising to fire their volleys, and then dropping among the corn, maize and grass that covered the plain, to escape the return fire. Among the Japanese forces the officers stood erect, brandishing their swords and urging their men to renewed efforts. Back of the shelter trenches Russian officers were at the same work of encouragement.

“In the rear of the Russian lines couriers dashed hither and yon on foam-flecked horses, and in front of the marching and coun-

termarching bodies of reserves and reinforcements for hard-pressed points the Russian artillery belched its fire into the Japanese lines and against the Japanese artillery positions, the guns of the latter being silenced of necessity, except as they could fire over the heads of their troops into the remote Russian lines.

“Off on the extreme right flank, in the early hours of the battle, the Russian cavalry justified its fame. It was this cavalry that prevented the turning of the Russian right flank on Sunday. In the early hours of the day’s fighting a portion of General Fukushima’s army from the southwest moved against the Russian right flank and threatened it most dangerously.

FIERCE CAVALRY CHARGES.

“To repulse this advance the Russian cavalry was ordered out, the order affording it its first opportunity of all the war to fight on open ground. Facing this cavalry as it started to the attack were fields of Chinese corn, the stalks towering even above the heads of the mounted men. But these fields only slightly impeded the movement.

“With drawn sabres and tightly clutched carbines the thousands of horsemen hurled themselves against the enemy, their cries as they charged being drowned under the roar of their horses’ hoofs. Like a destroying force they fell upon the Japanese force, riding as demons into the enemy’s ranks, firing right and left, cutting and slashing with sabres, and trampling under the feet of their frenzied horses the fallen foe.

“The engagement was short, sharp and decisive; brilliant in its individual qualities, and superb in its general effect, the flanking movement being entirely defeated, and the security of that portion of the Russian line being insured. Another detachment, while the main cavalry battle raged, fell upon a force of one hundred and fifty Chinese bandits that had sneaked well to the westward of Liau-yang and started on a marauding expedition. Of this force of bandits fifty were slaughtered at the sabre’s point and the others were made prisoners.

“As the day waned the battle grew in intensity. All along

the Russian lines the Emperor's armies had held their own through the day, but the proximity of a heavy Russian force to Liau-yang at night indicated that a general northward movement might be attempted. At 7 o'clock in the morning the fighting was most desperate on the south front. There the hills, in the gloam of the evening, resembled fire-emitting mountains, and the Japanese advance had been pressed with such vigor that it had reached the point of the bayonet.

"The Twenty-third Regiment, in one especially spectacular encounter, repelled the Japanese in a hand-to-hand conflict, in which the bayonet and the butt of muskets alone were used, and the Wyborg Regiment, of which Emperor William of Germany is honorary colonel, deployed upon the battlefield to engage in hand-to-hand encounter with an advancing force of Japanese in open order, repelling them in the combat which ensued.

EVERY MAN AT HIS GUN.

"The fighting on the east front, while violent, was not such as to indicate that General Kuroki's entire force was engaged. Within the Russian lines it was believed that he was waiting to strike with all his strength until an impression should have been made against the Russian right and center, where the day's battling had been more desperate. The morale of the Russian troops at night was most excellent. Every man was by his gun, serving it with full determination and a confidence increased by the success of the day in repelling the Japanese advance.

"Valiant to the highest degrees of heroism, the Japanese celebrated the day named by the Mikado for observance of his birthday anniversary with rivers of bloodshed, ton upon ton of projectiles hurled into the Russian lines, deeds of valor that have won highest praise from the Russian defenders, and such a display of explosive force as the world has seldom seen, but their distinct achievements were limited.

"Just before dark a second attempt was made to turn the Russian right flank. Company after company of the Japanese troops rushed rapidly to the westward under protection of heavy firing

from their batteries, but a Russian force was thrown forward to block this attempt. Supported by a battery, the Russians succeeded in forcing the Japanese to evacuate the positions of advantage they had occupied."

A dispatch, dated St. Petersburg, September 4, gives the result of this appalling battle, and is as follows:

"All Russia will learn by the morning newspapers that General Kuropatkin's army is in full retreat to the northward, that Liau-yang has been abandoned and that General Stakelberg's corps is surrounded and cut off.

"The hopes of victory raised in Russian breasts by the telegram from the commander-in-chief, saying that the Russians had advanced against General Kuroki, was short-lived. General Kuropatkin had scarcely begun the offensive against General Kuroki's army when he was compelled by the overwhelming force of the Japanese flanking movement to give up all idea of continuing his advance, and hurriedly withdrew in the direction of Mukden.

DEFEAT FOR THE RUSSIANS.

"The engagement at Yenta, according to General Sakharoff's report, received late at night, was a severe defeat for the Russians. On September 2, the Russian loss was three thousand. What loss was sustained in the more desperate fighting of the following day has not been ascertained.

"The battle of Liau-yang, which began with a Japanese advance on August 24, the day of the christening of the Czarevitch, and concluded September 3, with the retreat of General Kuropatkin, is believed to have been the longest and the bloodiest of history. Numerous incidents in the fighting upset the theory evolved by experience in the Boer war that a modern battle must necessarily be fought at long range.

"Both sides repeatedly came to hand-to-hand encounters in bayonet charges, and the men of each side were often so near each other that they could distinguish features and hear words of command. In one instance they were separated only by the width of the railway, and actually threw stones at each other. The mad

heroism of the Japanese and the stubborn tenacity of the Russians has not been paralleled anywhere save in some of the desperate encounters of civil war.

“According to a report to General Sakharoff the Russian losses for August 31 to September 1, were seven thousand, and he estimated the Japanese loss at double or treble that number. Assuming that the Japanese lost from 35,000 to 45,000 in the entire battle, combined casualties might easily reach from 75,000 to 85,000 in killed, wounded and captured.

FAILED TO CROSS THE RIVER.

“The retreat was the logical consequence of the Russian plan of leading on and tiring out the Japanese, thus placing their foe at the constantly growing disadvantage of lengthened lines of communication. The success of this plan was marred by a blunder of General Stakelberg, who, in the words of General Kuropatkin, insisted on placing his own interpretation on orders instead of fulfilling them. General Stakelberg erred in failing to cross the Tai-tse river when General Kuropatkin decided that the whole army should retreat to the northern bank.

“This blunder, it was feared, would involve the loss of the whole of the First Siberian Army Corps, consisting of the First, Second and Sixth Rifle Divisions, the Ussuri Cossack Brigade, the First Siberian Artillery Brigade and a sapper battalion. The abandonment of the whole position at Liau-yang involved the loss of a great accumulation of stores, though it was believed that many of these had been sent north.

“The pall of such a disaster as was never dreamed could befall her arms hung over the nation at night, and out of the East there came no word except of catastrophe piling upon catastrophe until it seemed that there was no hope for the future of Russia in Manchuria, and even in Eastern Siberia.

“General Kuropatkin's mighty army, the most superb organization Russia, in all her wars, ever put into the field, was utterly routed by the Japanese armies under command of Field Marshal Marquis Oyama, and was fleeing in confusion toward Mukden.

“So complete was the disaster that the officials of the War Office admitted the next news received might show that the great Muscovite commander had been surrounded, cut off, and must either surrender his entire force to the Japanese upon their own terms or submit to annihilation.

“A remnant of General Stakelberg’s splendid corps of 60,000 men, reduced by the almost incessant fighting in which it had been engaged for a month, until it now numbered only 25,000 men, had been cut off entirely from the main body of Kuropatin’s army, was surrounded south of the Tait-se river, and at the mercy of the Japanese forces.

TOWN UTTERLY ABANDONED.

“Liau-yang the magnificent base of operations, with its immense fortifications and great quantities of ammunition, stores and equipment, was abandoned entirely by General Kuropatkin, and was now in the hands of Field Marshal Oyama. Previous to abandoning that base General Kuropatkin blew up the magazines and set fire to the acres of accumulated stores. The devastation wrought by these agencies was complete, and Liau-yang was now little better than a ruin.

“This condition of complete disaster, following the longest battle in the history of the world, and the one in which the largest number of men have been engaged, spread consternation everywhere in Russia. The officials were almost too stunned to comment upon the situation, and the gloom that pervaded the places and the War Office lay like an enveloping shadow upon the crowds gathered in the streets.

“In an official dispatch detailing the disaster that had overtaken him, General Kuropatkin laid the blame upon General Stakelberg, whom he accused of having placed his own interpretation upon orders sent him. Among the unprejudiced this attempt by the commander-in-chief to shift the blame was regarded with no more importance than a plea in extenuation..”

CHAPTER XXXVII.

DESPERATE FIGHTING AROUND MUKDEN.

An Open Plain—Villages Around Mukden—Rich in Historic Interest—Armies Getting Ready for a More Bloody Conflict—The Crucial Moment—Report from Kuropatkin—Accounts of Fierce Fighting—More than 400,000 Men Engaged—Death Struggle for Mastery—Varying Fortunes of Battle—Success of the Japanese.

FROM Liau-yang to Mukden in a direct line the distance is about forty miles. The backbone ridge of Manchuria, which divides the Liau from the Yalu Valley, withdraws somewhat to the east, leaving a wide, open plain between the two cities. This plain stretches down to the main valley of the Liau river. It is furrowed by a number of wide, shallow rivers, which are really mountain torrents, liable to sudden floods.

Immediately north of the wall of Liau-yang comes the Tai-tse river, which is divided into two broad streams by a long sand bank. There were originally pile bridges over these streams, built by the Chinese. They are now supplemented by the railroad bridges, a little to the west of the town. Once across the Tai-tse there are three roads across the plain to Mukden, that in the centre being nearly straight, while the two others straggle from one village to another, for the plain is densely inhabited and splendidly irrigated and cultivated. Unlike a Chinese landscape, it is abundantly supplied with trees, which grow in groves all over the plain, marking the villages, farms and tombs, which are generally cones of clay.

The hills, heavily wooded, gradually recede on the right. The plain stretches away to the horizon on the left. Presently, some eight miles from Liau-yang, and therefore twenty miles south of Mukden, the considerable village of Hsiao-yan-tai, or Yen-tai, as it is often called, is reached.

North of this is a further expanse of plain, with smaller villages, farms, trees and more mountain torrents—more stretches of sand in the dry season, formidable rivers in the rains. The whole plain is liable to be turned into a wilderness of mud, and the Chinese roads are only deeper tracks of mud through this wilderness.

Thirteen miles north of Yen-tai, twenty-one miles north of Liau-yang, is another considerable village or small town, called Pai-ta-pu, which is marked by a lofty pagoda visible for miles across the flat country. Four miles further, or twenty-five miles from Liau-yang, is the Hwun or Hun river, with a wide, pebbly bed, just such a mountain torrent as the Tai-tse and, like it, finding its way westward over the plain into the Liau river. The streams are the main channels of Chinese commerce, which is carried in small boats in the season of high water, for many of them run dry or are frozen for several months each year, as Manchuria has extremely cold winters.

CHIEF ARTICLES OF CHINESE COMMERCE.

The chief articles of Chinese commerce are beans, peas, hemp, millet, pears, plums, peaches and pigs. They are largely exported through Niu-Chwang, hence the importance of possessing that port, since the authorities there can hold up the innumerable Chinese boats of produce and make them pay toll. This is the prose meaning of "being in possession of the custom houses at Niu-Chwang."

Two miles beyond the Hwun or Hun river stands the southern pagoda of Mukden, marking the point where the imperial road meets the first house of the city. Then comes the suburbs and finally Mukden itself. Like all cities in China Mukden is four-square, and, again like all Chinese cities and even all Chinese houses, the walls face the four points of the compass and there is a main gate at the center of each wall. Mukden is formed of three concentric squares.

The outermost, whose sides measure about three miles, is surrounded by a mud wall and contains the suburbs, a congeries of farms and market gardens crowded so closely together as to form something like a town.

The second square has sides about half a mile long, with walls of stone, like the great walls of Peking and like them crenelated at the top. These stone walls enclose the city proper as opposed to the suburbs.

The third square, in the center of the city proper, contains the Manchu Palace and is the analogue of the Forbidden City of Peking. This is only one of the many metropolitan notes of the royal Manchu city, which stands out from among the general monotony of the walled towns of China.

MUKDEN A MODERN CITY.

Mukden is not an ancient city. On the contrary, it is younger than New York, younger even than Albany, and was founded only in 1625, a few years before the Manchus began the conquest of the Chinese Empire. Nevertheless it is rich in historic interest, and shows a blending of three architectural styles, all of high scenic value. There are the Chinese triumphal arches or pailows, leading up to the gates and broad avenues of the city; there are the Chinese yamens, or government offices, some of them with roofs of green glazed tiles; there is the Manchu palace in the center, covered with yellow imperial tiles, as in the Forbidden City of Peking.

There are also the Mongolian or Thibetan monasteries and lamaseras, with their bottled shaped belfries and their swarms of outlandish looking monks from Gobi and Shamo and the wilds of the Roof of the World.

Mukden is as interesting as Liau-yang is commonplace. It has a population of a quarter of a million, mostly Chinese, but with a genuine nucleus of Manchu Tartars, who form the military aristocracy. The truth is that it is hard to find a Manchu in Manchuria; they emigrated almost in a body to China at the conquest of 1644, when the last of the conquered Mings hanged himself on an acacia tree in his back garden. The Manchus now form the military garrison in nearly every walled town in China, and are, of course, the ruling dynasty at Peking.

Across this rich and beautiful plain, which stretches for

twenty-five miles from Liau-yang to Mukden, two great armies, numbering nearly a half million, fought their way. The farms wear another aspect.

The battle of Liau-yang, which began with a Japanese advance on August 24th, the day of the christening of the Tsarevitch, and ended with the retreat of General Kuropatkin, is believed to have been the longest and bloodiest of history. Numerous incidents in the fighting upset the theory evolved by experiences in the Boer war that a modern battle must necessarily be fought at long range.

Both sides repeatedly came to hand-to-hand encounters in bayonet charges, and the men of both sides were so often near each other that they could distinguish features and hear words of command. In one instance they were separated only by the width of the railroad, and actually threw stones at each other. The mad heroism of the Japanese and the stubborn tenacity of the Russians have not been paralleled anywhere save in some of the desperate encounters of our civil war.

REPEATED BAYONET ATTACKS.

Correspondents state that several of the bayonet attacks made by the Japanese throughout the battle were forced by the depletion of ammunition, of which modern arms entail such extravagant expenditure.

The Japanese came on with empty guns and with hopes of finishing the attack with cold steel, but it was proved at their own cost that such attacks cannot be driven home in the face of the fire of breech-loading guns.

The Russian artillerymen suffered terribly in the prolonged fighting south of the Tai-tse river. One battery lost forty men killed, and the remainder of it were wounded, and when a fresh battery was brought up into position the survivors protested with tears at being removed, begging to be allowed to die beside their own guns.

The work of the Red Cross, which throughout the war was most devoted on both sides, proved almost as dangerous to nurses

and doctors as the work of the combatants. Many bearers and their assistants were killed or wounded in attending to injured under fire. A Sister of Mercy was killed and a surgeon wounded in the final assaults on Liau-yang.

Telegraph operators and correspondents also suffered severely. Two correspondents of the Associated Press were shot, and one was decorated for bravery.

During the ten days' fighting the condition of the soldiers of both armies was pitiable. Many of the Japanese prisoners were starving and almost naked when captured, which speaks volumes for Japanese endurance. It is wonderful that the commissary arrangement made it possible to continue to supply the men during a continuous battle. The Russians were better fed, being nearer their own base, but the terrible strain of the continuous fighting caused some of them to fall asleep in the midst of the cannonade and even on the firing line.

EFFECT OF THE RUSSIAN REVERSE.

The Russian reverse at Liau-yang, evidently more than any other event, brought to that government a full realization of the tremendous effort necessary if it was to be a victor in this war. This was evidenced by the Imperial rescript issued September 25th, addressed to General Gripenberg, appointing him to the command of a second Manchurian army to be forwarded as speedily as possible. In this letter the Czar paid due honor to the enemy by saying: "The intense energy with which Japan is conducting the war, and the stubbornness and high warlike qualities displayed by the Japanese, impel me considerably to strengthen the forces at the front in order to attain decisive success in the shortest possible time."

General Kuropatkin was not to be disturbed in his command under this order, he and Gripenberg being placed on an equality under the commander-in-chief. General Gripenberg was in command of the Third Army Corps at Vilna. The Czar's proclamation gave notice to the world that Russia had no intention of withdrawing from the contest, or of accepting intervention or media-

tion, but that she intended to prosecute the war even more vigorously. Troops were being sent into Manchuria as rapidly as the railroads could carry them, but 25,000 per month was an extreme limit, so that it would take until April to forward 150,000 men.

After the great battle of Liao-yang it was expected that there would be a long period of quiet while both armies were recovering from their exertions and severe losses. Correspondents predicted that a month, at least, would elapse before any fighting of account would occur. But within a week after Kuropatkin had safely reached Mukden, three days of which had been occupied by the Japanese in burying and burning their dead, reports of activity on their part were sent out, and a general advance on the Russian lines around Mukden rumored.

MOVEMENTS OF THE JAPANESE ARMY.

The principal movement was apparently to the southeast of Mukden, from where an advance upon the Russian flank was evidently contemplated. A strong garrison was left in the fortifications at Liao-yang, which faced north as well as south. Intrenchments were thrown up at the Yen-tai mines, and a strong position taken at Bentsiputze, twenty miles southeast of Mukden. From September 15th to the end of the month there was a general encircling movement of the Japanese, their western flank being extended and a force being thrown across to the west bank of the Hun river. On the 30th, there was a simultaneous movement towards Mukden and Sinmintu. In the meantime, there had been numerous slight encounters. The Cossacks had done exceedingly good work in keeping in touch with the enemy's outposts, and in some cases had been successful in interfering with their plans.

On Sunday, October 2d, General Kuropatkin issued an address announcing a forward movement. He read this personally from the steps of his train at Mukden, after a solemn religious service, and it was distributed in printed form among the troops, creating excitement and enthusiasm. It was variously rumored that the advance was ordered by the Czar, and again that Kuropatkin took the step upon his own initiative. Reinforcements had been re-

ceived, and in point of numbers available, his were equal if not slightly superior to the Japanese. Russian forces were believed to aggregate 270,000, and the Japanese about 260,000, only 150,000, however, of whom were north of the Tai-tse river, the balance being at or near Liau-yang.

In order to a clear understanding of the situation, it may be stated that on October 7th the Japanese had ten divisions confronting the Russians north of the Tai-tse river. Their left flank, consisting of two divisions, was on the railway at Sanditpu, thirty miles south-west of Mukden, and close to the Hun river. Their center, comprised of four divisions, occupied the railway between Liau-yang and Chandiapudzi, twelve miles north. Two more divisions occupied the extreme Japanese right along the road between Bentsiaputze and Bensihu. Their front extended about fifty-two miles.

THE KEY OF THE POSITION.

The position at Bentsiaputze was strongly fortified, and expected to withstand attack. General Kuroki was there in person. The Japanese had omitted to fortify one hill, which was the key to the position. The Russians, aware of this omission, made a wide detour eastward, and seized the hill with little opposition. The hill, once occupied, exposed the whole Japanese position to a heavy flanking fire. The Russians also turned the Japanese right, and the fortified positions thus becoming untenable the Japanese were forced to withdraw hurriedly from Bentsiaputze, fighting a rear-guard action, in which they suffered heavily. The Russian losses were small, although severe opposition had been expected.

The Russian southern advance began on October 4th with the occupation of Shakhe, a railway station. The next day the station, which had been dismantled by the Japanese, was repaired by a railway brigade following immediately behind the fighting line, and the same brigade also restored the bridge across the Shakhe river. On October 6th General Mistchenko almost to the Yental mines, driving in the Japanese outposts with heavy loss at the expense of only one killed and five injured.

The Russian forward movement being made in the heaviest marching order, one saw everywhere whole companies of which every man carried a large knapsack on his back, a rifle on his shoulder, and a large kettle or teapot slung to his waist, while hanging from the belt was the cartridge case in front and a big wooden water bottle and an axe, pickaxe or spade on either side. Altogether with overcoats the equipment weighed one hundred pounds. The soldiers moved steadily and cheerfully, though the column looked more like a pack train than an army. First aid stations of the Red Cross were being organized, and the nurses were working untiringly everywhere. Doctors and Sisters of Charity were going to the front in Chinese carts at the rate of two miles an hour over heavy roads, but were cheerful and devoted as ever, in spite of the imminent prospect of more of the difficult and dangerous work under fire which won them the undying gratitude of the army at Liau-yang.

RUSSIAN GENERAL'S ORDER TO ADVANCE.

Lieutenant General Fushimi, with two divisions, was moving to flank the Russians. His force was already on the Liau river, within twenty-two miles of Sinmintin. A simultaneous movement, it was understood, was being carried out by General Kuroki to the eastward, with the object of striking the railway and flanking the Russians out of Mukden, as was done at Liau-yang; but the conditions were rather different.

General Kuropatkin's order to advance, which was read to the troops after a church service October 2d, evoked wild enthusiasm. Officers and soldiers were packed around General Kuropatkin's train, the steps of which were used for a pulpit, from which Father Golubeff preached to a multitude that stretched farther than his voice could carry. Father Golubeff uttered a fervent prayer for victory, and raising a cross aloft and turning to the General, said :

“The ancients commanded their sons to return with shield or on it. I say to you, Go forward with the Cross, trusting in Christ.” His words were received in solemn expectancy by the men, who did not yet know a forward movement had been determined upon,

though there had been a period of preparation that had aroused strong hopes.

The crucial moment came after the service. The St. George's Cross was distributed. Ussuri Cossacks and the men greeted the names of Skobeloff and Adziuff, the great heroes, with loud cheering. Then came the march past the new wearers of the St. George's Cross. Kuropatkin, who meanwhile was standing behind the newly decorated men, smiled grimly, and, stepping to the front, read personally the announcement of a forward movement. This was received with deafening cheers as far as it was heard and understood; but, quicker than printed copies of the order could circulate, the news ran from camp to camp and from bivouac to bivouac, the men acting like schoolboys on vacation when they learned what was in the wind.

DEPARTURE OF TROOPS FROM MUKDEN.

It was true that the army was now fit to measure itself with its Japanese foes. Kuropatkin had gathered up reinforcements and welded an incomplete army into a compact whole, and was ready to advance against what was a brave and clever enemy.

Viceroy Alexieff arrived from Harbin October 6th to say farewell to General Kuropatkin, in view of the latter's departure for the front and Viceroy Alexieff's probable return to Russia.

The troops left Mukden the afternoon of the same day, amid the cheers of the soldiers, for the purpose of overtaking the regiments on their way to the front. The men were thoroughly rested and equipped, and there was no trace of the fatigue shown at Liau-yang.

Regiments were arriving from Russia in fine condition. The men were in better spirits the nearer they got to the front. "Now is our turn!" was heard everywhere in the ranks. The veteran who fought with Skobeloff was left at Mukden in fine trim. The gray-haired old Turkestan fighter seemed to have grown quite young.

Following is the text of an order of the day, already referred to, issued by General Kuropatkin, and dated Mukden, October 2d:

“More than seven months ago the enemy treacherously fell upon us at Port Arthur before war had been declared. Since then, by land and sea, the Russian troops have performed many heroic deeds, of which the Fatherland may justly be proud. The enemy, however, is not only not overthrown, but in his arrogance continues to dream of complete victory.

“The troops of the Manchurian army, in unvarying good spirits, hitherto have not been numerically strong enough to defeat the Japanese army. Much time is necessary for overcoming all the difficulties of strengthening the active army so as to enable it to accomplish with complete success the arduous but honorable task imposed upon it. It is for this reason that, in spite of the repeated repulse of the Japanese attacks on our positions at Tatchekiao, Liandiansian and Liau-yang, I did not consider that the time had arrived to take advantage of these successes and to begin a forward movement, and I therefore gave the order to retreat.

PRAISE FOR THE RUSSIAN ARMY.

“You left the positions you had so heroically defended, covered with piles of the enemy's dead, and without allowing yourselves to be disturbed by the foe and in full preparedness for a fresh fight. After a five days' battle at Liau-yang you retired on new positions which had been prepared previously. After successfully defending all advanced and main positions, you withdrew to Mukden under most difficult conditions.

“Attacked by General Kuroki's army, you marched through almost impassable mud, fighting throughout the day and extricating guns and carts with your hands at night and returned to Mukden without abandoning a single gun, prisoner or wounded man, and with the baggage train entirely intact.

“I ordered the retreat with a sorrowful heart, but with unshaken confidence that it was necessary in order to gain complete and decisive victory over the enemy when the time came.

“The Emperor has assigned for the conflict with Japan forces sufficient to assure us victory. All difficulties in transporting these forces over a distance of ten thousand versts are being over

come in a spirit of self-sacrifice and with indomitable energy and skill by Russian men of every branch and rank of the service and every social position to whom has been entrusted this work, which for difficulty is unprecedented in the history of warfare.

“In the course of seven months hundreds of thousands of men and tens of thousands of horses and carts and millions of pounds of stores have been coming uninterruptedly by rail from European Russia and Siberia to Manchuria.

“If the regiments which already have been sent out prove insufficient, fresh troops will arrive, for the inflexible will of the Emperor that we should vanquish the foe will be inflexibly fulfilled.

A STRONG AND GALLANT FOE.

“Heretofore the enemy, in operating, has relied on his great forces, and, disposing his armies so as to surround us, has chosen as he deemed fit his time for attack; but now the moment to go to meet the enemy, for which the whole army has been longing, has come, and the time has arrived for us to compel the Japanese to do our will, for the forces of the Manchurian army are strong enough to begin a forward movement. Nevertheless, you must be unceasingly mindful of the victory to be gained over our strong and gallant foe.

“In addition to numerical strength in all commands, from the lowest to the highest, the firm determination must be to prevail, to gain victory. Whatever be the sacrifice necessary to this end, bear in mind the importance of victory to Russia; and, above all, remember how necessary victory is—the more speedily to relieve our brothers at Port Arthur, who for seven months have heroically maintained the defense of the fortress entrusted to their care.

“Our army, strong in its union with the Emperor and all Russia, performed great deeds of heroism for the Fatherland in all wars and gained for itself well-merited renown among all nations. Think at every hour of the defense of Russia's dignity and rights in the Far East, which have been entrusted to you by the Emperor's wish. Think at every hour that to you the defense of the honor and fame of the whole Russian army has been confided.

"The illustrious head of the Russian land, together with the whole of Russia, prays for you, bless you for your heroic deeds. Strengthened by this prayer and the consciousness of the importance of the task that has fallen to us, we must go forward fearlessly, with a firm determination to do our duty to the end, without sparing our lives.

"The will of God be with us all."

The three Japanese armies repulsed Kuropatkin's advance in all directions. The Russian right and center fell back to positions which Kuropatkin expected to defend, while the Russian left was vigorously pursued by Kuroki.

The fighting on October 12th surpassed in desperation and bravery that at Liau-yang, and the armies engaged were far greater. The Japanese reported the capture of thirty-three field guns and eight ammunition wagons.

FURIOUS BOMBARDMENT OF PORT ARTHUR.

A Russian force of 15,000 men was believed to have been enveloped at Pensihu, where a conflict was waged for thirty-six hours. The Japanese brought new and heavier batteries to bear on Port Arthur, and the bombardment was more violent every day. The fortress was very short of coal.

Statements from Tokio and St. Petersburg as to the results following four days of battle were in some respects conflicting, but, in the main, agreed in showing that Kuropatkin had met with much more than a reverse.

The Russian commander's dispatches to the Emperor, as given out by the General Staff, were often remarkable for what they did not contain. Kuropatkin's orders to his right to fall back, from Japanese sources became a disorderly retreat, while his lack of knowledge as to his left was supplied by the statement that General Kuroki was vigorously pursuing that division of the Russian army.

On October 13th, General Kuropatkin reported that during the fighting the advanced troops were reinforced from the principal positions; that the right wing was ordered to fall back on the

main position, and that about 2 P. M. the center also was obliged to fall back. The statement did not mention the fighting on the right wing.

The full text of General Kuropatkin's report, addressed to the Emperor, was as follows :

"Last night and throughout to-day the Manchurian army was engaged in a fierce fight. The Japanese concentrated a great force against our dispositions on the center and right wing. We carried on the fight from advanced positions, and it became necessary to support these advanced guards from the main position. The right wing held its advance position, and only at nightfall, under my orders, retired to the principal position. In the center the troops were forced to retire from the advance to the main position about 2 P. M.

NUMEROUS FIERCE ATTACKS REPULSED.

"According to reports and to my own observation, the fighting was most desperate. We repulsed numerous Japanese attacks and ourselves assumed the offensive. The heroic defense of its advance position by the Tomsk regiment is especially deserving of mention.

"During the night our troops on the right flank recaptured, at the point of the bayonet, a village which had been lost the previous evening. On the left flank, severe fighting for the possession of a pass was continued. Our troops scaled almost inaccessible rocks and held their ground for two days, gradually approaching the enemy.

"I have not yet received a report of the result of the fight on the left wing. Under the conditions of the fighting the losses are necessarily considerable. I have ordered that the positions we now hold be stubbornly defended."

The Russian and Japanese armies wrestling south of Mukden seemed now to be locked in a death struggle for the mastery. Field Marshal Oyama countered General Kuropatkin's thrust at the Japanese right by an advance against the Russian right. The situation, on a much larger scale, resembled that of Vafangow,

where General Stakelberg, in essaying to turn the Japanese right, had his own right turned.

News reaching Tokio as to the tremendous struggle waged for four days south of Mukden indicated beyond a doubt that General Kuropatkin had been defeated at all points and severely punished. The Russian commander was evidently caught while making his dispositions with his forces scattered, and he was beaten before he could recover. All three of the Japanese armies gained decided advantages, besides capturing at least thirty-three field guns.

Along a line more than twenty miles long the immense armies fought from dawn until after sunset in bitter cold and drenching rain. The fighting surpassed in desperateness, bravery and bloodshed anything shown since the war began. It continued with unabated fury and determination. The losses were not reported, but they were unquestionably very heavy.

NUMBER OF MEN ENGAGED.

Estimates of the total forces engaged vary. One telegram from Liau-yang said that the Russians had 200,000 men, with 1000 guns. The Japanese force far exceeded the number engaged at the battle of Liau-yang. Conservative estimates placed the aggregate strength of Oyama's three armies at 280,000 men.

The Manchurian headquarters, in a telegram, reported as follows:

"Since the last report our right army has been continuing a vigorous pursuit of the enemy toward the north. The column which was dispatched to intercept the retreat of the enemy from Bensihu continued its operations.

"The central army continued its attacks on the Russians and expected to occupy the line between Tungshankou and Huchlakuchiatzu. The enemy in this direction appeared to retreat continuously until dusk in the evening. The enemy's two counter attacks against the center column of the left army were very daring, but these attacks were repulsed with heavy damage, which was inflicted by our artillery and by a heavy infantry fire.

"The number of guns captured by the center column of the left army was sixteen. The right wing of the center column of the left army captured four guns and eight ammunition wagons.

"The right column of the left army, while pursuing the enemy west of the Schill river, captured five guns, making the total number of guns captured by the left army under General Oku twenty-five. Eight guns were captured by the right army.

"The right wing of the left column of the center army captured one hundred and fifty prisoners. The pursuit of the enemy undertaken by the main force of the right and center armies progressed remarkably."

ADDITIONAL ACCOUNT OF THE FIGHTING.

A Russian correspondent sent the following :

"On October 10th we were forced to retire somewhat from Yentai. At 11 P. M. a skirmish commenced, which lasted throughout the night. At five o'clock next morning we again advanced, and a desperate battle, with varying success, raged all day. First we would take a position and then the Japanese would recover it.

"A terrible fight also occurred east of the railway. Here also we advanced on Yentai, but have not yet captured it. The Japanese defended every inch marvelously. Every inch of ground they lost was soaked with blood. Though the attack everywhere had to be carried out under a cloud of bullets and shells, our men remained impassive in the face of the most severe punishment.

"Of one company only seventeen remained, every officer had been killed, and a private soldier commanded the remnant. We frequently attacked with the bayonet, but the Japanese avoided hand-to-hand fighting whenever they could, mowing us down with shell and machine gunfire, and if this failed to stop our rush they evacuated the position, throwing hand grenades and covering the captured position with a hail of shells and shrapnel from their nearest batteries. Thus we suffered heavy losses; but strange to say, few were killed, by far the greater number being wounded.

"Several squadrons of Japanese cavalry and two battalions of infantry were wiped out in attempting a flanking movement. They

tried to work around our rear, but were cut off, and our volleys gradually decimated their ranks. No Japanese reached our lines or returned to his own.

“At one point several battalions of Japanese attempted to surround two of our companies, but the Voronsky regiment, coming gallantly to the rescue, brought the Japanese under a heavy fire. The Japanese thereupon raised a Red Cross flag and began to swear in Russian, shouting, ‘Stop shooting; you are killing your own men.’ The Voronsky Regiment paused, though they were certain they had made no mistake, having seen a Japanese signal meaning ‘Send up reserves.’

REGIMENT CAUGHT IN A HEAVY CROSS FIRE.

“Shifting their ground, the Voronsky regiment poured in fresh volleys upon the Japanese flank at a range of thirty-five to fifty yards. The ground was covered with dead Japanese, and the remainder fled in confusion. Our soldiers shouted their satisfaction at having punished the Japanese for a trick they have often played when in a close corner. The Voronsky regiment, however, did not retire soon enough, for Japanese reserves coming up caught them in a heavy cross fire, under which they suffered considerably.”

Naturally the city of St. Petersburg was filled with countless rumors of defeat and victory. The public was aroused to the highest pitch of excitement and anxiety by Kuropatkin's dispatch revealing the terrific character of the combat and acquainting the people officially that he was on the defensive. That, together with the Tokio dispatches declaring that the Japanese forces were everywhere gaining ground, and Kuropatkin's concluding statement that they would “give orders to obstinately defend the positions occupied by us,” chilled the enthusiasm with which the news of the Russian advance was hailed, and instead raised ominous fears of impending disaster.

The holiday crowds engaged in celebrating the festival of the “intercession of the Virgin for humanity,” on which occasion they usually spend their time in merry-making, clung obstinately to the

bulletin boards, hungrily awaiting news of the issue of the most critical day.

It was fully appreciated that if Kuropatkin's army was driven back the whole plan of the Russian advance was wrecked, and that if Field Marshal Oyama was able to follow up the Russians energetically, the battle would end in irretrievable ruin for Kuropatkin. On the other hand, if Oyama, having himself met the Russian advance by assuming the offensive and throwing the weight of his armies upon the Russian lines, exhausted the energy of his troops and failed to break his opponents' lines, a repulse necessarily must weaken his resisting power when he fell back on the fortified positions of his triangle.

RETIREMENT OF RUSSIAN FORCES.

The most fierce and most important fighting that had taken place since the battle of Liao-yang reached its height when, after a bold attack which lasted for three days, the Russians began a sagacious retirement from the positions they held, and the Japanese, by a strong central movement, forced the Russian line five miles to the north.

The battle reached a stage of unusual severity along the railway and to the westward. By evening six hundred wounded had reached the field hospital, situated ten miles from the front.

The result of the fight was that a mile of ground along the front west of the railway was lost, but the Russians regained this ground during the night by a bayonet attack, without a shot having been fired.

The battle was renewed at dawn with terrific effect. The eastern army evidently was engaged in continuous small arm fighting.

There could be heard the desultory breaking of shells along the foothills about five miles from the railway. To the westward there was a growing activity, and the smoke from the shells formed an almost impenetrable haze, hiding the operations of the infantry.

There was an entangled artillery duel in the vicinity of Tou-sanpu, to the westward, in which one regiment was caught by a cross fire and threatened with extinction.

Tousanpu wavered until noon, when the Japanese made good their occupation, and Colonel Stackovitch, who had made a magnificent stand for four days, after more than twenty of his officers had been put out of action, fell back before the terrible onslaught of the Japanese.

The Japanese proved their ability to utilize the strong position at the Yentai coal mine, which the Russian advance guard reported had not been utilized up to October 10th. The Russians moving in that direction were unable to occupy the position owing to the developments of the past forty-eight hours, and fell back in conformity with previous plans.

SOLID MASSES OF TROOPS IN FRONT.

At eleven o'clock in the morning the battle reached a stage of severity three times greater than that of the day before, solid masses of troops filling up the front. At 2.20 P. M. the Japanese were occupying a hill two miles to the south of Hungpas Hill, which they shelled from a battery which was plainly visible. The results of this shelling were not important.

At 4.15 P. M., the Russian army made an orderly and timely withdrawal, followed by a furious rifle fire from the Japanese. The Red Cross surgeons are performing operations at the field hospital. Many of the wounded were loaded on trains, which moved northward during the day. At sundown the cannonading to the southwest could be heard continuously.

A Russian correspondent telegraphed as follows:

"For over two days the battle has raged ceaselessly. It was close to midnight of October 10th when the Japanese attempted to surprise and attack our frontal positions in the impenetrable darkness, and hurled the full force of their battalions against our intrenchments. The darkness was split by the blaze of their rifles and the answering volleys of our own men. The attack never ceased for hours. We lay close, hugging the entrenchments with but few minutes of respite, every man's gun to his shoulder firing at the flashes until near dawn, when the evil-boding rifle-fire ceased and even the distant batteries were silent.

"We watched the daylight break in bands of red and yellow. The clouds, seemingly tinged with streaks of blood, hung over the silent valley, which might have been empty for all the signs of life it gave, while from the plain below us rose dark and silent hills, like the silhouettes of tombstones through the half light. The fog thickened, covering low lying places. Nothing could have better suited the day's duel between the two races.

"Day had hardly lightened the slope of the two-horned mountain when our battery began to cover it with shrapnel. Puffs of white smoke marked the landing of each shell. With our naked eye we could see the Japanese being shelled out of their trenches.

SAVAGE WORK OF THE SHELLS.

"First one, then in groups, squatting down, running for cover or scurrying away among the rocks; but the shells followed them, tearing up the rocks. Japanese fell literally like wheat thrown by the hand of a sower. On the mountain, beside the Buddhist temple, our battery was also working. Then another opened from the opposite side. The Japanese fled so quickly that the gunners could hardly follow them. Soon Japanese resourcefulness showed itself. They fired the big native village on the side of the two-horned mountain, rightly guessing that the wind from the east would carry the smoke toward us, making a screen for them and confusing the aim of our gunners.

"From eight o'clock in the morning the fight raged. Along the whole line the infernal din of the rifle fire continued as on the previous day, but up to noon the Japanese batteries gave no sign of life. It developed that they were waiting to locate our positions before opening fire. Even after they commenced it was not so heavy as the previous day's bombardment.

"Far to the westward the Japanese were trying to work round our left flank, but there we were safe and had sufficient forces to meet them. Two simultaneous turning movements were proceeding, theirs and ours.

"News of heavy losses during the night attack were coming

in. The Tomsk regiment suffered terribly. Of the brilliant Tamboff regiment few remained. The troops fought like heroes throughout the hours of darkness, and the morning found the most of them dead on the ground they had bravely defended. Those remaining continued to fight.

"In the big village before us the remnants of several regiments, after repelling attacks throughout the night, ensconced themselves in the shelter of walls of houses prepared for a fresh day's work.

GREAT BRAVERY AND ENDURANCE.

"The Japanese attack on Temple Mountain, held by the Volonski regiment, began at 8.45 o'clock in the morning, but our batteries on each side kept them in view and repelled the attack. The attack was repeated at ten o'clock, and finally at noon the general commanding ordered a retirement from the position, going to Shikhi. We had scarcely left the hill before it was covered with Japanese projectiles. At Shikhi we met General Zalinsky, who had come to report. Then an aide galloped up with the news that the Japanese had driven us from the railroad on the west, but had not followed up the temporary advantage, stopping to cook their noonday meal. Late at night we caught them at a disadvantage, and the Morshensk regiment paid them with interest for their success in the morning.

"Our men were displaying the greatest bravery and endurance in the face of all obstacles. Guns were dragged by hand up impassable mountains. In one narrow defile the Japanese rolled stones upon them. We could not take the pass, but men scaled the hillsides and took heights commanding the Japanese position after a stubborn fight. Our right recovered itself. We kept within touch of our turning column, so that strategically we had a decided advantage.

"In greatest contrast to the veteran regiments that participated in the battle of Liau-yang, the new reserves from European Russia, in fresh uniforms and equipments, with faces untanned and unworn by war, were watching, all energetic and determined.

"The Japanese landed an unexpected blow on our right flank, and took two batteries; but we regained them. The whole day was of a waiting character, we depending upon holding positions captured from the Japanese two days before.

"We are all wet to the skin. A thunderstorm of almost tropical character swept down upon us last night and flooded the trenches. The sky was torn with bolts, heavier than those of any artillery. It is now ten o'clock in the morning, and the storm is increasing. The crash of thunder mingled with the roar of cannon and the whistle of bullets and shells make a glorious but terrible spectacle."

A pitiable feature was the coming of thousands of wounded to Mukden. The roads and fields were covered with crippled men dragging themselves to the shelter of the hospitals, the wounded helping each other, as few able-bodied men were being spared from the fighting line.

CHAPTER XXXVIII.

HEAPS OF DEAD ON THE BATTLEFIELD.

Continuation of the Battle of Shakhe River — Japanese Driven Back with Heavy Loss—Lone Tree Hill Recaptured—Russians Withdraw After Four Days' Fight —Bloodiest Battle in History — Great Losses of Men and Materials—Vivid Accounts of the Awful Slaughter.

FURTHER terrific slaughter marked the continuation of the battle of Shakhe river, the tenth day of the titanic struggle between armies aggregating nearly half a million men. General Kuropatkin recrossed the Shakhe, penetrated the Japanese center, took the village of Shakhe and three other of the enemy's positions, captured thirty-six field guns and hurled back General Oku's army along its whole line.

The Japanese troops made a desperate resistance, and the losses on both sides were enormous, single trenches being filled with hundreds of dead. General Kuropatkin held the Japanese on his center and right, his object being to prevent Oyama's forces from getting possession of the Hun river bridges.

The Russian forces at 11 o'clock on October 17th penetrated the Japanese center, and captured one position, twelve guns and one hundred and fifty prisoners east of the railway. At other points during the day the Siberian regiments took three other positions and twenty-four guns. The Japanese, after a terrifically stubborn resistance, were compelled to retire along their whole line, losing heavily. All the trenches carried by the Russians were filled with Japanese dead. In one not very large trench there were counted six hundred corpses of Japanese.

In spite of their losses, the Japanese were undaunted. They brought up siege guns and left no stone unturned to retain the mastery of the situation. Every step the Russians pushed forward was in the face of a superb resistance that cost the Russians

dear. The Japanese seemed to be willing to fight until they were annihilated.

General Kuropatkin was apparently holding the Japanese firmly on his center and right wing, even having recrossed the Shakhe river, and, while there were rumors of an extensive Japanese flanking movement both on the east and on the west, there was no evidence that they were actually occurring. There was no longer fear of a Russian Sedan, though all hope of relieving Port Arthur was abandoned. Little hope was expressed that Kuropatkin would be able to continue to advance.

General Sakharoff telegraphed that the Russians recaptured Lone Tree Hill, south of Shakhe, and captured eleven Japanese guns and one quick-firer. General Sakharoff added:

“The Japanese defended the hill with great stubbornness, and accepted a bayonet attack, in which many of them perished. Our troops fought valiantly. The losses were not ascertained. A desultory cannonade proceeded along the whole of our position. The troops were very tired, but they were in splendid spirits.”

CAPTURE OF LONE TREE HILL.

Lone Tree Hill is about three miles east of the railroad. The Shakhe river runs round its base. The Japanese seized the hill during the night of October 15th, overpowering the two Russian regiments which previously were in possession of it. Russian reinforcements were hurried up, and early the following morning opened a sustained artillery fire. Subsequently the Russian infantry stormed the hill, and fierce fighting at close quarters followed. Hundreds of Japanese were bayoneted in the trenches, and ultimately the defenders were driven out, after several hours of fighting.

The importance of the capture of Lone Tree Hill lay in the fact that the Japanese from it were able to pour an enfilading fire upon the Russians posted east and west along the Shakhe river. The Japanese fully appreciated its value, and mounted guns upon the hill, of which the Russians captured twelve. The others were removed. The possession of Lone Tree Hill enabled the Russians

in turn to enfilade the Japanese trenches right and left of the hill. An effort on the part of the Japanese to recapture the hill was expected, as reinforcements were seen moving from the other side of the railroad, ostensibly for this purpose.

The Russians carried out some brilliant movements on the left, where they assumed an energetic offensive against the Japanese position at Soukhetung, southeast of Hun Pass. Soukhetung is on the high road which runs to Bensiaputze, joining the Mandarin road where the Hun river intersects it. It is a mile north of Hun Pass, which is four miles north of Shakhe. Several regiments stormed the Japanese trenches, and carried them after desperate resistance, capturing ten guns. The Japanese losses were enormous.

ASSAULTS BY HEAVY RUSSIAN COLUMN.

General Kuropatkin's left wing was heard from under date of October 14th. The four days' fight in front of Tumin and Saitchoun passes resulted in the final withdrawal of the strong Russian column, which had been sent to turn the Japanese right, though General Mistchenko seemed to have actually penetrated a considerable distance in the Japanese line.

The four days' fight of the eastern column was of the same desperate character that marked the operations of the center and right wing. A heavy Russian column repeatedly assaulted strongly entrenched Japanese positions on heights commanding the passes. The assaults were largely night work. The cannonade was so furious that it was impossible to advance in the light of day. Finally, on October 13th, when the passes had been actually occupied, came the order to withdraw, probably owing to a critical position at other parts of the front.

At midnight, the Valikolutsk regiment moved out of its position, north of Shakhe, to capture the village of Fishinpu. The Russians crept up quietly and then charged with the bayonet, clearing out the Japanese at the south end of the village. But at the other end stood a Buddhist temple, which the Japanese had converted into a fortress.

The Japanese dug a deep trench around its stone walls and

barricaded it with wire entanglements, making it impossible to storm the temple. So the Russians brought up artillery under cover of darkness and tried to breach the walls at a distance of eight hundred paces, but the shells proved ineffective and not all the corps were provided with field mortars, with which they could quickly have converted the temple into ruins. Therefore the Russians were forced to leave the Japanese in possession of the temple, and during the whole day the Russians held one-half of the village and the Japanese the other half.

A pool of water in the village square separated the combatants, forming a sort of neutral lake. The Russian and Japanese soldiers occupied neighboring huts, and from the shelter of the earthen walls of the Chinese courtyards they hurled abuse and jokes at each other, to the accompaniment of occasional rifle bullets when any one was rash enough to show his head.

JAPANESE MEET WITH GREAT LOSS.

At three o'clock in the afternoon the Russian right moved forward to the village of Wuchang, which was carried by a brilliant assault against determined resistance, the Japanese finally abandoning it with heavy loss.

At 5 P. M. the Russians occupied the village of Chenlianpu, which lies almost parallel with Linchinpu, on the north side of the Shakhe river, and to the westward of where it bends south. This concluded the fighting at the Shakhe river. Owing to the capture of Chenlianpu by the Russians, the Japanese were compelled to finally evacuate Linchinpu, which was of the greatest importance to the Russians, as its possession enabled them to roll up the Japanese left and go to the help of the Russian center by enfilading the Japanese flank.

Everything proves that not since the time of the ancients, and certainly not within a hundred years, has the world witnessed such desperate fighting. The slaughter was appalling. A war correspondent telegraphed that 23,000 wounded had passed through Mukden on their way north, not counting many from the eastern wing, who went through from Fushun direct to Tie Pass.

Field Marshal Marquis Oyama, telegraphing to Tokio on October 17th, reported as follows:

"Our advance continues and our pursuing force has occupied Kaukanhal. A brigade of the enemy is still massed at Fishingpu, two-thirds of a mile north of the Shakhe river, and Russian scouts are posted on the Tashan hills.

"The conditions at the front of the center of the army are unchanged. Since morning the enemy has made six counter attacks against the left column of our left army, but all were repulsed by us with heavy loss.

ATTACK RENEWED AT NIGHT.

"Nevertheless, in the evening, five or six battalions of the enemy's infantry, with two or three batteries of artillery, renewed the attack, which we repelled. The enemy's dead on the front of the right column of the left army reached 4000. There was still a great number of bodies uncounted on the front of the left column of that army."

According to the Japanese official estimate, the Russian forces engaged at the battle of Shakhe river, consisted of the First, Second, Third, Fourth, Fifth, and Sixth Siberian Divisions, the First, Seventh and Tenth Army Corps, two regiments of Moscow infantry, eight batteries of the East Siberian Brigade, five regiments with field mortars, two batteries of mortars, five batteries of horse artillery, five batteries of mountain guns, and one battery of siege guns, one battery of light guns; altogether, 276 battalions, 122 batteries, and 173 mortars, making about 200,000 infantry, 26,000 cavalry and 12,000 artillerymen, with 950 guns.

A statement from General Oka's left army in the field said that Lumuting, a village just east of the railway, fourteen miles south of Mukden, where the Russians made a most determined stand, was captured. The Japanese shelled the retreating Russians who had defended the town.

This was the most stubborn fight of the entire six days' battle. All day the Japanese poured a rain of shells on the position with no effect, and finally it was taken by the infantry. The

entire line was in possession of the Japanese. Many more Russian guns were captured.

Lamuting completed the line aimed for by the Japanese. The Japanese took a village to the left of Lamuting, and next morning they took one to the right. A deep and wide river connects the three villages.

With about forty guns to the north of Lamuting the Japanese made a direct attack. The village to the right was taken by two companies of infantry, who advanced under cover of the river bank. An advance was then made to the east along the north bank of the river. Behind the Russian guns were lines of great baggage and ammunition trains, and the determined resistance was for the purpose of protecting these until the retreat should be accomplished. Large numbers of infantry were seen retreating all day. They were shelled by the Japanese heavy artillery.

ARTILLERY AND INFANTRY ENGAGED.

The fighting along this line for the forty-eight hours from Thursday night to Saturday night was the heaviest of the entire battle. The Russians had a division and a half, and they were frequently exchanging their troops for fresher men. They had over fifty guns. The Japanese had about the same force, including the heavy guns captured at the battle of Nanshan Hill, (forty miles north of Port Arthur).

The left army occupied Wufukiatun, dislodging four or five battalions of Russian infantry and several batteries of artillery, and crushingly repulsing a subsequent counter attack. Artillery from the centre and infantry from the left army harrassed the Russian retreat.

Genetal Oku attacked the main strength of the Russian right and blocked the Russian retreat along the railroad.

During the first four days' fighting the left army captured over two hundred prisoners, but the right army took many more than this number.

The Russians at night retired along the eastern line, except on the extreme right, where they made a strong stand at Liushinpo

Station, in the Chinese villages nearby. Early in the evening the Japanese advanced, but were unable to drive the Russians out. The Japanese then attempted to cut through along the railroad in order to prevent a Russian retreat.

This determined Russian stand was largely unexpected, the rest of the line having withdrawn. At midnight the Russians attacked the Japanese line, and, after a hard fight lasting four hours, were driven back with heavy losses.

The opposing forces spent the night within rifle range of each other, and kept up a continuous exchange of rifle fire. The guns roared all night, throwing thousands of shells into both camps. At dawn the Russians again attacked and were again repulsed with heavy losses. The Japanese succeeded in advancing, slowly pressing the Russians back and capturing the railway station.

INTERCEPT A FLASH-LIGHT MESSAGE.

Following are further details of the fighting :

On October 10th, when the Russian advance guard appeared before Saitchoun Pass, its eastern detachment occupied a corresponding position before Tumin Pass.

During the night the Russian signal corps intercepted a flash-light message showing that the Japanese artillery was to shell several Russian positions where batteries were posted at dawn. The Russian batteries, therefore, shifted their positions during the night, and in the morning the Japanese furiously bombarded the empty ground.

On the morning of October 12th the Russian fighting line consisted of 45,000 men—four regiments of the East Siberian Rifles on the right flank, and the Third, Thirty-third and Thirty-fourth on the left. The right was supported by two batteries of the Eighteenth East Siberian Brigade and one of the Ninth East Siberian Brigade. One battery occupied the center and three more were on the left.

The fight began at 5.30 o'clock on the morning of October 11th. The batteries on the right flank opened on three Japanese batteries situated to the right of the pass. Saitchoun Pass is a

double pass, the main defile being to the left, overtopped by high, rocky mountains, while to the right are rocky ridges.

General Gerngross's corps was assigned to capture the passes by frontal attack, and the remainder of the Russian troops were to turn the Japanese position and take them on the flank and rear. The Russian right advance guard was commanded by its chief of division, while General Kondratovitch, who was continually with the troops at the front, commanded the left.

The first assault was set for noon, and the Russian batteries pounded the Japanese position, searching out their guns. Wherever possible, the Russian artillery was rapidly followed up by the infantry advance, the cannon fire being concentrated first on one and then on another of the eminences, which were seamed with Japanese trenches from base to summit.

DEAFENING ROAR AND RATTLE OF GUNS.

The roar and crash of artillery and the rattle of volley-firing were deafening. The Japanese defended desperately. Their positions were so steep that the attacking Russians could make no progress in the face of a murderous fire from the Japanese. Whole advance companies lay down, hugging the ground till evening and repulsing sallies by the Japanese from their trenches.

At night an order came to renew the attack. General Kondratovitch led his advance to the front, and again the Russians began to scale the rugged heights. The Thirty-third and Thirty-fourth regiments fell under a withering fire. The men were scarcely able to breathe as they clambered up the deep slopes, but they hung to the rocks and returned the fire that was poured down on them. Then they scrambled forward again.

The Thirty-fourth Regiment first reached the trenches, going with the bayonet at the Japanese, who fought like demons with clubbed guns, swords, bayonets and revolvers. It was an indescribable melee.

The Russian reserves were ordered up to support the gallant Thirty-fourth, and, aided by the Thirty-sixth regiment and part of three other regiments, the Russians carried two lines of

trenches, after which the men lay down, dead tired, in the Japanese shelters till dawn. Then it was discovered that while the attacking force was about on a level with the passes themselves, they were only half way up the heights, which were commanded by Japanese positions. In these circumstances, the Russians were forced to withdraw.

While this attack was going on, the Russian right also carried several heights held by the Japanese, after a fierce resistance. The Japanese then assumed the offensive, rushing forward in a great wave, but failing to dislodge the Russians from the positions they had gained.

BATTERY BLOWN TO PIECES.

On the morning of October 12th the Russian batteries again signalled the beginning of another day's fighting. One battery silenced some Japanese mountain guns, and then another Japanese battery opened on the Russians, but a concentrated fire smothered that battery also. Then the Russian infantry advanced to the attack and the fight became general. The left was heavily engaged. Tumin Pass was turned by detachments of the Third, Twenty-third and Second Regiments.

More Japanese batteries appeared on the heights. One of these, particularly annoying, was located by Captain Michaelis, whose guns, getting the range, literally blew it to pieces. From the Russian positions, logs, which formed the protective works for the Japanese guns, could be seen to be thrown high in the air by exploding shells.

The whole day passed without making much headway, and the Russian troops were again forced to seek the shelter of the rocky slopes, there to wait until nightfall, when a fresh assault was attempted.

The London Times, military expert, reviewing the latest dispatches from the great battlefield of Manchuria, said that the Russian casualties up to date in the battle of Shakhe river exceeded 60,000, exclusive of prisoners.

The Russians, he thought, had been saved from annihilation

by their wonderful capacity for retreat. The correspondent said that the Czar's troops should be the most capable retreaters in the world, thanks to the practice which they have had since the war began. Closing his article, the correspondent said:

"We have to congratulate our gallant allies on the splendid victory they have won in a fair field with no favor, while they themselves would be first to admit that the Russians fought with the utmost pluck and determination."

Continuing the account of military operations around Mukden, it will be noticed that an important point captured by the Japanese was Lone Tree Hill.

General Kuropatkin ordered the hill to be retaken, and the whole Russian artillery, concentrated at five in the morning, showered the hill with projectiles, the awful spectacle lasting the entire day. It seemed that no human being could outlive such an ordeal, yet the defenders remained manfully at their posts.

ORDER GIVEN TO STORM.

The sun was already declining when Kuropatkin gave the order to storm. Six regiments advanced, fording the river in the face of a murderous fire. The enemy poured a hail of gun and rifle fire on the advancing columns, but nothing could stop them. They reached the other side and clambered up.

The fighting on the crest of the hill was altogether with cold steel. The Russian officers, with swords aloft, leading the scaling column, were literally lifted in the air by the Japanese bayonets, and the Japanese then bayoneted the first of the Russian soldiers who piled in the trenches. The trenches were filled with dead Japanese and Russians clutched in a death embrace. There was no such ghastly sight at Shipka or at Plevna.

General Poutiloff, leading the brigade and personally directing the attack, was the first to reach the summit, and was in the thick of the fiercest fighting around the Japanese guns. The Japanese gunners died at their guns. Kuropatkin personally thanked the heroes for their gallant exploit. The captured guns were taken to Mukden.

CHAPTER XXXIX.

THE CAPTURE OF PORT ARTHUR.

Other Important Sieges—Description of the Fortress—First Shots of the War—Torpedo Boats—Concealed Mines—Escape of the Grand Duke—Attempts to Cork up the Entrance to the Harbor—Port Arthur's Guns—Dire Extremities—The Surrender.

THE siege of Port Arthur, which has variously been called the Gibraltar and the Sebastopol of the Far East, must be added to the greatest beleagerments known to history; and General Stoessel will rank with Gordon and White, who kept the flag flying over Khartoum and Ladysmith; with General Urich, who so gallantly fended off the Germans from Strassburg in 1870; with Osman Pasha, the lion of Plevna; with Fenwick Williams, who for six months held Kars against all the furious efforts of Mouravieff and the besieging Russians; with Todleben, who was the soul of the defence of Sebastopol; and Grant at Vicksburg.

But in two essential respects did the siege of Sebastopol differ from that of its sister-fortress on the Gulf of Pechili. For the Crimean stronghold ever remained open to the rear towards Russia, whence it drew plentiful supplies of food and fighting material; while Port Arthur, on the other hand, enjoyed no such means of steady replenishment. Again, Todleben himself was the author of the fortifications which he so stubbornly defended; while Stoessel found the bulwarks of Port Arthur ready to his hand, and had merely to supplement the engineering skill of his scientific comrades, Vernander and Kondrachenko, by his own dauntless and ever resourceful spirit.

But to Stoessel, a Russian soldier of Teutonic name and origin, like Todleben, will always belong the honor of having been the hero of the first siege of this kind. For the defences of Port Arthur are as widely different from those of the Sebastopol of half

a century ago as a "Brown Bess" is from a present-day magazine-rifle. The place is not so much a fortress in the old sense as a series of fortresses, just as a modern battle, like Liau-yang or the Shako, takes the form of several distinct, if contemporaneous, actions extending over a long and irregular front of from twenty to thirty miles. The development of modern artillery, with its high explosives, long-range and high-angle fire, has revolutionized the art of military engineering, and necessitated the construction of fortresses totally different in character from those that figured in the Crimea, the Franco-German War, and even the Russo-Turkish War of seven years later, though Port Arthur may be regarded as a permanent fortress of the kind whereof Plevna was but the extemporized field form.

FORMER CAPTURE OF THE FORT.

The Japanese had easily rushed it in 1894, while as yet it was merely a Chinese *place d'armes*; but in the interval the Russians—after getting the Japanese jockeyed out of it with the help of the French and the Germans, forming together the "Three Musketeers of Europe"—had converted it into what is perhaps the most formidable fortress of the kind in the world.

As Queen Mary declared that "Calais," which had been wrenched away from her by the French, would at her death be found written on her heart, so upon the hearts of the whole Japanese people was equally engraved the legend "Port Arthur," out of which they had been so unscrupulously tricked; and it is no secret that they regarded its reacquisition, its reconquest, as an object in the very foreground of all their national aspirations.

To oust the Russians from Manchuria—which they continued to occupy, in spite of their treaty promise to evacuate it by a given day and to restore it to China—was the ostensible motive of the Japanese in rupturing their diplomatic relations with the government of the Czar; but all the time they had their eyes fixed on Port Arthur in the spirit which animated Wallenstein when he vowed that he would take Stralsund even if it were tied to Heaven with chains.

The first shots of the war were fired at Chemulpo on February 8, 1904, but it was not till August 1st that the regular siege of Port Arthur may be said to have begun. During this interval of six months, however, the place and the Kwang-tung peninsula continued to be the scene of the most stirring incidents in the shifting drama of the war. It was here that the Japanese gave evidence of that remarkable daring which never deserted them throughout their colossal conflict. On the night of the same day when the first shot was fired at Chemulpo, Admiral Togo launched his torpedo boats against the Muscovite war-ships anchored in unsuspecting idleness at Port Arthur and holed three of them. The officer in command at Port Arthur was Admiral Stark, a man of Scottish descent, and possibly also of Scottish daring; but his motto was certainly not "Ready, aye ready!"

TAKEN BY SURPRISE.

Far from being ready, the Admiral and his chief officers were said to have been ashore at some circus or evening entertainment and the sound of the Japanese torpedoes made them feel as if they had been taken unawares by a thief in the night who had robbed them of some of their most precious jewels. Supineness on one side had been subtly taken advantage of on the other by a desperate service for which there were hundreds of eager volunteers.

Next day, before the Russians had been able to recover from their stupefaction and their anger at what it pleased them to denounce as an act of Asiatic treachery on the part of the foes whom they had hitherto despised as a race of simious "yellow dwarfs"—next day, Togo, the Nelson of the Nipponians, advanced fifteen of his vessels, which opened fire at long range and disabled the battleship Poltava and two cruisers, the Diana and Norvik. The lame ducks as well as the sound-in-limb having thus been flustered back into the land-locked harbor, the Japanese now addressed themselves to the task of sealing-up the entrance to this haven, or rather its exit, as one might cork a bottle full of minnows.

Togo therefore sank four old merchant-steamers in the fairway; and again for this desperate service there was an eager rush

of volunteers, each of whom longed to emulate the feat of Lieutenant Hobson of Santiago. But the attempt was not wholly successful, and about a month later it had to be repeated on a larger scale; by which time Stark—the unsuspecting and unready—had been superseded by Makaroff the magnificent. That Togo had not been able to “cork” him up, Makaroff hastened to show by sallying forth with his mammoths to give battle to the defiant Togo, when the latter again approached the port.

But alas! his own flagship struck a mine and sank with all on board, himself included—all but a few survivors, among whom was the Grand Duke Cyril, cousin of the Tsar; while among the victims of the catastrophe was Verestchagin, the famous battle-painter, who had been invited by Makaroff to come and perpetuate his victories. Fate must indeed be cruelly blind when, in the selection of its victims, it could not differentiate between a great artist and a Grand Duke!

ATTEMPTS TO CORK UP THE HARBOR.

A third attempt to “cork up” the entrance to the harbor was made by Togo on May 2d, with no fewer than twelve old merchant hulks, and he reported that the fairway had been blocked to all but small craft. But what was his surprise, on June 23d, to be informed by his picket-boat off Port Arthur that the Russian fleet, numbering in all about twenty-five vessels, was again sallying forth to give him battle—surprise to find that they had once more cleared the passage and made fit for action vessels which were assumed to have been damaged beyond the repairing resources of the port?

Up over the horizon Togo at once came steaming with all his fleet—which had in the meantime been weakened by the total loss of one of his finest battleships, the Hatsuse, that had struck a derelict mine, not to speak of the sinking of one of his protected cruisers, the Yoshino, and several of his minor craft, in the mining warfare of the past two months. Up over the horizon Togo came steaming on, eager to embrace the Trafalgar which was now apparently to be offered him by Makaroff's successor.

But as once there was a King of France who "with fifty thousand men, marched up the hill and then marched down again," so the Russian Admirals, at sight of the terrible Togo and his ships steaming up over the horizon, determined not to fight but only to demonstrate, and so put their helms hard over and hurried back to harbor, with Japanese torpedoes, as Togo claimed, bursting destructively about the iron ribs of some of them.

On that same moonlit night the mastery of the Eastern ocean may be said to have been definitely surrendered by the Russians to the Japanese, though, indeed, the latter had already been acting as if the "bottling up" of the Muscovite mammoths had now secured them the dominion of the sea. For, in the meantime, feeling secure from molestation, they had been busy transporting troops across to various points on the Liao-tung peninsula for the purpose of isolating Port Arthur on the land side as well as from the sea; and it was some compensation to them for the loss of their battleship Hatsuse and 450 of its crew, that, on the following day, May 16th, they landed and seized the heights of Kinchau.

GRAND DISPLAY OF VALOR.

Ten days later they treated the world to an exhibition of their bravery which threw into the shade even the valor displayed by Kuroki's soldiers of the Rising Sun in the inaugural land-battle of the war on the Yalu. Barring the road from Kinchau to Port Arthur, the Russians had strongly entrenched themselves on the heights of Nan-Shan—their embattered position and redoubts ring-fenced by truly diabolical net-works of barbed-wire entanglement—most frightful of fortifications; but these terrific heights the Japanese under Oku assaulted and stormed in the most heroic manner, tumbling back the Russians on Port Arthur, and capturing about eighty guns of various calibre.

Four days later Dalny, on the other side of the peninsula, was equally occupied by another Japanese force, which soon managed to join hands with the heroes of Nan-Shan, and an effective blockade of the Liao-tung peninsula was declared. It was now seen at the Russian headquarters that Port Arthur would be

doomed unless the increasing pressure on it from the landward side could be relieved; so Kuropatkin—either on his own initiative or acting against his better judgment in compliance with the request of the Aulic Council of Grand Dukes at St. Petersburg—decided to detach General Stackelberg's corps from his main army about Liau-yang, and dispatch it south to prevent the investment of Port Arthur, just as Gambetta aspired to send his untrained levies on the Loire to the relief of Paris.

Stackelberg possibly hoped that he might be able to do for Port Arthur what Austrian Daun did for Prague when besieged by Frederick the Great, who was signally defeated at Kollin, and had to raise the siege; but Stackelberg was cruelly undeceived.

LOSS OF MANY MEN AND GUNS.

Had Oku remained where he was, he would certainly have had to assume the position of Bunyan's Mr. Facing-both-ways, as Cæsar himself had been compelled to do with his famous double lines of Alesia in Gaul—one line facing the besieged, and the other the relieving force. So taking two of his divisions, and leaving the rest with Nogi, Oku marched north to meet Stackelberg; and at Telissu on June 15th rolled him ruinously back in the direction whence he had come, with the loss of many men and guns.

Having thus intervened between Stackelberg and Port Arthur, as the "Red Prince" aforesaid had frustrated all attempts of Chanzy and his Gambettist levies on the Loire to march on beleaguered Paris, Oku followed up his advantage with his victorious men, who were presently to become the third field army operating under Marshal Oyama against Kuropatkin and his baffled hosts; while bearded Nogi, of the silken manner and the iron hand, was entrusted with the task of closing in upon the mighty stronghold, which he would either capture by assault or force to capitulate.

But what, then, was the nature of the mighty stronghold into which he was firmly resolved either to find or force his way? A stronghold defended by about four hundred breech-loading guns of various calibres, from 5.9 in. to 11 inches, and distributed among

a large number, over fifty, of detached yet trench-connected forts crowning the rugged and irregular heights surrounding the spacious land-locked harbor. The land-forts are semi-closed works with their "gorges" or rear entrances, protected by loopholed masonry walls of enormous strength.

In the great ditches running round these formidable works—such as may be seen on the outskirts of Paris—there are strong transverse covered passages called Kaponiers, whence, as well as from galleries in the scarps and counter-scarps—or inner and outer walls of the ditch—a fire can be directed against any storming party that has swarmed into the fosse and is preparing to scale the parapet. The very heavy guns arming those formidable forts before the outbreak of the war were supposed to number about four hundred, but they are sure to have been supplemented by much of the heavy ordnance which could no longer be used by the ships of war cooped up in the harbor; so that Stoessel had at his disposal as many pieces of artillery as the Germans brought to bear upon MacMahon's army at Sedan.

ANNOYING DEFENCES OF THE FORT.

Formidable thus in themselves, and rendered almost impregnable by the frightful wire entanglements, broken glass, mines, electric-shock wires, and other truly diabolical impediments to stormers on glacis and in ditch, these forts are also so devised as to add to their own capacity for individual self-defence the power of mutual support, just as in a football-field each member of the team plays up to and co-operates with all the others. When forced back within his outer line of defences, guarded by his four to five hundred guns, Stoessel may have had about 30,000 men all told wherewith to repel the assaults of the 60,000 to 70,000 Japanese under Nogi, who were burning to plant the banner of the Rising Sun on the highest bastion of this Sebastopol of the Far East.

But it must be remembered that every Russian put out of action was a dead loss to Stoessel, seeing that by no process could he refill his depleted ranks; while, no matter how heavily the besiegers should suffer from wounds and death in their desperate

assaults, they could always, with Dalny as their base, enjoy the flow of unhindered streams of reinforcements from over sea, and return stronger and more determined than ever to the attack.

There was preliminary fighting connected with the Japanese approach to the fortress, and by the end of July they had captured Wolf's Hill, a commanding position, with some Russian guns thereon, the losses on both sides being severe; while fighting was resumed on August 10th, with equally disastrous results to the garrison. It was probably this further reverse to the Russian arms on land that goaded Admiral Vitoft, Makaroff's successor, into making one more supreme effort to restore the eclipsed prestige of the Czar's naval power.

A COMMAND THAT WAS MISTAKEN.

So he sallied forth with all his fleet to tackle Togo and to meet his own death, his last signal, as it was said, being "Remember the Czar's command not to return to Port Arthur." But this command was misinterpreted by Prince Ukhtomsky, who now succeeded to the command, and who returned to port with all the vessels which had not been shattered by Japanese shell and forced to take refuge and be dismantled in neutral ports.

This was on August 10th, and six days later Stoessel received by the hands of a messenger a mild summons, or rather invitation, in the joint names of General Nogi and Admiral Togo, to surrender the fortress, coupled with a humane offer to relieve him of his non-combatants, and thus spare them the further horrors of the siege. But the stubborn Stoessel, declaring this communication to be "a joke in bad taste," curtly replied in the negative to both requests—the more so as the Czar had recently made an appeal to Heaven "to protect the fortress from the attacks of the enemy."

Even the General's brave wife refused to leave his side, but continued to inspire him with her presence, and to act as another Florence Nightingale to the wounded of the garrison. The same messenger also brought to Stoessel a request from the German Emperor for the letting out of his naval attaché, who accordingly, with his French colleague, was put on board a Chinese junk, but never

heard of again. The siege was now begun and carried on in a way which makes the tale of Troy seem poor in respect of heroic courage and human carnage.

But in one respect the siege of Port Arthur seemed to be inferior to that of Troy, and that was in the comparative incompleteness of its blockade. On one famous occasion the Greeks managed to insinuate into Troy town a wooden horse, whereof the belly contained Ulysses and some of his daring companions; but countless are the wooden junks of Chinese build that have managed to get into and out of Port Arthur with passengers, supplies and fugitives bringing the latest news, which, however, clearly required severe sub-editing before they could be accepted as solid contributions to the diary of the siege.

AUDACIOUS BLOCKADE RUNNERS.

Doubtless the inefficiency of the blockade was due to the fact that Togo's ships durst not venture too near the seaward forts, lest their ribs should be stove in by Stoessel's shells; but, anyhow, the gangway thus left free for some miles along the coast appears to have been pretty freely used by various kinds of audacious blockade-runners; and thus, too, officers of the garrison, like Prince Radziwill and others, succeeded in crossing to Chifu with despatches.

But for some time at least the besieged fortress was in touch with Chifu by wireless telegraphy, which enabled it to cheer the birth of the Tsarevitch, to receive heartening messages from the Czar and to announce to the outer world that its great-hearted chief had declared that Port Arthur would be, if not his scene of triumph, then his tomb; just as General Ducrot, on heading the greatest sortie towards Champigny, declared "only dead or victorious will I re-enter Paris." As a matter of fact, he returned to Paris defeated and alive.

"We are unable to hold the position," was the report which reached Stoessel from a company which found its ground untenable. "But you can die," the General replied; and they suited the action to the word; which reminds one of what Frederick the Great called out to one of his regiments at Kunersdorf which had already

assaulted the Russians thrice, but hesitated to charge a fourth time, "Canaille! wollt Ihr ewig leben?"—"You worthless scoundrels, do ye then wish to live for ever?" But Kunersdorf, with all its frightful carnage, was nothing to the butchery of Port Arthur. "During a recent assault," said Prince Radziwill on his escape, the Japanese had charged madly in deep columns, losing heavily from the Russian shell-fire. There were horrible scenes when they reached the Russian lines. No quarter was given, and couples were found locked in a death embrace, the teeth of one in the other's throat, and fingers plunged into the enemy's eyes.

WAYS OF REDUCING THE STRONGHOLD.

The siege of the stronghold falls into two phases—the first, when Nogi went headlong at it and essayed to storm it off hand; the second, when, taught by bloody experience, he combined the force of the battering-ram with the brain of the engineer. Flushed with their previous storming exploits at Nan-shan—whereof the Torres Vedras or Düppel-like works, stretching across the neck of the peninsula, really formed an advanced line of forts—the soldiers of the Mikado never doubted that they could dash themselves with equal success against the horns of the fortress itself.

Nogi knew that his army would soon be needed in the north to help in tumbling the Russians out of Liau-yang. There were three possible ways of reducing such a formidable fortress, viz: by starving it out, by bombardment, and by assault. But the starving process would take too long, while everything in the situation pointed to urgency; bombardment of the place itself could only begin after the outer works had been captured, and consequently these must be stormed.

"'Twere well," therefore, thought Nogi with Macbeth, "it were done quickly;" and so three days after Stoessel's scornful rejection of Nogi's summons to surrender, the stupendous tragedy began with a week's continuous fighting unparalleled in siege warfare—fighting of which we could form no very clear or connected picture from the meagre accounts furnished us, with their local descriptions reduced to a mere jumble of unfamiliar names.

leaving the mind a blank, but which conveyed a general impression of Titanic bravery, endurance and ferocity on both sides: volcanic hell-fires of shell and shrapnel, forward rushes, repulses, stormings, seizures, counter-assaults, sorties, frightful melees with bayonets, stones, hand-grenades, and bombs; darkenings of the air with the dismembered bodies of whole masses of men blown sky-high with mines; night attacks revealed and foiled by the blinding blaze of searchlights, and star-shells beautifying the darkness as at a fireworks show; the mowing down of thousands with machine-guns, ghastly massacres among the cruel meshes of barbed-wire entanglements, and all the other murderous accompaniments of modern war.

HOW THE JAPANESE FIGHT.

“You have been very fortunate in arriving just in time,” said General Nogi to a Press correspondent just before the first assault, “neither too early nor too late, to see the conclusion of our glorious campaign.” But the net result of this week’s terrific struggle, which had entailed on the Japanese a loss of 14,000, was only their retention of the Panlung fort—where their flag had been torn down and replanted no fewer than fifteen times.

A Russian officer in Port Arthur wrote to his sister about the first attack: “To the right of me the Japanese have seized two redoubts, and stick to them so closely that it is impossible to dislodge them, but they will not break through. Enormous numbers of them perish at every attack. They crawl forward like locusts, and all the mass is turned into pieces of flesh. It is a remarkable enemy—clever, cunning, brave, with great knowledge; war with them will cause a great revolution in military art.”

Meanwhile they had to modify this art themselves, for their first general assault had failed, like the first attack on the Redan the penalty of their having underrated the resisting power of the fortress and its bravely dogged defenders.

There now followed a lull in this part of the theatre of war, during which the attention of the world was directed to the colossal struggle around Liau-yang; but no sooner had Kuropatkin

been hurled back on the Sha-ho than the curtain again rose—fortunately for the world audience, who could only be expected to follow one act of the drama at a time—on the besiegers of Port Arthur, who had by this date received heavy reinforcements of men and siege material, and had now reconciled themselves to the idea of assaulting the fortress by regular process of sap—burrowing as well as battering, thus carrying on their attack by a double process.

FOUR DAYS OF SAVAGE FIGHTING.

For four more days, September 19 to 23, did the Trojan conflict again rage, especially round Cockscombe Fort and 203-Metre Hill, under the new conditions but with pretty much the same dreadful incidents as before, on the north and west front of the fortress; and this was how Stoessel, the “victor” of Erhlung and Etsehan, unbosomed himself on the subject to his men, in the language of Victor Hugo: “Glory and thanks to God! Glory to our heroic garrison! Glory to Illmann, Sycheff, and Pogorsky, heroes all! Glory to our chiefs and officers, and especial glory and thanks to our valiant volunteers, who drove the enemy from the trenches, destroying them! God has permitted us to repulse the enemy! Praise to God!”

Not only to “repulse” the enemy, but also, according to Stoessel, to kill and wound 10,000 of them. This “Te Deum Laudamus,” however, required to be read and collated with General Nogi’s account of the same four-day period of fighting, which had given the Japanese possession of half the great-eastern ridge.

Isolated attacks continued to be made by the Japanese; but the next, or third, grand general assault, which lasted from October 30th to November 3d, was productive of far more substantial results. November 3d is the Mikado’s birthday, on which the besiegers had strained every nerve to make his Majesty a present of Port Arthur—for the second and last time; but although Nogi could not yet give the word to let fly the flags and fireworks which had been in readiness at Tokio ever since the beginning of August, he was able to report that his heavy siege-guns had now been planted so much nearer to his main objective as to have sunk several steamers in

the harbor, blown up magazines, and kindled several conflagrations in the town, now verging on such a state of famine that the very dogs were ravenously devouring the carcasses of the dead.

It was not till about a fortnight later that we heard the Russian account of this third grand assault—an account which was brought to Chifu by the Russian destroyer Raztoropny, which had managed to escape the blockaders' vessels and make a daring dash for the Chinese port, where its captain blew it up rather than dismantle or leave within the twenty-four hours' limit of stay. This is a heavy portage-price to pay for the transmission of dispatches to St. Petersburg, one of which was reported to describe the desperate state of the Port Arthur garrison, and ask whether it would now seek for honorable terms of surrender; while, on the other hand, the captain of the destroyer—who admitted that Stoessel had been slightly wounded—made an ostentatious display of fresh beef, beer, and tobacco, and maintained that the garrison was still well supplied, in excellent fighting trim, and could hold out for a long time yet—a trick of war, this, as old as the siege of Jericho, not to speak of Troy.

DESPERATE VALOR OF THE SWORDSMEN.

On November 24th the arsenal was set on fire by the Japanese shells, and large quantities of stores were destroyed. Two days later a general assault was delivered. One of the most notable features of this attack was the desperate valor of specially trained bodies of Japanese swordsmen, led by Generals Nakamura and Saito. During the next few days attacks were directed against the famous 203 Metre Hill, the most coveted position in the whole enceinte; for the Japanese knew that, once it was secured, their guns would dominate the harbor of Port Arthur, and they could at their will make an end of the Russian fleet.

On November the 30th part of the investing army advanced from the trenches already captured near the crest of the hill, and assaulted the south-west corner of the fort that crowned it. The advancing Japanese charged again and again, regardless of the terrible losses they sustained. At length, at eight P. M., they over-

came the Russians' magnificent resistance, and occupied the whole hill. On December the 2d an attempt was made to recapture the position, but without avail. With 203 Metre Hill fairly in their grasp, the Japanese lost no time in getting their heaviest artillery into position on the eminence, and before a week was out it was manifest that the Pacific Squadron would shortly have ceased to exist. A plunging fire was poured upon the fleet. Admiral Togo detached a torpedo flotilla, which in the face of a fierce fire from the Sevastopol, torpedoed and thus put finally out of action the last effective boat of the Russian Pacific Squadron. Thus Admiral Togo was free to return to Tokio to receive his Sovereign's commendation and congratulations.

BRAVERY OF THE BESIEGERS.

But General Stoessel's watchword was still "No surrender," although the investment drew closer and closer, as the Japanese engineers, with extraordinary cunning, pushed their parallels up to the forts, which have been described as a ring of Sebastopols mutually supported by intercommunications. Yet even these apparently impregnable defences had to go down before the dogged courage and perseverance of the Japanese.

On December 18th the besiegers blew up the breastwork of the Kikwanshan, or Cockscomb Fort—an old bone of contention—and immediately followed this operation by an assault, accompanied by fierce fighting with hand-grenades. The combat lasted from 2.15 P. M. until 11.50 P. M., when the victorious Japanese constructed defence-works and waited for morning, which found them in full possession. They captured five field guns, two machine guns, and a great quantity of ammunition. Forty Russian dead were found within the fort.

The last days of the Old Year saw the capture of several minor positions, and on New Year's Day the besiegers carried the Erhlungshan fort, the Panlungshan forts, and a fort referred to as "H," the exact position of which is obscure. This meant a further piercing of the defences both on the east and on the west, and the town now lay at the mercy of the besiegers. On the receipt of the

news of these successes it was manifest that the end could not be far distant, and it was with no surprise that the world learned on the afternoon of January 2d that Japan had made Port Arthur a New Year's present to the Mikado.

The Emperor immediately telegraphed from Tokio extolling the heroism of General Stoessel and his comrades, and commanding that the gallant defender should be accorded full military honors. Thus gloriously for both sides ended the most memorable siege in the history of modern warfare.

The mass of the Russian army is said to have been against surrender and were surprised and maddened when it came. General Stoessel instead of being forced to this act by the pressure of all his officers, as at first reported, did not object when in council it was decided. About half of the officers accepted parole, General Stoessel among them. The balance went with their men to Japan. That their imprisonment would not be made more irksome than absolutely necessary was shown by the treatment of the prisoners at Nagasaki, where a large fund was raised to properly entertain them, and where one of the Generals was led to remark that Japan "held the highest ethical place among nations."

CHAPTER XL.

THE CAPTURE OF MUKDEN.

Great Losses of Men and Munitions on Both Sides—
Comprehensive Survey of the Battle—Oyama's Superior
Strategy—Kuropatkin Stunned by a Heavy Blow on
his Right—Movements of the Two Armies—Russians
Flanked and their Line Broken—Mukden Hurriedly
Evacuated—Retreat Imperilled by Panics—Official
Reports of the Two Commanders.

THE result of the ten days' struggle between the Russian and Japanese armies around Mukden was the overthrow of the stronghold by Oyama's legions. The walled town where it was supposed the Japanese hosts would meet defeat, and where the Russians would gain a brilliant victory, fell before the guns and bayonets of the opposing army.

The losses on both sides were immense. There was a vast army of the dead, another great army of the wounded, and military stores almost beyond computation were captured by the victors.

We furnish the reader first with a comprehensive survey of the military operations around Mukden, and then describe the battle in detail.

The first offensive movement of the Japanese began on their right on February 19, 1905, and five days later the strong Russian detachment at Tsinkhetchen was thrown out of its works and driven away to the north. On February 24th General Kuroki's First Army moved forward from the Benksiku district upon Kautuling and drove the Russians from their advanced positions, about ten miles north and northwest of Benksiku. This advance was also taken up by General Nodzu's army on the Sha River, where ground was gained and the attack assumed a threatening character without proceeding to extremities.

The general effect of these movements, which were steadily continued during the days subsequent to the 24th, was to attract the attention of the Russian commander to his centre and left, to beckon

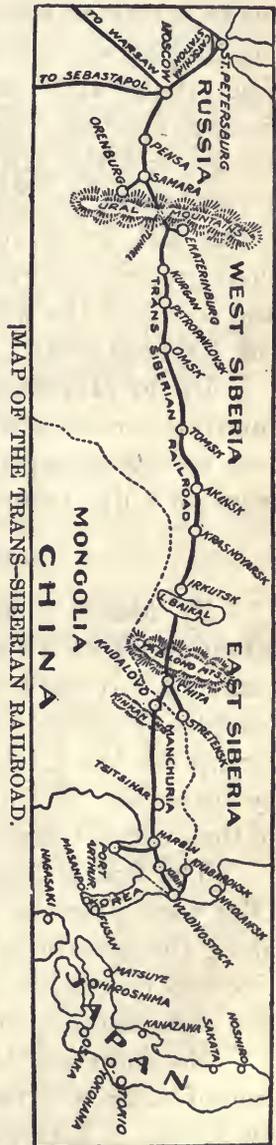
the Russian forces to his side and to engage the greater part of the hostile line of battle in a combat of steadily increasing violence.

To what extent these very able dispositions affected Kuropatkin's decisions we cannot say, but during the last days of February considerable numbers of the Russian troops were directed to the Kautuling and Machuantun districts, and it is in evidence that on March 1 the Russian commander reported that he had assumed the offensive. This, indeed, he did, and everywhere without success.

Thus this well-conceived preparatory stage of the battle appears to have obtained all the results that were anticipated by the Japanese General Staff, and along the whole wide front an artillery duel raged without intermission between the opposing armies. The time had now come for the decisive attack.

The armies of General Oku and Nogi had not yet entered the field, but on February 28 Oku's army deployed between the Sha River and the Hun, while on his left General Nogi marched with the utmost possible speed between the Hun and the Lio in a northerly direction. The vigor and rapidity with which this movement was conducted broke down all opposition, and, despite Russian counter attacks, the advance proceeded with all success.

Kuropatkin first became aware of this movement on March 1, and on March 2 he telegraphed that measures had been taken against the turning movements. But the recognition of danger came too late and the measures were inadequate. His troops were quickly driven back on the right toward Mukden, and General Nogi rapidly disposed his troops for an attack upon the main line of Russian retreat.



But in order to chain the Russian troops to their positions in their centre and left it was necessary for Kuroki and Nodzu to make sustained efforts at this critical juncture; in short, to sacrifice themselves, in order to prevent the withdrawal of Russian troops from centre and left to meet the decisive attack on their right. Serious fighting, therefore, took place all along the front of these armies, and the artillery fire became more and more severe. In several places the Japanese were repulsed with heavy loss, but their object was, in great measure, attained, since they not only held their ground everywhere but even made progress in some directions and occupied the whole attention of something like two-thirds of the Russian army.

Up to March 5 Kuropatkin had no troops at his disposal to interfere seriously with the decisive attack on his right, which had now swung round and had forced General Kaulbars to face westward on a line running from Machiapu to north-northeast.

ATTACK BY THE RUSSIANS.

By March 5 the Russian army had been shepherded into a situation where it could be dealt with with greater facility and convenience. It was held fast in the centre, driven back on the left and completely turned on the right. The battle proceeded without interruption, but Kuropatkin now began to draw every unit that could be spared toward Mukden in order to throw back the decisive attack of the enemy, the object of which was no longer open to doubt.

The first serious attack by the Russian reserves upon General Oku took place on March 5. It penetrated some short distance along the Sinmintin road, but was then repulsed. General Nogi's line was meanwhile extending more and more to the north of Mukden and assuming the character of development.

No successes had been gained by other parts of the Russian line of battle of a nature to counterbalance this serious attack, and on March 8 Kuropatkin decided to withdraw his centre and left behind the line of the Hun and attack Oku and Nogi with every unit that he could collect for this purpose from the armies of Kaulbars and Bilderling.

The situation of the Russian army was serious at this moment. Linevitch, on the Russian left, had, indeed, not been seriously harmed by Kuroki's attacks, and the Russian First Army effected its retreat to the line of the Hun without heavy loss, and there took position and prepared to resist.

But at Mukden the situation was fast becoming impossible. Kaulbar's army was exhausted, nearly all the reserves used up, and the arrival of Bilderling's Third Army at Mukden on March 8 led to a fearful accumulation of troops in a restricted space, where they gradually became exposed to the converging fire of the enemy, who now drew in upon the town from all sides, except the northeast. Nevertheless, Kuropatkin made a most gallant effort to break clear, and led in person an attack of sixty-five battalions, following an earlier one by forty battalions.

NARROW ESCAPE OF THE RUSSIANS.

These efforts checked the advance of Generals Oku and Nogi, and even caused, at one moment, serious disquiet at the Japanese headquarters, since they were made with great bravery and determination, and the effort required to repulse them went some way to check the impetus of the decisive attack.

But at this critical moment Kuropatkin received serious news from his centre. When Bilderling and Linevitch fell back on the Hun insufficient care was taken to preserve touch between the two armies, and at 10 A. M., on March 9, Kuropatkin received the startling news that the line of the Hun had been penetrated, and Fusan, twenty versts east of Mukden, occupied by the Japanese. On the north, and the same day, Nogi was fighting to establish himself across the Russian line of retreat. A delay of twenty-four hours would probably have entailed the entire destruction or capture of the Second and Third Russian armies, and at dusk, on March 9, the order was given for a general retreat.

Owing to the enveloping of the Japanese attacks, a considerable body of Russian troops in and around Mukden were unable to get away, and though the town was occupied by the Japanese at 10 A. M., on March 10, parties of Russians continued to resist in

adjacent villages and positions until March 11. Nogi, however, by the evening of March 10, occupied the line of the Puhò River, directly across the main line of retreat and astride all the roads that led from Mukden to the north, and though a part of the enemy had already escaped under cover of Kuropatkin's offensive on the 9th, all that remained was forced to abandon its carriages and to escape over the hills in disorder.

Linevitch alone retained his formations, and, showing a bold front to Kuroki, retired in good order from the right, covering, to a certain extent, the rout of the remainder of the armies. By March 12 the Russians were driven from all the country twenty-six miles north of Mukden. The battle, which had lasted, exclusive of the pursuit, for fifteen days, had been lost and won.

FIGHT RAGED FOR MANY DAYS.

This is but a comprehensive survey of the bloody struggle. It presents the outlines, but is not intended to furnish the thrilling details of the fierce fight that raged for so many days. A more complete account of the gigantic conflict is as follows:

According to the Japanese Intelligence Office the Russian army consisted of 300,000 infantry, 26,700 cavalry, and 1,368 guns. To confront this enormous force with superior forces at every point of a line nearly a hundred miles long, to envelop it on both flanks at once, to push it out of formidably intrenched positions prepared by the labor of four months, cut it to pieces, capture or destroy over half of it and drive the rest in headlong rout certainly required an immense army. Oyama did this with less than the number of men with which he was credited, and all the rhapsodies on his genius and the fighting qualities of his troops failed to do the subject justice. Certainly the Russian and Japanese forces together must have aggregated a vast army. In the absence of any adjutant-general's returns from the camps of Attila and Jenghiz Khan, these must stand as the most gigantic hordes that ever engaged in mutual slaughter at one time and place.

After Kuropatkin's disastrous advance to the Sha River, in October, 1904, "to compel the Japanese to do our will" and his

retreat to his base at Mukden, the two armies faced each other along the line of the Hun, each stretching for a distance of nearly a hundred miles. Both went into winter quarters, and neither seemed strong enough to dislodge the other. The arrival of Nogi's veterans from Port Arthur, in January, 1905, upset the balance of power, and at the same time the disturbances in Russia put Kuropatkin under an apparent necessity of showing some activity to restore the prestige of the Government. Skirmishing began on both sides, and each felt the other's lines for a favorable point of attack. It is hard to fix an exact date when this preliminary sparring may be said to have developed into a battle.

NO CESSATION OF HOSTILITIES.

Isolated attacks in force were made as far back as February 19, and from that time the fighting was almost continuous for nearly a month. By February 27 it was in progress all along the line. As at Liau-yang, Kuroki's army formed the right wing of the Japanese forces, Nodzu's the centre, and Oku's the left. Nogi's men from Port Arthur formed a mobile force on the left, ready to strike where they could do the most effective work. The Japanese operations would have been badly hampered by the rivers that intersected the country, but at that season these streams were frozen. Oyama turned that fact to good account; Kuropatkin seems to have forgotten it. In anticipation of a possible defeat the Russians had fortified a rallying place at Tie Pass, forty miles up the railroad, in the direction of Harbin. Oyama was in touch with his whole line by telephone.

The first indication of Oyama's plan was a determined onslaught by Kuroki upon the Russian left wing, with the apparent purpose of turning the enemy's position in that quarter. Kuropatkin believed that this was the entire Japanese plan. It did not occur to him that Oyama was bold enough or strong enough to try to turn both his wings at once. Accordingly he sent every man he could spare to his threatened left. The Japanese attack there and on the weakened centre was pushed so vigorously as to occupy the entire attention of the Russian commander.

Suddenly, while Kuropatkin was congratulating himself upon having held his own, the armies of Oku and of Nogi delivered a stunning blow upon his right. They bent his line until his right wing, which had extended east and west, was aligned north and south, parallel to the railroad. Meanwhile a Japanese force, crossing the Liao River into Chinese territory in violation of Secretary Hay's "neutrality and administrative entity" of China, was hurrying northward to cut the Russian line of retreat. Its appearance at Sin-min-tun, "like a thunderbolt from a clear sky," was the first warning that the Russians had that their right was in danger.

OPERATIONS OF BOTH ARMIES.

We herewith furnish a detailed account of the military operations of the two armies. On February 24th all was ready for an attack on the westward by the Russian army. Suddenly, in the evening, the order to advance was canceled and a second order was given for the transfer of General Rennenkampff's First Siberian Corps and several other organizations to the left or eastern flank, which was being pressed heavily by a large force.

From that time the Japanese, who were well informed as to all the Russian movements, began heavy attacks along the whole front. The Russians generally held their ground, doing well until February 28th, when an unexpected attack developed in the southwest, before which the Russian right, weakened by the withdrawal of almost two corps, yielded.

By March 1st it became evident that the Japanese were moving around the Russian right in five heavy columns, and it became imperative to withdraw the thin line from the southwest and form a new line from the bridge across the Shakhe River, parallel with the railway. The change of front was accomplished with remarkable celerity, but the various organizations became badly mixed.

The Russians on March 4th, occupied their former positions on the Shakhe River as far as the bridge, thence to Madyapu, on the Hun River, and thence parallel with the railway, six miles distant, the right resting on the Sin Min Ting Road. The Japanese,

on March 5th, beginning to even turn this position with a view to cutting off the retreat, the Russian right was extended eastward from the Sin Min Ting Road to the railway.

Under date of March 6th, a newspaper correspondent wrote as follows:

"I witnessed to-day, from a small hill two miles to the west, the advance and attack on Kan-kya-chien, which was finally cap-



SIBERIAN WINTER SCENE.

tured in the afternoon. Kan-kya-chien is a small village situated four miles to the west of the railway.

"On the 5th, after a hard fight, the Japanese occupied two villages half a mile to the west and north respectively of Kan-kya-chien, the attack on which was begun this morning. A heavy bombardment was opened from field-guns and howitzers placed behind an abandoned railway embankment, a mile to the southwest. The Russian guns to the east of the village replied, and their fire forced the Japanese to bring up more artillery to deal with them.

"The duel lasted until the afternoon, thousands of shells being exchanged. The Japanese poured a hail of shells into the village and the Russian artillery positions. The Russians attempted to locate the Japanese batteries, and searched with their fire the plain east of Kan-kya-chien. Hundreds of shrapnel and percussion shells from the field guns and six-inch howitzers fell idly, for the Japanese who showed themselves on the plain at intervals were mounted orderlies. The Russians also heavily bombarded the Japanese villages to the north and east of Kan-kya-chien. At two o'clock the Japanese bombardment redoubled in violence, and the storm of shrapnel and percussion shells rained on the villages and set fire to the roofs of the Chinese houses.

ASSAILANTS MET BY ARTILLERY.

"At three o'clock General Oku left the shelter of his tent at the foot of the hill, mounted, and surveyed the scene through his big field-glasses. A few minutes later the infantry attack began, the task being entrusted to the famous division from Northern Japan.

"The first stage in the attack was the advance of a dozen men from a village to the north of Kan-kya-chien. They rushed forward a hundred yards across the plain, and then dropped behind cover. They were followed by another small party, and yet another. When about a company had assembled under cover the advance was continued in the same manner. The Russian artillery poured a heavy fire on the assailants, who were badly cut up, but the advance was not checked. Scores of Japanese dropped, and remained where they fell. When others advanced, some of the wounded men painfully rose and returned to the starting point, braving once more the Russian shells. A party of five started to return, but only one arrived.

"At the same time the advance began in the western side of the village, the Japanese advancing in the same manner from the old railway embankments. A long column straggled forward at wide intervals to reinforce the troops who were holding the western village. The Russians shelled the advancing men mercilessly, killing and wounding scores, but the forward movement

never stopped. Rifle fire from Kan-kya-chien made wide gaps in the advancing force, but still the Japanese came on. They could only advance by short rushes, but finally came the last rush, and the men disappeared into the village. The rifle fire was then transferred to the other side of the village. The Japanese artillery reopened fire when the capture of the village was announced by telephone.

“As soon as Kan-kya-chien was taken the attack on the next village was begun. The Russians in turn opened a heavy fire on Kan-kya-chien, but they did not succeed in dislodging the Japanese, who are continuing by night their attack on other villages.”

JAPANESE GALLANTLY REPULSED.

On March 7th both sides began most vigorous offensive operations, the Japanese attacking with especial energy the forces of General Tserpitsky, which was holding the position from Madyapu as far as the heights east of Mukden Station, while the Russians, under General Gerngross, assumed an attack in the direction of Tatchekiao, and on the northern front General Launitz's command beat back all attacks. On the whole the outcome of the fighting on March 7th was favorable to the Russians, who repulsed several attacks on their southern front and assumed the offensive on the left, where General Linevitch's army, occupying eastern hill positions, repulsed several attacks and took several hundred prisoners and several machine guns.

The continued extension, however, of the Japanese lines northward and the concentration which their superiority in numbers enabled them to effect against the northern and northwestern fronts, rendered advisable a contraction of the Russian lines, and withdrawal from the Shakhe River to positions on the Hun River was determined upon.

This was in no sense the beginning of the general retreat, and Kuropatkin and the generals commanding the armies were far from regarding the battle as lost. The first army to retire for the fortified positions east and southeast of Mukden was the third army, which fell back to positions similarly fortified in advance on

the north bank of the Hun River. The burning of abandoned stores, provisions and forage disclosed the Russian retirement and the Japanese followed closely.

A confusion in orders and retirement in impenetrable darkness across the country were responsible for the failure of some organizations to occupy the positions to which they had been assigned, and a remarkable dust storm the following day made it impossible to verify the alignment and fill the breaches, which the Japanese, however, were lucky enough to find and skillful enough to turn to their advantage.

ATTEMPT TO CUT THE RAILWAY.

The Russian positions now formed a boot, the toe at Madyapu and the heel on the Hun River at Fushan, about five miles wide, and to meet the apparent danger—the Japanese might plug the top of the boot—Kuropatkin sent thither forty battalions from the command of General Moloff, which were rendered available by the shortening of the line.

The Russians began to slowly force the Japanese back at this critical point, but the Japanese in turn were reinforced on their extreme right, and General Kuropatkin, seeing all apparently going well at the other positions and determining to stake all on a decisive blow, collected the remainder of the strategic reserves, strengthened by several other units, and led them personally on March 9th to the north front and threw them on the flank of the Japanese, who were attacking Santaitse and endeavoring to cut the railway.

The scale of weight was all on the Russian side. The Japanese then retired, abandoning a battery of eight guns, success apparently crowning the Russian arms.

At this moment two sets of reports were received: the first, that a column of Japanese was moving further north around the right flank, and the second that the Japanese on the Hun River had taken advantage of the storm, which was blowing the dust in the Russians' faces, and of the breaches in the positions on the Hun, to thrust a column through at Fu Pass and Kyouzan, on the instep of the boot. Here the fords were defended by only three

companies of the Bernaul regiment and a company of the Irkutsk regiment, which were forced to retire before Japanese cavalry and four mountain guns. With the entire Russian strategic reserves already engaged, it became impossible to meet the danger in these two sources, which was immediate and critical.

The Russian army was in desperate peril, but its lines, though distorted, were still intact. It was making head against the enemy on all its fronts and even delivering counter-attacks. But its position was clearly untenable, since, if it stayed where it was, the Japanese would establish themselves in its rear. There was a possibility that a desperate assault on the extended Japanese centre might cut Oyama's line in two and turn defeat into victory.

EVACUATION BY THE RUSSIANS.

Failing this a retreat was necessary, but it still seemed as if the master who had withdrawn his army in safety from Liau-yang might conduct that retreat in good order. On the night of the 7th, after the failure of their counter-attacks to check the Japanese advance, the Russians evacuated the whole line of the Sha River. Next they abandoned the stronghold of Putiloff Hill, at their centre, which had resisted repeated assaults.

The Japanese were closing in north of Mukden on both sides. Meanwhile preparations for the evacuation of the city had been in progress for some days. From March 3d to March 5th over 1,200 carloads of artillery and supplies had been sent from Mukden to Tie Pass. Kuropatkin was holding on doggedly to permit this operation to be completed. If he could bar the Japanese rushes until everything of value was taken away, as he had done at Liau-yang, and then retire in good order, his reputation as a modern Fabian would still be secure.

Through the narrow bootleg passage, scarcely five miles wide, a densely-packed mass of transports pressed northward, coming under the fire of a small squadron of Japanese cavalry and four mountain guns, which earlier in the battle had managed to dart across the Russian line of communication and conceal themselves in the mountains to the eastward.

The forces of General Tserpitzky began an orderly retirement from the boot toe, and during March 10th Kuropatkin successfully held at bay the Japanese, who were trying to reach the railroad.

The night of March 9th Mukden station presented a remarkable scene. Shortly after nine o'clock came the order to complete the evacuation of the station and city, with directions that the movements of trains northward must be completed by five o'clock in the morning. The enormous task was completed in nine hours, including the hasty embarkation of the wounded, who crowded the station platform and occupied the hospitals.

Many had already left in the morning, when the private trains of Kuropatkin, Kaulbars, Sakharoff, Bilderling and Zabelin departed, but thousands remained.

HURRYING TO TIE PASS.

At 9.40 P. M., the first string of eight trains was despatched, and a call was sent to Tie Pass for thirteen locomotives. The forwarding of these locomotives without interrupting the northward movement of trains was a delicate piece of train despatching, but the overworked railroad staff accomplished it successfully.

At 3 A. M., the second string was started northward, and at 9.45 A. M., the last train of the third string of sixteen departed. All the trains had fifty-two to fifty-five cars. Three trains contained the ammunition of the park of artillery, which had been despatched the evening before in 540 cars; another train carried warm clothing, one was coal laden, and one was loaded with Red Cross supplies, one with engineers' depot supplies, three with commissariat freights, and the remainder with wounded. The last train out was the service train, with all the employees of the railway, property and station papers.

The skill, exertions and devotion of this little band of civilians rendered service the importance of which cannot be overestimated for the welfare of the Russian army. It saved thousands of wounded soldiers, an immense amount of ammunition and millions of dollars' worth of property and cash.

It must be remembered that five miles north of Mukden an

unceasing fight was in progress. Trains earlier had been bombarded with Shimese shells and the railroad was twice damaged.

The trains traveled unlighted and without whistling, under eight-minute headway. All about fires blazed in a gigantic ring, burning straw, coal, wood, corn and biscuit. Occasionally boxes of cartridges exploded, with a disagreeable, dry rattle, or rockets rose and burst in clusters of stars. The flames had plenty of material, as there were over 3,600 carloads of corn and biscuit, and over 323,000 cubic feet of coal, straw and millet. This was only the reserve commissariat and other stores destroyed. The wounded crowded the station, filled every vacant place in the cars, and the brake beams, buffers and roofs were occupied, while others were hanging to the steps.

DEPARTURE OF LAST TRAIN.

The last train pulled out as General Tserpitsky's troops began to pass the station, shortly before the explosion which wrecked the Hun River bridge.

On the platform remained eight telegraphers, who had volunteered to stay at their keys until the arrival of the Japanese. In the hospitals of the Livonian division of the Red Cross and medical staff were 1050 severely wounded, including 364 Japanese, the Chinese Governor of Mukden giving his word to defend them until Mukden was occupied by the Japanese.

Of the military railroad all but 125 miles was abandoned and the wagonettes destroyed. Tens of thousands of boxes of ammunition were abandoned, but, most important of all, from a material point of view, is the loss of the Fushun coal mines, which supplied the road with coal. The trains were heavily bombarded but came through safely.

The retirement of the wagon transport was twice imperilled by panic the morning of March 10. A Japanese squadron and guns concealed in the mountains opened fire, and the drivers, who were undisciplined peasants, unaccustomed to the sound of Shimese shells, began to desert their carts and wagons, cutting loose the horses or throwing the stakes from the wagons.

Confusion became rampant and spread to terror-stricken civilians and even gunners and was communicated to some infantry troops. The gray-clad crowd, without information, hidden by dust, surged on. The Japanese, however, soon ceased firing and order was restored. Troops following the wagons carried off a few cannon, but were unable to gather the abandoned property. Soldiers began opening officers' boxes and portmanteaus and ransacked them for valuables.

A DISASTROUS PANIC.

Just before dusk another panic occurred at the station of Santaitse, where an enormous collection of carts halted for the night. A column of Russians advancing was taken for Japanese, and the cry of "Japanese cavalry" was raised. The unarmed drivers commenced to flee, while those with rifles fired in every direction. The cooler heads calmed the panic-stricken mass, but a number of lives were lost and additional property was sacrificed. The retirement of the central and western armies was effected by four roads and over the fields between.

The Japanese, who at nightfall occupied half of the village of Santaitse, burst at daybreak into the park of the imperial tombs and opened a heavy rifle fire. The Russians, however, refrained from opening fire in the holy places of the Chinese.

The Japanese did not press severely from the rear, bending their efforts to thrust in from the flanks and cut off portions of the army. Several divisions acting as the rear guard under General Laounin were almost surrounded, but broke through under a heavy fire on both flanks.

Thus Kuropatkin's army, as we have seen, was like an arch, whose keystone was the line between Mukden and Fushun, about twenty miles east. Incessantly testing this line by tireless attacks, the Japanese discovered a gap. They poured through under cover of a dust storm that hid their movements by an impenetrable screen, and in an instant the fabric of Russian resistance collapsed and the defeat became a rout. The Russian army was cut in two, and its retreat was turned into a race in which separate corps, divisions

and regiments struggled, each for itself, to reach the first refuge at Tie Pass ahead of the enemy, whose merciless fire repeated, on a scale a hundred fold magnified, the terrors of the British retreat from Lexington. The various Russian units were hopelessly mixed. Only a few corps preserved a degree of order that offered any promise of a successful reorganization of the remnants of the army. Kuropatkin in person maintained a desperate series of rearguard actions and did what he could to keep the disaster within bounds.

ADVANCE OF THE JAPANESE.

Marshal Oyama occupied Mukden on March 10, taking a large amount of booty which the Russians had not been able to remove or destroy. The Japanese wedge which had been driven through the Russian lines between Mukden and Fushun pushed forward, swinging to the left, and forced its point across the railroad, cutting off masses of the fugitives and catching others between its own fire and that of Oku's and Nogi's men on the left. Parts of the isolated Russian forces on the east of the wedge were surrounded and captured, and others were forced still further east into the mountains, where they tried to make their way by devious routes, still closely pursued toward Tie Pass.

The main lines of the Russian retreat were along the railroad, the old Mandarin Road, and another road running parallel with it. For the whole distance the disorganized masses of fugitives were pitilessly shelled by the Japanese on their flanks and rear and the slaughter was something unheard of since Napoleon's retreat from Moscow.

The results of the battle of Mukden disclosed a great improvement in Japanese strategy and tactics subsequent to Liau-yang and the Sha River. While Oyama was unable on the former occasions to do more than push the Russians off their ground, inflicting on them only the fighting casualties to be expected in battle, at Mukden he smashed their army, utterly destroyed parts of it, surrounded and captured other parts, and took vast quantities of guns, ammunition and supplies.

General Kuropatkin telegraphed to Emperor Nicholas as follows, under date of March 11, 10.40 P. M.:

"To-day the enemy's attack was confined to the rear guard of the Third Siberian Corps. The First Army continues to retreat towards positions indicated for all the other armies. According to a report from the commander of the Third Army, received to-day, his rear guard occupied a position on the Mandarin Road, sixteen and one-half miles from Tie Pass. Only a small detachment of the Japanese, mainly cavalry, confronted this rear guard.

"From February 28 to March 11, inclusive, 1190 officers and 46,391 men were missing from the roll call. The wounded have been sent north."

Field Marshal Oyama, reporting on Sunday, March 12, said:

"Prisoners, spoils and the enemy's estimated casualties against all our forces in the Shakhe direction follow, but the prisoners, guns and spoils are increasing momentarily.

LOSSES IN MEN AND SUPPLIES.

"The prisoners number over 40,000, including General Nakhimoff. The killed and wounded are estimated at 90,000. The enemy's dead left on the field number 26,500.

"The spoils include 2 flags, about 60 guns, 60,000 rifles, 150 ammunition wagons, 1000 carts, 200,000 shells, 25,000,000 rounds of small arms ammunition, 75,000 bushels of cereals, 275,000 bushels of fodder, 45 miles of light railway outfit, 2000 horses, 23 cartloads of maps, 1000 cartloads of clothing and accoutrements, 1,000,000 rations of bread, 70,000 tons of fuel and 60,000 tons of hay, besides tools, tents, bullocks, telegraph wire and poles, timber, beds, stoves and other property."

On the same date a despatch from Japanese military headquarters said:

"Reports from the chiefs of the medical corps of all our armies have been received from February 26 to March 12. Our total casualties at that time were 41,222."

Field Marshal Oyama, reporting under date of March 12, said:

"All our forces advanced to the right of the Hun River and

vigorously pursued the enemy in all directions. We reached a line fifteen miles north of the Hun River the afternoon of Friday. On Saturday we continued a vigorous pursuit. Our force advanced north from the vicinity of the Pu River, and immediately after its departure engaged with a large column of the enemy retreating north. After a hand-to-hand battle we surrounded and captured the column.

"In the vicinity of Mukden a remnant of the enemy continues a hopeless resistance or is surrendering. Clearing operations are progressing. The enemy's dead are massed everywhere, and we have been unable to inter them as yet. The minute investigation of the losses inflicted at several places has not been finished; but the enemy's killed, wounded, prisoners and spoils are enormous. The spoils of clothing and provisions are in great piles, resembling hills. We have been unable to investigate yet."

DEAD BODIES CREMATED.

Thousands of dead were left on the field, and on the evening of March 10 great fires were burning in all directions, where the bodies were being cremated. The surrounding of Mukden was the best strategical move accomplished by the Japanese in the war. The flanking movement of the Left Armies was successful in every detail.

The Russian resistance in the villages in the northwest of the angle formed by the railway and the Hun-ho was determined to the last. These villages were very strongly defended, being protected in many places by a triple line of trenches and ditches and many machine-guns. The Japanese sacrificed hundreds of lives in a series of unsuccessful attacks upon them. The holding of these villages against General Oku's army was particularly valuable to the Russians, as it allowed their main force along the Sha-ho time to retire in good order.

The Russians fought splendidly in every direction, making desperate stands and holding positions until forced out by flanking movements. The destruction of the railway bridge across the Hun greatly interfered with the Japanese' use of the railway in

bringing up supplies. This was the first time that the Russians made any attempt to damage the railway.

The work of clearing the battlefield of the Second Army to the west of the railway began in earnest on March 10, the Russian bodies being buried and the Japanese cremated.

The field, especially in the vicinity of Li-kam-pu, presented a terrible sight. Fully two thousand bodies were left on the field at the scene of the fiercest fight, where a division of the Japanese left army attacked Li-kam-pu and the small villages to the south, and drove the Russians out, inflicting and suffering serious loss.

HEAVY FIRE OF ARTILLERY.

The Russians, reinforced, made a counter attack on the villages in their turn, driving out the Japanese and inflicting enormous losses. The 33d Regiment in a village to the south was practically annihilated. It sustained an artillery fire on the front and flank before the attack, and was greatly outnumbered when the attack was driven home. The Japanese dead were piled in heaps behind the low mud walls of the village, while the Russian dead were strewn thickly over the field.

There were, too, evidences of desperate hand-to-hand fighting, bodies of Russians and Japanese being mingled indiscriminately in the heaps of corpses. Scores of the bodies showed many wounds, proving that the men had fought to the last, though wounded. At Li-kam-pu also there was fierce street and house-to-house fighting. Every street, lane and compound wall had its heap of dead. Many of the buildings were burned, and the wounded who had crawled there for shelter must have been burned to death.

It was impossible for the advancing troops to obtain cover on account of the frozen ground. Both the Japanese and Russian charges were made across open fields. The fighting at this point was probably the most desperate and deadly in the entire war.

Immediately after the downfall of Mukden an attempt was made by Russia to negotiate a new war loan.

On March 14 the great news of the day in Paris was the adjournment of negotiation for the new Russian loan between the

French financial delegates and the Russian Minister of Finance. When the delegates left Paris the understanding was that they should arrange the conditions for the loan and then return to Paris, where, after the approval of all parties concerned, the documents were to be signed.

The magnitude of the disaster which had overtaken the Russian army caused the delegates to telegraph for instructions. They were requested not to continue the pourparlers at present. This was due not more to the disasters of Russia in the war than it was to internal dissensions and the fierce agitations of that part of the populace who were demanding of the government greater liberty and better social conditions.

Field Marshal Oyama and staff entered Mukden in the afternoon of March 15th. They were met at the south gate by many troops encamping near Mukden, who lined the streets displaying their tattered battle flags. The Chinese officials welcomed Field Marshal Oyama, and thousands of Chinese congregated in the streets to witness his entry. The buildings and streets were decorated, and thousands of Japanese flags were exhibited.

CHAPTER XLI.

THE RUSSIAN ARMY IN FULL FLIGHT.

Desperate Attack Against the Japanese Led by Russian Commander—Retreating Russians Bombarded—Retreat a Wonderful Spectacle—Kuropatkin's Crowning Blunder—Russian Lines Penetrated by Enemy—Official Despatches—Desolate Country Around Tie-ling—Japanese Scouts—General Linevitch Appointed New Commander.

JUST before sundown Thursday, March 9th, the dust storm which had been hanging like a pall over the battlefield, lifted and the artillery immediately reopened fire. The bombardment having died down to almost nothing during the day, both of the tired armies rested while the weird half gloom lasted, although the Japanese evidently took advantage of the obscurity to improve their positions.

A strange and uncanny stillness prevailed in the city of Mukden during the storm. All noise was hushed, the streets were empty and many shops were closed. The Chinese were appalled by the proximity of the artillery fire and the terrifying gloom, which seemed to forebode the coming of evil.

General Kuropatkin had held all his positions for two days, actually pushing back the Japanese north of the imperial tombs which were no longer reached by the enemy's shells. The sacred ground remained guarded against vandalism by a few Russian sentries.

On Thursday evening General Rennenkampff made a counter-attack on the Japanese and took three machine guns. He then retired from his strong position at Machutan and fell back, making a stand in the hills several miles south of Fushun.

Immediately south of Mukden the Japanese reached the head of the bridge over the Hun River. The Japanese left was still working north, and the sound of artillery fire was increasing in that direction. The position of the Russian army at nightfall

Thursday seemed good, with critical fighting west of the railroad between Mukden and Tie Pass imminent. By dawn Friday the settlement was cleared and empty and prepared for all eventualities.

At the supreme hour of the battle of Mukden the Russian Commander-in-Chief in person led the reinforced left wing in a desperate attack against the Japanese, who threatened to break through his lines north and west of Mukden and entirely cut the line of retreat. Supreme victory seemed in the grasp of Oyama. His success meant surrender or annihilation for the disorganized, retreating Russian army.

INTENSE AND BLOODY STRUGGLE.

Throughout Thursday the issue hung in the balance. Kuropatkin threw the weight of every available battalion westward, and after a struggle more intense and bloody than any of this memorable battle, definitely rolled back the crushing legions of Japan. Battered, decimated ranks of the beaten Russian centre meanwhile trudged northward, the rearguard finally passing the danger point. Then only Kuropatkin's wall of desperate manhood at bay began to give way, step by step.

Before beginning the retreat, all the depots, stores and military buildings, and everything that would be of service to the Japanese was set on fire. A large amount of baggage and many guns were abandoned. All rolling stock belonging to the main railroad was brought away, and not a single car or locomotive was left at Mukden, though some cars belonging to the military roads behind the Shakhe River positions were abandoned.

About fifteen hundred severely wounded Russians and several hundred Japanese were left at Mukden hospitals, together with a complete Russian medical staff, which was entrusted to the care of the chivalrous Japanese. The remainder of the wounded in hospitals were sent northward, and a railroad train remained behind, almost with the rear guard, and brought off a trainload of those wounded in the retreat, many of whom reached Tie Pass without their injuries being bandaged. Mukden station was abandoned at seven o'clock Friday morning. The retreat was dreadful

to an extreme. A dust hurricane, blowing directly southward, filled the eyes and faces of the troops, but at the same time tended to blind the enemy and delay pursuit from the south.

The retreating columns were bombarded on both flanks by batteries which it was impossible to silence, the shells reaching the Mandarin Road from the east with especial frequency from the village of Tawan, eight miles north of Mukden, and Pu, five miles further north. Under these circumstances the retreat was conducted with astonishing precision, which was largely due to the personal efforts of General Kuropatkin, who, with haggard face and uniform yellow with dust, was everywhere when needed.

IGNORANCE OF THE SITUATION.

The troops composing the rear guard fought with extraordinary bravery under the eyes of the commander-in-chief, and the morale of the entire army, under the circumstances, was excellent.

The cause of the Mukden defeat is attributed to many reasons, one of the most important of which is insufficient information concerning the Japanese and their strength, which was far in excess of Russian calculations.

At seven o'clock Friday morning a great explosion, which blew up the Hun River bridge, and an immense cloud of smoke from the burning settlement gave indisputable testimony of General Kuropatkin's decision to relinquish also the second of his great positions—a decision which was known on Thursday.

The army was withdrawing all the latter half of the night, while the houses of the settlement had been vacated earlier and their lights left burning. Morning showed the great smoke clouds, low lying for miles about the settlement, armies three and four files deep in all the main roads moving north along the east side of the railway.

The battle still centred north of the imperial tombs with occasional shots along the Hun River, where, later, an opening permitted the Japanese to make a quick advance and dash toward their main operation, with the purpose of concentrating and cutting off the Russians.

At 11.30 o'clock the Japanese had partly succeeded, for at Tawan with shrapnel they shelled three sides of a rectangle where the main army was moving with great exertion over inadequate though dry roads and furrowed fields, but in perfect order. The Japanese, however, accomplished at this place nothing more than a momentary stampede, and though a soldier, crazed by his efforts, threatened to shoot a correspondent in order to take his baggage cart for himself, the correspondent observed everywhere the admirable coolness which distinguished the Russian army throughout its trying retreats.

This retreat must be reckoned as a wonderful spectacle. For miles infantrymen and baggage wagons strewed the line of march. For rapidity the Japanese movements for the first time were outstripped by the Russians in withdrawing. The Russians had staked more on the combined opinions of their commanders and risked more than in any previous battle with the Japanese.

SUDDEN ASSAULT BY JAPANESE CAVALRY.

The crucial point of the retreat occurred at dusk, when rear guard troops and the transport which reached Santaitze, ten miles north of Mukden, suddenly received a rifle and grenade assault from Japanese cavalry, which produced a stampede. The success of the Japanese in closing against the armies trying to get away from the extended Hun River bridge position was evident.

In ordering a retreat General Kuropatkin declared it was done in order to satisfy protesting opinion, and that whatever the blame, he would take it, which in the light of events seems to show that he best knew the capacity of the soldiers.

The battle on the right flank and around Mukden was the greatest of the war, except at Port Arthur. During the terrible dust storm of Thursday the Japanese, with machine guns, occupied several empty houses in a village held by the Russians, and otherwise bettered their position west of the railroad, so that when the retreat came, with Japanese shells on all sides, it suggested another Cronje incident of the British and Boer war.

For ten hours not a man nor a horse rested while the wounded

were being gathered up on the two sides in the rear and often in the centre, and every energy was bent toward getting out of a trap, the jaws of which were almost upon the Russians. At Santaitze many bodies of troops were encountered, some of them in advance and some in the rear, which were constantly mistaken for the Japanese.

Forty miles of retreat was accomplished in seventeen hours. It was virtually through plowed fields, with enormous dust clouds, which made it impossible to see any distance. A great amount of the equipage, ammunition, guns and stores of the Russians was lost.

RETREATING IN HOT HASTE.

Thousands upon thousands of Russians filled the territory between the railroad on the west and the road from Fushun to Tie Pass. Paralleling these long lines of haggard, disheartened men, Japanese guns hurled an incessant shower of shells, adding to the terror of the hour and swelling the appalling death-roll by thousands. Mile by mile the fleeing army passed in hot haste and wild disorder through this gauntlet of relentless bombardment, the Russians' furrowed, grimy faces turned in mute despair toward Tie Pass. On and on, mile by mile of rout and disaster, behind the roar of the rearguard struggle, ahead the questionable safety of Tie Pass.

The Russian army in decimated sections was battling a way to Tie Pass through a relentless gauntlet of Japanese artillery. Oyama's plan to cut the Russian line of communications failed. Kuropatkin, in person, led the Russian right flank in desperate effort to hold at bay the armies of Nogi and Oku. Meantime the retreating army got past the immediate danger point.

The retreat continued under a hail of shrapnel and shells from Japanese artillery occupying positions parallel to the line of retreat. Thousands upon thousands of Russians toiled northward, mile after mile, their trail a trail of death, as thinned ranks were mowed down by the awful rain of steel. The Russian vanguard was at Tie Pass. Southward, with undiminished fury, the rearguard battle went on. The Japanese were still madly struggling

to make the blow final. The four principal roads leading northward toward Tie Pass were completely occupied by a continuous file of artillery and transport, and the retreating army blackened the country between.

The losses in this defeat were the most bitter yet experienced by the Russian army. The Russians, in addition, sacrificed enormous quantities of munitions and stores, the greater part of which were set on fire before leaving Mukden.

A despatch received at St. Petersburg from General Kuropatkin, timed 6 P. M., March 10, said:

“The retreat of the army has been very dangerous, and especially trying for those corps which were some distance from the Mandarin road.

“The Japanese penetrated far into the mountains in the direction of Tawan. They threatened our troops, but thanks to extraordinary efforts our armies are out of danger.

RUSSIANS IN FLIGHT BOMBARDED.

“The enemy cannonaded the route of our retreat from the east and west. The eastern Mandarin road was bombarded at two points, near Tawan and the Pu River. Our troops are very brave.

“The reason the Japanese advanced so easily from the south is that the Hun River, which covered our position at Mukden, was frozen over.”

The fragments of Kuropatkin's armies were gradually reaching Tie Pass. General Kuropatkin, reporting the fact, asked the Emperor's gracious permission to hand over the command, alleging the urgent need of physical and mental rest.

The story of the defeat at Mukden and the terrible retreat to Tie Pass, which came out piecemeal, showed that the Russians were misled and outmanœvered at every point. They were misled about the numbers and dispositions of the Japanese armies; they were misled about the direction whence the next blow would come. Yet Kuropatkin seems to have realized the critical nature of the situation, for on March 8 he began a gradual removal of impediments. Had he then ordered a general retreat, as he had

intimated he would on that day in a telegram to the Czar, the disaster might have been averted. History will say what influences or motives prompted him to remain.

His crowning blunder was the weakening of the line from Fushun to Mukden. He apparently forgot that the Japanese were able to cross the Hun River on the ice. This enabled General Kuroki to break through between the positions of the First and Fourth Siberian Corps. General Kuropatkin realized his mistake when he heard of the capture of Kiusan on March 10, and he immediately ordered his armies to retire, but the Japanese swarmed from the east and from the west and placed batteries commanding the line of retreat.

LAST DESPERATE CHANCE.

One desperate chance remained—it was to sacrifice the artillery by massing the batteries so as to paralyze the enemy's fire. The Russian gunners did their duty, and saved what was left of Kuropatkin's armies. "Save himself who may" was the word over the plain bordering on the Mandarin road. The first fugitives reached Tie Pass, forty miles distant, within seventeen hours.

Up to the time of the beginning of the retreat it is probable the Japanese losses were heavier than those of the Russians, and at the time the Japanese broke through Fu Pass the Russians appeared to be holding their own and even gaining a little. Preparations were then made to launch a counter-stroke. The Japanese success was largely aided by the weather conditions, which enabled them to approach unobserved, but it was chiefly due to the failure of some of the organizations on the left flank in the retirement from Shakhe to occupy the positions marked out for them. The Japanese quickly discovered the intervals, scouting columns having followed the retreat closely.

A heavy column, which had been held in reserve for this eventuality, was quickly directed into the breach, and burst asunder the Russian line, rendering retreat imperative. The wonder is that the retreat did not degenerate into a panicky flight. In consequence of the rapid change of front necessitated by the

western attack, the units of the army had become inextricably confused. Battalions were not in their proper regiments, regiments were not in their own divisions, and divisions were not in the corps to which they belonged.

It is easily to be comprehended that the forced retirement became disordered to an extent by the sudden and unexpected fire of a small detachment of Japanese, probably not more than two squadrons of a mountain battery, which had slipped far inside the Russian lines and opened on the retreating transport, causing a temporary panic, which was chiefly confined, however, to the drivers and some artillerymen, whose nerves had been weakened by the strain of the twelve days' battle, who cut the traces and abandoned their wagons and guns. Further detachments of the army, however, came up, and portions of the wagons and guns were saved.

DISASTER OVERWHELMS RUSSIA.

Russia was overwhelmed by the disaster at Mukden, but doggedly refused to entertain the possibility of utter rout in the apparently inevitable fight at Tie Pass. The full extent of the disaster at Mukden was not fully realized. General Kuropatkin's dispatches indicating the almost total extermination of two regiments, were apparently intended to prepare the public for the worst. Other dispatches not intended for publication induced the fear in the highest circles that the army at Tie Pass would be unable to withstand the attack which was regarded as imminent.

A despatch from the Japanese army headquarters made the following announcement :

"All our forces have advanced north, pursuing the enemy in all directions and inflicting heavy damage, and they have defeated the enemy who attempted resistance at various places. Our forces have completely cleared the enemy out of the districts twenty-five miles north of Mukden, and on Sunday were still pursuing them. The Russians abandoned countless carts of supplies and ammunition in the district for thirteen miles from the vicinity west of the railway and sixteen miles north of Mukden. One of the colors

captured belonged to the 162d Regiment, from the Vilna district, which had been engaged in three previous wars."

General Kuroki telegraphed as follows :

"It is estimated that the spoils which have fallen into our hands since February 24 have been as follows :

"Rifles, 2200; machine guns, 6; small ammunition, 320,000 rounds; shells, 11,500; entrenching tools, 6000; wire, 1200 bundles; materials for a light railway of 33 miles; wagons for the latter, 450; garments, 10 cartloads; coal mining machinery for 8 pits; timber, 4000 pieces.

"Besides these, we took large quantities of corrals, fodder, tents, beds, stoves and maps and telephones, as well as a great number of bullocks and horses.

CAPTURE OF ENORMOUS WAR SUPPLIES.

"Although the enemy set fire to his stores at Machuntan and Miulupao, we captured thousands of bushels of provisions and enormous quantities of ammunition and other war supplies at these places."

All this was reported from General Kuroki's division alone, but does not include all the spoils captured at Mukden. On March 14th it was stated that Russia's "Grand Army," with the exception of the thousands who were killed or taken prisoners on the plains around Mukden, was gathering slowly behind the fortifications of Tie Pass, which were built as a refuge before the battle of Liau-yang, and was feverishly engaged in the work of reorganization and further strengthening its lines. According to the General Staff, the main body had already completed its retreat, and the rear guard southward was falling back slowly, keeping in touch with the pursuing columns of Japanese.

On the 17th it was officially reported that the Japanese had captured many prisoners at Tie Pass and the Russians had destroyed vast stores.

A telegram received from army headquarters in the field said :

"The railway station at Tie-ling is a splendid structure, and its arrangements equal to those of the station at Liau-yang. The

enemy's provisions and fodder, piled around this station, were set on fire, and two-thirds of the material was destroyed. We have captured numerous spoils, but have had no time to investigate them. A great number of prisoners have been taken in the direction of the right wing."

Tie-ling lay in the path of the Russian retreating army.

Tie-ling is 280 miles by railroad from Harbin. It may be of some interest to sketch, however roughly, the nature of the country through which the line runs, if only to make clearer the real nature of the problem which confronted Kuropatkin and his flying armies. It is true that the fertility of Manchuria extends as far as the alluvial river flats of the Sungari, but already at Tie-ling one sees from the train a notable diminution of the well-tended acres with which Mukden is encircled. Round one for miles on either side of the track are the dull iron-bound fields, deep-rutted and fallow, nursing the scanty wreaths of snow left from the night before, nestling to the leeward of the plow-folds which have baulked the hard, clean drive of the northern winds all the morning.

A BARREN COUNTRY.

The soil is grimy and unkempt, in color ochreous, in consistency half ice, and the dead, blackened bents of last season's straw poorly furnish the inhospitable surface. Trees, in this part of the world an unfailing sign of land which is barely worth the trouble of cultivation, swing beside the track in their winter nakedness, tangled again and again with a cat's cradle of mistletoe, swaying and ravelled out in the wind. But the imperious needs of the engine furnaces have long ago levelled most of the timber within two miles of the line.

In the far distance you may see the dim outlines of the foothills, which though hub-like behind the rushing foreground, still incline themselves inwards to the north, and after three or four hours of slow travel from Tie-ling they close ahead and hump themselves beneath our wheels. Then the utter barrenness of the long Siberian landscape is for the first time unfolded before the traveler's eyes.

Here there is nothing to break the monotony, no promise of better things when the tardy spring of Manchuria shall have slackened the hard gray-rimmed ground which runs up between the reddish spurs of the enfolding hills. Again and again one passes by bare rock-strewn water-courses, with a thin trickle of whitened ice set fast in the middle of the bed, which four months later is full of racing water from bank to bank. As night comes on the cold grips every object with an almost visible intensity.

Such is the country through which Kuropatkin had to retreat. He lost his best guns, half his men, and—more desperate than anything else, his men's confidence. You cannot play at the game which was adopted by the Grand Ducal party of undermining the authority of the commander-in-chief at the front without paying for it in the long run, and the reckoning now was a heavy one. For many months Kuropatkin had to fight an enemy of his own house at the front.

AN ENEMY IN THE REAR.

Now that Alexeieff was gone, the Russian generalissimo had an even more serious foe to combat in the unscrupulous committee into whose hands the destinies of Russia seemed irretrievably surrendered. The line behind him—at least in that direction which should have been behind him—was crowded with his wounded and his sick. There was no station from Kuan-chen-tse to Irkutsk which was not filled with his broken and sick soldiers; the trains no longer came through. His supplies and stores were put into one basket, and that he lost.

There had perhaps never been such a prospect before a retreating force as that which confronted Kuropatkin. In the retreat from Moscow the weather was Napoleon's greatest enemy. The weather in Manchuria was worse than that; Kuropatkin was hampered and harassed by the enemy, flank and rear, as Napoleon never was. The railway, his sole hope and reliance, might at any moment fail him, and the destruction of a girder across any one of the six large streams which barred his path might in itself decide his fate. These streams were already uneasy beneath the midday

sun. The frost of the night barely reassured their stability against the undertow of the fresh-fed mountain torrents beneath the heavy armor of the winter ice, and at any moment the spring might convert them into impassable rivers.

The line rises almost steadily all the way till the last thirty miles. Here the basin of the Sungari and a region of fertility is reached. The hills recede again from the eye, but only because the average level of the land is so high. To right and left there are wide plains stretching an unrelieved expanse of grey earth and rock right to the ramparts of the eastern hills which hide the town of Kirin.

WILDERNESS OF BOG AND MORASS.

As Kuropatkin knew well enough, this country was impassable in two months' time. In place of the hard frozen waste there was a wilderness of bog and morass through which no cart could flounder its way, and only a skilled guide could find a path, working warily from one eminence in the ground to another, along the "bunds" which, to the locally trained eye, separate off the area of one commune from those of the next. A few pigs, small, black and woolly, grout about beside the stations, the sidings and the rare fortified posts which were built to guard the line from Chunchuses and other wandering brigands.

As soon as the hills are left behind, the utter commonplace desolation of the scene redoubles. From horizon to horizon there is nothing to be seen but a neutral-tinted earth overhung with a heavy and threatening sky. Now and then a snow storm sweeps down across the track, and one can watch the driving flakes scatter in the wind along the hard floor of Manchuria. In a cutting there may be a tell-tale heap of dirty rufous snow, in some fresh cut of which one can trace well enough the alternate layers of snow and dirt which day by day have been added to the rigid accumulation all through the winter months. The telegraph lines fall and rise again beside the line, the verst stones drop behind with slow deliberation, and sometimes for an hour or an hour and a half we wait in the bitter wind for the late crossing of the train ahead.

There are no towns along the route. There are few enough at all, and those there are have been intentionally avoided by the surveyors of the railway. Kuan-chen-tse, in the distance, is betrayed in the evening by a few moving lights. You will rarely see a fixed point of illumination in a land where windows are boarded up all winter. Beyond there is no sign of human habitation, or even humanity, besides a few moving caravans of nomad Buriats, with their cream-colored, hairy ponies and restive mules going perhaps a pilgrimage westwards to the Taranath Lama at Urga.

There is no food to be had, no fodder, little enough fuel. Yet it was over this land that a beaten and demoralized army had to move, inspired by no hope save that of an empty chance of breaking down behind it the great bridge over the Sungari, which till lately was the very jewel of Russia's honor in all Manchuria. How many Japanese gave their lives in the early days of the war to destroy that bridge no one will ever know.

ZIGZAG TRENCHES AND GUN-PITS.

For some time prior to the battle of Liao-yang Russian engineers were devoting their utmost efforts to strengthening the position at Tie-ling by every device known to modern military experts. Roughly speaking, the diagonal along the Liao-ho on the west to the foot of the great slopes is about twelve miles, and the segment from the river to the mountains about eight. Looking down on the small plain between the town and the river, the eye is caught by a mass of zig-zag trenches and gun-pits, with redoubts carefully prepared for the reception of heavy artillery. Across the fairly broad stream a number of excellent pontoon bridges have been thrown at intervals of from a mile and a half to two miles, while strong earthworks curving northwestward—semi-permanent fortifications—are arranged to guard against flanking movements on that side.

Behind these a number of low hills have been utilized to the fullest extent for artillery and infantry. Mines cover nearly the whole extent of the defended front, which, in addition, has vast

stretches of wire entanglement, spread over honeycombs of pits, in the bottom of each of which is a sharpened stake, ready to impale the unfortunate who falls into the excavation. To hold the position a large force would naturally be required, but given such a force of determined men it should prove almost impregnable. For months a huge space outside the town was devoted to the field hospitals, and a number of the larger buildings in the town itself were occupied by the sick and wounded.

GREAT NUMBER OF ENTRENCHMENTS.

Military roads score the country from various points on the line of railway to the fortifications, but these, like all Russian thoroughfares in Manchuria, and, indeed, like those in Russia itself, are of very rude construction, and rain or melted snow speedily reduces them to a condition little better than the native cart tracks. There have been, however, a number of light railways laid down. As to the "iron-road" from Harbin to Tie-ling, for miles it has been supplemented by such a number of sidings that it is almost equal to a double line. Along the course of the trains entrenchments are continually to be seen, and for the most part the country on either side lies flat and uninteresting as far as the distant horizon.

This will give the reader some idea of the tremendous difficulty encountered by Kuropatkin of conducting the shattered remnants of his huge army to a place of safety. If he had been as famous in advancing as he was in conducting a retreat, he would have been the most renowned general in the world.

A sanguinary combat occurred on March 14 on the centre advanced line of the Russian army eight miles south of Tie Pass. The Russians repulsed the attack, and even made a small advance through a thousand corpses of Japanese, and advanced a large force on the right flank, where General Mistchenko, who had taken command of his detachment, though his wound had not yet healed, was holding the Japanese in check. The Russian troops regained their normal spirits and fought cheerfully.

Scouting exploits that pale the daring achievements of the

Moseby guerillas of the American Civil War were reported from General Kuroki's headquarters in the field.

Two detachments of Japanese cavalry, 150 men each were sent northward in January, when the opposing armies were confronting each other on the banks of the Sha River, where the bloody battles of earlier weeks had been fought. About one hundred men of each detachment returned, the others having lost their lives or liberty in the many brushes with the enemy.

Meanwhile they were forwarding invaluable information to Field Marshal Oyama, whose seeming familiarity with the Manchurian country afterward traversed in the sweep of the victorious army northward probably was based largely upon the reports of these scouting parties, who from time to time sent fragments of their numbers back over the perilous courses they had covered.

JAPAN'S ADVENTUROUS SCOUTS.

First, these rangers having no thought of danger or death, explored the Russian positions west of Mukden. Meanwhile, the Jap advance upon that ancient capital had begun, and Kuropatkin was engaged in strengthening the positions lost in the bloody routs of early March.

Hiding by day and traveling by night, the Jap scouts crept closer and closer into the Russian army zone, until they were in possession of the full secret of the Russian plans before Mukden. After numerous encounters with the Russian outposts, they proceeded northward to the west of the railroad, and there awaited the Mukden fighting and repulse.

At the right moment they blew up a section of the railway north of Manchu and cut the telegraph lines. Then, while the Russian armies, in full retreat, swarmed the Mukden basin, rushing toward the supposedly safe haven of Tie Pass, these scouts were zig-zagging their way to the northeast.

They fell afoul of swarms of Russian troops, and had more than one break-neck race with Cossack cavalrymen. But they proved that when a Jap soldier finds it good policy to run he can outstrip a Russian, just as he can overtake and crush the Musco-

vite when the latter is the pursued. In the bloody days that followed, when Kuropatkin was gathering together the remnants of his distracted army, and when he was making frantic preparations for the defense of Tie Pass, the Japanese Mosebys were thrusting their inquisitive noses into the very heart of the region that was later to become the theatre of war.

In their precocious flight they visited Kirin, prepared accurate maps of the region, and made copious notes of strategical points and bases of supply. Thus, while the Russians were evacuating Tie Pass and throwing their forces across the road leading from the railway to Kirin, the Japs were getting acquainted with the region far in advance of the Russian retreat—the very region that Kuropatkin was determined to hold, as the last chance of blockading the way to Harbin and Vladivostok.

RUSSIANS IGNORANT OF THE COUNTRY.

Seeming to have timed their movements to every step in Oyama's triumphant advance, the scouts swung into Kaiyuan only a few days after the Russians had been dislodged from that important position north of Tie Pass. There they were welcomed by the comrades they had left two months before on the banks of the Sha River. Meanwhile they had swung through the thick of the Russian army, explored the whole country over which the retreat was destined to extend, and had penetrated to the point, far to the northeast, toward which the Russians were striving to make their way.

The amazing ignorance of the country displayed by the Russians, although they were occupying it with an immense army and were in a position to make copious maps and observations, is thrown into a sharp contrast by the method employed by Oyama to familiarize himself with the region the enemy held.

On March 17th it was officially stated that General Kuropatkin had been permitted to resign the command of the Russian armies in Eastern Asia. Much sympathy was felt for this General, even by those whose sympathies were not deeply enlisted on the Russian side. Worsted as he had been in battle after battle, he

was, nevertheless, very far indeed from being disgraced. On the contrary, he emerged from the ordeal, which finally proved too much for him, with considerable credit. It is true he did not achieve success under circumstances in which success could not reasonably have been expected. A military genius of the very first order could hardly have prevailed against the disabilities under which the Russian armies labored throughout this inauspicious campaign.

AT FAULT IN HIS TACTICS.

It is just possible that a Napoleon or a Charles XII. might have inflicted a defeat upon the Japanese in the battle-series, and so have stayed the tide of calamity. Kuropatkin, no doubt, contributed largely to his own defeat before Mukden by his faulty tactical dispositions. He had failed to learn, or, at any rate, had neglected to practise, the great lesson of modern warfare, which is, that the defence, to be effective, must be as mobile as the attack. He anchored his troops to their burrows and entrenchments, like—to compare small things with great—Cronje at Paardeberg, and allowed Oku and Nogi to march right round his flank, just as French's horsemen headed off the Boers in the decisive little action on the Free State frontier.

Yet if Kuropatkin made many mistakes, he displayed remarkable resourcefulness, energy, and resolution. He owed little to his Government, which provoked war while absolutely neglecting to strengthen its military position. Kuropatkin found himself, at the outset, with a very inadequate force. His Fabian strategy, at least, gave the Russian War Office time to pull itself together and to get the Trans-Siberian Railway into working order. He could not save Port Arthur, in spite of the hopeless attempt forced upon him by imperious instructions from St. Petersburg, but he kept his army in being, and postponed the Japanese conquest of Manchuria for many months.

Unfortunately for him, his employers were in no condition to take advantage of the opportunities he offered them. Instead of devoting its whole energies to retrieve the initial reverses of the war, the Russian government had its hands full with disaffection

at home. It was with an army not only shaken by previous disaster, but fermenting with political passion, that Kuropatkin awaited the irresistible sweep of Oyama's victorious legions.

Yet the Russian soldiers, even in the Mukden battle, seem to have fought well enough, and in places magnificently. Considering that they were beaten in every engagement since the beginning of the campaign, it was wonderful that their cohesion and discipline held out so long, and the dogged courage of the rank and file can only excite admiration. The triumphs of the Japanese were the more notable in that they were won over a highly capable commander, at the head of troops who have no superiors in the world for the stolid bravery with which they will struggle to the last against defeat.

NEW COMMANDER APPOINTED.

General Kuropatkin left his army. The old idol of the private soldier was dismissed and disgraced, and General Linevitch, commander of the first army, was appointed to succeed him in command of all the Russian land and sea forces operating against Japan.

The word disgrace was written in large letters in the laconic imperial order gazetted, which contained not a single word of praise and also disposed of the rumor that Kuropatkin had asked to be relieved. The Russian military annals contain no more bitter imperial rebuke.

Although General Kuropatkin's downfall was inevitable from the military standpoint, nevertheless it aroused sympathy in circles familiar with the long campaign that had been waged against him by the General Staff. General Sakharoff was his open enemy and General Dragomiroff his most severe critic; and many of his own subordinates were jealous and grudgingly obedient.

Many epigrams about General Kuropatkin's shortcomings were attributed to General Dragomiroff, and the supersessions of the former at such a critical moment was directly attributable to Dragomiroff's advice, Emperor Nicholas giving ear to the veteran strategist in military matters.

General Linevitch was distinctively a line officer, with a long record as a fighter. He was almost as cordially disliked by the General Staff as his predecessor, and there was also bad blood between Kuropatkin and Linevitch dating from a personal quarrel in the days when Kuropatkin was commander of the trans-Baikal army, which led Linevitch to demand satisfaction. Kuropatkin assumed the position that he could not fight an officer of an inferior rank.

While it was known that the War Council had already decided to supplant Kuropatkin after the Mukden disaster, the decision to confer the task of saving the remainder of the army on Linevitch in the very midst of its flight, came as a surprise. It transpired that Emperor Nicholas, upon the advice of General Dragomiroff and War Minister Sakharoff, determined that the step was necessary when it became apparent that Kuropatkin, while concentrating for a stand at Tie Pass, seemed unaware that the Japanese had worked around westward again, and practically allowed himself to be surprised. Old reports brought by General Gripenberg regarding Kuropatkin's failing mentality also had influence.

DESPERATE TASK OF THE NEW GENERAL.

The task confided to Linevitch of withdrawing what was left of the great army of 350,000 men to Harbin was a desperate one. He was hemmed in on all sides. General Kawamura presumably was pressing northward through the mountains eastward, ready to swoop down; Generals Nogi and Oku were on the west of the Russian forces; the whole line of the railroad was threatened, if not already cut, and Chinese bandits were even reported to be in the rear of Harbin. A consummation of the Mukden disaster was feared. Napoleon's plight in the retreat from Moscow, with Kutu-soff's Cossacks harassing the starving, freezing Frenchmen, was hardly as bad or as dangerous.

Lieutenant General Linevitch, the new commander of the Russian land and sea forces in the Far East, was fighting in the Caucasus when he was twenty-one, took part in the Russo-Turkish war of 1877-78, and then took part in all of Russia's Asiatic cam-

paigus. Linevitch was also prominent in the relief of the legations at Peking. He was greatly beloved by the soldiers because of his constant solicitude for their welfare.

At the battle of Mukden General Linevitch stubbornly held his position and repulsed thirteen consecutive attacks of the Japanese, but in spite of this he escaped with slight losses, and on March 13th he entered the Russian lines south of Tie Pass with his lines in perfect order. The following day the Russian troops, apparently those commanded by General Linevitch, repulsed a Japanese attack at the Fan River, the Japanese leaving a thousand men killed before the Russian position.

CHAPTER XLII.

OYAMA THE ORIENTAL NAPOLEON.

Hero's Varied Career—Pen Picture of Oyama—Brilliant Campaign—Moves on the Chessboard of War—Battle of Liau-yang—Bloody Conflict Around Mukden—Oyama's Personal Traits—Mikado's Army Laws—Oyama's Wife Educated in America—Her Services in Behalf of the Wounded.

FIELD MARSHAL the Marquis Oyama, chief of the General Staff and Commander-in-Chief of the Japanese Army, is one of the few generals of modern times who may claim to rank among the giants of war who have led troops in the field. The English call him the Wellington of Manchuria, which is the highest praise they can bestow on any commander, but already in European capitals, strategists, amazed by the boldness of a campaign crowned with complete success, style him the Napoleon of the Orient.

It is certain that no general, fighting against a worthy enemy, has achieved so unbroken a series of victories; that none has conceived a more stupendous plan of campaign to execute it so successfully; that none has exceeded the gigantic feat of driving from stronghold to stronghold and finally enveloping a force as big as the army of General Kuropatkin.

The Marquis Oyama, who is upwards of 60 years old, was educated in France, and served in the Franco-Prussian War as an attache. Up to the time he made his report on that conflict the Japanese Army, which was only in its beginning as a modern force, was being trained on the French model. After his return home this system gave way to that of the Prussian, and this in turn has been greatly improved by Japanese originality and by the adoption of what is best and most useful in the other armies of the world.

Later in life Oyama again traveled extensively in Europe,

absorbing the ideas of the military systems, and once more in Japan threw himself into recasting the whole military system, winning the appreciation and favor of the Emperor and of Field Marshal the Marquis Yamagata.

To Marquis Oyama among others belongs the glory of creating the Japanese army inside of thirty years. Nor was his genius confined to the Ministry of War, as he stood for a time at the head of the navy, and also as Minister of Education when the transition of the new world Power was completing.

OYAMA'S PERSONAL TRAITS.

A queer compound of ugliness, wit, strength and Oriental cunning, the Marquis Oyama has an enormously receptive mind. He is a rapid and deep thinker, and not only attracts, but molds those about him to any set purpose with Napoleonic directness although with admirable and characteristic Japanese grace. He is a linguist, as are most of the Japanese officers, an advantage not possessed in the same proportion in any other military or naval service in the world. Smallpox has pitted his round, brown face, but his ugliness is relieved by a pair of magnetic black eyes, which twinkle with humor, or squint when their owner is deep in thought.

The first real war experience in which he was an actor came in the civil war in Japan, in which the Satsuma revolt was suppressed, but fame came to him in the China-Japanese War in 1894. As a strategist and commander he there achieved distinction which was heightened by his wonderful work in the later Manchurian campaign. He was the captor of Port Arthur—which he took from the Chinese garrison in a morning. Russian cartoonists ridiculed him many years, making little of his victory, the fruits of which Russia and the Powers were to prevent the Japanese from enjoying.

Marquis Oyama has a memory for these things, and his command in the field against Russia was assured before war broke out. For a time he sat at home, advising and directing General Kuroki, as became the chief of the General Staff under the

Japanese system. When the right moment arrived, the Marquis moved into the field, where he remained personally directing a campaign unexcelled in brilliancy by any of which history tells.

Oyama started from Tokio for his new and important field on July 6, 1904, and in the eight months following that date—half of which had to be passed in dreadful winter quarters—he achieved supremacy over a magnificent army approximately equal in numbers to his own, and commanded by a man whose genius even in continuous reverses compelled the admiration of the whole world.

When Oyama, with his chief of staff, Kodama, arrived in Manchuria, he found that the Russian Port Arthur force had been cut off, and by the Fourth Japanese army, under Nogi, was being gradually forced into the great fortress.

A REMARKABLE CAMPAIGN.

The remarkable campaign against Port Arthur formed but a link in the chain forged by the other three armies simultaneously and harmoniously, to eventually complete a magic circle, within whose circumference should be inclosed and neutralized the Russian power that had been threatening the very independence of the Empire of the Rising Sun.

Having satisfactorily accounted for the Russian forces in Port Arthur by the assignment of the Fourth army to that task, Oyama undertook to arrange his available forces in the best possible positions for striking a decisive blow at the enemy on his northern front. The First army, under Kuroki, the victor of the first battle, was on the right, based on Fengwangcheng. The Third, under Nodzu, in the center, based on Suyen, and the Second, under Oku, the victor of Nanshan and Vafangow, moving north on the railroad south of Newchwang.

The Russian army based on Liau-yang under General Kuropatkin, extended south on the railroad as far as Newchwang and Kaiping, and held all the mountain passes east of the railroad in the Fenchui Mountains—thus protecting his base and line of communications.

Kuropatkin's active forces at this time, exclusive of the garrisons at Vladivostok, Port Arthur and the necessary railway guards, were approximately equal in numbers to the First, Second and Fourth Japanese armies, under Oyama. Kuropatkin's force, however, appears to have been still imperfectly organized and not suitable for taking the offensive in a campaign against well-organized and thoroughly disciplined troops such as the Japanese. It appears also that the Russian commander was considerably interfered with in his plan of action by Admiral Alexeieff, who was still viceroy at that time.

While the campaign was being pushed against Port Arthur by the Fourth army, the Japanese commander-in-chief determined to attack with all his power the Russian forces in his front and gave the signal for the movement of his great armies. Kuroki and Nodzu moved against the mountain passes while Oku continued his advance north on the railroad. All roads and other lines of communication from the Japanese line, a hundred miles long, converged toward Liau-yang, the base of the Russian army.

ATTACKING THE ENEMY'S BASE.

The movement of the Japanese armies was naturally made with the view of concentrating here and giving battle if not in the hope of destroying the enemy, at least in the expectation of depriving him of a strong base and forcing him into less comfortable quarters, depriving him of a large amount of local supplies and securing a more favorable locality for the winter quarters of the Japanese armies.

By the first of August all the mountain passes southeast of Liau-yang were in the hands of the Japanese, and their various columns, like mighty snakes, were slowly but surely getting into position to make a leap at the sullen foe, whose methodical retreat under a great commander emphasized the national characteristic of the Russian soldier, already well established in history, the national trait that knows so well how to sacrifice and the exercise of which sent home in sorrow and disgrace from the plains of Moscow the greatest commander that ever lived.

Oyama's columns were now about twenty miles from Liau-yang, to the south, southeast and east. During the next three weeks he moved forward his reserve ammunition and supplies, brought up at the same time all possible reinforcements, reconnoitred the Russian position and made his plans for battle. This battle, known as the battle of Liau-yang, was begun on August 26, and lasted practically for ten days. It must be recorded as one of the world's great battles, though the results achieved did not mark a turning point in history. The turning point in the battle was the bold flanking movement directed by two divisions of Kuroki's army, taking in flank the Russian forces north of the Taitse River and threatening the lines of communication of the Russian army.

A MASTERFUL RETREAT.

The masterful retreat made by the Russian commander, saving all of his artillery and carrying off all of his wounded and practically all of his supplies, convinced the Japanese commander-in-chief that his armies were not sufficiently large to strike a finishing blow at his antagonist, and it was at this time that he demanded energetic action at Port Arthur in the hope of increasing his forces by adding to them the fourth army after the fall of Port Arthur.

It was at this time also that he conveyed to the Emperor the information that the army must be increased if the foe was to be speedily overcome. The loyal and brave troops at Port Arthur responded with the energy that can only come from brave men, and the Japanese Government responded no less energetically and authorized an increase in the army of about a quarter of a million men.

After the battle of Liau-yang the Russians retreated to the Hun river, south of Mukden, keeping contact with and energetically resisting the advance of the pursuing Japanese.

Liau-yang has not been a decisive battle; the Russian army retained its morale, as was shown when in less than a month later it took the offensive and with all its might attacked the Japanese lines in a most determined manner. The Japanese proved, how-

ever, too strong to be driven back, and, in turn, assumed the offensive, driving the Russian army across the Shakhe river, but was unable to gain further ground. Oyama determined to intrench, establish his winter quarters and provision for an early spring campaign.

Mukden is about the latitude of Chicago, a little more elevated, hence a trifle colder, probably a little less snow, so that by the middle of March the ice begins to disappear from the rivers. The Hun river is not fordable in the vicinity of Mukden.

These considerations doubtless influenced the Japanese commander to take the offensive, when the cold was still severe, when his movements were still unlooked for by the enemy and when a defeat would be all the more destructive to his antagonist.

OYAMA'S DARING MOVEMENTS.

Combined strategical and tactical considerations determined the time for the attack. Oyama's belief in his superiority in numbers and efficiency justified him in making his great and hazardous turning movements in the hope of shattering the legions of his foe and reducing the morale of his army to such an extent that its resisting power might not be equal to the future attacks of the Japanese forces available for offensive operations.

The methodical and at all times brilliant work of the armies commanded by Marquis Oyama, together with the work previously accomplished in the China-Japanese War and as the chief of the Japanese General Staff, places him well up among the great commanders of modern times.

The following is an additional account of the great general, which furnishes interesting information concerning his traits of character and his career :

" Marshal Oyama has been a soldier all his life," said Baron Kaneko, the eminent Japanese statesman, when interviewed in New York. " I know him well, having been his colleague for several years in the Cabinet. He comes of fighting stock, being of the Satsuma clan and the descendant of centuries of Samurai. Tradition gave him the instincts of the soldier and his education

developed them. The Japanese army of to-day is largely his creation."

Marshal Oyama's exploits in this war have made the world ring with his name, and have so amazed the military experts that they are comparing him with Hannibal, Washington, Napoleon and Cæsar.

Now, what sort of a man is this military genius before whose onslaughts the giant fabric of Russian glory built up by centuries of Czars has crumbled like a boy's sand castle before the rush of the tide? Let Baron Kaneko, in the wisdom of his long association, official and personal answer :

BIG MAN WITH BROAD SHOULDERS.

"Unlike most Japanese, the Marquis Oyama is a big man. He is tall, broad-shouldered, deep-chested and inclined to stoutness. He is, in his official relations, a man of few words, but in society most genial and charming, fond of wit, with a delicious sarcasm and a great fund of humor. In his home or at an entertainment he is always the centre of a group of bright men, officers of the army, foreign diplomats and men of learning. These are the men whom he attracts and holds by his delightful personalty.

"He is a man of tremendous foresight—always looking ahead and seeing what will be necessary to do almost as if he had prophetic vision. He was about twenty-four years old in 1868, when he took part in the war of the restoration of the Emperor.

"After that war he rose steadily in military rank, and traveled a great deal in foreign countries. In the years between 1880 and 1889 he was in the Cabinet a large part of the time. While he was Minister of War with Count Katsura, the present Premier, as Vice-Minister, they between them organized the Japanese army on a modern basis—organized it as it is to-day. When the first Parliament met in 1890, it was necessary to place before it the complete army scheme, in all its details, in order that the representatives of the people might know what it was to cost. This stupendous task he and Count Katsura finished well before the time, which illustrates what a capacity for organization he had.

“There are many great soldiers who are splendid organizers, but not much use as actual fighters. Marshal Oyama is not of these. He is a fine, practical fighter, as his campaigns against China and Russia show; a magnificent and daring strategist and a man of great personal bravery. He has the valuable faculty of drawing about him men of high character and ability, of inspiring them and getting them to work together without friction.

“His personal staff in the present war is the best illustration of this. Nogi, Kuroki, Nodzu and the others were all his personal selection, and no finer staff could have been gathered. This quality of choosing his subordinates in order that the right man may be always in the right place extends down through the whole army. Oyama knows his officers and knows how to place them where they can do the most effective work.

“Thus under him the army is like a perfect pyramid, with Marshal Oyama at the top, the generals under him, the officers and non-commissioned officers in their several grades, and, lastly, the base of the common soldiers.

PRECEPTS OF THE EMPEROR.

“He, like every other man in the army, has before his eyes the seven precepts which his Majesty the Emperor laid down in his edict of January 4, 1882. You know the Japanese army has the Emperor as its General-in-Chief, and the royal family, including the Empress, only below him. So his edicts are the army's law.

“In the edict I have mentioned the Emperor directed that on the walls of the barracks and on the sides of the tents, at the foot of every soldier's cot, a printed copy of the seven moral principles should be hung, in order that the last thing the soldier sees on retiring for the night and the very first thing that greets him on awakening may be these precepts.

“Every morning after roll-call the captain of each company, or, it may be, only a corporal, reads these precepts aloud to his men. He then makes the men recite them in a body, and afterward calls upon the soldiers individually to recite them.

“In barracks the officers not only drill their men in the knowl-

edge of these precepts, but they explain them in detail, illustrating their explanations with examples drawn from history. Deeds of Washington, Alexander, Cæsar, Napoleon, Grant and the other men whose valor has made them famous are told to the men in order that they may know the precepts in their practical application as well as in theory.

REASONS FOR PERSONAL VALOR.

“President Eliot, of Harvard University, asked me recently to explain to him the real reason for the personal valor of our soldiers. I told him it was due to the practice of these precepts. Here they are, as I have translated them from the edict for President Eliot :

“1. To be sincere and loyal, and guard against untruthfulness.

“2. To respect superiors, keep true to comrades and guard against lawlessness and insolence.

“3. To obey the command of superiors, irrespective of its nature, and never to resist or disregard it.

“4. To prize bravery and courage and be diligent in the performance of duties, and guard against cowardice and timidity.

“5. To boast not of brutal courage, and neither quarrel with nor insult others, which will incite general hatred.”

“Satsuma clan, of which Marquis Oyama is a member, is the best and most aristocratic in Japan. The Satsumas have always been great fighters, good soldiers, with the true spirit of the Samura, and they are physically a larger race than most of the other Japanese. They have also been among my country’s greatest artists, as the exquisite pottery turned out in Satsuma even to-day bears witness.”

“Is the Marquis Oyama a rich man?”

“Not what you would call rich in this country, but he is quite comfortably well off as things go in Japan.”

“Do you know what Oyama’s religion is, whether it is Christian, Buddhist, Shintoist or what?”

“Really,” said the Baron Ranoko, with a deprecating smile,

"I never asked him; you know we do not ask such personal questions in Japan. A man's religious belief concerns no one but himself, after all."

An excellent picture of this big smashing soldier, Marshal Oyama, was given by a newspaper correspondent just after the battle of Liau-yang, on the occasion of an afternoon tea given by Oyama at his headquarters in the house and garden which General Kuropatkin had just vacated.

FIELD MARSHAL'S HIGH POSITION.

"I hardly know," wrote this correspondent, "whom to compare him with that you may understand him. Imagine what in America may be called an old-fashioned gentleman, having instead of primness and austerity a boy's spirits, and you should have a fair picture. Some London correspondent wrote of him as a commonplace general; another that he was not a Napoleon; to both of which remarks, by the way, the censor objected, till the writer said he would quit the army and forward the characterization from outside.

"I don't think the field marshal will care; his position as an influential nobleman suffices, and brilliancies of strategies are left to Kodama, and brilliancy of execution to the generals of the armies. Generals may be jealous of one another, but none is jealous of him or his authority, and that is a useful qualification for a commander-in-chief."

The correspondent says elsewhere: "He is taller than any of his officers; his face is kindly, that of a generous-spirited man who has lived healthfully. His marquis was among those six or seven Japanese girls who were sent to America to be taught in Western fashion when the first Japanese Embassy departed in 1871. She, like most of the girls, was graduated from Vassar.

"One is the wife of Admiral Urin; another, in a country where every girl marries, has remained single, and has started a girls' school. The Field Marshal himself served bouillon in thin cups, salads and cold mutton, and caviare sandwiches and cigars, and other captured refectations, as if eager for the pleasure of his

guests ; and the jugglery and 'soldier magic' he provided afterward he enjoyed like a boy."

Just after the war between Japan and China, Colonel John A. Cockerill visited the then Count Oyama at his home. In the course of their interview Oyama said China was a great bubble, and the Japanese had now burst it. Colonel Cockerill suggested that Russia might be something of the same order, and that Japan might be called upon to perform a similar service. The Marshal's reply to this, as reported by Colonel Cockerill, was an incredulous laugh. The Colonel was in that instance more of a prophet than the Marshal, for it does seem as if Russia had proved to be a bubble, and that Oyama has done the pricking.

GREAT PRIDE IN HIS SOLDIERS.

In his account of his visit to Oyama Colonel Cockerill wrote :

"Speaking of the great work accomplished by the Japanese the Marshal said: 'I am very proud of my soldiers. Their discipline, obedience and patriotism achieved all. There is no great opportunity to test their qualities in full, for the enemy would not stand long enough for that. At the same time I do not regard the Chinese as lacking in soldierly qualities. Their officers in the late war were worthless and the men untrained. Led by good men and properly organized, I think they would give a good account of themselves.'

"I asked the Marshal if he believed the Japanese soldiers had endurance equal to the European soldiers, and if he thought they had the endurance on the field—the real, tenacious, fighting instinct, which could withstand the siege and the weeks' hard pounding.

"As to that I cannot say,' he replied, 'but they have stood all tests. They are not impulsive, but determined and earnest. They require little food, and that is very important in prolonged fighting. Exposure does not concern them. They exhibited their fighting qualities in the Satsuma rebellion in 1879. Then Japanese met Japanese, and the result was the killing of a great many more people than in this late war, and in much less time.'

“ ‘Do you regard the Japanese soldier as the equal of the Russian?’ I asked.

“ ‘I cannot judge, but I certainly think so,’ said the Marshal.”

The career of Iwawa Oyama has been an active one, both in war and in politics. As has been said already, he is of the Satsuma clan, born of noble parents and educated as a Sumurai would have been. His first active service in the field was in 1868, when he joined his cousins, the Counts Saigo, in leading the revolutionary movement which restored the Mikado to the throne of his ancestors. He entered the war as a captain and at its close was made major general.

AN OBSERVER OF EUROPEAN WAR.

When the Franco-Prussian War broke out in 1870 he was sent by the Emperor to observe it. He watched closely and stored away in his retentive mind every detail of what he saw. At the close of the war he returned home, coming by the way of the United States and spending a few days in New York. He then became Vice-Minister of War and started to work on his plans for reorganizing the Japanese army. In this he first used the German army as his model, but subsequently discarded it and made more use of the French system.

Soon after his return his cousin, Count Saigo, rebelled. But Oyama remained loyal to his Emperor and commanded a division of the army in the long civil war which resulted in the death of 20,000 men, including Saigo. For these services he was decorated with the Order of the Chrysanthemum and made Assistant Minister of War and Chief of Police. In 1880 he became Minister of War, and he spent the next ten years in perfecting his army organization, as Baron Kaneko explains.

In 1890 he was a full general, Count Yamagata being the only other man with that high rank. He and Yamagata had joint command of the armies that later went to Manchuria to fight the Chinese, and when Yamagata was invalided home Oyama was left in supreme command. After a brief but memorable campaign he took Port Arthur, a fortress the Chinese had been fortifying for

twenty years, and which it was believed was impregnable. So well was his campaign planned that Port Arthur fell the night after his arrival under its walls. He had landed at Takushan and taken position after position without even a repulse.

As a matter of fact, there was not much actual fighting to be proud of, for the Chinese ran away whenever they were attacked. With his 30,000 men he swept them around the Gulf of Pechili, took Wei-Hai-We and destroyed the Chinese fleet. The glory of this campaign was due rather to the precision of the tactics, the intimate knowledge of the enemy's country and the perfection of the organization than to any battles. Had not the powers stepped in and called a halt the victorious Oyama would have swept on to Peking. But the war was stopped and the Powers managed to despoil Japan of the fruits of her victory.

GAINED THE CORONET OF A MARQUIS.

The campaign was not lost, however, for the knowledge gained in it has proved invaluable to the generals who have directed the war against Russia. Besides giving them a personal knowledge of the country, it proved to them that Japanese soldiers were as good in the field as on paper, and it also gave them the lessons in commissariat that can be learned only by actual experience in warfare.

Oyama's reward for this campaign was the coronet of a marquis and the baton of a field marshal.

Scarcely less interesting to American eyes than the marshal is his wife, the girl who was known at Vassar as Sutenatsu Yamakawa. Her former college mates remember her as a bright little girl, always ready for any kind of innocent fun, a frolicsome young person with an inexhaustible fund of humor. During the twelve years she spent in this country she lived at the house of Rev. Dr. Leonard Bacon, at New Haven, and at Vassar College. She came here when twelve years old, and when she returned to Japan was almost as American in her ideas and ways as any of her school mates. She was married to Oyama soon after her return. She is a Christian and speaks Russian, French, German and English with but little accent.

Colonel Cockerill, in the already-quoted account of his visit to their home, wrote :

“The formality of handshaking over, the Count stepped to the door and called some one. In a moment I was presented to the Countess, a charming, graceful little woman, who spoke the sweetest English I have listened to in Japan. It was English, with just enough accent to be musical, and it was accompanied by sparkling, intelligent eyes and gracious smiles. She wore the full Japanese house costumes, but her hair was done up in European style, with the cunningest bangs, which greatly softened her face.

A PREPOSSESSING WOMAN.

“The Countess Oyama is in every sense a remarkable woman. She is far more vivacious than the average Japanese lady, her manner being decidedly French. It was her misfortune that she had little opportunity to speak English, she said, at the same time chatting in the best idiomatic English, though halting occasionally for a word.

“I asked her if she had seen something of the war. She said that she had spent some time at Hiroshima with the Empress and other ladies, looking after the sick soldiers in the hospitals, making lint and furthering the interests of the Red Cross Society. She and a number of other ladies, she said, had made up their minds to go to the front, had the war been prolonged, in the capacity of Florence Nightingales.”

And so in this war, the Marquise Oyama has devoted herself to the wounded, organizing staffs of nurses, visiting the hospitals and sewing with her own fingers bandages and clothes for the soldiers her husband is leading.

No greater honors can come to Marshal Oyama than those his Emperor has already bestowed, even should he annihilate the power of Russia in Asia, but his success will place his name in one of the noblest niches of the temple of fame, and the world will look upon him as the peer of Washington, of Hannibal, of Napoleon.

CHAPTER XLIII.

GREAT NAVAL VICTORY IN THE SEA OF JAPAN.

Russian Fleet Reaches the Straits of Korea—Admiral Togo in Waiting with Japanese Fleet—Russians Fire First Shots—Torpedo Flotilla Joins the Attack—Fierce Combat Between Big Battleships—Russian Ships go Down—Remnant Tries to Escape—Hot Pursuit by Japanese—Greatest Naval Victory Recorded in History.

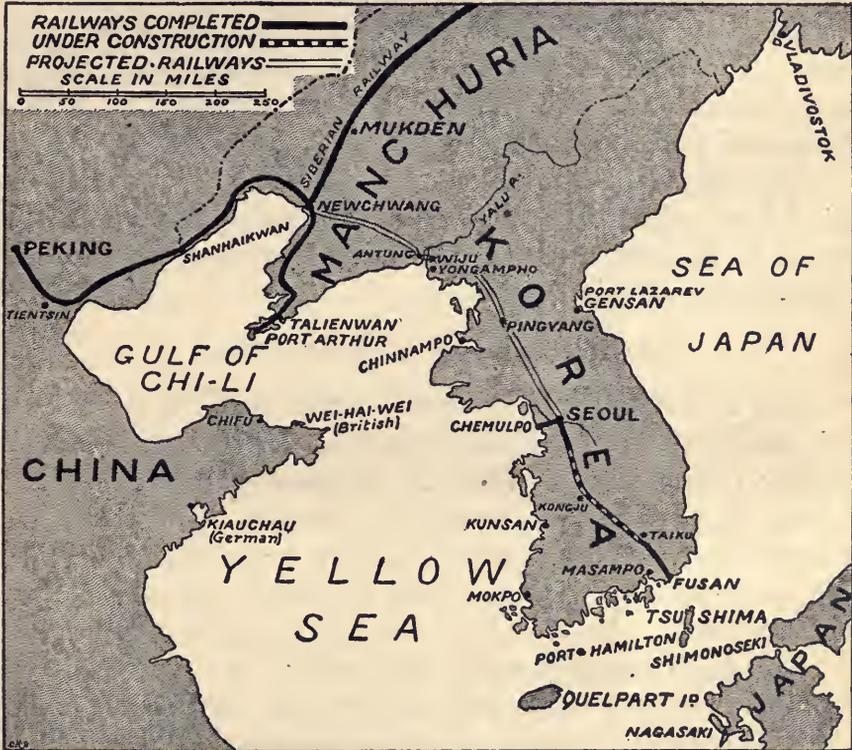
ON MAY 27th and 28th, 1905, the great Russian fleet, the powerful armada that was supposed to be invincible, was met and practically annihilated in the Straits of Korea by Admiral Togo, commander of Japan's formidable naval squadron. The nations of both hemispheres were thrilled by the announcement that Russia's immense fleet, which had long been in preparation and had sailed for the East in the preceding October, had met its Waterloo, or rather its Trafalgar. It was known to the whole world that this would be a crisis battle, and would have perhaps a decisive effect upon the war between the two nations. The conflict was anticipated with keen anxiety. It will be referred to as the greatest naval battle recorded in history. Only Admiral Dewey's sweeping victory over the ships of Spain in the harbor of Manila approached it in magnitude.

The Russian Admiral, Rojestvensky reached Quelpart Island, Korea, early Saturday, May 27, and headed for the Tsu Islands. He had his main fighting vessels, with a number of light cruisers and transports. The disposition of the Japanese fleet was an ideal one. Admiral Togo had waited for weeks in the vicinity of the Tsu Islands, refusing to be lured away and to forfeit his advantage. The inner line was held by Admiral Togo with the battleships and Vice-Admiral Kamimura with the cruisers. Rear Admiral Kataoka, with the light squadron, first attacked Rojestvensky.

A Japanese officer, who was an eye-witness of the combat,

furnishes the following account of the great battle of the Sea of Japan in the Tsu Islands:

"At 5.30 Saturday morning a wireless message reading, 'The enemy's squadron is in sight,' reached the naval base. This message was transmitted to all our ships by the flagship, with instructions to get ready for action. Our squadron left their rendezvous



MAP OF MANCHURIA, KOREA AND THE SCENE OF THE GREAT NAVAL BATTLE OF THE SEA OF JAPAN.

and headed for the eastern channel of Tsushima. Our men seemed to be filled with new inspiration, and were eager for the long-delayed fight to begin.

"When Tsushima was sighted to the southwest the sea was rough and the torpedo boats were forced to run for the shelter of the islands. Our third fighting squadron, with the Takachiho to port, reconnoitered the Russian course, and at 11.30 A. M. informed the main squadron by wireless telegraph that the Russian ships

were passing into the east channel, whereupon our main squadron, changing its course somewhat to the southward, came in sight of Okinshima (Ikinoshima) at 1 o'clock in the afternoon.

"The third division arrived later and joined the main squadron. The first and second divisions, accompanied by the destroyer flotilla, changed to a westerly course, while the third division and the fourth destroyer flotilla headed slightly eastward. During the manœuver the Russian flagship appeared to the southward at 1.45 o'clock. The Russians steamed up in double column. The fleet was numerous, but no living being was visible. The Russian ships seemed to be in good order.

"Our ships hoisted the flag of action, the Mikasa signaling, 'The defense of our Empire depends upon this action. You are expected to do your utmost.' Our men seemed silently to weigh the significance of this signal.

BEGINNING OF THE BATTLE.

"Our first and second divisions turned to the Russians' starboard, while the third division kept in close touch with the preceding two divisions. With the Japanese ships proceeding in this order, it was 2.13 o'clock when the Russians opened fire. The first two shots fell short of our line, and it was some minutes later before we commenced firing. Then the battle was on, with firing from both sides.

"Our destroyers kept on the port side of the main squadron, and in this formation we pressed the Russians against the coast of Kiushiu (the southernmost of the three main islands of Japan), and they were obliged to change their course to the east. We so manœuvered our ships as to have their bows paralleled to the north side of the Russian line. The Mikasa, of our first division, which had been leading, changed to the rear of the line, while the Kasuga headed the line.

"The engagement now became very fierce. The Borodino was seen to be on fire. A little later the Russians headed west and we changed our course accordingly. Five ships of our second division concentrated their fire on the Borodino. Our first division

now began firing vigorously, proceeding parallel with the Russian line, and as we began to press against the head of the Russian line our third division veered to the Russian rear, thus enveloping their ship.

“The engagement proceeded hotly. Our second division followed a course parallel with the northern side of the Russians and this movement completed the envelopment. The Russian ships were seen trying to break through, and our destroyer flotilla intercepted this new course. This state of envelopment continued until the following day, with the ships at varying distances. Thus enclosed on all sides, the Russians were helpless and powerless to escape the circle.

“Previous instructions had been given the destroyers and torpedo boats to attack the Russian ships. Following instructions, the fifth destroyer flotilla advanced against a Russian ship, upon which the second division had been concentrating its fire, signaling: ‘We are going to give the last thrust at them.’

TORPEDO FLOTILLA IN THE FIGHT.

“The Russian ship continued to fight, and, seeing the approaching torpedo boats, directed its fire on them. Undaunted, our destroyers pressed forward, the Chitose meantime continuing its fire. The torpedo flotilla arrived within a short distance of the Russian ship, and the Shiranus fired the first shot. Two other torpedo boats fired one each. The Shiranus received two shells, but the other boats were not damaged. The Russian ship was completely sunk.

“Sundown saw the battle raging furiously. Our shells were evidently telling on the Russians, who showed signs of confusion. Our fifth torpedo flotilla, after destroying the Borodino, followed in the wake of our second division, the signal reading: ‘Something like the Russians’ submarines have been sighted. Attack them.’

“The flotilla followed and located the object, which proved to be a sinking ship with its overturned bottom showing. Thirty survivors clung to the wreck, crying for assistance. Firing ceased with the approach of darkness. According to orders

previously given for a torpedo attack after dark, all the destroyer flotilla, dividing into two squadrons, proceeded to attack the Russians during the whole night. The Russians frustrated the first and second attacks with searchlights.

“A third attempt was carefully made, and the *Yugiri* sank a ship of the *Borodino* type, and also hit others. During the night the Russians continued to move, and we preserved our enveloping movement some distance from the Russian position. The Russian ships headed northeast after daybreak, hoping to reach Vladivostok. Our officers and men were determined that not a ship should escape, and resolved not to relax their efforts until they had succeeded in either sinking or capturing every Russian ship.

HEAVY LOSS BY THE RUSSIANS.

“Our ships always kept ahead of the Russians. The battle was resumed at 9 o'clock Sunday morning, twelve miles east of Chiyupyon Bay, and lasted all day. Here the Russians suffered their heaviest losses. They seemed unprepared to repel night attacks. During our first night attack the Russians showed nine searchlights and frustrated the attacks, but clearly gave us the location of the fleet, which brought success later.”

The report of Admiral Togo, received May 31, was given out next day. It said Rear Admiral Voelkersam, commander of the Russian battleship squadron, was killed by the first true shot of the battle. It struck the conning tower of the *Oslibia*, the flagship of Voelkersam.

The report continued as follows: “The commander of *Kasuga* returned with survivors of the *Donskoi* and reported that the *Donskoi*, on the morning of May 29th, opened her Kingston valve and sank. Those on board, including survivors from *Oslibia* and the destroyer *Douinvi*, landed on *Urleung* Island. The *Buiny* took aboard *Rojestvensky* and staff before the sinking of the flagship in the afternoon of May 27th, and also 200 from the *Oslibia*; but finding navigation difficult, transferred *Rojestvensky* and his staff to the *Biedovy*, and while running northward met on the morning

of May 28th the Donskoi, to which all aboard were transferred, and Buiny sank herself.

"The Oslibia, according to other survivors, had her conning tower struck at the first straight shot of battle May 27th and Admiral Voelkersam was killed. After a succession of shots she sank about three o'clock in the afternoon. Survivors of the Donskoi say they saw two destroyers sink in the thick of battle, noon May 27th.

"Reports from the different divisions of the fleet showed that the first Russian vessel sunk was the battleship Sissoi Veliky. The armored cruisers Admiral Nakhimoff and Vladimir Monomach, after being in the general engagement during the daytime, were still further damaged by torpedoes during attacks by night, and were eventually completely disabled. They drifted into the vicinity of Tsu Islands, where they were discovered on Sunday morning (May 28th) by the auxiliary cruisers which were about to capture them, but they all sank. The crews of our auxiliary cruisers rescued 915 of the crew of the sunken Russian ships.

SINKING OF A BATTLESHIP.

"The battleship Navarin was torpedoed four times after sundown on Saturday (May 27th) and sank. The survivors of the Navarin's crew confirm the story of her destruction. The cruisers Mitaka and Ottawa discovered the Russian cruiser Svietlana at nine o'clock on Sunday morning in the vicinity of Chappyan Bay, and immediately attacked and sunk her. The commander of the Mitaka reported the fact.

"Russia's main strength, consisting of battleships destroyed or captured, armored cruisers and coast defense ships destroyed or captured, with the second-class cruisers and other vessels destroyed, was gone, and her fighting power was thus annihilated.

"During the night of May 27th the Japanese torpedo boats numbered thirty-four, thirty-five and sixty-nine were sunk by the enemy's fire. Comrades rescued the majority of their crews. Besides the above there was no damage worth reporting. No warship nor destroyer suffered any loss of fighting or navigating

power. We anticipated a heavy loss of life, but I find that our casualties do not exceed 800 killed and wounded.

“Nearly the whole strength of both combatants met in battle, and the area of the fighting was very wide. The first day proved very foggy, and even without the smoke and fumes resulting from the battle, it was impossible to see five miles. Consequently during the day it was impossible to locate or observe all the ships under my command.”

ACCOUNTS BY JAPANESE SAILORS.

A number of wounded Japanese sailors who arrived at the hospital at Sasebo described the battle between the Japanese and Russian fleet as follows :

“Our fleet, with the battleship Mikasa leading, proceeded toward the Russians in vertical line formation. The Souvaroff opened fire first, and then suddenly turned, reversing her course. Almost simultaneously the Mikasa opened fire with her big guns, and thus the curtain rose on the great sea battle. The hostile fleets gradually closed in toward each other, exchanging a vigorous fire. The armored cruiser Asama approached within a short distance of the Russian fleet and carefully observed its action.

“After a short but fierce fight the Admiral Oushakoff’s deck was observed to be ablaze and the ship left line. By 4.30 in the afternoon the Russian line was discarded and its fire slackened. The Borodini and Kamtchatka had been disabled and soon sank. The Borodini continued to fire bravely until the ship was submerged.

“The Japanese fleet continued to maintain enveloping positions from sundown until dawn. Sunday morning opened misty, but the weather soon cleared and the search for the remnants of the Russian fleet was begun. Five Russian ships were discovered in the vicinity of Liancourt Island, and they were immediately surrounded. One, supposed to be the Izumrud, escaped at full speed. The remaining four offered no resistance and hoisted the Japanese flag over the Russian colors, apparently offering to surrender.

“Captain Yashiro, commanding the Asama, started in a small boat to ascertain the real intentions of the Russians, when Admi-

ral Nebogatoff lowered a boat and came on board the Asama, where he formally surrendered. The prisoners were distributed among the Japanese ships, and prize crews were selected to take possession of the captured vessels.

"We were ordered to bring the Orel to Miadzuru. On the way the captain of the Orel died of wounds received during the battle. While we were proceeding we were advised of the capture of Rojestvensky, and our men were greatly cheered by the news."

A Russian officer of the Borodini at Sasebo, in describing his experiences, said: "I was in the forward barbette in charge of one of the 12-inch guns, when the signal to begin firing was given. The ship nearest to us was the Shikishima, whose projectiles began to reach us a few moments after the beginning of the fight.

DECKS RAINING WITH SHOT.

"At this early stage of the battle Admiral Rojestvensky, came aboard the Borodini and directed the fighting from the bridge. Almost immediately afterward a projectile struck my barbette and rendered every one inside insensible. The barbette was filled with smoke. I groped my way out. The decks were raining with projectiles. Dozens of men were lying dead or wounded at every turn. When the barbette was clear I re-entered with the crew, but only had time to fire two more rounds, when two projectiles struck simultaneously, and disabled both 12-inch guns, wrecking the barbette and killing eighteen officers and men.

"I crawled on the deck to one of the 6-inch guns, which was surrounded with dead and wounded. Here I remained for an hour, during which time the Borodini became a shambles. Nearly every ammunition hoist had been wrecked, and shells had to be passed by hand. A shell struck the port screw, and another disabled the steering-gear. Presently, when everything seemed worse than confusion, a quartermaster told me that the Admiral was wounded and was being taken to another ship in a destroyer. I saw the destroyer leave amid a hail of small ammunition, but fortunately none struck her.

"At 4 o'clock the Borodini was down by the head. She had

been hulled several times. Our fighting tops were particular targets. Not one of the men stationed there was apparently alive. I volunteered to go up with a few men, and found the men in the tops had been hacked to pieces by the fire of the Japanese. Fire started in several places, and it was therefore resolved to withdraw from the line of fighting.

“Our steering apparatus had been repaired, but eight Japanese ships closed round us and bombarded us from every side. Our forward guns were useless, but we did good work with the after 12-inch guns and those 6-inch guns which were not out of action.

A FURIOUS EXPLOSION.

“Toward evening, after a long afternoon of terrible exhaustion, and after we had lost fully 400 killed or wounded, we noticed two Japanese destroyers bearing down. One of them we sank with a shell from a 6-inch gun, but the other came safely and launched a torpedo and swept past our bow unharmed. The torpedo missed us. A few minutes later the engine room crew were driven out by the flames.

“We expected every minute to be blown up and were preparing for the inevitable, when a whole flotilla of torpedo boats came down on us. In five minutes the end had come. An explosion caused the ship to turn turtle. I was drawn down deep and was struck by a piece of wreckage, but a boat from a destroyer picked me up and forty others from the Borodini and took us to the Kasuga.”

From stories told by Russians who escaped from the fight in the Sea of Japan, the Japanese completely surprised the Russian fleet.

The Russians were steaming peacefully along. There was no sight of the Japanese fleet and the Russian ships were not cleared for action, nor were the batteries manned. The attack came with a suddenness that made the unpreparedness of the Russians for battle a glaring mistake that never could be corrected.

Two lines of torpedo boats suddenly appeared and encircled the Russian fleet. The rapid-fire batteries were turned loose but

with apparently little effect on the Japanese boats. Over the approaching torpedo boats came a hail of 10 and 12-inch shells from the Japanese war vessels in the distance. The torpedo boats advanced at full speed, one division going in a westerly and another in an easterly direction.

The Russian cruisers and battleships prepared to repel the attack. The cruisers manned their port batteries and the battleships their starboard batteries. No attempt was made to prepare the batteries on the other side of the ships, and it was here the Russians blundered. When the Japanese torpedo boats came within firing distance the Russians opened fire.

STRATEGIC MOVE BY TOGO.

Then it was the Japanese executed a manœuvre that threw the Russians into confusion. The two encircling lines met south of the Russians, but instead of continuing in that direction they turned at a signal from Togo, and at full speed charged between the three lines of Russian ships, one division passing between the cruisers and the line of hospital ships and transports, and another division passing between the transports and the battleships on the other side.

The Russian ships were unprepared for an attack of this character and for a time were helpless against the discharges of Japanese torpedoes. Hardly a cruiser or battleship remained unscathed. The Russians were completely demoralized, and during the last dash of the torpedo boats not a shot was fired to stop them. In the meantime Togo, with his battleships and cruisers, encircled the Russian fleet, and with his big guns completed the work of destruction.

Another account of the battle is as follows :

“When Rojesventsky encountered Admiral Togo there was a running fight to the northeastward on Saturday afternoon. There was a series of desperate and successful torpedo attacks Saturday night and a resumption of the battle on Sunday. Togo pressing the Russian fleet toward the southern coast of Korea. It had been planned that the initial attack should be made by the giant 12-inch

guns of the Japanese big ships, and that under cover of this bombardment the torpedoers and destroyers should dash for the leading Russian ships and attempt to throw the enemy's column into confusion.

"The commanders of the torpedoing flotilla had previously been summoned and had been notified in a few words by the Admiral of the desperate service that was required of them and of the small chance of any of them reporting again for duty.

A CASE OF DO OR DIE.

"They were told, in fact, that it was a simple case of sacrifice, and they accepted it so willingly that the Admiral found it difficult to detail a torpedo reserve in case the first division failed in its task. Until sunset the heavy guns of the Japanese battleships and the ten-inch battery of the cruiser Kasuga roared and fired at the oncoming Russians, while the Russian guns roared in reply. First of the Russian battleships in line behind the protected cruiser Jemtchung was that of the 13,000-ton Borodini, and these two soon showed that they were receiving the brunt of the shelling. The cruiser Nakhimoff, in the van of the Russian port column, was also observed to be in distress, and then, the sun having set and the quick gathering darkness having come, the torpedoes were sent out under cover of a still heavier cannonade. The flotilla formed into two divisions, one heading for the battleship column of the Russians and the other for the cruisers.

"The searchlights of the Russian fleet threw out their great beams and their small gun batteries swept the sea, but the swift hornets of the sea went wallowing and buzzing on their way. They circled and swept, and then came the dull roars and heaving fountains, that told that the torpedoes had been loosed from their tubes and were doing their deadly work.

"Again and again came the roars, and as the Japanese searchlights swept across the field of fight and then went out it was seen that the great battleship Borodini was sinking, that the protected cruiser Jemtchung was a wreck, that the battleship Alexander III, or one of her class, had gone, that the two armored cruisers Don-

skoi and Nakhimoff were out of the fighting. Later, too, it was learned that some far-sailing shell had reached and sunk the supply ship Kamchatka, or that she had been sunk by a torpedo, and that three destroyers that had rushed out to meet the Japanese flotilla had been blown up.

“In the darkness of the night on Saturday, May 27th, the shattered Russian fleet reformed as well as it might, and once more took up its despairing run for the Sea of Japan and the haven of Vladivostok. Hanging on to the already beaten enemy, an easy matter with his faster ships, Togo picked up the Russians all of Saturday night with his searchlights, occasionally sending a long distance shell toward one of the shadowy hulls that were racing to get through the straits.

FLEEING INTO OPEN WATER.

“But just as Togo had selected his fighting ground for working out one chapter of the tragedy, so now he chose the scene of the second day's fighting. To the northeast of Osini Island lies a dangerous little archipelago known as the Liancourt Rocks, and with his battleships and heavily armored cruisers the Japanese Admiral stood out in crescent form across the Korean Strait and drove the enemy toward this dangerous running.

“Keeping together in some semblance of order, five Russians, consisting of the battleships Nicolai I and Orel and the coast defense vessels Senyanin and Apraxine and the protected cruiser Izumrud, were heading bravely for the Sea of Japan. Seeing a possibility of their escape, Togo, who was personally conducting the pursuit, signaled to close in and attack.

“With their forward turrets blazing and roaring, the Japanese squadron dashed on. The Russians replied vigorously for a time, but the gunnery of the Japanese was too deadly and accurate; shells were carrying death and destruction into the fleeing five, and the fight went out of the Russians. One after the other flew surrender signals, the Japanese ceased firing, and the Nicolai I, Orel, Senyanin and Apraxine were added to the Mikado's navy.

“So practically ended the first day's fight, and here again the

apparently impossible happened—Togo's captains all reported, "No damage to men or ships." This report had later to be somewhat modified. Togo's captains had, however, other things to report, for while the main force of the combined squadron was hammering the four Russians into subjection off the Liancourt Rocks others of his cruisers were chasing scattered Russian ships, while still others were completing the work of destruction around Osino Island. Two special service ships and a destroyer were captured, and so was the armored cruiser *Monomach*, but she foundered soon after transference of flags."

MANY PRISONERS CAPTURED.

And there were prisoners to report, three thousand of them, including the unhappy Nebogatoff, while up and down the seas the fight between pursued and pursuer still went on. Foreign observers sharply criticised Vice-Admiral Rojestvensky and Rear Admiral Nebogatoff. Admiral Rojestvensky was criticised for not sending his light cruisers and transports by the northern straits, his failure to arrange a co-operation with the Vladivostok squadron and his battle formation, which consisted of all the strong ships on the starboard column and the weaker craft on the port column. Rear Admiral Nebogatoff's lack of courage in surrendering on Sunday apparently without a fight, was commented upon, although it was admitted his ships were badly battered on Saturday.

The political effect of the battle and its influence upon commerce was immediately felt. At noon, on May 29th, the Navy Department at Tokio notified shipping men that the sea was free. There was a scene of wild enthusiasm on the Stock Exchange in the afternoon. Prices in some instances were the highest since the war began. The Emperor, princes and Ministers dispatched congratulations to Admiral Togo, who, it was expected would be given high rank and other imperial honors. Already a popular idol, he became a demigod in the popular estimation.

The Russian admiralty was simply stupefied at the extent of the disaster suffered by Vice-Admiral Rojestvenky's fleet, and its own advices painted the situation in even worse colors than Tokio

dispatches. Russian naval experts figured that Admiral Togo, with his main squadron, must have lain somewhere off the coast of Korea, while Admirals Kamimura and Uriu held their squadrons further north to head off the Russian vessels which might get through Togo's lines or be prepared to bar the entrance to the Straits of Tsugaru in case the Russians should be reported moving up the east coast of Japan. When Togo's scouts reported that Admiral Rojestvensky was heading for the eastern channel of the Straits of Korea the Japanese Admiral steamed around the northern part of the Tsu Islands, and came upon the Russians steaming in double column, with the cruisers to port.

TOGO USES ALL HIS BROADSIDES.

Togo enjoyed the great advantage of tactical position when he opened fire, having the lightest of the Russian ships between him and Rojestvensky's heavier vessels, thus smothering the fire of the latter. Besides Togo was able to use all his broadsides, whereas the sternmost ships of the Russian columns, coming on in line ahead formation, could probably only with difficulty use any guns at all.

Nevertheless, although suffering the complete loss of four ships in the desperate encounter which followed, and being subjected to a series of torpedo attacks Saturday night, Rojestvensky was able to steam 200 miles during the night. When Sunday morning came the Russian fleet was divided. The faster and stronger division under Rojestvensky was met by Kamimura and Uriu, while the slower division, under Nebogatoff, renewed the fight with Togo. With some of the scattered Russian units it was a case of saving himself who can. In the running fight the Japanese enjoyed the advantage of superior speed, enabling them to concentrate their fire and bring every crippled Russian ship to bay. Admiral Nebogatoff's battered remnant surrendered off Liancourt Rocks, while Rojestvensky, with the best remaining battleships, fought on for the honor of the Russian navy. The result was an overwhelming Russian disaster.

A complete account of the battle, based upon official reports,
38—N R J

was as follows: From first to last Admiral Togo never wavered in his conviction that the Baltic fleet must choose the Tsushima Passage, his argument being that no commander would attempt to take a large squadron through the northern straits in the season of fogs and at great distance from neutral ports and refuge for damaged ships. There was also danger from mines in Tsugaru Strait and in Soya Strait, whereas no such apprehensions need be felt with regard to Tsushima.

DESTINATION OF RUSSIAN FLEET.

Rojestvensky apparently reasoned exactly as Togo anticipated, though many of his officers advocated the northern passage. Some strongly urged the advisability of seizing a base in Formosa and compelling the Japanese to come thither to fight. This question was earnestly discussed on board the flagship in Kamranh Bay, where Nebogatoff arrived on May 5, receiving a tremendous welcome from the sailors of the second squadron, who drew most favorable omens of ultimate victory from the success attending the safe voyage of the two squadrons, and the junction at a place thousands of miles from the European base.

Rojestvensky, after hearing the arguments of his officers, announced the intention of entering the Pacific, thereby gaining the advantage of a double objective, then of returning to the China Sea, via the north of Formosa, and steering direct for Tsushima. The decision was welcomed with acclamation, the officers embracing and drinking to the success of the plan.

Rojestvensky, having allowed nine days for the third squadron to recuperate, steamed out of Kamranh Bay May 14, passed Ballintang unobserved on the night of May 17, and coaled off Niantans, where he stopped a Norwegian steamer consigned to a Japanese firm, and informed the captain that the squadron's destination was Tsushima. This was for the purpose of deceiving Togo, who would naturally infer that some other destination was intended. Rojestvensky meant to strengthen this inference by delaying his progress, so that his non-arrival within a reasonable time might suggest that the Russians had really headed for the northern pas-

sages, but this device did not deceive Togo, who remained steadfast to Tsushima.

Meanwhile Rojestvensky had wholly failed to obtain trustworthy information of Togo's whereabouts. The secret which was so carefully guarded remained unknown even to the Japanese public to the very end. On May 25 six Russian transports and auxiliary cruisers entered Yangtze, which greatly perplexed the public, but was interpreted by Togo as a sure indication of Rojestvensky's presence in the China Sea.

REPORT BY WIRELESS TELEGRAPHY.

At 5.30 A. M., May 27th, Japanese scouts lying north of Quelpart Island reported by wireless telegraphy that the Russians were drawing up toward Tsushima, but the fog concealed the exact character of the squadron, whether it was the main fighting force or only a few weak craft sacrificed in order to attract the attention of the Japanese to the south while Rojestvensky himself passed by the northern avenues. This question remained uncertain until noon, when the intense anxiety in Tokio was relieved by a telegram from Togo announcing that the whole Russian fleet was in sight.

Meanwhile Togo pursued his plan unwaveringly, keeping his principal squadrons carefully concealed in places still secret. For the purpose of promoting the belief among the Russians that Shushima Straits were weakly guarded and drawing them through the eastern channel, he sent out a number of second-class ships, which, though slow, carried guns sufficiently heavy to prevent the enemy from closing in. The fog helped to preserve these vessels, which, nevertheless, Togo was not unwilling to sacrifice on the altar of his main purpose.

Rojestvensky, until in the vicinity of Tsushima, kept his auxiliary cruisers in front, but immediately before entering the channel recalled them, after which the lead was taken by the battleships *Imperator Alexander*, *Navarin* and *Kniaz Souvaroff*. The wind now freshening, the sea, already rough, began to run very high. The fog began to lift. Togo signaled that the fate of the

empire depended upon this effort and the men must do their utmost. The Russians, still confident, held their course at a uniform speed of twelve knots, exchanging a desultory fire with the decoy squadron, which withdrew to the northeast.

At 1 P. M. Togo entered the arena with his best fighting material, distributed in two squadrons of six vessels each, his own squadron consisting of four battleships and the cruisers Nishin and Kasuga; Kamimura's squadron consisting of six armored cruisers. Togo was steaming at a speed of fourteen knots, Kamimura at sixteen knots.

FLEETS FORM FOR BATTLE.

At about 1.30 P. M., the fog thinning, Rojestvensky sighted Togo's battleships in single column line ahead, rounding the north of Tsushima, bearing down on his port bow. Shortly afterward he sighted Kamimura rounding the south of the island and covering his stern on the same side, while the decoy squadron, strongly reinforced, threatened his starboard. The Russians immediately formed in double column, line ahead. The east column was led by the battleship *Imperator Alexander*, the west line was composed of cruisers, while the auxiliaries were between the columns in the rear.

The sea now was very rough, with a strong southwest wind blowing, so that the Japanese had not only the benefit of the sun at their backs, but were also assisted by the heavy smoke which poured down upon the Russians. The heavy seas, too, were eminently in favor of the Japanese gunners, who habitually practice in stormy weather, with the result that their aim was not disturbed by the unsteadiness of the gun platforms. Further, they were able to take advantage of the exposure of the enemy's vital parts occasioned by the rolling and tossing of the ships.

The Russians opened fire at 12,000 metres, but it was wholly ineffective. The Japanese reserved their fire until the range was 7,500 metres, when they fired six trial shots and scored three hits.

The battle now became general. The Russians perpetually essayed to force their way northward, but the Japanese, steaming

at a higher speed, constantly headed them back, so that the Russian course described a loop, the ships filing past the Japanese, who poured in a deadly fire from three directions. Rojestvensky's gunners maintained a much higher rate of fire, but their projectiles nearly always flew high or buried themselves in the sea, evidently owing to the gunners' want of practice in gunlaying in rough weather.

Before evening five Russian warships had been sunk, including three battleships, which apparently lost their stability, owing to the piercing of their water-tight compartments on one side only, and the action of the fore and aft bulkheads. Meanwhile the Russian formation had been broken, but the ships were still confined to the southeast corner of the Sea of Japan.

FIERCE ATTACK BY TORPEDO BOATS.

Thus far Togo's strategy had worked perfectly, but the most important part of his work remained, namely, the sending of sixteen squadrons of torpedo boats upon the Russians during the night, when they were partially disabled and confused. There were great fears at one time that this would be impossible, as the sea was too rough for the torpedo boats. However, toward evening the wind and waves subsided, the night became quiet, and the starlight exceedingly well suited for the work of the torpedo boats, which rushed in from three quarters, reserving their missiles until within 300 metres at the most, and making a practice so deadly that it redeemed all previous failures.

The Japanese deny any use of submarines, and the conditions under which the battle was fought was obviously unsuited for them. Meanwhile the Japanese sighting squadrons had dropped off to the north, leaving the field free for the torpedo craft. By midnight only nine Russians remained with the formation under Nebogatoff. These struggled northward with torpedo boats clinging to their flanks and constantly stabbing, so that dawn found only five remaining, the battleships Orel and Nikolai, two coast defence ships and the cruiser Izumrud.

Having lost his bearings, owing to complicated manoeuvres

Admiral Nebogatoff decided to steer westward until he picked up some feature of Korea's coast that he could identify. Presently the *Izumrud*, which was scouting, reported that she made out the Ulnvny Islands (*Liancourt Rocks*), whereupon the Russians recovering heart, shaped their course for *Vladivostok*, but almost immediately they observed two squadrons of Japanese approaching at full speed and recognized the flags of *Togo* and *Dewa*.

The *Izumrud* steamed off at top speed, but Nebogatoff's ships, encumbered with wounded, with half of their guns out of action, with ammunition lacking, decided to haul down their colors. Other still floating fragments of the Russian fleet were pursued and destroyed by the Japanese, who had been organized, in view of this contingency, into groups of homogeneous ships.

VALOR NO MATCH FOR SHARP SHOOTING.

The battle shows no novel feature. The Russians fought with devoted valor, but were outclassed at every point. Their shooting was incomparably inferior to that of the Japanese, who scored an extraordinary number of hits with their 12-inch guns. The Japanese projectiles also were much more effective than those of the Russians. Nothing was more notable than the Japanese skill in using torpedoes, contrasting markedly with previous ill success, and evidently resulting from the especial course of training recently pursued and from the teachings of experience.

Scenes of grief were witnessed at the Admiralty in *St. Petersburg*. Wives, mothers and sisters, many of them already in the deepest mourning for other losses, streamed through the Admiralty corridors, sending in written requests for information regarding the fate of particular ships. One and all were informed that the Admiralty had no details, but attempts were made to reassure those whose relatives were on the ships not reported sunk by the Japanese.

On the streets passers-by gathered before the bulletin boards to peruse the despatches, but they learned little, as the Government still refused to permit the publication of the *Tokio* despatches giving the names of the ships lost and other details of the battle,

though authorizing Togo's announcement of the defeat of the Russian fleet to prepare the public for fuller news.

A war council was held at St. Petersburg, at which the Emperor was urged to issue an imperial manifesto, but nothing has yet been decided. So far as the newspapers were concerned, the public might believe Vice Admiral Rojestvensky had achieved a victory. The censor passed all the vague rumors favorable to the Russians, but blue-penciled everything indicating a Russian disaster. While the disastrous news was spread like wildfire by word of mouth over the capital, and was quickly telegraphed privately to the big centres by the anti-Government leaders, the country was in a state of ignorance as to what had happened. The editors of the Liberal papers, being conversant with the contents of the Tokio despatches, warned their readers in a roundabout fashion against harboring false hopes based upon despatches in their news columns. The *Bourse Gazette* quite openly declared it would be a sin to conceal the fact that all hope of Russia obtaining the mastery of the sea had vanished, adding :

“ The significance of the collapse of this hope is self-evident.”

CHAPTER XLIV.

THE RUSSIAN WAR POWER IN THE EAST ANNIHILATED.

The Last Great Fleet Defeated—Russia's Military and Naval Power Broken—Russian Admiral Attempts to Reach Vladivostok—Biographical Sketches of the Two Admirals—Congratulations for Togo—Devotion of Japanese to Their Emperor.

“**T**O labor and to wait,” is one of the great lessons of the Japanese victory. Biding his time with the patience born of assured power, Admiral Togo, with all his forces well in hand, awaited events until his enemy reached the exact point where the heaviest blow could be most effectively struck.

Resting quietly in a convenient, sheltered harbor, engaged in making perfect his preparations for the supreme moment, the Japanese commander, with full information as to the movements of the Russians, sallied forth when the latter entered the Straits of Korea, and attacked them in the passages between the Tsushima Islands. The assault was made in full force, and continued in a running fight, extending over a distance of 250 to 300 miles. In this contest Admiral Togo preserved every advantage of position and also held control of the situation by the superior speed of his ships, keeping the enemy within touch, as seemed to him most suitable for his destructive purposes.

As a result, one of the greatest sea fights on record was fought to a finish, with victory overwhelmingly on the side of the Japanese. Admiral Rojestvensky's fleet was practically destroyed. The Russian war power in Asiatic waters has been annihilated. Her last great fleet has been defeated and dispersed, and the most powerful of her ships sunk to the bottom of the sea. This was the end of the war on the water.

The following pertinent comments on the crushing defeat of the great Russian armada were made by one of our well-known authorities:

“Just how it was all done remains to be told, but the current despatches leave no doubt as to the decisive character of Admiral Togo's latest and most important victory. The great armada, great at least in numbers, upon which the hopes of the Russian Government were centered, seeking to make its way to Vladivostok through the Straits of Korea, has been repulsed, dispersed, almost annihilated, by the waiting warships of Japan, and Russia's last chance of regaining some portion of her lost prestige and of securing a favorable position from which to negotiate a peace has disappeared.

“That control of the sea which was so essential to the continued prosecution by the Japanese of their wonderfully successful campaign they have been able to assure. The naval power of the enemy has been obliterated beyond any possibility of rehabilitation and all that remains to be determined is the cost and the measure of Togo's triumph.

A QUESTION OF NEUTRALITY.

“How needless now are shown to have been the misgivings of the apprehensive! How foolish the criticisms of the captious, the dissatisfied and the impatient! Repeatedly during the seven weeks which elapsed after Rojestvensky's ill-fated squadrons suddenly emerged into view in front of Singapore it was claimed that the Russian admiral had won a strategic advantage, that he had stolen a march upon his baffled adversary and proved himself a superior tactician.

“While he was loafing along the Indo-Chinese coast, abusing the hospitality of the French Government and taking advantages which the principles of neutrality forbid, many were the complimentary expressions of surprise at the failure of the Japanese to assume the offensive. When the Nebogatoff assortment of odds and ends arrived at last and effected its junction with the divisions that had preceded it, a shout of joy went up at the Russian capital, whence came a curious story of the shrewd device whereby the Japanese had been thrown off the scent, and when Rojestvensky moved through the Balintang Channel, as though on his way to

the Pacific, the naval experts at St. Petersburg were quite sure that he had Togo guessing.

“At last the news came that the wandering fleet had arrived in Japanese waters, and one might have supposed from the exultation that was expressed in the Russian admiralty that the battle had been won and that all was over but the shouting. Once again Togo had been finely tricked. He had been misled into sending or taking his big ships to the south and Rojestvensky was free to take his choice of making straight for Vladivostok or of putting in some time in the recreation of ravaging the Japanese coast and perhaps sinking some more fishing vessels. ‘If Rojestvensky has cleared the Korean Strait, God bless him,’ exclaimed Admiral Wirenius, chief of the general Russian naval staff; ‘he has open water ahead. If he has succeeded in mystifying the enemy and entered the Japan Sea with his force unimpaired, he has earned the title of master of naval strategy.’

JAPANESE ADMIRAL PATIENTLY WAITING.

“But there is much virtue in an ‘if,’ and it has transpired that the fact was to the contrary. It is known now that all the while that Togo was being baffled and outwitted and thrown off true scents and on to false ones, all the while the Russians were shaking hands with themselves at the skill which they were showing and the success which they were accomplishing in their various manœuvres, the Japanese admiral, keeping himself informed of every movement of the enemy’s, was calmly, confidently, imperturbably waiting at his base at Masanpho, on the southern coast of Korea, for the appearance of the foe.

“He could afford to wait, for the enemy had to come to him. The sole reason and the only justification of the Rojestvensky expedition was that it might, by cutting the Japanese communications, paralyze the operations of Oyama and perhaps in that way compel the Mikado to sue for peace, and from his base at Masanpho Togo was in the best possible position to prevent this being done. That Rojestvensky’s vessels might manage to get to Vladivostok made little or no difference to him.

"If they were to be of any use, they could not stay there indefinitely. They might clean up and refit, which, as the dock facilities are inadequate, would take a long time, but eventually they would be obliged to attempt the passage of the Korean Straits in order to fulfill their mission, and so, coming or going, Togo was sure of them either way. He only had to wait, and sooner or later his opportunity would confront him. In due season it arrived, and the world knows the rest."

A series of interviews with naval officers who survived the battle of the Sea of Japan developed a most sensational story of the causes of the Russian disaster and the complete demoralization which followed the sinking of the flagship *Kniaz Souvaroff* and the wounding of Admiral *Rojestvensky*.

It is explained that not a single officer of the fleet knew the commander-in-chief's plans. The admirals in command of divisions knew no more than the sub-lieutenants, and had to rely only on the signals of the flagship. Admiral *Nebogatoff*, on whom the command devolved, had seen *Rojestvensky* only once after the juncture of their squadrons, and then only for fifteen minutes.

NO PRACTICE AT THE GUNS.

All the stories of extensive target practice in Madagascar, it seems, were false. During the entire voyage there practically was no training in gunnery worthy of the name, and the big gun practice was confined to three shots per vessel. Ugly stories are told of the happenings at Madagascar. Some of the crews certainly were untrained in gunnery, and, exhausted by the eight months' voyage under trying moral and physical conditions, were no match for the veteran Japanese, whose marksmanship was wonderful.

The Japanese concentrated their fire on one ship until she was placed out of action, and then on another; thus successively sinking the *Oslabya*, *Alexander III*, and *Kniaz Souvaroff*. Some ships developed deplorable structural defects. The *Oslabya* sank without having a single hole below the water-line. Heavy seas entered the vessel above the water-line, and the water-tight compartments, which were changed several times during the voyage, did not stand

the strain they had been calculated to stand, and burst, flooding and heeling the vessel over until she turned turtle.

Lack of homogeneity among the ships made it impossible to maneuver in harmony. The Vladimir Monomach, Admiral Oushakoff and Admiral Seniavin had to lag behind, on this account becoming easy victims. Finally the ammunition was exhausted after the first day's fight.

Even the very morning of the battle, while the buzzing of the wireless instruments on the Russian ships showed that the Japanese scouts were communicating his dispositions to Admiral Togo, Admiral Rojestvensky continued his careless maneuvering, and when the Japanese actually appeared the Russians were caught in an impossible formation and were attacked on three fronts.

BAD NAVAL FORMATION.

Rojestvensky's position was cramped and his transports were badly placed and caused confusion. While the Japanese were raining projectiles even from machine guns on the Russian ships, the latter were huddled together blanketing each other's fire. Only the leaders of the columns could bring their guns to bear, and even those the untrained gunners fired wildly.

To render matters worse the mines and floating torpedoes sown in the paths of the Russian divisions added to the confusion. The Borodino, Admiral Nakhimoff and Navarin fell victims to these obstructions. It is a heartrending narrative that Russia and the world should know. The sailors and officers were not altogether to blame. The main fault lies elsewhere. There were many heroes among the Russians. Captain Berkh, of the Oslabya, committed suicide on her bridge as the ship sank, rather than save himself. There were thousands of other heroes whose names the world will never know.

A sketch of the Japanese Admiral Togo will be of interest to the reader. No ordinary man could obtain the title of the "Nelson of Japan." During this war he has become a central figure on the world's stage, as much so as Dewey, our own renowned naval captain.

"In Japan everything is backward, according to Western ideas; you begin a book on the last column of the last page. So to give this naval leader's name accurately one places the surname first and the baptismal name second. Thus we get Togo Heihachiro. When a lad Togo served in the British training ship Worcester, on the Thames. Lord Charles Beresford once said that the scallywag was the best material out of which to make a good sailor. Togo was, however, not of this order. His conduct was exemplary. He impressed his teachers by his obedience and his application. Later on he was enabled, like other Japanese officers, to study at the Royal Naval College at Greenwich.

SINKING OF A TRANSPORT.

"Of his subsequent career in the junior grades in the Japanese service nothing very definite is known; but in 1894, when he had risen to the rank of Captain, England became familiar with his name in a manner which promised ill for his popularity. Although relations between China and Japan were so strained that it was known hostilities might occur at any moment, the world was hardly prepared for such a dramatic opening as the sinking of the transport Kowshing.

"This incident of a British ship being sunk caused some commotion in the United Kingdom at the moment, but no action was taken, because it was recognized that, though she was under the British colors, she was engaged in an operation—the transport of troops to Korea—which the Japanese regarded as an act of war. Captain Togo's very name was soon forgotten. One curious coincident may be noted in passing. When the captain of the Kowshing met the officer whose ship he had sunk under him, he found that he was a former classmate on board the Worcester in distant days, when they were both learning the A, B, C, of sailing.

"The decision with which Togo had acted in this emergency greatly impressed the people of Japan, and he became a popular hero. Throughout the subsequent course of the war his daring kept his name well to the fore, and upon the conclusion of the war the services rendered by Captain Togo were recognized by promo-

tion to the rank of Rear-Admiral, and he hoisted his flag as a divisional commander of the fleet with a high reputation.

THE NELSON OF JAPAN.

“When war with Russia seemed certain the Navy Department cast round for men to whom to entrust the destinies of the fleet in the coming struggle. Togo, who by this time had been advanced to Vice-Admiral, was dug out of his shore billet to act as Commander-in-Chief at sea of all the naval forces of the country, while as second in command Vice-Admiral Kamimura, then acting as head of the Naval Education Headquarters, was selected. He had commanded the Akitsushima in the previous war, and had won high praise. Rear-Admirals Dewa (formerly staff officer to Admiral Viscount Ito), Uryu and Hashiha were sent to Admiral Togo as divisional commanders, with Captain Shimamura as his chief staff officer. These are the officers who have been with the distinguished officer at sea, sharing his counsels and anxieties, and though the master mind always receives the chief praise, some credit is due to his associates for the success which crowned the efforts of the fleet.

“Admiral Togo has been styled the ‘Nelson of Japan.’ The comparison is not inappropriate, for assuredly he has proved the saviour of his country. He was faced by practically even odds when hostilities began, and without much material loss he wore down the Russian fleet until it ceased to be of fighting value, and then General Nogi’s army completed its destruction. Until Togo had gained control of the Bay of Korea and the Yellow Sea not a soldier of the Japanese army could be moved.

“The whole plan of campaign ashore depended on the manner in which the new fleet, built up since the last war, realized the hopes of the nation, under the leadership of this Admiral. Needless to add that Admiral Togo succeeded far more rapidly in carrying out his designs than the most sanguine statesman of Japan anticipated.

In the history of modern warfare there is no parallel to the repeated successes which attended the action of the Japanese

ships, or to the unerring judgment with which the Admiral laid his plans. Admiral Togo wielded the immense power with which he was entrusted with supreme mastery of all the niceties of naval strategy and tactics.

“Like most of his fellow-officers—among whom there are others bearing the name of Togo, a common enough one in Japan—he is a Satsuma. A short man inclined to stoutness, he is not an impressive figure, and his beard and moustache hide much of his face and his mouth. He looks what he is—a sailor; but only those who know him, meeting him in the street, would recognize the great Admiral in this typical gentleman of the Eastern Empire—contemplative, retiring, and quiet in manner.

TOGO'S ABLE ANTAGONIST.

“Of Togo's able antagonist it may be said that Sinovi Petrovitch Rojestvensky has long borne the reputation of being one of the most cool-headed and scientific naval officers in the Russian service. He became a popular hero in the Russo-Turkish War, when he distinguished himself in 1877 by an attack under Baronoff on the Turkish iron-clad in his gunboat the Vesta. He had made gunnery his special study and was one of the most brilliant cadets in the Michael Artillery Academy.

“Promoted Commander in 1885, he was appointed naval attache to the Russian Embassy in England, and spent several years in London, where he closely studied the organization and equipment of the British navy. He was afterward commander of the cruiser Vladimir Monomach and the battleship Peresviet, and during the Chino-Japanese War was Alexeieff's second in command of the Russian squadron in the Far East.

“He was promoted Rear-Admiral in 1902, made an aide-de-camp of the Czar and succeeded Admiral Avellan as Chief of the Naval Headquarters Staff and head of the Intelligence Department. In this capacity he was responsible for the equipment of the Baltic fleet. He was considered an able and even more popular leader than Admiral Makharoff.

“At the end of September, 1904, he was ready to sail with his

fleet, which he had been constantly exercising in manoeuvres and gunnery. He left Libau on October 16th. His long voyage and culminating disaster have already been chronicled."

After Togo's brilliant victory Japan was enthusiastic in the Admiral's praise. Admiral Yamamoto, Minister of the Navy, sent the following telegram to Admiral Togo :

"The enemy's second and third squadrons, successfully overcoming the difficulties attending their voyage eastward, showed themselves no mean Power, but your squadron, intercepting them in advance of their destination, put them to confusion and destroyed and captured nearly all their units.

CAPTURE OF THE COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF.

"Your victory does not end here. You captured the enemy's commander-in-chief. It is most gratifying for our national cause that you achieved such a victory.

"We send sincere congratulations and take occasion to praise the virtue of the Emperor, to thank you and those under you for the onerous service, extending over many months, and to express sympathy for the killed and wounded."

Admiral Togo, telegraphing to Tokio on June 1st, said: "The naval battle fought, from the afternoon of May 27th to May 28th, in the vicinity of Okino Island and extending to the vicinity of Orelung Island, is called the naval battle of the Sea of Japan."

Nothing has been formulated more significant of the spirit of Japan—that marvelous influence which has made the workers in the shops and rice-fields of Nippon perform such feats of valor on land and sea—than the simple phrases in the messages which passed between the Mikado and his victorious admiral, those references to the protecting spirits of the imperial ancestors and to the virtue of the sovereign, which are so puzzling to Western readers. They are but the echoes of Shintoism, the "Path of the Gods," the native religion of the empire, which has held its influence over the minds, hearts and lives of the Japanese, whether Buddhist, Christian or even agnostic.

For Shintoism has remained through all the centuries little

more than a form of the primitive ancestor-worship, a cult which has never been displaced from the innermost recesses of the hearts of the people. Even the most modern of Japanese, while expressing his views in the language of the present-day scientific agnosticism, lives up to the ethical ideals which are the direct fruits of his training and the traditions of Shinto; and he directs his life according to the conscious or unconscious belief, inherited from his fathers from the dawn of their history, in the presence about him of those who have departed. The daily rites of honor and eudainment performed in every Japanese home when a member of the family is absent on a journey differ in no essential from those which are performed for the dead. His essential self is ever present, though no longer visible.

GREAT INFLUENCE OF THIS FAITH.

It will not be difficult to understand the tremendous influence on the lives of the living of such a faith as this, a belief which has operated to ingrain in the very souls of the Japanese the conviction that their acts affect not themselves alone, but all who bear their names, in the past or in the generations to come. From this has grown the feeling that disgrace is more to be dreaded than death, for the latter is no more than the passing from one form of existence to another, while the former affects the happiness and honor of one's ancestors.

Thoughtless observers have called the Japanese fatalists, reckless of life; but no terms could more obscure the real explanation. Their whole training, the knowledge that in their hands rests the good name of all who have preceded and all who will come after them, the traditions of chivalry—Bushido, the Path of Samurai—which have been enforced through centuries by that greatest of social forces, public opinion, have combined to make them ideal soldiers; they may fear death, but they fear shame and dishonor more. Hence they gladly give themselves when loyalty and duty demand the sacrifice.

The exaggerated devotion of the Japanese to the Emperor is another fruit of ancestor-worship which is the dominant note in their

character. The departed spirits of the forefathers of families and clans have gathered themselves, in a sense, about those of divine origin, the imperial ancestors, and in this natural way the national cult was developed from the primitive form of ancestor-worship. To the men in Togo's fleet and Oyama's armies the Mikado is not only the descendant of the Sun Goddess, but embodies in his personality the sum of the virtues of his ancestors for more than twenty centuries, deities who are ever present in the vast company of the departed who are the guardian spirits of the nation and the individuals.

WONDERS OF VALOR EXPLAINED.

With such a belief, consciously expressed or not, but nevertheless a moving force in the people, the wonders the Japanese have performed begin to be comprehensible. It has made them well-nigh unconquerable, and the world may gaze with alarm and dread at the awakening of such a power. The principles of rectitude, benevolence, veracity, honor, which we are told are the fruits of Shintoism, may be the safeguard of other races and nations, but the future development and course of Japan promise to be one of the most deeply interesting chapters of the history of the century before us.

The next important event in the conduct of the war was the capture of the island of Saghalin, a territory that came into great prominence during the subsequent peace negotiations at Portsmouth. Under date of July 8th a landing of the Japanese troops on the Island of Saghalin was officially reported and startled military circles in St. Petersburg, though it had been realized since the defeat of Admiral Rojestvensky that the Japanese were able to take possession of the island at will. The strength of the landing force was such that the garrison of the island was too weak to offer an effective resistance.

Though the Japanese seemed unwilling to risk a grand battle with General Linevitch pending the peace meeting at Washington, the landing of troops on Saghalin was considered to express Japan's decision regarding the formal conclusion of a general arm-

justice, namely, that in the interval before the meeting it was necessary to occupy the island, whose possession was an important card in Japan's diplomatic contest at Washington.

The news came in the following despatch, dated July 7, from General Liapunoff, commanding the Russian troops on the island: "At nine o'clock in the morning of July 7 a Japanese squadron approached the village of Shepivan, about seven miles southwest of Karsakorsk, and opened fire on the shore."

Another despatch of the same date said: "At 3 P. M. Japanese torpedo boats approached Karsakorsk, and the Russian batteries opened fire on them and compelled the boats to retire. During the bombardment four of the inhabitants of Karsakorsk were killed. The bombardment had been anticipated, and the commandant ordered the withdrawal of the defenders southward."

FLEET COVERS LANDING OF TROOPS.

The Japanese fleet covering the landing of troops on the Island of Saghalin consisted of two battleships, seven cruisers, three gunboats, thirty-six torpedo boats and ten transports loaded with troops. The Japanese landed at the village of Meree, between Shepivan and Karsakorsk. The commander of the Russian detachment of troops at Karsakorsk ordered the coast defence guns to be blown up and all the government buildings burned before retiring.

The following report was received from the Japanese army headquarters on Saghalin Island: "Our army, without much resistance, occupied Karsakorsk early on July 8. The enemy burned the town and retired to positions eight miles north, where they resumed resistance. We dislodged them and are now in pursuit. At 11 A. M., on July 8, the enemy had retreated to a point twenty-two miles north of Karsakorsk. We captured two 21-centimetre guns, two 12-pounders and also an amount of ammunition."

Admiral Kataoka reports under date of July 7 as follows:

"My squadron went north, and, acting in conformity with a prearranged plan, landed marines on July 7 at a point previously

chosen. There was no resistance, and a portion of our army had already been landed."

Under date of July 9, Admiral Kataoka reported:

"The squadron convoyed the transports through dense fogs on July 5. The fleet preserved good order and reached the point chosen for concentration on the evening of July 7. The fleet anchored, and the work of sweeping the sea of dangerous obstacles was completed. The transports were led in gradually. The warships lowered launches and assisted in landing troops, guardships protecting the operation. Admiral Dewa reported that his division had reached the landing place at 6 in the morning, and a landing was effected. A reconnaissance was conducted, but no defences were found. Only three guards were discovered. The flotilla engaged in sweeping the sea for dangerous obstacles encountered heavy currents, but speedily pressed the work.

DIVISION SUDDENLY SHELLED.

"A portion of the squadron and the transports were led through the cleared space, and the marines were landed from the combined division. Later the army relieved the marines. Our sweeping division was suddenly shelled from the hills south of Korsakorsk. The cruiser Akagi was exposed to the fire, but the sweeping was concluded without damage. The army reported by wireless, on July 8, that Korsakorsk had been taken. Our flags are visible at several points. We were apprehensive on account of the weather, but the work of the fleet was successfully accomplished. Admiral Nakao reconnoitered in the vicinity of the island, but nothing unusual was discovered. Early on the 8th three warships and two destroyers were despatched to Yensuma Cape. Later a destroyer entered Rolisei and was vigorously shelled by a field piece. We returned the fire and silenced the enemy's guns."

Saghalin, pronounced by Orientals Sag-a-leen, that lone island almost out of the world, and quite unknown to most of us, is destined to become famous as the centre round which the Russian and Japanese envoys, now in conference at Portsmouth, are to fight out the terms of peace. Russia naturally feels that she cannot,

without national dishonor, acquiesce in ceding to Japan any of her territory, and Japan as keenly feels that this little island province, of which Russia robbed her in the days of her weakness, must return to its rightful owner.

The island, which from time immemorial has belonged to Japan, was in 1867 deliberately annexed by Russia, who calmly announced that the Kurile Islands, also Japanese territory, were given in exchange. This overweening attitude of perfidy and insolence on the part of the Muscovite Power toward the little island empire of Japan, which reached its climax in the Russian occupation of Port Arthur, after insisting on its evacuation by the Japanese, the latter have never forgiven. No proposal to ignore the vital issues of the case by the cession of territory can for a moment be entertained by the representatives of Japan.

HISTORY OF THE ISLAND.

The Island of Saghalin first comes into history in the year 1780, when some Japanese mariners, shipwrecked on the shores of the Okhotsk Sea, were taken prisoners to Irkutsk, when the Russians for the first time learned of the existence of Saghalin and the chain of islands to the south of it. In the following year a Russian expedition landed on its shores, but the Ainu and Japanese inhabitants refused to trade with the strangers, and the expedition met with no success.

In the year 1806 an unsuccessful attempt was made to force a treaty on the Tokio Government with regard to trading on the island, as the Russians were looked upon with suspicion by the Japanese, who had heard of their high-handed annexations in Siberia. Disappointed and enraged, the Russians now landed on Saghalin, pillaged and burned the town of Kurhunkotan and retired, leaving behind them a document threatening Japan with loss of her northern islands in the event of her continuing to refuse to trade with Russia.

These threats the Russians tried to enforce, but after the failure of the Diana expedition, in 1811, they changed their tactics and began to send over peaceable Russian emigrants to the island,

until in 1845 they practically had possession of all the northern half. Japan, powerless at that time to cope with a foreign enemy, had to be content with the southern half of her own island. Muravieff's annexations in Manchuria gave Russia an increased hold on Saghalin, and in 1859 all the northern half was formally annexed by Russia.

The Japanese were very indignant at this, coming, as it did, just after the renewal of a treaty of commerce with Russia in 1858. Embassies were sent in 1862, and again in 1867, to St. Petersburg, the first one being sent back with contempt, while the second was forced to exchange the southern half of Saghalin for the Kurile Islands, which was a fraud, as the Kuriles never belonged to Russia and are of no value. Japan submitted, just as she did to her evacuation of Port Arthur in 1895, but only because she knew that her own day was coming.

BRACING AND HEALTHFUL CLIMATE.

The island is one of an archipelago that stretches across the Northern Pacific, some of the islands of which—as Vancouver, Queen Charlotte Island and those off the Alaskan coast—are in Canadian and American territory. All these islands have much the same climate and products. There is a great deal of dampness and fog, but, on the whole, the climate is bracing and healthful.

Saghalin is rich in forests, minerals and fisheries, and there are many valleys capable of high cultivation, especially for certain fruits. Russia, however, has left the island quite undeveloped. The place has been turned into a convict settlement, and convict labor is the least productive of all activities. But all the natural resources of the island are still dormant. Japan is anxiously looking forward to the time when, in her hands, it will present the same signs of progress that have followed her occupation of Formosa, where, in five years after its cession to Japan, the revenues increased from 3,000,000 to 21,000,000 yen.

It is not a favorite resort of tourists, as most of the population are criminals of some sort, and one feels that every one encountered is a murderer or something of that kind, as only the

worst characters are sent there. The term of exile is so long that, in most cases, the prisoner does not care to go back to Russia at the expiration of his sentence.

It seems that the Russian custom in giving a criminal life-imprisonment is to sentence a man for 100 years, and for every offence of which he is thereafter guilty a few more years are tacked on to his sentence. Some of them have committed so many murders since their incarceration that now their terms range from 500 to 1000 years. These, as a rule, are the most desperate of characters, frequently killing their fellow-prisoners or some of the guards, and, if they don't kill some one every day, it is only because the opportunity is not afforded them. Visitors to the island always, therefore, receive a very unfavorable impression -- depressing and gloomy is the whole aspect of the place.

AN ATTRACTIVE COUNTRY.

M. Paul Labbe, a noted French traveler who visited Saghalin, said on his return to Tokio: "The valley of the river near Vladimovski is ravishing, the torrent rushing with a glad sound over a bed of shining pebbles. This country pleases me." But the next moment he came upon a gang of prisoners in chains on their way to work, and his opinions of the country changed: It is, therefore, the criminal character of the place that gives it the air of gloom which stands in the way of the country's progress and happiness. Take the criminals away, give them better conditions and a wider hope, and Saghalin will be as good a place to live in as any other.

The Russians have confined the activities of the convicts almost wholly to agricultural labor, and that without due consideration of either climate or soil. Cereals seldom ripen perfectly in the ground, as the frost sets in early, often as early, as August. Potatoes, cabbages and turnips do best. Saghalin is much the same sort of country as our own Alaska, and with about the same possibilities of cultivation and development. The forests are rich in valuable timber. Since the reversion of the island to the Japanese a few weeks ago, the Imperial Government is already

beginning to send out emigrants, advising those who go to Saghalin to study the conditions in Norway and Sweden, as the climate and products are said to resemble those of the above-named countries.

In the hidden recesses of the mountains of Saghalin are rich veins of copper and silver. Naphtha wells have also been found, and the sand of some of the rivers is said to contain gold. It is certain that there are valuable mines of coal, but none of them has been developed.

WEALTH OF MARINE PRODUCTS.

A more certain source of revenue, and one that touches Japanese interests very closely, is the wealth of marine products, the fisheries of the island being varied and valuable. Innumerable quantities of fish are annually caught by the Japanese, who visit the island every summer. The bays along the coast are alive with shoals of herring and the rivers teem with salmon. As fish is a staple article of Japanese food, and fish manures find an important place in the cultivation of Japanese rice, indigo and mulberry, the fishermen of Saghalin are always sure of a large and profitable market. So great is the national appetite for fish that the enormous fisheries off the coast of Japan, the greatest in the world outside of Canada and the United States, are unequal to the demand. The population of Japan, now 47,000,000, is rapidly increasing year by year, so that the Saghalin fisheries will always be growing in value and importance to the Japanese Empire.

As fishermen, the Russians in Saghalin have been a complete failure, all the best work being done by the Japanese. The Russian is more fond of vodka than fish, and is too much of a land-lubber to take to fishing for a livelihood. Most of the natives of the island—Ainu, Giliaks, Tunghuses and Oroks—are keen sportsmen. Fishing, however, is an industrial and commercial enterprise, requiring more than a sportman's genius.

The Japanese now feel that since Russia has entirely failed properly to colonize the island and to develop its resources, and by convict settlements has made it a disgrace to civilization, it is only

fair that it should now revert to its original owners, from whom it was taken by fraud. Even non-Christian Japan is ashamed of the state of things in Saghalin to-day. The criminals but deteriorate by their residence there, and the wretched inhabitants indigenous to the country have not been able to withstand the contagion of the vice with which they are brought into contact from day to day.

Apart from its many material advantages, Saghalin has a strategical value which the Japanese cannot afford to overlook. A leading exponent of public opinion in Tokio says that in ten years the Japanese will have a railway running from the north to the south of the island, and that a great naval station will guard the Tsugaru Straits, and that another at Korsakov will watch over the Straits of La Perouse, while the Gulf of Tartary and the mouth of the Amur will be supervised by Japanese military and naval stations at Alexandrovsk and the extreme north of the island. He says every approach to Siberia will be in Japanese hands, and Vladivostok itself will be under Japanese control. The Sea of Okhotsk will become practically a Japanese lake, and the commerce of Kamtchatka will pass into Japanese hands.

GREAT POLITICAL SIGNIFICANCE.

And yet they value Saghalin more for sentimental and patriotic reasons than for any other. It is to them what Alsace-Lorraine is to the loyal Frenchman. He mourns its loss, not so much for its material value as for the injured national honor which the loss implies.

A prominent American journal comments as follows:

"Japan's occupation of Saghalin, that densely forested and climatically uninviting island which geographically brings the chain of islands forming the Japanese Empire to their nearest contact with the mainland of Asia, has far greater political significance than the importance of Saghalin itself would seem to call for. In addition to the fact that in this move Japan has for the first time carried the war into Russian territory, which will obviously suggest itself as the most interesting feature of the situation, with its possible bearing upon the future negotiations for peace, there

is the further point to remember that in regaining Saghalin Japan has settled an old score against Russia.

"The grievance dates from 1875, when Japan was forced to relinquish all claim to the island, with its 29,300 square miles of territory and its mines and fisheries, in exchange for the Kuriles, which Russia had never owned and had no right to give away, and which contain about 6000 square miles, scattered over thirty-two islets. Japan has never ceased to resent the way in which the Russians accomplished this piece of spoilation, and it will be surprising if she consents to relinquish her hold upon Saghalin, the ancient home of the Ainos, the aboriginal race in the Japanese archipelago.

"Japan's natural right to Saghalin, as the continuation of the archipelago and the home of a very considerable Japanese population, was not questioned until the Russian encroachments began in 1806. In that year a Russian squadron visited Kushunkotan, the most important Japanese settlement on the island, and because the Yeddo Government had previously rejected overtures for a commercial treaty and because the inhabitants resented the intrusion, the Russians pillaged and burned the town and carried a number of the Japs and Ainos prisoners to Siberia.

"Reprisals followed, and before long Russia began her usual tactics of absorption. Emigration from Siberia to northern Saghalin was encouraged, and inevitable conflicts occurred between the two peoples. It was Japan that made the next overtures for a settlement, in 1862, whereupon Russia set up a claim to the whole island. All that Japan could gain was an agreement in 1867, for a joint occupation of the island. How this worked, with Russia for a neighbor, need not be asked, and in 1875 Japan reluctantly agreed to the cession of Saghalin, reserving only some fishing rights, which Russia promptly rendered worthless by the obstacles imposed."

CHAPTER XLV.

PEACE BETWEEN RUSSIA AND JAPAN.

President Roosevelt's Proposition for Peace Negotiations
—New Kind of Diplomacy—The Envoys Chosen to
Represent the Belligerents in Conference—Heroic
Efforts to Reach an Agreement—Final Terms Approved
by Both Nations.

AFTER the overwhelming defeat of the Russian naval fleet in the Sea of Japan, there was a universal expectation of an attempt to end the war and secure peace. President Roosevelt resolved to cast aside all roundabout diplomacy and bring the belligerents together, in the hope of ending the strife. It was announced at Washington, June 9th, that he had succeeded in securing the acquiescence of Japan and Russia to the opening of peace negotiations. He addressed a cable message to both Governments and it was delivered to the Mikado at Tokio and the Czar at St. Petersburg.

This note was not sent until it had been ascertained that both Governments were ready to entertain a proposition with a view to opening peace negotiations. The following despatch was sent by the President, through our representatives to the Japanese and Russian Governments:

“The President feels that the time has come when, in the interest of all mankind he must endeavor, if possible, to bring to an end the terrible and lamentable conflict now being waged.

“With both Russia and Japan the United States has inherited ties of friendship and good will. It hopes for the prosperity and welfare of each, and it feels that the progress of the world is set back by the war between these two great nations.

“The President accordingly urges the Russian and Japanese Governments, not only for their own sakes, but in the interest of the whole civilized world, to open direct negotiations for peace with

one another. The President suggests that these peace negotiations be conducted directly and exclusively between the belligerents; in other words, that there may be a meeting of Russian and Japanese plenipotentiaries or delegates without any intermediary, in order to see if it is not possible for these representatives of the two Powers to agree to terms of peace.

“The President earnestly asks that the Russian (Japanese) Government do now agree to such a meeting, and is asking the Japanese (Russian) Government likewise to agree.

“While the President does not feel that any intermediary should be called in in respect to the peace negotiations themselves, he is entirely willing to do what he properly can if the two Powers concerned feel that his services will be of aid in arranging the preliminaries as to the time and place of meeting.

THE PRESIDENT'S PRAYER FOR PEACE.

“But, if even these preliminaries can be arranged directly between the two Powers, or in any other way, the President will be glad, as his sole purpose is to bring about a meeting which the whole civilized world will pray may result in peace.”

Fearlessly treading on delicate ground that might daunt the most finished diplomat, President Roosevelt moved step by step until he secured the consent of Tokio and St. Petersburg to accept for consideration the proposition outlined in his identical note which offered to both an honorable basis for a peace treaty. It was evidently understood that as soon as this note was delivered at the Foreign Offices in Tokio and St. Petersburg its contents should be made public, for when a cablegram reached the State Department from Minister Griscom that the note had been presented by him to the Japanese Foreign Offices, copies of it were at once released at the White House by Secretary to President Loeb.

No statement accompanied the note, but diplomatic usage makes it positive that a communication of such vital importance would not be made public without the consent of all parties interested. Press dispatches from St. Petersburg indicated that the Russian Government was aware that an announcement of Presi-

dent Roosevelt's urgent prayer to Japan and Russia to make peace would be made in Washington. The note was presented by Ambassador Meyer at the Foreign Office in St. Petersburg and notice of that act was immediately cabled back to Washington, and as soon as similar intelligence arrived from Tokio, the world was notified that Japan and Russia had been presented with a plan for peace settlement.

President Roosevelt early learned in his preliminary negotiations that Japan was opposed to the intervention of any other Power, and if a treaty of peace were to be effected it must be the result of direct negotiations between her and Russia. Japan has an excellent memory, and the lesson she learned when robbed of the fruits of her victory of China in 1894, is not forgotten. She made it very clear that she would not tolerate the interference of any European power whose ulterior motives were suspected.

SUBSCRIBE TO THE PRINCIPLE OF PEACE.

President Roosevelt was informed that Japan wanted to make her own terms of peace with Russia, and this proposition proved acceptable to the latter Government. It was not believed that any terms of peace were mentioned by either belligerent Power. In the acceptance of the President's note Japan and Russia subscribed to the principle of peace, and that was what President Roosevelt had been laboring for. The details were to be arranged between the plenipotentiaries of the two Powers.

There was but one opinion expressed of President Roosevelt's part in bringing Japan and Russia together. He was accorded the very first place in the world's diplomacy. To him alone was ascribed the credit of bringing the warring Powers to the consideration of peace. Every move in that direction was of his own initiation and he conducted the delicate negotiations at first hand, being his own Premier and Secretary of State.

His management of this great diplomatic work was masterly and perfect. Not a whisper of the processes by which the way was opened for the presentation of his note was allowed to escape. In the history of diplomatic affairs in Washington there is probably

not a parallel of President Roosevelt's achievements and the secrecy with which he worked. He laid his plans, but not a hint of them escaped until he was ready himself to make a public announcement with the consent of all the Powers interested.

The course the President pursued in leading up to peace negotiations was not mapped out on the impulse of the moment. For a year before his mind had been upon the subject of a termination of the hostilities in the East and peace between Japan and Russia. He and Secretary of State Hay many times discussed the situation, which they felt would inevitably occur when an overwhelming defeat of either belligerent would make peace imperative.

WAITING FOR THE OPPORTUNE TIME.

The part this Government would play in such a situation was discussed time and again. It was believed that the "psychological hour" would come with the fall of Port Arthur, but as that event was delayed so long it was recognized that it would not be the crucial period of the war. Then followed the battle of Mukden, when the President was hopeful that Russia's terrible disaster would put her in a temper to discuss peace, but the formidable Baltic fleet remained as her last hope, and again peace was deferred.

The President closely watched the progress of the Russian fleet and for days and weeks before the battle in the Sea of Japan he waited with the deepest anxiety for news of a decisive naval battle. When that news came he was convinced that the hour had arrived for him to follow the course he had long before determined upon, and he began sounding other neutral Powers on the subject of peace, working up delicately to the belligerents themselves until he had the gratification of learning that they would receive the suggestion in his note, whose diplomatic significance cannot be overestimated.

After agreeing to the proposition of President Roosevelt, the two Powers proceeded at once to the appointment of peace envoys, with the understanding that they were to be clothed with full powers.

In place of Muravieff, who was first selected to represent

Russia, M. Witte was chosen. His honorable career has been eulogized by Dr. E. J. Dillon, a correspondent of St. Petersburg, as follows :

“Witte’s name is a banner with a program inscribed upon it. And the gist of that program is peace abroad and education at home, commercial competition with foreigners, and all-around development for Russians. He would struggle with Japan, Germany, Britain and the United States, but only in friendly rivalry for the markets of the world ; and he would arm the Russian people with general and technical knowledge and endow them with all freedom which that involves. Such, in brief, is his cure for the ills from which his country is suffering. And the manner in which he would employ that cure is simple—frankly admit the disease and resolutely set about healing it.

“After the war had broken out he said : ‘It was a blunder to begin ; it’s a crime to continue. Let us make peace.’

EULOGY OF M. WITTE.

“A few weeks before the rupture of diplomatic relations Baron Kurino, the Japanese Ambassador at St. Petersburg, made a series of proposals which Witte approved and supported. But his Majesty, the Czar, rejected them, and the war followed.

“Sergius Witte has left his mark in every department over which he presided. He was the Minister of Railways, and the tariffs were forthwith changed for the better, and the Great Trans-siberian line was made possible. He was Finance Minister, and the gold standard was introduced. He was asked to study the agricultural question, and he advised the Czar to strike off the fetters that still bind the peasants. His advice was rejected. Asked to solve the religious difficulty, he abolished the penal laws against millions and millions of Dissenters. The Jews, too, he would have emancipated, but he was not allowed ever to discuss the question.

“To sum up : Sergius Witte is a reality in a realm of shadows. He is what others seem to be. Ministers and officials are solicitous about multitudinous details ; he alone thinks of the whole. He

has an eagle eye for talent, and puts the right man in the right place, even when that man is his own personal enemy.

“Being patriotic, he would quickly use the knife of the surgeon while the bureaucracy waits for the blade of the assassin. Belonging to the highest ranks of the Russian aristocracy, he is as democratic in his views and ways as an American from Maryland; and having been for ten years the most successful Minister of Russian finances, he possesses such a modest fortune that if he were deprived of his salary as president of the Council he would have to imitate an American ex-President, and take to working elsewhere for a decent livelihood. He is a staunch friend, an indulgent enemy and a devoted patriot, and is therefore misunderstood by the world of bureaucrats. Like medieval saints, therefore, he will probably be canonized only after his death.”

DISTINGUISHED COMMISSIONER.

Baron Rosen was Associate Commissioner intrusted with the delicate task of bringing about a settlement of the Russo-Japanese war without loss of prestige or honor to Russia. He was made Ambassador to Washington to take the place of Count Cassini. Baron Rosen comes from a very old Russian family of Swedish origin. His ancestors fought under Gustavus Adolphus 300 years ago, and settled in Lithuania, where the family estates are located. The Rosens have distinguished themselves as soldiers, diplomats and writers. A brother of Baron Rosen is one of the most eminent scientists of Russia, and is a member of the Russian Academy of Immortals, honored because of his great knowledge of Arabic. Baron Rosen is a State Councillor, Chamberlain of the Imperial, a Knight of the Orders of St. Vladimir, St. Ann and St. Stanislaus, and is an accomplished scholar, musician and linguist, speaking English, German, French, Italian and Japanese. His wife is Baroness Elizabeth Alexandrovna Rosen, an accomplished musician and daughter of the famous General Odintzoff, for years Governor-General of Nijni Novgorod.

Baron Rosen is in middle life and for twenty-five years has been in the foreign service of his country. He was Charge

d'Affaires at Tokio, Consul-General of New York, and later Charge d'Affaires at Washington during President Cleveland's first administration. From 1893 until the beginning of the war with Japan, he was Minister at Tokio. He is a member of the Metropolitan Club at Washington.

The senior representative designated by Japan to bring about an honorable settlement of the war was Baron Jutarō Komura, Japan's present Foreign Minister. He was educated in this country, and was formerly Japanese Minister at Washington, where he was succeeded by Mr. Takahira, his assistant, in representing the interests of Japan. From Washington Komura was sent to St. Petersburg as Minister from his country. During the war between China and Japan Komura held a high place in Japan's Foreign Ministry.

At the close of the war with China he became Japanese Minister at Peking. In 1902 he became Foreign Minister of Japan and displayed great adroitness and ability in gaining time for Japan in which to prepare for the conflict between his country and Russia, which for two years appeared inevitable. Mr. Komura was one of the first Japanese to be sent to the United States to be educated. He graduated from Harvard and holds a degree from that university.

JAPANESE ENVOY.

Mr. Takahira, the associate of Baron Komura, was educated at the Imperial College of Tokio. He speaks English, French and Russian fluently. Upon graduating he entered the foreign service of his country, and in 1879 was appointed attaché at the legation in Washington. He was advanced to be Secretary of the Legation and served some months as Charge d'Affaires. In 1883 he became a secretary in the Foreign Ministry at Tokio. Subsequently he became Charge d'Affaires at Seoul, Korea, and Consul-General at Shanghai. In 1890 he was made chief of the Political Bureau of the Foreign Ministry at Tokio, and a year later was sent as Consul-General to New York. After that he became Minister-Resident at The Hague, Minister to Italy and Austria-Hungary. During the Chinese-Japanese war he rendered valuable service to his country,

for which he was made Assistant Minister of Foreign Affairs, which office he held until he was sent as Minister to this country.

After the beginning of the Japanese-Russian war he demonstrated great ability in protecting the interests of Japan. He was very highly esteemed at Washington, not only for his ability and tact as a diplomat, but as a most amiable and cultured gentleman.

The Emperor gave a farewell audience and lunch to Baron Komura, envoy to the peace conference at Washington, and the staff of the Japanese Peace Commission. The Emperor delivered an address to Baron Komura and his suite, as follows :

ADDRESS BY EMPEROR OF JAPAN.

“The President of the United States, being grieved to find that the war between Japan and Russia had not been brought to a close after the lapse of more than a year, and being impressed with the urgent need, in the interest of peace and humanity, of terminating the conflict, has suggested that the two governments appoint plenipotentiaries and cause them to meet together to negotiate peace.

“We were compelled, contrary to our expectations, to resort to arms, despite our constant abiding wish for peace, and if, in consequence of the conciliatory spirit of our opponent, hostilities could be brought to an end, nothing would be more satisfactory than such a consummation.

“Accordingly, we at once accept the suggestion of the President of the United States, and we hereby charge you with the mission of negotiating and concluding peace. You should devote yourselves with all your power to discharge your mission and make every effort to secure the re-establishment of peace on a durable basis.”

For the interviewers who greeted him on his arrival in New York, M. Witte had prepared a written statement, which he handed to Prof. De Martens, and which the latter read aloud, as follows :

“For the friendly greetings of the American newspapers upon my first visit to the hospitable shores of the United States I offer my heartfelt thanks. This kind attention touches me all the more

profoundly because I realize the vastness of the power wielded by the press of the United States, and admire the keen intelligence with which it is uniformly directed. I am glad to be able to add that I also appreciate the ethical worth of the aims for the attainment of which that power is so often and so successfully employed.

ONE OF THE NOBLEST ACTS.

“One of the noblest of these acts is the establishment of peace and friendship among nations ; and it is to the praiseworthy efforts of the people of the United States in this direction that my visit to the New World is attributable. For it is in compliance with the American people’s desire for peace, of which President Roosevelt was the authorized exponent, that his Majesty, the Czar, has empowered me to come hither and ascertain the condition which our gallant adversary deems necessary and adequate as a basis for peace negotiations.

“I need hardly point out that it is my ardent desire that the two chivalrous foes, who first became acquainted on the field of battle, may have found in each others sterling qualities motives powerful enough to cultivate that acquaintanceship until it ripens into lasting friendship. Meanwhile, however, the terms offered must first be ascertained, weighed and judged admissible by Russia before she can proceed to formal negotiations. Hitherto, as you are aware, it was customary in cases like this to settle all such preliminaries before the meeting of the plenipotentiaries, whose task it was to come to a final agreement on the matter under discussion.

“Now the very fact that his Majesty, the Czar, consented to take a course involving departure from this ancient diplomatic usage and to appoint a mission to learn the nature of our brave enemy’s terms is an eloquent token of the friendly feeling which he and his subjects continue to cherish toward the people of the United States. I say continue to cherish, because at no epoch in our history have our traditional relations with this great republic been other than cordial.

“And now I should like to say, aye, and to prove to your peo-

ple, who live less in the past than in the present and the future, that it is the fervent wish of the Emperor and the people of Russia further to strengthen the ties of friendship which have hitherto subsisted between the two nations.

"It is in virtue of that sincere desire that his Majesty, the Czar, waiving all other considerations, has unhesitatingly accepted the cordial invitation of your first citizen and genial leader. And if my mission should prove in all other respects barren and the endeavor to find a common basis for peace negotiations should fail for the time being, the signal proof of friendship given by his Majesty, the Czar, and the Russian nation would still stand out as a memorable event, fraught, I trust, with far-reaching and beneficent results to the two great peoples of the West and the East."

ROOSEVELT WELCOMES THE PLENIPOTENTIARIES.

On August 5th, President Roosevelt, on behalf the United States and its people, extended formal greetings to the representatives of Russia and Japan, introduced the plenipotentiaries to one another and entertained them at an elaborate luncheon, at which Russians and Japanese fraternized with one another as comrades, rather than as enemies.

The occasion was impressive. It was attended not by pomp and ceremony, but by a simplicity and frankness characteristic of the President and the people of America. Due honor was paid the distinguished guests of the President and of the country, and they were received with all the dignity to which their exalted rank entitled them.

The day was ideal. After the sun had burned away the haze of early morning the weather was glorious. A brisk breeze just tipped the waves of Long Island Sound with silver, tempering at the same time the heat of the sun's rays.

The handsome war yacht *Mayflower*, one of the most beautiful vessels of the United States navy, on which the formal reception of the Russian and Japanese plenipotentiaries took place, swung easily at anchor just at the entrance of Oyster Bay from Long Island Sound. A quarter of a mile away was the despatch boat

Dolphin, the favorite cruising vessel of several Presidents of the United States. Two miles out in the Sound the cruiser Galveston was anchored, in waiting to convoy the vessels bearing the envoys to the seat of the Washington peace conference at Portsmouth, N. H.

At luncheon on board the *Mayflower* the President proposed the following toast :

"Gentlemen—I propose a toast to which there will be no answer and to which I ask you to drink in silence, standing. I drink to the welfare and prosperity of the sovereigns and peoples of the two great nations whose representatives have met one another on this ship. It is my most earnest hope and prayer in the interest of not only these two great Powers, but of all mankind, that a just and lasting peace may speedily be concluded between them."

CONFERENCE THREATENED WITH RUPTURE.

The sessions of the peace conference at Portsmouth were secret, and from day to day no authentic information of the proceedings could be obtained. There were surmises and guesses as to what had happened, but newspaper correspondents, and consequently the general public, were in ignorance, except as very trivial details leaked out of the conference room. But it became known finally that the envoys could not agree, and it seemed likely that a rupture would follow, and all the efforts to obtain peace would be fruitless.

Russia yielded on a number of minor points, but when the most important were discussed it was found that there was no agreement nor any prospect of it. The opinion of the public alternated between hope and despair, and when it was finally announced that the envoys were agreed, there was as much public gratification as there was surprise. On August 29th Russia's only victory of the war was won at Portsmouth. Despairing and broken-hearted, Baron Komura obeyed the direct orders of the Mikado and conceded every point that the Russians contended for.

The surrender was made, not in Portsmouth, not by Baron Komura and Minister Takahira, who opposed it to the last moment ;

it was made in Tokio by Marquis Ito and his three associates of the Elder Statesmen. The war was practically at an end, and the peace terms were agreed upon. Baron Komura telegraphed to the Emperor of Japan and M. Witte to the Emperor of Russia, each proposing an immediate armistice.

CONDITIONS RELUCTANTLY ACCEPTED.

"We accept your conditions," were the words, sorrowfully spoken, with which Baron Komura ended the three weeks' contest. There was an effect of bitterness about it, and he seemed to emphasize the fact that it was not a compromise, but the reluctant acceptance by the victors of the terms imposed by the vanquished. When on August 18, Baron Komura cabled the Mikado, urging that some concessions be made, he had no idea of the extent to which those concessions would go. The later steps of the Japanese recession he opposed.

"This will cause great indignation in Japan," said one of the Japanese. "It will cause an overturn of the administration. Premier Katsura will probably be forced out of office, and Baron Komura will succeed him. No one holds Baron Komura responsible for yielding to Russia. Among the Japanese there is only sympathy for him, and his opposition to the waiving of indemnity will make him all the more popular."

When the result is calmly analyzed it is seen that there is little reason for grief and gloom on the part of Japan.

The results of the peace concluded, as a matter of fact, were all in favor of Japan in spite of her magnanimous act in withdrawing the indemnity clause to which she was justly entitled.

Japan, to be sure, gained nothing that she has not won by her sword. The withdrawal of the claim of \$600,000,000 was a most serious affair to the Government. Baron Kaneko, who arranged the unsuspected concession was the agent of Marquis Ito, who himself is the most execrated man in Japan. The people are loyal to their Emperor, and they realize that he was advised to give way to Russia by the four Elder Statesmen.

It is impossible to exaggerate the effects upon the army and

navy. Japan withdrew a victorious army from the field and the fleet successfully blockading Vladivostok without any fruits of victory beyond what she had already won. Neither her army nor her navy suffered a single defeat of any kind during the entire war. Japan was not allowed even to retain that which she had already occupied, as she had to return half of the island of Saghalin, which was the only real Russian territory which she had taken.

Japan has lost \$600,000,000 which she spent upon the war. In territory she gained Port Arthur, the strongest fortress in the world; Dalny, an important commercial port; the Liaotung peninsula, and a railway worth about \$17,500,000 and half the island of Saghalin.

She gained in prestige by her victories and completely shattered by land and sea what was considered one of the greatest Powers in the world. In diplomacy Japan lost, by yielding to Russia, which means a great deal in the Far East and Asia.

WHAT RUSSIA LOST.

Japan imposed an indemnity upon China after the war and got it. The Powers did the same after the Boxer uprising and got it. Japan imposed an indemnity upon Russia after defeating her and withdrew it. This will injure her diplomatic prestige in the eyes of the great Powers and reduce the value of her victories.

Russia gained \$600,000,000 and recovered half of the island of Saghalin by diplomacy. Her gains were negative rather than positive, as she prevented Japan from gaining her points upon the interned ships, naval limitations, Saghalin and the indemnity.

Russia lost \$1,500,000,000 spent upon the war—Port Arthur, Dalny, upon which she had spent millions; half of Saghalin and the Eastern Chinese Railway. Her military and naval prestige were shattered completely and her fleets destroyed. During the whole war Russia was never able to inflict a single defeat upon her enemy by land or sea, and when the war closed she had not over 500,000 armed men in Manchuria who had been at the mercy of the Japanese Marshal Oyama for nearly five months.

The Marquis Ito has always been in favor of an alliance with Russia, as he considered her interests were in line with those of Japan in Manchuria, and that is why he exercised his great influence with the Mikado to withdraw the indemnity. Japan gained the opportunity for immediate development, and her progress in the Far East will be even more rapid than it has been since the war with China. The recent treaty signed with England on August 12 will also have great influence. It will be years before Russia recovers from the effects of the war.

Thus Japan and Russia terminated their bloody conflict. The terms of peace were agreed upon through the magnanimity of the Japanese. The formal treaty will allow the two nations to enter upon what all mankind will hope and trust shall prove "a just and lasting peace."

JAPAN'S NOTABLE SUCCESSES.

The negotiations, which were happily terminated, proved a fitting conclusion to what, in many respects, was the most notable war in history. The gigantic struggle in which an Oriental nation for the first time was successful in warfare with the most populous and one of the most powerful European Powers witnessed the most destructive naval battle recorded upon the pages of time, brought into engagement upon the field of battle the largest armies of which man has trustworthy chronicle, was the first great war in which modern armament and modern tactics saw their full development, and brought into the family of nations a lusty giant from the East that henceforward will become one of the controlling factors to be reckoned with in the development, progress and adjustments of civilization.

The peace conference proved a natural corollary of the stupendous and transcendently important events it considered; it furnishes history a new chapter in diplomacy; it places a crown of laurel upon the brow of America's great President, Theodore Roosevelt, the Pacificator; it enshrines the name of Japan freshly in the hearts of all lovers of peace, all friends of humanity, for her final acts of magnanimity and moderation, which exalt and glorify her

character not one whit less than her brilliant and heroic achievements in war.

By the terms of the treaty Japan gains all that she originally fought for and much more besides. The real cause of the war, summed into a very few words, was Russia's encroachments upon Korea, which threatened Japan's autonomy. Japan's fear was strengthened by Russia's refusal both to evacuate Manchuria and to open the treaty ports according to agreement; her determination to establish herself permanently there, with evident designs of eventually appropriating Korea as well, was unmistakable. The result of the war completely alters that situation.

TERMS OF THE TREATY.

By the terms of the treaty the points agreed upon were conceded to contain the following clauses:

First. Recognition of the preponderating influence of Japan in Korea. The term "preponderating influence" in the treaty is tantamount to the grant of a protectorate or suzerainty of Japan over the Hermit Kingdom.

Second. Providing for the simultaneous evacuation of Manchuria. This provision applies to the withdrawal of the great armies, but under the other terms of the treaty Japan will keep a considerable force in that country, at least until China makes some reimbursement to her for its transfer. Russia, however, will now be compelled to evacuate the country completely, thus seeing the total extinguishment of all her hopes in that direction.

Third. The transfer of the lease of Liaotung Peninsula by Russia to Japan, and with it the lease of Port Arthur and Dalny and the permanent control of the Sea of Japan.

Fourth. The re-establishment of Chinese civil administration in Manchuria. This, of course, will be under the general direction of Japan.

Fifth. The transfer to Japan by Russia of the property in Dalny and Port Arthur.

Sixth. The cession to Japan of the Chinese Eastern Railway from Harbin through Manchuria to Port Arthur and Dalny.

Seventh. The recognition of Japanese fishing rights on the Pacific Siberian littoral.

Eighth. Acknowledgment of the right of ownership to Japan of the southern half of the Island of Saghalin, which Japan now holds by right of conquest.

Japan's original demands included the transfer to her of the Russian ships interned at neutral ports, the limitation of Russia's naval strength in the Pacific, and an indemnity or reimbursement for the cost of the war, estimated at \$600,000,000.

The demand for the interned ships and limitation of naval strength was never seriously intended, but the main contest hinged upon the question of indemnity.

Japan entirely yielded this point, and, moreover, conceded to Russia the northern half of Saghalin Island. The latter was absolutely necessary to Russia's position in Asia. Unless she possesses this portion of the island she would be forced to abandon not only Vladivostok, but her entire possessions along the Pacific and Arctic seas, a vast empire in itself.

MEDIATION OF PRESIDENT ROOSEVELT.

The points of difference between the two countries would have resulted in certain rupture had it not been for the tactful and timely mediation of President Roosevelt. The negotiations had reached the breaking point; the breach was inevitable; the two armies, massing over 1,000,000 men, were ready to spring at each other's throats and renew the frightful carnage, when President Roosevelt took a hand. He averted the rupture by his firmness, his earnestness, the confidence which he inspired and the unselfish motives which both belligerents immediately recognized; the conference was resumed, and, by tactful intercession and appeals to the Czar and the Mikado, the demands were finally reduced to a negotiable minimum, ending in entire accord.

No achievement of President Roosevelt will endure longer or bring him greater fame than this. He has won his way to the forefront as the chief personage among the nations of the earth, not by bloody deeds upon the battlefield, but in the paths of peace,

so that we shall emblazon our country's history, along with Lincoln the Emancipator, as Roosevelt the Pacificator.

Japan comes out of the struggle with all the honor and all the glory. It was hers to win and do; to show her greatest courage at the crucial moment and prove her right to enter into full fellowship with the civilized peoples of the earth. Her achievements in the war and the results therefrom have fully compensated her for all sacrifices, but the real benefits have scarcely yet appeared. She has settled for all the time her potency in the Orient; she has proven her fibre; she will now stand forth as one of the chief competitors of the other great Powers in the peaceful marts of trade, and will no doubt demonstrate that her heroism and honor in war are equaled by her integrity and fairness in peace.

RUSSIA'S HOPES BLASTED.

But what of Russia? She has reaped what she has sown. She has paid the forfeit for her avarice and her duplicity. Her hopes in the Orient are ignominiously blasted; her military prestige has been obscured; her internal situation was never so threatening. She is at the parting of the ways. Absolutism must recognize that at this stage of civilization it is an anachronism. Should she persist in her blind obstinacy, the staggering horrors of a reign of terror, with all its appalling consequences to stubborn autocracy, must be her inevitable destiny.

By a lavish concession, unexpected in the victor of eighteen pitched battles and the greatest naval triumph of history, Japan gave the world peace. Having won all for which the war was begun, Japan consented to peace without requiring from its defeated foe all that the end of such a war justly demanded. Bitter disappointment was felt in Japan and by all the friends of the Island Empire. Great as is the gift of peace to the world, all whose interests, international, financial, industrial and commercial, were in hourly peril while this great struggle lasted, there was a sense of disproportion in a war which closed without the visible national rewards its victories justified.

The broad, large-minded and far-sighted declaration of the

Mikado that Japan made peace because the broad interests of the world, which call for tranquillity, were of more weight than the pecuniary gain of a single land, will be widely interpreted as a sign of weakness and not of power. But in the end, when the great decision is weighed in the sure balances of history, it will be seen, known and understood that the counsellors of Japan have been as wise in making peace as her armies were victorious in making war. The same high fortune attended both; and it is equally true of both that neither took an unnecessary risk nor forgot at any moment or under any temptation the sacrifices demanded by allegiance to far-reaching principles.

JAPAN GIVES UP INDEMNITY.

An indemnity was due Japan. Ransom for Saghalin would follow the practice of nations. But both would have sullied a great national struggle and an heroic victory with the taint of blood-money if for their lack war had been resumed. Step by step the world came to feel that Japan would not be justified in resuming war if indemnity were the sole obstacle to peace. The Japanese Government was quick to see this; and with the amazing shrewd skill Japan has shown at every turn, her counsellors have placed their country in an impregnable position before the bar of international opinion by waiving an indemnity.

Nor were there lacking sound, material reasons for this policy. If war were renewed, Japan might deal General Linevitch's army a colossal defeat; but her armies entered on a campaign at each march removed from their base and one which could close only at Lake Baikal, and with the acquisition of Vladivostok and Eastern Siberia. Not a province in the region has paid the cost of its administration in twoscore years. The careful and minute report, drawn from Russian sources made to the Japanese Government, reached the conclusion that in no reasonable period could the territory be self-sustaining, even under Japan's frugal administration; while it involved an expenditure for defense garrison and development which would strain Japanese resources for a generation.

These are not considerations which would weigh either with

an army flushed with victory in the field or the great masses of Japan delirious with national triumph. Neither in the Manchurian camps, not one of which has ever been struck for retreat, nor in the streets of Tokio were the terms of peace received with enthusiasm. In them the victor yielded to the vanquished. But the history of the next half-century is certain to prove the wisdom and justify the judgment of a decision which accepts the substance of a victory already won in war, and avoids the risks of an extended struggle whose only result would be territory which would be a burden—a liability and not an asset.

JAPAN VICTOR IN PEACE TREATY.

Making every allowance for the splendid diplomacy of M. Witte, who gave his land its only success from the hour the first torpedo was fired before Port Arthur until the last shot was exchanged before Kirin, it still remains true in the treaty of peace, as in war, that Japan is the victor. It has met single-handed the largest of military monarchies and driven it in helpless defeat. It has created a claim to be recognized one of the world's great Powers. By a master stroke, worthy of the great statesman who has guided and made it great for twoscore years, as it takes its place at the world's council board in the seat its sword has won, through its large magnanimity in making peace it demonstrates to the common sense of mankind that its great power is guided and controlled by a sense of the obligations due to the comity of nations and to the claims of humanity.

At such an hour the United States, which introduced Japan to the world and has guided it with advice at this crisis, can justly feel that, as in its own history, the triumph of Japan in making peace is greater than its victories in war, marvelous as they have been.

President Roosevelt in the peace assured at Portsmouth won a great personal triumph and achieved a service to humanity vouchsafed to no man in our day. Great as was Bismarck's work in securing peace at the Berlin Congress, President Roosevelt's work on this occasion was greater still. He called the conference,

Again and again he saved it from disaster. At the end he secured the concessions, first from the Czar and next from the Mikado, which made peace possible. Without President Roosevelt war would have been resumed. Single handed and alone he changed the history of the world when neither nation at war asked for his good offices nor desired them.

Such an achievement and such a work put a man in a class apart. He becomes in himself one of the world's greatest forces, to be reckoned with in all its wider affairs. No man's career and no man's future can be regarded in the same light or prove the same after such supreme success in the most difficult of tasks as after he has been thus triumphantly tested by the "arduous greatness of things done." At home and abroad, in international affairs and in domestic politics, the "World Peacemaker" holds a new place and speaks with new power in all he says and does.

ONE RUSSIAN GRATEFULLY REMEMBERED.

The one Russian whom his countrymen will remember with gratitude in this dire and disastrous struggle is M. Witte. He was doubtless aided in his brilliant fight for Russia by President Roosevelt's advocacy, the pressure of all Europe and the various causes which led the Japanese Government at the critical moment to yield.

While these considerations exist they would never have won for Russia but for the masterly diplomacy of M. Witte. He was the commanding figure of the conference. At every stage he out-classed and outmaneuvered his opponents. He came to a land estranged and prejudiced, and by his bearing and utterances stemmed the tides of national feeling. He entered the conference with the odds against him, and he won every point he made. When he led the Japanese envoy to take up the terms, article by article, he put his antagonist into a paralyzing predicament. A lesser man would have haggled over results the war had put beyond question. Accepting these all without hesitation, M. Witte led Baron Komura along until he had placed Japan before the world in the attitude of a nation proposing to continue the war for an indemnity.

No greater stroke in diplomacy has been achieved in our day. It makes M. Witte the one Russian who in disastrous struggle has saved the honor and treasure of his land in the council chamber when all had been lost by sea and by land.

Crowned heads of the world united with distinguished statesmen of America and Europe in according the glory of peace between Russia and Japan to President Roosevelt. Telegrams of congratulation poured in upon the President in a great flood. They came from persons of high degree and of low, and from all quarters of the civilized world.

Among the first messages received was one from the King of England, as follows: "To the President: Let me be one of the first to congratulate you on the successful issue of the peace conference to which you have so greatly contributed.

"EDWARD, R. I."

Soon afterward a notably cordial cablegram was received from Emperor William of Germany. It read: "President Theodore Roosevelt: Just received cable from America announcing agreement of peace conference on preliminaries of peace; I'm overjoyed; express most sincere congratulations at the great success due to your untiring efforts. The whole of mankind will unite in thanking you for the great boon you have given it.

"WILLIAM I. R."

Ambassador Jusserand, of France, sent this cablegram: "President Roosevelt: Heartiest, warmest congratulations.

"JESSURAND."

Then came telegrams from diplomatic representatives of foreign governments in this country—from Sir Mortimer Durand, the British Ambassador; from Mayor Des Planches, Ambassador of Italy, and from Sir Chentung Liang Cheng, the Chinese Minister. They follow: "Please submit to the President my most cordial congratulations upon success of his efforts to bring about peace.

DURAND."

“The President: I beg to offer you hearty congratulations for the successful conclusion of peace, for which the whole world, especially the Orient, is ever indebted to you.

“CHENTUNG LIANG CHENG.”

“I beg to offer you, Mr. President, on behalf of the Italian Government and of myself, as representative of my august sovereign, heartfelt congratulations for your great success in re-establishing peace. Italy, who, since her constitution, has endeavored to be an element and factor of harmony among nations, will greatly admire and praise the work you brought on so advantageously for the benefit of humanity.

“MAYOR DES PLANCHES.”

Count Cassini, who was succeeded by Baron Rosen as Russian Ambassador to the United States, cabled as follows: “President Roosevelt: Profoundly happy at the result of the negotiations which assures a peace honorable for both nations and in which you have taken so fruitful a part.

CASSINI.”

“Your Excellency has rendered to humanity an eminent service, for which I felicitate you heartily. The French Republic rejoices in the role that her sister America has played in this historic event.

“EMILE LOUBET.”

On being informed at Rome of the conclusion of peace, the Pope exclaimed: “This is the happiest moment of my life. Thank God for President Roosevelt’s courage!”

Emperor Nicholas of Russia recognized gratefully the great part which President Roosevelt played in the successful negotiations for peace in the following cablegram received by the President: “President Roosevelt: Accept my congratulations and earnest thanks for having brought the peace negotiations to a successful conclusion owing to your personal energetic efforts. My country will gratefully recognize the great part you have played in the Portsmouth peace conference.

NICHOLAS.”

In response to a request for an opinion relative to President Roosevelt’s part in the conclusion of peace between Japan and Russia, Cardinal Gibbons said: “President Roosevelt is a great

man, the greatest in his time. He is first in peace and first in the hearts of his countrymen. He is the biggest man in this century, because he has been the means of bringing to an end a terrible war. I admire him for his great work, and the nation will bless him."

In a letter to Baron Komura the President extended his congratulations upon the wisdom and magnanimity manifested by Japan in the negotiations. The letter follows: "My Dear Baron Komura: May I ask you to convey to his Majesty, the Emperor of Japan, my earnest congratulations upon the wisdom and magnanimity he and the Japanese people have displayed? I am sure that all civilized mankind share this feeling with me. Sincerely yours,

THEODORE ROOSEVELT."

That President Roosevelt, by influencing the Portsmouth peace conference to a successful conclusion, has made a place for himself as one of the great figures of history is patent. Japan, insistent and exacting, turned at the last moment to so magnanimous a course as to have surprised and startled the world.

But behind the belligerent nations, ceaselessly active, indomitable in courage, fixed in determination to consummate peace if peace were possible, smashing precedent and toppling tradition in pursuit of that endeavor, was Theodore Roosevelt, The American.

America has known the man these many years. The world knows him now as the mightiest individual force among all the millions of humanity. Kings have laid their praises at his feet. Emperors have thanked and congratulated him for an unparalleled service to civilization. The Pontiff of the Roman Catholic Church has thanked God for Theodore Roosevelt's courage. Emperor Nicholas, of Russia, and M. Witte, his plenipotentiary, have ascribed to him all the glory for the peace achievement. On Manchurian plains Russian and Japanese soldiers rejoiced that Theodore Roosevelt dared and did. In Japan and in Russia, in unknown thousands of homes, prayers of thanksgiving for the man were breathed.

President Roosevelt received from the Emperor of Japan the following message of thanks and appreciation for the part played

by the President in the negotiations which resulted in a cessation of hostilities in the far East:

Mr. President: I have received with gratification your message of congratulations, conveyed through our plenipotentiaries, and thank you warmly for them. In your disinterested and unremitting efforts in the interests of peace and humanity I attach the high value which is their due, and assure you of my grateful appreciation of the distinguished part you have taken in the establishment of peace based upon principles essential to the permanent welfare and tranquillity of the far East.

“MUTSUHITO.”

Congressman William Alden Smith, of Michigan, was one of Emperor William's guests at dinner on September 2d. After dinner Emperor William referred to the peace conference at Portsmouth, saying: “President Roosevelt alone deserves credit for bringing about peace. He was the only man in the world who could have done it. He did his part splendidly.”

NAMES AFFIXED TO THE TREATY.

The peace treaty between Russia and Japan was signed at 4.47 o'clock on September 5th, 1905, in the conference building at the navy yard at Portsmouth, by the envoys plenipotentiary, Sergius Witte, Baron Rosen, Baron Komura and Mr. Takahira. M. Witte was the only envoy who signed two names on the treaty, the others simply inscribed their names and the secretaries affixed the seals. Only six persons were privileged to witness the act which reunited two great nations after eighteen months of strife and bloodshed. They were Admiral Meade, Captain Winslow, Captain Gibbons, in full uniform, Governor McLane, Mayor Marvin and Assistant Secretary Peirce.

The Japanese naval and military attaches wore their dress uniforms, while the diplomats wore frock coats and silk hats. M. Witte arrived with Baron Rosen and M. Plancon. The last named carried the treaty in a red morocco leather portfolio.

When all were seated the secretaries brought in the four copies of the peace treaty and laid them on the table. The two French

copies were placed in front of M. Witte and Baron Rosen and the two English copies before Baron Komura and Mr. Takahira.

Precisely at 4.47 o'clock the four envoys signed their names simultaneously to the papers in front of them and then exchanged them for the others. Each envoy had to sign his name four times.

To this moment no word had broken the silence of the conference room. Throwing his pen aside, M. Witte without a word, reached across the table and grasped Baron Komura's hand. His confreres followed and the Russian and Japanese delegates remained for a moment in silence, their right hands tightly clasped across the conference table. The war was over—Russia and Japan were once more friends.

SIMPLE AND IMPRESSIVE CEREMONY.

This simple ceremony rang true and deeply impressed the attaches and secretaries of the two missions, who with the invited witnesses had formed a large circle around the delegates sitting at the table.

Baron de Rosen was the first to break the silence. Rising from his seat, the Ambassador, looking Baron Komura and Mr. Takahira straight in the eye, said a few words which one had only to hear to know that they came from his heart. He began by saying that he wished on behalf of M. Witte, Russia's first plenipotentiary, and in his own name to say a few words.

"We have just signed," continued the Ambassador, "an act which will forever have a place in the annals of history. It is not for us active participants in the conclusion of this treaty to pass judgment on its import and significance. As negotiators on behalf of the Empire of Russia, as well as the Empire of Japan, we may with tranquil conscience say that we have done all that was in our power in order to bring about the peace for which the whole civilized world was longing.

"As plenipotentiaries of Russia we fulfill a most agreeable duty in acknowledging that in negotiating with our hitherto adversaries, and from this hour our friends, we have been dealing with true and thorough gentlemen, to whom we are happy to express

our high esteem and personal regard. We earnestly hope that friendly relations between the two empires will henceforth be firmly established, and we trust that his excellency, Baron Komura, as Minister of Foreign Affairs and one of the leading statesmen of his country, will apply to the strengthening of these relations the wide experience and wise statesmanship he so conspicuously displayed during these negotiations, which have now been so auspiciously concluded."

In his reply Baron Komura thanked the Russians for their kind speech and echoed the sentiments expressed by Baron Rosen regarding the future peace between the two nations, and he also spoke of the courteous manner in which they had been treated by the Russian envoys and their staffs. Then the Russian and Japanese shook hands heartily and all adjourned to the dining hall to drink the health and prosperity of Russia and Japan in a bumper of champagne.

At 5 o'clock the Russian envoys drove out of the navy yard over Kittery bridge and through the town of Portsmouth to Christ Church, where the thanksgiving services were to be held.

BEAUTIFUL CHURCH DECORATIONS.

The church was charmingly decorated with evergreen plants and flowers. M. Witte, with Baron Rosen and his suite, passed through a long lane of people who were waiting outside, while the interior was packed with members of the congregation and their friends. The Russian envoys were received outside with a hand-clapping and waving of handkerchiefs, and the congregation rose as they entered.

After the organ had played the Rev. C. LeBrine, the rector of Christ Church, led the procession, followed by acolytes bearing the crucifix, silk banners and incense and the vested choir. In the rear came the Russian priests wearing their richly embroidered robes of the Greek Orthodox Church. Bishop Potter and Bishop Niles followed the Russians. The service was in two parts, the first in English and the second in Russian.

The festal evensong was rendered by the choir, and the mag-

nificent "My Soul Magnifies the Lord." This was followed by a short lesson by the rector and the Russian national hymn, "Rise, Imperial Salem, Rise."

Then the Russian priests and choir chanted the *Te Deum*. M. Witte and Baron Rosen sat in the chancel on the right of the altar, and both appeared visibly affected when the Archpriest Hostovitz chanted the Russian prayers.

Before leaving, he gave Governor McLane \$10,000 for the charities of the State of New Hampshire. The hotel servants were well repaid for their attentions to the envoys and their suites during their four weeks' stay in the house. The automobile man who drove M. Witte had \$120, and the others \$60, \$50 and \$45 each. The head waiter received \$100, and the waitresses \$50 each, while the chambermaids got \$40 for their trouble. George, the Armenian carriage-man and porter, was made happy by a present of \$50. No one in the hotel service was forgotten.

RUSSIAN ENVOYS HAPPY.

The Russians dined in the side hall of the hotel, with their chief, M. Witte, at their head, and all appeared happy that it was all over, and at the prospect of their return to St. Petersburg in the near future, which cheered them up.

M. Witte said that for the first time in the past four weeks he felt really well and happy, that his attacks of insomnia and indigestion were over. M. Sato, M. Dennison and M. Takahira dined and spent the evening together very amicably. Like the Russians, they appeared glad that their good day's work was done.

The Russian and Japanese envoys called in turn upon Governor McLane in his rooms in the hotel, and thanked him for his courtesies to them during their stay in the State of New Hampshire. M. Witte, in speaking of America, said that he knew personally of the great regard the Tsar had for the American people, and he was sure that Baron Rosen's stay as Ambassador would do much to strengthen the bonds of friendship between the two nations. Baron Komura, for the Emperor and people of Japan, expressed how much they appreciated the kindness shown to them during their stay.

M. Witte said that peace would have a splendid effect in both countries and the world at large. Prosperity of both nations would follow. No doubt that the expansion of the Far East would be the result of the treaty signed, and that both nations would loyally abide by it and live amicably as neighbors in the future. M. Witte said that he had been ill ever since he landed in America, due, he thought, to the change of water, diet and climate, added to the worry of the conference which was just over.

THANKS TO THE MIDSHIPMEN.

M. Witte and Baron Komura having expressed a desire to thank the five midshipmen who have served as boat officers on the launches that have taken the members of both missions from the hotel to the navy yard, these officers called by appointment to pay their respects to the plenipotentiaries. At eleven o'clock, Midshipmen Leary, Bagley, Ingersoll, Blackburn and Harrington called on M. de Witte and Baron de Rosen, who thanked them for their faithful services and left with them their good wishes for their future career. M. Witte took occasion to express his admiration for the American navy.

Half an hour later, the officers called on Baron Komura and Mr. Takahira, where they received an equally cordial welcome, Baron Komura expressing officially his thanks for the services they have rendered his mission. These officers were specially selected from the battleships of the North Atlantic fleet and ordered to Portsmouth for duty in connection with the conference.

The following is a synopsis of the Treaty at Portsmouth :

The treaty opens with a preamble reciting that his Majesty, the Emperor and Autocrat of all the Russias, and his Majesty, the Emperor of Japan, desiring to close the war now subsisting between them and having appointed their respective plenipotentiaries and furnished them with full powers, which were found to be in form, have come to an agreement on a treaty of peace and arranged as follows :

Article 1. Stipulates for the re-establishment of peace and friendship between the sovereigns of the two empires and between the subjects of Russia and Japan, respectively.

Article 2. His Majesty, the Emperor of Russia, recognizes the preponderant interest from political, military and economical points of view of Japan in the Empire of Korea, and stipulates that Russia will not oppose any measures for its government, protection or control that Japan will deem necessary to take in Korea, in conjunction with the Korean Government, but Russian subjects and Russian enterprises are to enjoy the same status as the subjects and enterprises of other countries.

Article 3. It is mutually agreed that the territory of Manchuria be simultaneously evacuated by both Russian and Japanese troops. Both countries being concerned in this evacuation, their situations being absolutely identical. All rights acquired by private persons and companies shall remain intact.

Article 4. The rights possessed by Russia in conformity with the lease by Russia of Port Arthur and Dalny, together with the lands and waters adjacent, shall pass over in their entirety to Japan, but the properties and rights of Russian subjects are to be safeguarded and respected.

Article 5. The Governments of Russia and Japan engage themselves reciprocally not to put any obstacles to the general measures (which shall be alike for all nations) that China may take for the development of the commerce and industry of Manchuria.

Article 6. The Manchurian Railway shall be operated jointly between Russia and Japan at Kouang-Tcheng-Tse. The two branch lines shall be employed only for commercial and industrial purposes. In view of Russia keeping her branch line, with all rights acquired by her convention with China for the construction of that railway, Japan acquires the mines in connection with such branch line, which falls to her. However, the rights of private parties or private enterprises are to be respected. Both parties to this treaty remain absolutely free to undertake what they deem fit on expropriated ground.

Article 7. Russia and Japan engage themselves to make a conjunction of the two branch lines which they own at Kouang-Tcheng-Tse.

Article 8. It is agreed that the branch lines of the Man-

churian Railway shall be worked with a view to assure commercial traffic between them without obstruction.

Article 9. Russia cedes to Japan the southern part of Saghalin Island, as far north as the fiftieth degree of north latitude, together with the islands depending thereon. The right of free navigation is assured in the bays of La Perouse and Tartare.

Article 10. The article recites the situation of Russian subjects on the southern part of Saghalin Island and stipulates that Russian colonists there shall be free and shall have the right to remain without changing their nationality. Per contra, the Japanese Government shall have the right to force Russian convicts to leave the territory which is ceded to her.

Article 11. Russia engages herself to make an agreement with Japan giving to Japanese subjects the right to fish in Russian territorial waters of the Sea of Japan, the Sea of Okhotsk and Bering Sea.

Article 12. The two high contracting parties engage themselves to renew the commercial treaty existing between the two governments prior to the war in all its vigor, with slight modifications in details with a most favored nation clause.

Article 13. Russia and Japan reciprocally engage to restitute their prisoners of war on paying the real cost of keeping the same, such claim for cost to be supported by documents.

Article 14. This peace treaty shall be drawn up in two languages, French and English, the French text being evidence for the Russians and the English text for the Japanese. In case of difficulty of interpretation, the French document to be final evidence.

Article 15. The ratification of this treaty shall be countersigned by the sovereigns of the two States within fifty days after its signature. The French and American Embassies shall be intermediaries between the Japanese and Russian Governments to announce by telegraph the ratification of the treaty.

Two additional articles are agreed to, as follows:

Article 1. The evacuation of Manchuria by both armies shall be complete within eighteen months from the signing of the treaty,

beginning with the retirement of the troops of the first line. At the expiration of the eighteen months the two parties will only be able to leave as guards for the railway fifteen soldiers per kilometre.

Article 2. The boundary which limits the parts owned respectively by Russia and Japan in the Saghalin Island shall be definitely marked off on the spot by a special limitographic commission.

IMPORTANCE OF THE TREATY.

The treaty between Russia and Japan which was signed at Portsmouth, was much more than an agreement to end the war. It was even more than is indicated by the formal phrase of "peace and friendship." The military situation occupies a relatively small space in the text of the treaty; the more important articles deal with commerce and trade and the peaceful development of the country that has been the theatre of war.

Russia recognizes absolutely the preponderant interest of Japan in Korea, and promises not to oppose "any measures for its government, protection or control that Japan may deem necessary to take." This was one of the first of Japan's objects in the war, and it is fully acknowledged, but with the stipulation that Russian enterprises in Korea are to enjoy the same status as those of other nations. Japan, with her advantage of possession, can easily make this concession. The Russian lease of Port Arthur and Dalny passes over to Japan, without prejudice to private rights. The rest of the territory of Manchuria is to be simultaneously evacuated by the troops of both nations, and they engage themselves reciprocally "not to oppose any obstacles to the general measures, which shall be alike for all nations, that China may take for the development of the commerce and industry of Manchuria."

This is the clause of widest general interest. It looks to the development of Manchuria by China itself, without exclusive privileges, and the treaty then goes on to provide particularly for the harmonious operation of the Japanese and Russian branches of the Manchuria Railway, "which shall be worked with a view to assure commercial traffic between them without obstruction."

After specifying the partition of Saghalin and providing for

an agreement as to fishing rights in Russian waters, the two contracting powers engage themselves to renew their former commercial treaty in "all its vigor," with slight modifications in detail and with a "most favored nation" clause.

The remainder of the treaty has mainly to do with formalities. The important articles, apart from the arrangement for the evacuation of Manchuria within eighteen months, are those which look to the future trade of the disputed region and its division between the Russians and the Japanese. The "administrative entity of China" is carefully respected, but the provision for "the open door" is only inferential, except for the clause that the Chinese administration of Manchuria "shall be alike for all nations."

If commercial rivalries are a more frequent cause of war than military rivalries, so harmonious commercial interests may be the best assurance of peace. With the loss of Port Arthur and of her Pacific fleet, Russia's military rivalry with Japan is necessarily in abeyance. The Treaty of Portsmouth goes as far as it is possible to restrain and regulate their future competition in the peaceful development of the region from which each was seeking to exclude the other. It is in all respects a modern treaty, and the two Powers have disposed of all the questions between them without consulting the rest of the world. This is a new beginning in the history of the Far East.

SUMMARY OF THE MOST IMPORTANT EVENTS OF THE WAR.

1904.

- Feb. 5.—THE JAPANESE MINISTER IN ST. PETERSBURG ANNOUNCES RUPTURE OF DIPLOMATIC RELATIONS BY ORDER OF HIS GOVERNMENT.
- Feb. 8 (evening).—Japanese squadron under Admiral Uriu, escorting transports, arrives at Chemulpo. Russian gunboat Korietz fires the first shot of the war.
- Feb. 8 (midnight).—ATTACK BY JAPANESE SQUADRON UNDER ADMIRAL TOGO ON PORT ARTHUR.—Two Russian battle-ships (Cesarevitch and Retvisan) and one cruiser (Pallada) torpedoed.
- Feb. 9 (morning).—Naval action renewed. One Russian battleship (Poltava) and three cruisers (Novik, Askold, Diana) injured.
- NAVAL FIGHT OFF CHEMULPO. Japanese destroy Russian cruiser Variag and gunboat Korietz.
- Feb. 10.—Formal declaration of war by Japan.
- Feb. 11.—Russian mine-ship Yenisei blown up at Talién-wan.
- Feb. 12.—CHINA PROCLAIMS HER NEUTRALITY. M. Pavloff, the Russian Minister, leaves Seoul.
- Feb. 14.—Attack on Port Arthur by Japanese destroyers in a snowstorm. Russian cruiser (Boyarín) torpedoed.
- Feb. 16.—ADMIRAL ALEXEIEFF LEAVES PORT ARTHUR FOR HARBIN. The Japanese cruisers Nisshin and Kasuga arrive at Yokosuka.
- Feb. 17.—Admiral Makaroff appointed to supersede Admiral Starck.
100,000,000 yen (\$39,000,000) Treasury bonds taken up in Tokio.
- Feb. 20.—Cossacks cross the Ya-lu.
- Feb. 21.—GENERAL KUROPATKIN APPOINTED COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF of Russian forces in Manchuria by Imperial Ukase.
- Feb. 22.—Count Lamsdorff's Circular to the Powers.
- Feb. 23.—AGREEMENT BETWEEN JAPAN AND KOREA SIGNED AT SEOUL.
- Feb. 24 (early morning).—Japanese attempt to seal Port Arthur by sinking vessels.

- Feb. 25.—Renewed naval fighting off Port Arthur.
- Feb. 28.—Russians and Japanese in touch near Ping-yang.
- Feb. 29.—The Japanese take possession of Hal-yun-tau, one of the Elliot Islands.
- Mar. 6.—ADMIRAL KAMIMURA BOMBARDS VLADIVOSTOK.
- Mar. 9-10.—Japanese destroyers attack Port Arthur shortly after midnight. Russian destroyer sunk.
- Mar. 12.—General Kuropatkin leaves St. Petersburg.
- Mar. 21-22.—Bombardment of Port Arthur. Russian fleet takes up a position at the entrance of the harbor.
- Mar. 23.—Japanese and Russians in touch at Pak-chen.
- Mar. 27.—Second attempt to block the entrance to Port Arthur. Four steamers sunk.
General Kuropatkin reaches Harbin.
- April 6.—Japanese occupy Wi-ju and Russians retreat across Ya-lu.
- April 8 and 9.—Skirmishes on the Ya-lu.
- April 12.—The Koryo Maru, supported by Japanese torpedo vessels, lays mines outside Port Arthur.
- April 13.—Japanese destroyers cut off and sink a Russian destroyer in the vicinity of Port Arthur.
Japanese cruisers decoy Admiral Makaroff out of Port Arthur. On the return of the Russian squadron the PETROPAVLOVSK IS SUNK BY A MINE, and Admiral Makaroff drowned.
- April 14.—Japanese fleet appears again off Port Arthur, but Russians remain silent.
- April 15.—Kasuga and Nisshin bombard Port Arthur by high-angle fire from Pigeon Bay.
- April 23.—Japanese advanced guard crosses the Ya-lu.
- April 25.—Vladivostok squadron appears suddenly off Gen-san and sinks Japanese merchant steamer Goyo Maru.
- April 26.—Japanese transport Kinshiu Maru sunk by two Russian torpedo boats.

- April 27.—Japanese attempt to block the channel at Port Arthur. Fighting on the Ya-lu begins.
- April 29-30 and May 1.—**BATTLE OF THE YA-LU.** The First Japanese Army, under Kuroki, forces the crossing of the Ya-lu near Wi-ju, defeats Russians under Sasulitch with great slaughter, and captures 28 guns. Kiu-lien-cheng captured by the Japanese.
- May 1.—Japanese renew their attempts to block Port Arthur by means of fire-ships.
- May 3.—**PORT ARTHUR BLOCKED** for battleships and cruisers.
- May 4 (morning).—Second Japanese Army sails from Chinampo. (Evening).—Admiral Hosoya with first fleet of transports appears off Pi-tze-wo, in Liau-tung Peninsula.
- May 5.—Admiral Hosoya lands naval brigade and a division at Pi-tze-wo.
- May 6.—Japanese occupy Feng-hwang-chenn.
- May 8.—General Oku cuts the railway at Pulan-tien.
- May 10.—Cossacks unsuccessfully attack Anju.
- May 12.—Japanese fleet, under Admiral Kataoka, bombards Ta-lien-wan. Japanese torpedo-boat sunk by a mine in Kerr Bay.
- Japanese Six per Cent. Sterling loan of \$50,000,000 issued in London and New York at 93½.
- May 13.—Russian Five per Cent. External loan of 800,000,000f. (\$160,000,000) issued by Banque de Paris group.
- May 14.—Japanese despatch boat sunk by a mine in Kerr Bay. Japanese occupy Pulan-tien.
- May 15.—Japanese cruiser Yoshino sunk in collision with cruiser Kasuga. Japanese battleship **HATSUSE SUNK BY A MINE** near Port Arthur.
- May 16.—Japanese Second Army moves on Kin-chau.
- May 19.—Japanese Third Army lands at Taku-shan.
- May 20.—Japanese cruiser Bogatyr runs on the rocks near Vladivostok.
- May 24.—Japanese bombard Port Arthur.
- May 27.—**BATTLE OF KIN-CHAU: JAPANESE STORM NANSHAN AND CAPTURE 78 GUNS.** Admiral Togo establishes blockade of south end of Liau-tung Peninsula.
- May 30.—Japanese occupy Dalny. Stackelberg's corps, despatched to relieve Port Arthur, in touch with Japanese at Wa-fang-kau.
- June 4.—Russian gunboat sunk by a mine near Port Arthur.
- June 7.—Kuroki begins his advance.
- June 8.—Japanese occupy Siu-yen and Saimatse.
- June 11.—Japanese blockade Niu-chwang.
- June 14.—The Russian destroyer flotilla makes a sortie from Port Arthur, but is driven back by Togo.
- June 14-15.—**BATTLE OF TELISSU.** Japanese storm Russian position at Wa-fang-kau. Russians retire on Kai-ping with a loss of 7,000 men and 16 guns.
- June 16.—Vladivostok squadron at sea; sinks two Japanese transports, Hitachi Maru and the Sado Maru.
- June 16.—Vladivostok squadron, under Admiral Skrydloff, captures the Allanton, bound from Muroran to Singapore.
- June 20.—General Kuropatkin arrives at Kai-ping and inspects General Stackelberg's troops.
- June 21.—Oku's army occupies Hsiung-yao-cheng, thirty miles north of Telissu.
- June 23.—**THE RUSSIAN FLEET MAKES A SORTIE** from Port Arthur, but is driven back again with loss by Togo. Kuropatkin takes command of the Russian army.
- June 26.—The two armies face to face, Russians holding the line Kai-ping, Ta-shih-chiao, Liau-yang. Japanese—south of Kai-ping Lien-shan-kuan, Saimatse. Japanese approach Port Arthur from the land side, and capture Hsitaushan and Kenshan.
- June 27.—Japanese capture three important passes giving access to the Liau Valley, Fen-shui-ling, Mo-tien-ling and Ta-ling. Japanese sink two ships in Port Arthur by a torpedo attack.
- June 28.—Japanese Sixth Division lands at Kerr Bay.
- June 30.—Vladivostok squadron bombards Gen-san.
- July 1.—Vladivostok squadron eludes Admiral Kamimura near Tsu Shima.
- July 3, 4, 5.—Severe fighting at Port Arthur by land and sea. General Stössel retreats from the first outlying lines of defence. Japanese cruiser Kaimon sunk by a mine in a fog off Ta-lien-wan.
- July 4-6.—The **PETERBURG** and **SMOLENSK**, cruisers of the Volunteer Fleet, pass the **BOSPHORUS** under the commercial flag.
- July 6.—Marshal Oyama, Commander-in-Chief, leaves Tokio for the front.

- July 9.—Second Japanese Army, under General Oku, occupies Kai-ping.
- July 11.—British ss. Menelaus and Crewe Hall stopped south of Jiddah by Volunteer cruiser Peterburg.
- July 13.—British ss. MALACCA STOPPED BY PETERBURG in Red Sea and taken back to Suez.
- July 15.—Ss. Prinz Heinrich stopped by Smolensk and mails seized.
- July 16.—British ss. Hipsang sunk by Russian destroyer in Gulf of Pechili.
- July 17.—Ineffectual attack by General Count Keller on the Mo-tien-ling position.
- July 19.—Ss. Scandia stopped in Red Sea and taken back to Suez.
- July 20.—Vladivostok squadron passes Tsugaru Straits into the Pacific, pursued by Japanese torpedo flotilla. British Ambassador in St. Petersburg hands in a protest against the seizure of the Malacca, and a request for her immediate release.
- July 24.—British ss. KNIGHT COMMANDER sunk by Vladivostok squadron off Idzu. British ss. Formosa overhauled in the Red Sea and taken back to Suez. Japanese torpedo three Russian destroyers outside Port Arthur.
- July 25.—General Oku, after severe fighting, drives the Russians back from their entrenched positions on TA-SHIH-CHIAO. Japanese occupy Niu-chwang.
- July 26-30.—Severe fighting at Port Arthur. Japanese capture WOLF HILL. General Stössel retreats from the second of the outlying lines of defence and falls back towards Port Arthur.
- July 27.—Release of the Malacca.
- July 28.—Assassination of M. de Plehve.
- July 31.—General Japanese advance. Japanese drive Russians back all along the line, on Hai-cheng, Pan-hsi-lu, and Yanzu-ling. INVESTMENT OF PORT ARTHUR BEGUN.
- Aug. 3.—General Oku occupies Hai-cheng and Niu-chwang town. Russians at Port Arthur driven back on to their inner lines.
- Aug. 8.—Combined land and sea attack on Port Arthur ends in capture of Takushan and Shakushan.
- Aug. 10.—SORTIE OF THE PORT ARTHUR FLEET. Admiral Togo attacks and disperses them, seriously damaging five battleships. Admiral Vitoft killed. Some Russian vessels take refuge in the neutral ports of Shanghai, Chifu and Tsingtau, but the majority are driven back into Port Arthur.
- Aug. 11.—A Russian destroyer stranded 20 miles east of Wei-hai-wei. Lord Lansdowne makes a statement in the House of Lords with regard to contraband.
- Aug. 12.—BIRTH OF THE CESAREVITCH. Japanese board and capture Russian destroyer Reshitelni in Chifu Harbor.
- Aug. 13.—Admiral Rojestvensky assumes command of Baltic Fleet.
- Aug. 14.—Admiral Kamimura engages Vladivostok squadron 40 miles northeast of Tsu Shima and sinks cruiser Rurik. Japanese bombard Port Arthur.
- Aug. 16.—Russian fleet attempts another sortie from Port Arthur. Japanese send a flag of truce into Port Arthur advising the removal of non-combatants and the surrender of the fortress. British steamers Asia and Pencalenick stopped in vicinity of Cape St. Vincent by Russian cruiser Ural.
- Aug. 17.—Russians refuse both Japanese proposals. British and American Ambassadors in St. Petersburg protest simultaneously against Russian decision to regard foodstuffs as contraband of war.
- Aug. 18.—The attack on Port Arthur renewed. Russian gunboat Otvajni sunk by a mine off Liau-tie-shan.
- Aug. 19.—Japanese protest against prolonged stay of Askold and Grosvoiv at Shanghai.
- Aug. 19-24.—GENERAL ATTACK ON PORT ARTHUR.
- Aug. 20.—Japanese cruisers Chitose and Tsushima drive NOVIK ashore in Korsakovsk Harbor.
- 174 Mètre Hill captured.
- Aug. 22.—East and West Panlungshan Forts captured.
- Aug. 23.—Russian battleship Sevastopol damaged by a mine in Port Arthur. General Kuroki's left column commences the operations leading up to the battle of Liau-yang.
- Aug. 24.—The Czar orders the disarmament of Askold and Grosvoiv.
- Failure of first general attack on Port Arthur.
- Aug. 25.—Mr. Balfour receives a deputation representing the interests of British shipping.
- GENERAL JAPANESE ADVANCE ON LIAU-YANG BEGUN.

- Aug. 25-26.—Kuroki's centre column carries Russian position at Kung-chang-ling. Second and Third Armies attack An-shan-chan.
- Aug. 27-31.—Renewed attacks on Port Arthur.
- Aug. 28.—Russians, having lost all advanced positions, are driven in upon Liau-yang. Kuroki gains right bank of Tang-ho and effects junction with Second and Third Armies.
- Aug. 29-30.—Japanese cannonade Russian positions and make infantry attacks, but make no material impression on the defence.
- Aug. 31.—Second and Third Armies resume their attack and make progress in the direction of Hsin-li-tun and Shou-shan.
- Sept. 1.—Russians driven out of their works at these points, and Russian right and centre fall back towards river line. First Army carries Manjayama Hill.
- Sept. 2-3.—Second and Third Armies continue attacks.
- Sept. 3.—Kuropatkin orders a general retreat.
- Sept. 4.—Russian rearguard, after delaying Japanese for two days, finally evacuates Liau-yang.
- JAPANESE ENTER LIAU-YANG AT 3 A. M.
- Sept. 4-5.—Russian army in retreat fights rearguard actions with Kuroki, who occupies Yen-tai coal mines.
- Sept. 7.—Kuropatkin arrives at Mukden.
- Sept. 13.—Vladivostok Prize Court decides to release British steamer Calchas, but confiscates its cargo of flour and cotton.
- Sept. 18.—The Japanese armored gunboat Hei-yen strikes a mine and sinks.
- Sept. 19-20.—Capture of Fort Kuropatkin and the Suezeying redoubts.
- Sept. 20.—Capture of Namaokayama.
- Sept. 21.—Japanese obtain a footing on 203 Mètre Hill, but are subsequently obliged to retire.
- Sept. 25.—Russian Imperial rescript appointing General Gripenberg to command Second Manchurian Army.
- Sept. 26.—Circum-Baikal Railway opened.
- Sept. 29.—New military system introduced into Japan making men who have passed into the territorial army eligible for foreign service for 17½ years.
- Oct. 2.—Publication of Kuropatkin's order of the day, declaring the Manchurian Army to be strong enough to begin a forward movement.
- Oct. 9.—Russians cross Tai-tse and attack the Japanese First Army.
- Oct. 10-11.—Severe fighting at Pen-hsi-hu.
- Oct. 12, 13, 14.—Heavy fighting all along the line. RUSSIANS DRIVEN BACK OVER THE SHA-HO.
- Oct. 15.—BALTIC FLEET LEAVES LIBAU.
- Oct. 16.—Japanese capture Hachimakeyama (near Ehlungshan).
- Oct. 18.—Baltic Fleet passes through the Great Belt.
- Oct. 20.—Baltic Fleet proceeds to the North Sea.
- Oct. 21-22.—BALTIC FLEET AT MIDNIGHT FIRES ON HULL FISHING FLEET.
- Oct. 25.—The Czar sends a message to the King expressing his extreme regret.
- Oct. 26.—Baltic Fleet arrives at Vigo.
- Oct. 29.—Baltic Fleet begins to arrive at Tangier.
- Oct. 31.—Japanese gain possession of the glaciis crests of Ehlungshan, Sungshushan, and the North Fort of East Keekwanshan.
- Nov. 5.—Baltic Fleet leaves Tangier. General Linevitch appointed to command First and General Kaulbars appointed to command Third Manchurian Army.
- Nov. 10.—Admiral Alexeieff arrives in St. Petersburg. Admiral Fölkersahm's division at Suda Bay.
- Nov. 12.—Admiral Rojestvensky at Dakar till Nov. 16.
- Nov. 14.—Japanese six per cent. sterling loan (second series) for \$60,000,000 issued in London and New York at 90½.
- Nov. 15.—Board of Trade inquiry opened at Hull.
- Nov. 16.—Russian destroyer Raztoropni blown up by her commander at Chifu.
- Nov. 17.—Supplementary division of the Baltic Fleet leaves Libau.
- Nov. 24.—Admiral Fölkersahm's first division arrives at Port Said.
- Nov. 25.—ANGLO-RUSSIAN CONVENTION SIGNED IN ST. PETERSBURG. Attention drawn to the voyage of the torpedo-boat Caroline from the Thames to Libau.
- Nov. 26.—Confiscation of the Cheltenham confirmed in St. Petersburg. Rojestvensky at Gaboon (French Congo).
- Nov. 27.—Fölkersahm's division leaves Suez.
- Nov. 30.—CAPTURE OF 203 METRE HILL. Japanese cruiser Sai Yen sunk by mine.
- Dec. 2.—Fölkersahm's division passes Perim. Crews of Russian warships give trouble at Shanghai.

- Dec. 3.—Guns of Japanese naval brigade open fire on Russian ships in Port Arthur.
- Dec. 5.—The Russian Naval Headquarters Staff in St. Petersburg admits that cruiser Aurora was struck by Russian shells on night of October 21.
Fölkersahm's division coaling at the Musha Islands.
- Dec. 6.—Japanese occupy Akasayama. Rojestvensky at Great Fish Bay.
- Dec. 11.—Rojestvensky at Angra Pequena.
- Dec. 12-15.—Torpedo attacks on the Sevas-topol.
- Dec. 18.—Tungkeekwanshan Fort taken.
- Dec. 19.—Rojestvensky passes Cape Town. Japanese seize the British steamer Nigretia, bound for Vladivostok.
- Dec. 22.—Japanese occupy Hon-san-yang-tau, near Pigeon Bay.
Japanese squadron reported off Singapore. Commission of Inquiry meets in Paris and adjourns to Jan. 9.
- Dec. 22-25.—Japanese dislodge several Russian outposts at Port Arthur.
- Dec. 24.—Admiral Togo reduces the blockading squadron.
- Dec. 28.—Capture of Erhlungshan.
- Dec. 31.—Capture of Sungshooshan. 1905.
- Jan. 1.—GENERAL STOSSEL PROPOSES AND GENERAL NOGI ACCEPTS SURRENDER OF PORT ARTHUR.
Four Russian destroyers escape to Chifu. ROJESTVENSKY ARRIVES AT ILE SAINTE MARIE, OFF MADAGASCAR.
- Jan. 2.—Port Arthur capitulation agreement signed.
- Jan. 3.—Fölkersahm arrives at Passandava Bay, Madagascar.
- Jan. 4.—Itszshan and other forts delivered to Japanese as guarantee of capitulation.
- Jan. 5.—Meeting of Nogi and Stössel.
Official report by General Nogi, reckoning the surrendered garrison at 32,207 prisoners and over 15,000 sick and wounded.
- Jan. 6.—Prisoners march out of Port Arthur.
- Jan. 8.—Supplementary division of Baltic Fleet leaves Suda Bay.
- Jan. 9.—International Commission of Inquiry into North Sea incident resumes its sittings.
- Jan. 10.—Supplementary squadron of Baltic Fleet (Admiral Botrovosky) at Port Said.
- Jan. 11-12.—GENERAL MISCHENKO MAKES A RAID to the south, attacks old Niuchwang and cuts line, but is forced to retire.
- Jan. 12.—\$75,795,000 of a Russian four-and-a-half per cent. loan of 500,000,000 marks (\$120,000,000) issued in Berlin. Remainder was to be issued later.
General Nogi announces capture of 546 guns and 82,670 rounds of gun ammunition at Port Arthur.
- Jan. 13.—Baltic Fleet at Diego Suarez. Admiral Botrovosky's squadron leaves Suez.
- Jan. 18.—Admiral Botrovosky's squadron at Jibuti.
- Jan. 19.—FIRST PUBLIC SITTING OF COMMISSION OF INQUIRY in Paris.
- Jan. 22.—STRIKE RIOTS IN ST. PETERSBURG. TROOPS FIRE ON POPULACE.
- Jan. 25-29.—BATTLE OF HEI-KON-TAI. Russians cross the Hun-ho and attack Japanese left wing. Heavy fighting, at the conclusion of which Russians are forced to retire. Japanese losses, 9,000 killed and wounded. Russian losses over 10,000.
- Feb. 7.—British steamer Eastry, for Vladivostok, with coal, captured off Hokkaido, by Japanese (first of a series of similar captures).
- Feb. 15.—Third Baltic Squadron (Admiral Nebogatoff) leaves Liban.
- Feb. 23.—Kawamura's army (Eastern section) opens the BATTLE OF MUKDEN.
- Feb. 23.—Kuroki's army (East Central section) begins to operate.
- Feb. 27.—Nodzu's army (Central section) begins three days' cannonade of the Russian positions.
- Feb. 28.—Oku's army (West Central section) begins to advance.
Kawamura's army occupies Machuntun.
- Mar. 1.—Nogi's army (West section) enters Hsin-min-tun.
- Mar. 2-6.—Nodzu's army dislodges Russians from outworks south of the Sha-ho.
- Mar. 5.—Kuroki's army forces the left of the Russian entrenchments on the Sha-ho.
- Mar. 6.—Oku's progress checked by the Russians.
- Mar. 7.—Kuropatkin orders a retreat.
- Mar. 8.—Nogi cuts railway north of Mukden.
- Mar. 10.—Kawamura's army carries Fushun position.
JAPANESE ENTER MUKDEN.
- Mar. 16.—JAPANESE ENTER TIE-LING.
- Mar. 17.—KUROPATKIN is relieved of his command, and succeeded by LINEVITCH.
BAL TIC FLEET LEAVES NOSSI BE.
- Mar. 17.—Japanese occupy Kai-yuan.

- Mar. 20.—Russia, having failed to raise a new loan in France, announces a new internal loan of 200,000,000 roubles.
Kuropatkin assumes command of First Army under Linevitch.
- Mar. 21.—JAPANESE OCCUPY CHANG-TU-FU.
- Mar. 24.—Admiral Nebogatoff at Port Said.
- Mar. 29.—New Japanese 4½ per Cent. Sterling Loan of \$150,000,000 offered for subscription in London and New York.
- April 2.—Japanese driven out of Hi-shin-kau, 33 miles N.E. of Kai-yuen.
- April 3-4.—Russian force driven out of Tsu-lu-shu, 20 miles N. of Chang-tu.
- April 8.—Baltic fleet sighted off Singapore.
- April 12.—Russian force defeated at Erh-lo-hu by Japanese advancing on Hai-lung line.
- April 12-14.—ROJESTVENSKY ARRIVES IN KAMRANH BAY.
- April 14.—Japanese occupy Ying-Ching.
- April 15.—Japanese occupy Tung-hwa, 50 miles east of Shing-king.
- April 20.—Japanese minister in Paris calls M. Delcassé's attention to the reported stay of Russian vessels in Kamranh Bay.
- April 21.—Statement by M. Rouvier that the French Government meant to respect absolute neutrality between the belligerents, and had given precise orders to all its agents in the Far East.
- April 22.—Rojestvensky leaves Kamranh Bay.
- April 24.—Russian attack on Chang-tu and Kai-yuen repulsed.
Rojestvensky returns to Kamranh Bay.
- April 26.—Rojestvensky again leaves Kamranh Bay.
- April 27.—Nebogatoff reported off Penang.
- May 1.—Japanese reach Tiao-yu-tai, 28 miles north of Tung-hwa.
United States Government urges upon China the advisability of enforcing so far as possible the neutrality of Chinese harbors.
Russian fleet at Fort Dayet, 40 miles north of Kamranh Bay.
- May 4.—Japanese Minister in Paris asks for explanation concerning news received by his Government as to violation of neutrality in Indo-Chinese waters.
- May 5.—Four Russian torpedo-boats burn a Japanese sailing vessel off Hokkaido.
Nebogatoff passes Singapore.
- May 9.—Rojestvensky leaves Hon-kohe Bay. Nebogatoff off Cape St. James.
Two Russian cruisers sighted off Aomori, on the north coast of Nippon.
Russians repulsed at Ying-pien-mun.
- May 12.—Rojestvensky returns to Hon-kohe Bay.
- May 13.—Martial law proclaimed throughout Formosa.
- May 14.—The Baltic fleet leaves Hon-kohe Bay for the north.
- May 15.—The Japanese Government vetoes the export of coal to Indo-China.
- May 17.—Admiral Birileff appointed to the command of the naval forces in the Pacific.
- May 18 and following days.—Desultory fighting in Manchuria. Japanese successes.
- May 27-28.—Baltic fleet, drawing up to TSU SHIMA, is sighted by the Japanese. BATTLE OF THE SEA OF JAPAN begins at about 2 P. M. on May 27. On that day and the next TOGO DESTROYS THE BALTIC FLEET, CAPTURES ROJESTVENSKY AND NEBOGATOFF, AND TAKES 8,000 PRISONERS.
- June 8.—PRESIDENT ROOSEVELT SENDS IDENTIC DESPATCH TO JAPANESE AND RUSSIAN GOVERNMENTS, URGING THEM TO NEGOTIATE FOR PEACE.
- June 9.—Escaped Russian cruisers are interned at Manila.
- June 16.—Roosevelt's peace proposition accepted and Portsmouth decided upon as the place where the plenipotentiaries of the two Governments would meet.
- July 3.—Peace envoys announced for both Russia and Japan.
- August 5.—Peace envoys were welcomed by President Roosevelt at Oyster Bay.
- August 8.—Peace Commissioners began their conference at Portsmouth, N. H.
- August 29.—Peace Commissioners reached an agreement and the war ended.
- September 5.—Treaty of peace signed at Portsmouth, N. H., by the Russian and Japanese envoys.

DS
517
H2
1905

THE LIBRARY
UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA
Santa Barbara

THIS BOOK IS DUE ON THE LAST DATE
STAMPED BELOW.



Series 9482

UC SOUTHERN REGIONAL LIBRARY FACILITY



AA 000 143 947 0

